

139c

A
Compleat History
O F
EUROPE:

OR, A
VIEW of the AFFAIRS thereof,
CIVIL and MILITARY,
FROM THE
Year, 1600, to the Treaty of *Nimeguen*,
to Perfect the Last CENTURY.

CONTAINING
All the Publick and Secret TRANSACTIONS
therein; The Rise and Progress of our CIVIL WAR;
The Wars and Revolutions of *France, Germany,*
Sweden, Poland, Hungary, Portugal, &c.

Intermix'd with
Great Variety of Original PAPERS, LETTERS,
MEMOIRS, TREATIES, &c. Several of which
are not to be met with elsewhere.

THE
Whole illustrated with the REMARKABLES
of the Years; and the LIVES and CHARACTERS
of the Great Men of that Age. Taken from *Thuanus,*
Nani, Puffendorf, Mezerai, Whitlock, Sir P. Warwick,
Dr. Welwood, E. of Clarendon, and Others the most
Approved HISTORIANS.

L O N D O N :

Printed by T. Mead, for H. Rhodes, near Bride-Lane, Fleet-Street; J. Nicholson,
in Little-Britain; and Andr. Bell, at the Cross-Keys, in Cornhill, 1705. Where
may be had the History of Europe, from the Treaty of *Nimeguen*; and
thole for 1701, 1702, 1703, 1704. To be continued Annually.

W. Musgrave.



T H E

P R E F A C E.

HAVING no Thoughts, when I first wrote the Compleat History of Europe, from the Forming of the Treaty of Nimeguen, in 1676, to the Conclusion of the Peace of Reswick, in 1697, (and which I have since continued by Two several Editions to the End of the Century) to recur back to the Beginning of it; and then also given an Introductory Discourse, briefly setting forth the State of Things in the several Kingdoms and States that compose this Part of the World: But revolving with my self since, that it would be no unacceptable Work to attempt to compleat the Century, and in order thereunto having in my Introduction to the Annual History, for 1701, given an Account of the general Scope of my Design in these and the ensuing Volumes, it will be unnecessary to make any Recapitulation in this Place. Let it suffice therefore that I shou^d observe, that since I have publickly promised Two or Three times to compile this History, I have at length in part perform'd it, with all

The PREFACE.

the Sincerity and Assiduity I was capable of, and not without some Hopes of the Approbation of the Reader.

I have in this History pursued my usual Method, and kept as strictly to it as possibly I could, though sometimes a little of the Affairs of one Year has unavoidably slipped into another; but the same having been generally noted by me, it can occasion no Confusion in the Reading. I shall not enter upon a Detail of the Difficulty of digesting so many Original Papers as are herein contain'd, many of which are set down at large, such as the last Speech of Queen Elizabeth to her Parliament, and the like; but to instance the many other Pieces of that kind would look rather like an Index, than a Preface, and swell it beyond all reasonable Bounds.

The same Thing may be said in Reference to the Quoting of the many Authors we have used. We had once Thoughts to mention them particularly, and to note the Years, or several Periods of Time wherein they have been of any Service to our Design; but that, upon a due Recollection, was also found too tedious, and not so practicable as might have been desired.

The P R E F A C E.

It's sufficient to observe in general, that the best Authorities have been consulted and compared, and so much Regard had to Truth, that opposite Authors, especially of most Eminentcy, are frequently confronted, and their Sentiments fairly delivered, without Favour or Affection: And, among other Helps, we have had the Perusal of some Manuscripts, and read that of our unhappy Civil War, written by Sir Edward Walker, Secretary of War to King Charles the First, and by that Prince's especial Command, who corrected some of it with his own Hand, but since, I hear, made Publick. We have been more particularly careful to inspect the many Memoirs, both at Home and Abroad, either in our own Language, or others of our Neighbours, which the last Age has been fruitful in: As also, the Lives of several Eminent and Illustrious Personages; such as that of the late Frederick William the Great, Elector of Brandenburg, written by the famous Samuel Puffendorf; which, indeed, may be well enough call'd, *Historia Universalis sui Temporis*.

Many others might be mention'd. We could likewise enumerate the several Treaties here and there interspers'd through the Whole, as they occur in their proper Places, though divers other memorable Ones do not come in till the succeeding Volumes: And if it shall

ap-

The PREFACE.

appear any Defects in this kind have already happen'd, they shall be carefully supplied in the Other.

The principal Imbellishment of this Work, and wherein, it may without any Vanity be said, more than ordinary Application and Industry has been used, are the Characters of very many Great Men of several Nations and Families, for which we have searched divers particular Memoirs, and left nothing unobserved this way for our Purpose in Cambden, Clarendon, Ricaut, Warwick, Welwood, Rushworth, Whitlock, &c. at Home; as well as in Benti-voglio, Thuanus, Mezerai, Nani, Mariana, &c. Abroad. And as it frequently falls out, that Persons are Characteriz'd by different Authors of good Authority, and this sometimes upon a different Turn of Times, we have thought it most proper to let both speak for themselves; and considering the greater Part of them are English, we generally chuse rather to subject them to the Judgment of the Reader, than pass any Censure of our own upon them.

*The Method we have hitherto constantly pursued, in adding the Remarkables of every Year at the End of it, we have still continued, and they consist chiefly of the Deaths, Characters, and Works of Learned Men, which we reserv'd for this Purpose, and have not
thought*

The PREFACE.

thought fit to mix with the Characters of Statesmen and Soldiers, dispers'd up and down in the Body of the Book, as they most properly fall in, of which, as well as of divers other Occurrences, we shall add no more in this Place.

A

Y
T
d
n
u
th
v
c
P
M
in
je
le
V
la
a
M
d
c
L

A

Compleat History

O F

EUROPE, &c.

V O L. I.

E NGLAND, towards the End of the last 1601.
 Century, being embroil'd almost with a general Rebellion in *Ireland*, and Queen *Elizabeth* having constituted her Favourite, *Robert*, Earl of *Essex*, Lord Deputy of that Kingdom in 1599. he, after his Army had receiv'd 1599.
 Two considerable Defeats from the *Irish*, without Orders, concluded a Peace with *Tirowen*, which together with the evil Suggestions of his Enemies at Court, made the Queen begin to suspect his Fidelity; so that upon his Return into *England*, he was committed to the Custody of the Lord-Keeper, and his Cause having been heard before some Members of the Council, he was sentenced to be removed from being a Privy-Councillor, suspended from his Offices of Earl-Marshal, and Master of the Ordnance, and detain'd in Custody during the Queen's Pleasure: But her Majesty having soon set him at Liberty, yet declining to let him have a new Grant for his Farm of the sweet Wines, which he now solicited for, he began to relapse into his former Frenzy against the Government, 1600.
 and his Passion being still the more fired by *Cuff*, *Essex's* Rebellion.
Meirick, and other Incendiaries, he secretly listed Soldiers, kept them near his House, and with his particular Friends, the Earl of *Southampton*, Sir *Charles Danvers*, Sir *Ferdinando Gorges*, Sir *John Davis*, and
 B John

1601. *John Littleton of Frankel*, had their private Cabals in *Drury-House*, where they took up Resolutions to seize the *Tower*, the *Queen's Person*, and to call a Parliament, to set up another Government: These and other Proceedings of the Earl increasing the Suspensions already entertain'd of him, he was order'd to appear before the Council, which he refused to do, being resolved to preserve his Liberty, tho' with the Loss of his Blood; and therefore had gathered to his own House, the Lord *Sands*, *Parker*, *Monteagle*, and about 300 Gentlemen more of good Quality.

The Queen having hereupon ordered the Lord Mayor to keep the City in due Obedience to her Commands, sent the Lord Keeper, the Earl of *Worcester*, Sir *William Knolles*, and the Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, to know the Cause of this riotous Assembly: It was not without much Difficulty that they were admitted into *Essex-House*, thro' the Wicket, where they found a confused Multitude of People in the Court-Yard, and the Earl in the Middle of them: The Lord-Keeper demanded the Cause of that Tumult, assuring him, That if any had injured him, he should have equal Justice against them; *Essex* answered, *There was a Plot laid against his Life*; and when the Lord-Keeper press'd him to be particular, the Multitude interrupted him, saying, *Let us go, they abuse your Patience, and betray and undo you*. Hereupon *Essex* retired into his House, and when the Lord-Keeper and the Rest follow'd him, the Multitude cried out. *Kill them, throw away the Broad-Seal; clap them up in Custody*: Upon which *Essex* commanded the Doors to be bolted, and shut them in; saying, *Have Patience a little, I will go into the City, and advise with the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs, and return immediately*.

Coming into London, *Essex* cried out, *For the Queen, for the Queen, a Plot is laid for my Life*, and went directly toward Sheriff *Smith's House* in *Fen-Church-street*, and seeing the Citizens run and gaze, he bid them, *Arm themselves, or they could do him no Good*; but not one Man took up Arms for him, and the Sheriff in whom he confided, hearing of his coming, withdrew himself out at a back Door to the Lord Mayor's, and would not see him. In the mean time *Essex* was proclaimed a Traytor in all Parts of the City, and seeing none

Imprisons
the Privy
Council-
iors.

Excites
the Citi-
zens to
Rebellion.

none would espouse his Quarrel, and that his own Party began to desert, he gave *Gorges* leave to set the Privy Councillors at liberty, and went with them to the Court by Water. *Effex* returning to his House, found a Chain drawn cross the Street at *St. Paul's*, and Pikes and Musqueteers planted against him by the Bishop of *London* under the Command of *Sir John Levisen*. The Earl drew his Sword, and commanded *Blunt* to fall upon them, which he did very resolutely, killed *Waite*, and was himself desperately wounded and taken Prisoner. There fell also *Henry Tracy*, a young Gentleman whom *Effex* dearly loved and one or two Citizens. Being thus repulsed at this place, his Hat shot through, and many sinking from him, he returned to his House by Water, burnt several Papers that they might tell no Tales, and Fortified his House on all sides.

The Lord Admiral presently besieged it by Land by *Effex* house the Earls of *Cumberland* and *Lincoln*, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, the Lord *Grey*, the Lord *Barleigh*, the Lord *Compton*, and others. He himself with the Lord *Essex* his Son, the Lord *Cobham*, *Sir John Stanhop*, *Sir Robert Sidney*, and *Sir Fulk Grevil* entred into the Garden by the *Thames* side. and being ready to assault the House, he summoned him by *Sidney* to yield. *Southampton* asked to whom they should yield: To their Adversaries, that were to run themselves headlong into Ruin: To the Queen, that were to confess themselves guilty; but says he, If the Lord Admiral will give us Hostages for our Security, we will appear before the Queen; if not, we are resolved to sell our Lives as dear as we can. The Lord Admiral answered, That such Conditions were not to be proposed by Rebels, but in Compassion to the weaker Sex, he would permit the Countess his Wife, the Lady *Rich* his Sister and their Women, who filled the Air with their Shrieks and Lamentations, to go out. This *Effex* took as a Favour, and only desired an Hour or two's time to fortifie the Place they should go out at, which was also granted.

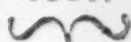
Now *Effex* looking upon all Things as desperate and lost, once resolved to force his way out, to which *Effex* and he was encouraged by the ancient Lord *Sands*, who his Assisted, That the resoluteest Courses were the safest, and that it was more honourable for Noblemen to die fighting, than by renders

1601. *the Hands of an Executioner ; but Essex* wavering in his Mind, and having the Lord Admiral's Promise that they should be treated civilly, all the Noblemen at 10 at Night, falling upon their Knees, deliver'd up their Swords, and themselves Prisoners to him. *Essex* and *Southampton* were first confined in *Lambeth-House*, and shortly after with *Rutland*, *Sands*, *Cromwel*, *Monteagle*, *Sir Charles Danvers*, and *Sir Henry Bromley* were committed to the Tower.

Brought
to their
Tryals.

On the 19th of *February*, *Essex* and *Southampton* were brought to their Tryals in *Westminster-Hall*, before the Lord-Treasurer *Buckhurst*, and Lord High-Steward for the Time, the Earls of *Oxford*, *Nottingham*, *Shrewsbury*, *Derby*, *Worcester*, *Cumberland*, *Sussex*, *Hartford* and *Lincoln*. The Lord Viscount *Howard of Bindon*, the Barons of *Hunsdon*, *Le Warr*, *Morley*, *Cobham*, *Stafford*, *Grey*, *Lumley*, *Windsor*, *Rich*, *Darcy*, *Chandois*, *St. John*, *Burleigh*, *Compton*, and *Howard of Walden*, to whom as Assistants, sate the Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, Lord Chief Baron *Periam*, *Gawdy*, *Fenner*, *Walmsley*, *Clark* and *Kingmill*. Their Charge was High-Treason, the Heads of which were, *That they had plotted to deprive the Queen of her Crown and Life, and had broken out into open Rebellion ; to which they pleaded Not Guilty, Essex* averring, *That he had done nothing, but what was agreeable to the Law of Nature, and upon urgent Necessity.*

Yelverton the Queen's Sergeant, and *Edward Coke* her Attorney opened the Indictment, and according to the Custom of Lawyers, tho' not very commendable, upbraided *Essex* with the Queen's Favours, compared him to *Catiline*, and made (as some thought) too undecent Reflections and Insults upon Men of their Quality, under such unhappy Circumstances ; for *Coke* ended his Harangue with this ill-natured Conclusion : *It were to be wished that this Robert, might be the last of this Name, Earl of Essex, who affected to be Robert the First of that Name, King of England.* *Essex* with great Courage and Modesty answer'd, *That this Art of scandalous Oratory was common with Men of their Profession, who accounted it their Glory, to run down Innocent Men with multiplicity of Words, and therefore prayed the Lords not to regard their Clamours and Noise Suggestions ; but weigh*



weigh the Matter according to Truth, and not by Rigour and Quirks of Law, which was added by Southampton. The Evidences against them being heard, and the whole plainly proved, Southampton endeavoured to excuse himself out of his Love to Essex, and his Ignorance of the Laws, and with great Humility begged the Queen's Mercy, whom he had always looked upon as a lively Image of the Divine Goodness, and against whom his Heart had never harboured a disloyal Thought. Essex, when the Heat was over between him and Cecil, answered more calmly. That he had no Design but to repel Force by Force; nor would he have entered the City so inconsiderately if he had not thought his Life in Danger; nor with so small a Number, if he had intended any thing but to defend himself against his private Enemies. The Prisoners having now made their Defences, the Lords withdrew, and in an Hour return'd to their Places, where every one of them pronounced Essex and Southampton Guilty: Who being brought again to the Bar and acquainted with it, Essex humbly begged the Lords Favours, that they would intercede with the Queen for Southampton's Pardon, who might do her good Service. *For my own Life, faith he, I care not; for I desire nothing more than to lay it down with sincere Faith in God, and Loyalty to my Prince, tho' the Law has made another Interpretation of it. Yet I would have no Man tell the Queen that I slight her Mercy, tho' I believe I shall never fawningly beg it. And I beseech you my Peers, tho' you have condemned me by Law, that you would absolve me in your Consciences, who never intended any Ill against my Prince.*

Next Day Sir Robert Vernon, Sir William Constable, Sir Edmund Bainham, Knights, John Littleton, Henry Cuff, the Earl of Essex's Secretary, Captain Waitlock, John and Christopher Wright, and Orel, an old Soldier, were Arraigned, and as soon as they had held up their Hands, and that the Queen was told they were unwarily drawn in, she commanded that none but Littleton, Bainham and Orel should be tryed, and that the rest should be remanded to Prison, and tho' Sentence was pronounced against those that were Try'd, yet at last all their Lives were spared. Bainham redeemed his by a Sum of Money paid to Sir Walter Rawleigh, Littleton died of Sickness, and Orel was Pardoned.

1601.

His Con-
fession.

In the mean Time *Essex*, either troubled in his own Conscience, or terrified by the Minister that attended him, if he concealed the Truth, and did not discover his Accessories, desired to speak with some of the Privy-Council, and particularly with Secretary *Cecil*. Upon this Request the Lord Keeper, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Admiral and *Cecil* went to him, and after he had asked the Lord Keeper's Pardon for detaining him in Custody, and *Cecil's* for accusing him in the Matter of the *Infanta*, he told them, *That the Queen could never be safe as long as he lived*, and therefore desired he might suffer privately in the Tower. Some of his Associates in the Conspiracy he discovered: He desired to speak with *Bant* and *Cuff*, and as soon as he saw them, broke out into these Words, O *Cuff*! Ask God's and the Queen's Pardon, and see you deserve it. For my part I am resolved to deal sincerely before God and Man, and cannot but tell you plainly, that you were the Person that chiefly moved me to this Disloyalty. Nor was he satisfied with this Verbal Confession, but under his Hand discovered the Conspirators.

February 25th, the Day appointed for his Execution, Dr. *Montford*, and Dr. *Barlow*, with *Ashton*, Minister of the Church in the Tower, were sent to him early in the Morning, to prepare him for Death. In these Mens Presence he gave Thanks to God that his Designs, which were so dangerous to the State, had no Success: He told them he had now look'd seriously into his Sin, and was heartily sorry, that he had so obstinately defended an unjust Cause at the Bar. He thanked the Queen who had granted him a private Execution, left his Mind, which was now composed, might be disturbed by the People's Acclamations saying, He had now learned how vain a Thing Popular Breath and Favour was, and how he deserved to be spued out by the Commonwealth, for the Wickedness of his Enterprize, which like a Leprosie had spread far and near, and infected many.

Queen's
Mind
changes.

The Queen's Mind in the mean Time waver'd concerning him her former Affection and Favour towards him, recall'd her to some degree of Compassion and Clemency, and she sent her Commands by Sir *Edward Cary*, that he should not be Executed: On the other side, his perverse Obstinacy who scorned to ask her Pardon,

don, and had openly declared that his Life would be the Queen's Destruction, did so push her on to use Severity, that soon after she sent a fresh Command by *Darcy*, that he should suffer. Accordingly he was brought to a Scaffold erected in the Tower, accompanied by the Divines aforementioned. Near the Scaffold sat the Earls of *Cumberland* and *Hertford*, Viscount *Howard* of *Bindon*, the Lord *Howard* of *Walden*, the Lord *Darcy*, the Lord *Compton*, some of the Aldermen of *London*, and several Knights, amongst whom was *Rawleigh*, with an Intention only, if you believe himself to answer any thing the Earl should object against him at his Death, tho' others interpreted his being there in a worse Sense, that he might Feast his Eyes with a Sight of the Earl's Sufferings, and satiate his Malice with his Blood, and therefore being told of it as a Fault, he withdrew into the Armory, and there beheld the fatal Tragedy.

The Earl as soon as he came upon the Scaffold, uncovered his Head, and lifting up his Eyes to Heaven, confess'd his Sins, and begged Mercy for them, especially this last Sin, which he call'd a *Bloody, Crying, and Contagious Sin*. He pray'd the Queen and her Ministers to forgive him, and that God would give her a long and happy Reign, protesting that he never intended to lay violent Hands on her Person. He pray'd God to strengthen his Mind against the Terrors of Death, and intreated the Spectators to joyn with him in a short Prayer, which he uttered with great Devotion. Then he rehearsed the *Apostles Creed*, and laying himself down, placed his Neck upon the Block, and having repeated the first Verses of the 51st Psalm, his Head was struck off at the third Blow; tho' the first took away both Sense and Motion.

His Execution.

Thus dyed *Robert de Evereux*, Earl of *Essex*, in the 34th Year of his Age, who was accomplished with all those Vertues that compleat and become a Nobleman. He had a high and towering Mind, but at the same Time was extreamly obliging and affable, which made him very popular, and being a great Ingrosser of Fame, it procured him many Enemies, and made his Mind boil into undecent Passions, more suitable to his Enemies Design than his own; for they lighted their Candle at his Fire, and this Heat being blown

His Execution.

1601. into a Flame by some fiery Spirits about him, stained the Goodness of his Nature with a Tincture of Revenge, which his Enemies made to reflect upon the Queen, so that the Coal which he designed to burn his Enemies Nest with, kindled his own Funeral Pile. His Genealogy was ancient and illustrious; his Estate and Dignity of Baron came by a Marriage with *Cecily*, Daughter of *William Buchier*, whose Grandmother was Sister to *Edward IV.* King of *England*. Her great Grandmother was Daughter of *Thomas of Woodstock*, Son of King *Edward III.* born of a Daughter of *Humphrey Bohun*, Earl of *Hereford* and *Essex*. In Consideration of which the Title of Viscount *Hereford* was conferred upon his great Grandfather *Walter*, by King *Edward VI.* and the Honour of Earl of *Essex* upon his Father, by Queen *Elizabeth*. This Earl had a Liberal Education in *Cambridge*, and being recommended to the Queen by his Father-in-Law, the Earl of *Leicester*, and made Master of the Horse; he found great Difficulty to get into her Favour, but when he had gained it, she loaded him with Preferments, and afforded him a great Share in her Affections, which begot him many Enemies, and 'tis no Wonder, considering he was not born for a Courtier; for he could neither flatter nor dissemble, but always carryed his Love and Hatred on his Brow. He married *Frances* the Daughter of Sir *Francis Walsingham*, Widow of Sir *Philip Sidney*, by whom he had a Son named *Robert*, and two Daughters, *Frances* and *Dorothy*, besides a Son by his Mistress *Southwell*, who was named *Walter*.

March 5. Sir *Christopher Blunt*, Sir *Charles Danvers*, Sir *John Davis*, Sir *Gilly Merick*, Knights, and *Cuff*, being accused of the same Crimes with *Essex*, were brought to their Tryals, and being Convicted, received the Sentence of Death, and were all executed at *Tyburn*, except Sir *Christopher Blunt* and Sir *Charles Danvers*, who being nobly descended, were beheaded upon *Tower-Hill*. To this Cause also belongs a Censure, given at this Time in the *Star-Chamber*. The Earl of *Essex* complained at his Tryal, that his Letters were counterfeited, and upon diligent Enquiry into that Matter, a bold Impostor was discovered. The Countess of *Essex* being afraid, that in those troublesome Times some Evil might befall her Husband and her self

A piece of
Forgery.

self, put some Letters which she had received from him into a Cabinet, and intrusted it in the Hands of a Dutch Woman, called *Ribove*, who hid them in her House. By chance *John Daniel*, her Husband, found them, read them over, and observing that there was something in them that might incense the Queen, and endanger the Earl, caused them to be transcribed by one that was expert at *Counterfeiting Hands*. And when the timorous Countess was ready to lie In, he told her, That unless she would give him 3000 *l.* he would deliver them into the Hands of her Husband's Enemies. The good Lady to prevent that Danger, immediately gave him 1170 *l.* and yet for that great Sum, the Villain gave her only the Copies, and kept the Originals to get another Sum for them, from the Earl's Enemies. For which he was condemned to perpetual Imprisonment, Fined 3000 *l.* two of which was to be paid to the Countess, and to stand with his Ears Nailed in the Pillory, with this Inscription on his Breast, *A Wicked Forger and Impostor*.

These Things done, and the Queen being return'd from her Summer's Progress, which she usually made into one Part or another of her Dominions, she was pleased to assemble her Parliament at *Westminster*, *Octob. 20.* where, among other Things, many good Laws were made for the Relief of the Poor, for impotent Persons and disabled Soldiers and Seamen; against fraudulent Guardians, Deceit of Clothiers, and Robberies and Depredations on the *Scotch Borders*; and great Complaints being made to the House of Commons against divers Monopolies granted, to the great Prejudice of the Subject, the Queen, to be beforehand with them, issued out a Proclamation, partly declaring those Grants to be void, and partly to be left to the Decision of the Law, with which the Commons were so pleased, that on the 3d of *Novemb.* they deputed Eighty of their Members, but Sir *Simon D'Ewes* says, about 140, to wait upon the Queen, and by the Mouth of the Speaker to give her Majesty the Thanks of the whole House, which the Speaker perform'd in this manner:

1601.

Speaker's
Speech to
Q. Eliza-
beth.

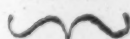
Most Sacred and most Gracious Sovereign,

WE your faithful, loyal and obedient Subjects
and Commons here present, vouchsafed of
your special Goodness, to our unspeakable Comfort,
Access to your sacred Presence, do in all Duty and
Humbleness come to present that which no Words
can express, most humble and hearty Acknowledg-
ment of your most gracious Message; and most
bounden humble Thanks for your Majesty's most
abundant Goodness extended and perform'd to Us:
We cannot say, most gracious Sovereign, we have
called and been heard, we have complain'd and
been helped, tho' in all Duty and Thankfulness we
acknowledge your sacred Ears are ever open, and
ever bowed down to hear us, and your blessed Hands
ever stretched out to relieve us. We acknowledge,
sacred Sovereign, in all Duty and Thankfulness, we
acknowledge, that before we call, your preventing
Grace, and all-deserving Goodness doth watch over
us for our Good; more ready to give than we can
desire, much less deserve: That Attribute which is
most proper to God, to perform all he promiseth,
appertaineth also unto you, our most gracious Queen,
of all Truth, of all Constancy, of all Goodness, ne-
ver wearied in doing Good to us (the Deeds them-
selves speak) most careful to provide all Things for
us, most gracious, most tender to remove all Grie-
vances from us, which all your Princely Actions
have ever shewed, and even now your most graci-
ous publish'd Declaration of your own only meer
Motion and special Grace, for the Good of your
People, doth witness to us: We come not, sacred
Sovereign, One of Ten to render Thanks, and the
Rest to go away unthankful; but all of us in all Du-
ty and Thankfulness, do throw down our selves at
the Feet of your Majesty, do praise God and bless
your Majesty; neither do we present our Thanks
in Words, or any other outward Thing, which can
be no sufficient Retribution for so great Goodness,
but in all Duty and Thankfulness, prostrate at your
Feet, we present our most loyal and thankful Hearts,
and that last Spirit of Breath in our Nostrils, to
be poured out, to be breathed up for your Safety.

To

To which her Majesty made this Answer :

1601.



Mr. Speaker,

WE perceive, your coming is to present Thanks to Us; Know I accept them with no less Joy, Queen's Speech. than your Loves can have a Desire to offer such a Present; and do more esteem it than any Treasure or Riches. For the Value of Them I know, but Loyalty, Love and Thanks I account unvaluable; and though God hath raised Me high, yet this I account the Glory of My Crown, that I have Reigned with your Loves. This makes Me that I do not so much rejoyce, that God hath made me a Queen, as to be a Queen of so thankful a People, and to be a Means under God, to conserve you in Safety, and to preserve you from Danger; yea, to be an Instrument to preserve you from Dishonour, Shame and Infamy; to keep you out of Servitude and Slavery under Our Enemies, and cruel Tyranny and vile Oppression intended against Us. For the better withstanding whereof, We take very acceptably your intended Supplies; and chiefly, that it manifesteth your Love and Largeness of Heart to your Sovereign. Of My self I was never a greedy scraping Grasper, nor strict fast-holding Prince, nor yet a Waster. My Heart was never set upon any Worldly Goods; but what you bestow on Me, I will not hoard it up, but receive it, to bestow on you again. Yea, my own Properties I account yours, to be expended for your Good, and your Eyes shall see the Bestowing of it for your Welfare.

Mr. Speaker, I wish you and the rest of the Gentlemen to stand up, for I fear I shall yet trouble you with a longer Speech.

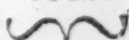
Mr. Speaker, You give Me thanks, but I am more to thank you, and I charge you thank them of the Lower House from Me; for had I not receiv'd Knowledge from you, I might have fallen into the Lapse of an Error, only for want of true Information. Since I was a Queen, I never yet put my Pen to any Grant, but upon Pretext and Semblance made, that it was for the Good and Avail of My Subjects in general, though a private Profit to some of my ancient Servants, who have deserv'd well. But that any Grant

of

1601.

' of Mine, shall be made grievous to My People, and
 ' Oppression to be priviledg'd under the Colour of our
 ' Patents, Our Princely Dignity shall not suffer it.
 ' When I heard it, I could give no rest to my Thoughts;
 ' and those Varlets, lewd Persons, Abusers of My
 ' Bounty shall know, I will not suffer it. And Mr.
 ' *Speaker*, Tell the House from Me, That I take it
 ' exceeding grateful, that the Knowledge of these are
 ' come unto Me from them: And though amongst
 ' them the principal Members are such as are not
 ' touched in private, and therefore speak not from a-
 ' ny feeling of the Grief, yet we have heard, That
 ' other Gentlemen also of the House who stand as
 ' free, have spoken as freely in it. Which gives Us
 ' to know, that no respects of Interests have moved
 ' them, otherwise than what they bear to suffer the
 ' Diminution of Our Honour, and Our Subjects Love
 ' to Us. The Zeal of which Affection tending to
 ' ease My People and knit their Hearts to Us, I em-
 ' brace with a Princely Care; for above all other Treas-
 ' ures, I esteem My Peoples Love, more than which,
 ' I desire not to merit: And God that gave me to sit,
 ' and placed Me over you, knows, That I never re-
 ' spected My, but as your good was concerned in Me.
 ' Yea, What Dangers! What Perils! What Practices
 ' I have past, some if not all of you know, but none
 ' of those Things ever moved me, or made me fear,
 ' but it's God hath delivered Me.

' And in Governing this Land, I have ever set the
 ' last Judgment Day before My Eyes, and so to rule,
 ' as I shall be judged and answer before a higher Judge,
 ' to whose Judgment Seat I do appeal, That never
 ' Thought was cherished in My Heart, that tended not
 ' to My Peoples Good. And if My Princely Bounty
 ' hath been abused, and my Grace turned to the Hurt
 ' of My People, contrary to My Will and Meaning,
 ' or if any Authority under Me have neglected, or
 ' converted what I committed to them from My De-
 ' sign, I hope God will not lay their Culp upon My
 ' Charge. To be a King, and wear a Crown, is a
 ' Thing more Glorious to them that see it, than it is
 ' pleasant to them that bear it. For my self, I was
 ' never so much inticed with the Glorious Name of a
 ' King, or the Royal Authority of a Queen, as de-
 ' lighted



‘lighted, that God made me his Instrument to maintain his Truth and Glory, and defend this Kingdom from Dishonour, Damage, Tyranny and Oppression. But should I ascribe these Things to My Self or to My Sexly Weakness, I were not worthy to Live; and of all most unworthy of the Mercies I have received at God’s Hands: But to God alone, and to him wholly is all given and ascribed.

‘The Cares and Troubles of a Crown, I cannot more fitly resemble, than to the Drugs of an Apothecary, perfumed with some Aromatical Savour, or bitter Pills gilded over, by which they are made acceptable or less offensive, when indeed they are bitter and unpleasant. As for My own part, where it not for Conscience sake to discharge the Duty God hath laid upon Me, and to maintain his Glory, and keep you in Safety, in my Disposition I should be willing to Resign that Place I hold to any other, and be glad to be freed of the Glory with the Labour. For it is not My desire to Live and Reign longer, than My Life and Reign shall be for your Good; and though you have had and may have Mightier and Wiser Princes sitting on this Seat, yet you never had, nor shall have any that will love you better. Thus Mr. Speaker, I commend Me to your Loyal Loves, and yours to My best Care and your further Counsels. And I pray you Mr. Comptroller and Mr. Secretary, and you of My Council, that before these Gentlemen depart into the Country, you bring them all to Kiss My Hand.

Things being thus transacted in England, we are to look now into Ireland. The Irish had been long in Expectation of Assistance from Spain, and now to their great Joy they arrived in great State at Kingsale, and having peaceably entered the Town and refreshed themselves, Don John d’Aquila, who commanded them, with the Title of Master General and Captain of the Catholick King in God’s War, for maintaining the Faith in Ireland, published several Papers, wherein he endeavoured to perswade the People, that Queen Elizabeth was by several Sentences of the Pope deprived of her Crown, that her Subjects were absolved from their Oath of Allegiance,

and

1601. and that now the *Spaniards* were come to deliver *Ireland* out of the Jaws of the Devil; and by that specious Pretence he drew great Numbers of the Lewd and Dissolute Fellows to joyn with him. The Lord Deputy having drawn together what Troops he could, besieged *King'sale*, forced the *Castle* of *Kincurrane* to surrender, and with the Help of Vice-Admiral *Levison*, begirt the Town with a closer Siege, which notwithstanding was soon after somewhat slackned, in regard *Levison* with his Fleet was fain to sail hence against 2000 *Spaniards*, which were Landed at *Bere Haven*, *Baltimore*, and *Castle-Haven*, five of whose Ships he sunk. About the same Time *O Donel*, *Tir Owen*, *O Rork*, *Reymund Burk*, *Mac Mahon*, *Randal Mac Surley*, and the chief Rebels drew near, and joyning the new Landed *Spaniards*, made up 6000 Foot, and 500 Horse, and were puffed up with assured Confidence of Victory, as being more in Number, fresh Men, and well provided with all Necessaries, whereas the *English* were tired out with a Winter's Siege, destitute of Provisions, and their Horses spent with hard Service and want of Provender. However, when both Armies came to engage, they found to the contrary; for the *Spaniards* were slaughter'd, and the *Irish* betook themselves to flight, throwing away their Arms. *Don Alphonso O Campo* was taken Prisoner, with Three *Spanish* Captains and Six Ensigns, 1200 Men were slain, and Nine Colours taken, whereof Six were *Spanish*. Of the *English* few were kill'd, but many wounded. Great and many were the Advantages of this Victory, for *Ireland* that before was staggering and ready to revolt, was hereby kept in Obedience; the *Spaniards* were driven out of that Country, the Arch Rebel *Tir-Owen* was forced into his Fastnesses; *O Donel* was necessitated to fly into *Spain*; the Rest of the Rebels were dispersed; the Queen's Authority was restored; the Hearts of honest Men revived, and a solid and perfect Peace established in all *Ireland*, of which more in the succeeding Year.

1600. Having done for the present with the Affairs of *Britain*, we are now to survey those of our Neighbouring Nations: And first to begin with *France*, the Sixteenth Century could not be ended without some Difference between King *Henry IV.* and *Charles Emmanuel*, Duke of *Savoy*, about the Marquisate of *Sa-*

luzzes,

The *Spaniard* invades *Ireland*.

They are beaten.

luzges, which being seemingly terminated by a Treaty, Charles had no sooner left France, where he had entered into a strict Correspondence with Mareschal Biron, and became privy to the Design of dethroning the King; but he endeavour'd all he could to elude the Treaty, which brought a War upon his Country, and the same being left chiefly to the Conduct and Management of Biron, who play'd the ambiguous Part in all of it; and having order'd one *Lafin* in *Septemb.* to make Two Journeys to *Roncás*, the Duke's Minister, the King upon Information thereof grew jealous, and caution'd him to have nothing to do with that pernicious Fellow. This Conspiracy seem'd to lie dormant and fluctuating for a time; however, there being no Endeavours wanting, in the Court of *Rome* especially, to make up a Peace between the King and the Duke of *Savoy*, the Treaty was at length sign'd *January* the 17th, and the Articles were chiefly, That the Duke quitted the Country of *Bresse* to the King, comprehending *Bourg*, with *Valromy*, and the Bailiwick of *Geix*, with the River *Rhofne*, from *Geneva* to *Lyons*, except *Pont Gressin*: He gave up also the City of *Ghastelleny*, and the Tower of the Bridge *Chateau-Dauphine*, and demolish'd *Beche-Dausin*. The King in Exchange left him the Marquisate of *Saluzges*, with the Cities of *Cental*, *Demont*, and *Rogue Sparvierre*, and all the Places he had taken during that War.

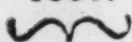
1600.
War between France and Savoy.

1601.

The Treaty of *Vervins* between France and Spain in 1598. did not hinder the Two Kings from seeking to take Advantages over one another: The Spaniards complained the *United Provinces* were supported both with Men and Money by the French, who in their turn twitted them with the Forces they sent the Duke of *Savoy*, with *Fuentes* his Designs upon *Marseilles*, and keeping Intelligence with the Grandees of the Kingdom: But what nettled the French most, was the Affront given to their Ambassador at *Madrid*, where some young Gentlemen of his Train quarrelling with some Spaniards one Evening, as they were washing in the River; and it hapning that Two of the Spaniards, whom they protested were the Aggressors, were killed, the Mob were like to force the Ambassador's House to do Justice by Violence, while the *Aleade*, to appease them, broke

Broils between the French and Spaniards.

1601.



broke the Doors open, and carried these Gentlemen away Prisoners, Now the King of *Spain*, upon Complaint refusing to deliver them, the *French* Ambassador was recalled without taking leave, and all Commerce forbid between the *French* Subjects and *Spain*. Hereupon the Duke of *Lerma*, *K. Philip* the Third's Minister, being averse to War, desired the Mediation of the Pope, and caused the Prisoners to be put into his Hands, who thereupon delivering them up to the *French* Minister at *Rome*, all was well again, and another Embassie sent to *Spain*.

During the Heat of these Contentions the King went to *Calais*, which gave the Arch-Duke, engaged in the Siege of *Ostend*, (of which more hereafter) some Apprehensions he might be disturbed by him; but his Design was to negotiate at a nearer Distance with Queen *Elizabeth*, who had some Project to impart for the Humbling of the House of *Austria*, and had a Mind to have an Interview with him at Sea, between *Dover* and *Calais*. He sent *Biron* into *England* to excuse it, to whom she shewed great Civilities, and, as they there falsely said, the Head of the Earl of *Essex*, her late Favourite, planted upon the Tower. From *Calais* the King hastened to the Queen at *Fontainbleau*, where she was delivered of a Son the 27th, of *September*, who was named *Lewis*: His Birth was preceded by an Earthquake, a Presage of those terrible Wars wherewith *Europe* was to be shaken during his Reign. Five Days after the King of *Spain* had a Daughter born, named *Anna Maria Mauritia*; and such as pretended to Skill in judging of future Times, foretold it was decreed they Two should be one Day joyned together, to produce a Prince that should in his single Person unite the Grandeur of those Two most August Houses; which indeed is but too much verified in this our own Day. But 'tis hoped the Divine Providence, and under it, those that are entrusted with the Preservation of the Liberties of *Europe*, will avert it.

Dauphin
born.

New Re-
gulations
made.

There were divers Regulations published this Year towards discharging the King's Debts, and making Money circulate; amongst others, the Suppression of the Triennials created upon Necessity of the Siege of *Amiens*, and their Reimbursement by the ancient Alternatives. This did however reserve those of the

en
m-
lor
ce
re-
er,
he
his
he
no-

ent
he
re-
De-

een
he
nd
ver

it,
ent
Fa-

the
the
ho
an

re-
ive
rn,
led
was

er,
son
ses;

our
and
ion

ear
ing
n of
e of
ent

of
the

n
v
b
A
t
V
S
t
G
T

the *Espargue*, *Parties Casuelles*, Extraordinaries for War, and some others : The Prohibition against transporting Gold or Silver out of the Kingdom, or expoling any foreign Coins, except *Spanish* Pistoles and Reals : Another, the forbidding the Wearing of Gold or Silver upon their Cloaths, or to squander away that precious Metal in Guilding ; which last the King authoriz'd by his own Example, and look'd very sourly upon a Prince that presum'd to appear before him with that Gawdry. Those that belonged to the Treasury, and the like Persons, who for the most part got their Money with the Dash of a Pen, were the chief Authors and Promoters of those Vanities : It was necessary therefore for the repressing those Insolencies and Pillagings, to establish a Royal Chamber, consisting of Judges of known Integrity : The People were easily fed with vain Hopes, the Gallows would do them Justice, and be the Reward of those Varlets : But large Presents and Intreagues found able Mediators, who attack'd the Prince's Clemency with so many Engines and Importunities, that he admitted those Fellows to compound, after the Court had sat to 1604. and so punish'd them only in their Purfes, and that very lightly.

The War, which for many Years had been rending the Bowels of the *Low-Countries* to Pieces, terminated the Year 1600. with the famous Battle of *Newport*, wherein Prince *Maurice* of *Orange* obtain'd a signal Victory over Arch-Duke *Albert*, who in Right of *Isabella*, his Wife, and the Donation of her Father *Philip II.* of *Spain*, was become Lord of the *Netherlands* since the Year 1598. But *Albert*, not at all dejected with this Misfortune, in the Beginning of 1601. made new Levies in *Germany* and the *Walloon* Country, and was promised a good Reinforcement from *Spain*. Prince *Maurice* in the mean time laid Siege to *Rhinberg*, and carried it on the last of *July*, while the Arch-Duke on his part had, by way of Diversion, on the 3d of the same Month, form'd the Siege of *Ostend*. *Ostend* *Vandernot* was then Governour of the Town ; but the States, knowing the Importance of the Place, sent thither the renown'd Sir *Francis Vere*, with the Title of General of all the Forces within and without *Ostend*. This Place in the Memory of Man was but a few

1601. Cottages for poor Fishermen on a naked Shore; but at the Beginning of the War in the *Netherlands* it was fortified by the States first with a Palisado; but then the Sea working in, and making it a very convenient Harbour, they added a Trench to it, and placed an *English* Garrison in it. These Men, first under *Conway*, and afterwards under *Sir John Norris*, did so disturb and over-run *Flanders*, that the Prince of *Parma* began to lay Siege to it, but in vain: *Le Motte* attempted it by Treachery, but was beaten off with great Loss: And now the Arch-Duke surrounded it with Seven Scones; but the Garrisons and these Scones proving as burthenfome and vexatious to *Flanders* as the Enemies, yet the Haven being thought convenient to harbour the *Spanish* Gallies, and to infest the Navigation of the *English* and the *Zealanders*, the *Spaniards* resolv'd to take it, whatever it cost, and the States on the other hand were as obstinate in the Defence of it. It was the most memorable Siege that had happen'd in any Age before, but we cannot descend to the Particulars. Vere at Five Months End, finding his Forces diminish'd by frequent Sallies, the Enemies Shot and the Pestilence, a Part of the old Town swallow'd up by the Sea, their Provision almost spent, and, by reason of contrary Winds, no Hopes of a Supply, which he had often demanded in vain, and understanding that the Enemy were ready for a greater Assault, he beat a Parley, exchanging Hostages, and began to treat; but he cunningly protracted the Time, and amused them with Hopes of a Surrendry, till he had receiv'd a fresh Supply of Men, and then sending the Commissioners back, excused himself with this Military Axiom, *That to delude and over-reach an Enemy is pleasant and advantageous*; and therefore begg'd their Pardon, that in case of the like Necessity he should make use of the same Stratagem. The Arch-Duke in Revenge made a furious Assault next Day, but without Success; and General Vere, when he had made good the Breaches, was recall'd by the States, who thought fit every Five Months to send a new Governour and fresh Supplies of Men, and was succeeded by *Dorp*. You may be sure Prince *Maurice* on his part was not all this while idle, but having, by way of Diversion, laid Siege



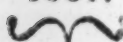
to Bolduk; he had infallibly carry'd the Place, had not the Arch-Duke found out a Way to throw a Reinforcement of 800 Foot into it, which, with the advanced Season of the Year, it being now near the End of November, made him quit the Enterprize.

The Affairs of the *Netherlands* seeming at present to take some Breath, we shall pass thro' *Germany* into *Hungary*, where a War having for some Years been a foot between the Emperor *Rodolph* and *Mahomet III.* the Emperor having got a considerable Army together of divers Nations, under the Command of the Duke of *Merceur*, they began the Campaign with the Siege of *Alba Regalis*, and the Duke being inform'd by a Defserter, That the broad Lake on the other Side of that City was passable, whatever the secure *Turks* and others thought to the contrary, he appointed *Rossworm* to try if he could not surprize the Suburbs that Way, who, with 1000 choice Soldiers, with each a Faggot on his Back, besides his Arms, entering the Lake, at length, after incredible Difficulty from the Mud, Flags and Water, with the Loss only of 5 or 6 Men, got over it; and the Duke, by an appointed Signal being advertis'd thereof, with great Noise and Tumult attack'd the other Side, by way of Diversion, whither the *Turks* flock'd to defend the Place, and thereby giving *Rossworm* an Opportunity to scale the Walls, he quickly got into the Suburbs, and falling furiously upon the *Turks*, they, without any Resistance, fled into the City, and the *Christians* at the Heels of them, of whom they made a great Slaughter, while the Duke on the other Side took the Suburbs that lay towards him, where he got a great Booty; then storming the City next Day, the *Christians* bravely entred it, and having clear'd the Streets of the Enemy, they had Recourse to their Houses, which they had before on purpose undermin'd, and so desperately overwhelm'd themselves, and as many of the *Christians* as they could, in the Ruins of them; so that the Place was in a manner reduced to an entire Heap of Rubbish. The *Walloons* got most of the Booty, to the Heart burning of the *Germans*, whom they ill used upon this Occasion. The *Basha* of *Buda*, who had long before been taken Prisoner, being then at *Vienna*, and hearing of the Fate of this Place, ab-

Alba Regalis besieged by the *Christians*.

Taken by the *Christians*.

1601.



stain'd from eating, with Two of his Servants, a whole Day, prostrate upon his Face, Praying to *Mahomet*, who (as he said) had all this Year been angry with the *Turks*. In the meantime, *Hassan*, General of the *Turks*, held on his March towards *Alba Regalis*, tho' he had heard of the Surrendring of it to the *Christians*, thinking, perhaps, to find it unprovided, and so surprize it; but the Duke hearing of his Coming with an Army of 20000 Men, advanced to meet him, and at length they came to a general Battle, wherein, tho' the *Basha* was much superior in Number, yet the Valour of the *Christians* prevail'd; he was defeated with the Loss of 6000 Men, among whom was the *Basha* of *Buda*, Six *Sangiacks*, and divers other Officers of Note; and the Defeat had been yet much more entire, had not a great Body of *Tartars*, appearing in the Rear of the *Christians*, given the *Turks* an Opportunity to restore their disorder'd Battle, which made the Duke content himself with his Victory, and retreat into his Camp.

Canisfa
besieged
in vain by
Arch-
Duke *Fer-*
dinand.

At the same time that the Duke began the Siege of *Alba Regalis*, Arch-Duke *Ferdinand* having receiv'd Supplies from *Italy*, and being now 30000 strong laid Siege to *Canisfa*, and, notwithstanding the Morass, and the other great Difficulties, yet they made their Approach so near, that they carried their Trenches close to the Town-Ditch, and would then, before a general Assault, have perswaded the Garrison to a Surrendry, who obstinately and contemptuously persisted to refuse it, especially the Renegade *Walloons*; but the *Christians* Bridge proving too short to pass over the Town-Ditch, and other Obstructions, made many of them begin to faint, and flink away, tho' the Commanders were resolv'd to pursue their Design, and the rather because of the Want of Provision in the Garrison; till *Russworm*, on the 4th of *November*, came with a Reinforcement of 8000 Men to them, from Duke *Merceur*: For all which the *Turks* persisting resolute, and extreemly obstinate, they must unavoidably at length have fallen a Sacrifice to the Rage of the *Christians*, had not the North Wind, about the latter End of *November*, blown such a Quantity of Snow into their Camp, that the whole Army seem'd to be bury'd therein; so that they had no less than

1601.

than 1500 Men and 300 Horses starved and frozen to Death; whereupon it was thought most advisable, to draw off the Army as well as they could, which was but in an indifferent Plight, for there lay 500 of them dead of the Cold by the Way; besides 400 left sick in the forsaken Trenches, which were thought to have been all put to the Sword by the Garrison of *Canisia*.

We shall but just mention the Rencounters in *Wallachia*, between the *Vayvods Rodol* and *Feremy*, with which last the *Turks* sided, and were worsted; and that they also received divers small Losses in *Hungary*; but the *Heydukes* of *Comorra* happening to take *Ali Bascha* Prisoner, and Arch-Duke *Matthias* being inform'd by him, That *Hassan Bascha* was coming with a great Army to besiege *Alba Regalis*, he dispatch'd Count *Nolan*, the Governour, thither, to take care of that important Place, and, indeed, 'twas high time for it; for *Hassan*, with an Army 150000 Men, on the 12th of *August*, encamp'd before it, where he began to batter it with his Cannon in such a manner, as if he had not intended a Breach only, but to have laid the City level with the Ground; and having caused his Men to fill the Morafs and deep Ditches, he brought them on to attack the Counterscarp, and, after the Loss of a great many Men, at last took it; but the *Christians* returning soon after, valiantly beat them out again, with the Slaughter of most of them that were within it; tho' the Noise thereof coming into the *Turkish* Camp, they ran thither in such Multitudes, that the *Christians*, being weary with the Slaughter of them, and overwhelm'd on all Sides, thought fit to abandon the Place. In the mean time, the Governour, knowing the ill State of the Place, solicited the Arch-Duke for speedy Relief; but while *Russworm*, by the Arch-Duke's Order, was preparing for it, the *Bascha*, on the 29th of *August*, gave a long and terrible Assault upon the City, with which the Defendants were so weaken'd and wearied, and the Governour himself being dangerously wounded, that they beat a Parley, whereupon a Cessation of Arms ensued, and some of the chief Commanders in the mean time representing by many weighty Arguments to the Governour, the Necessity there was of surrendring, he at last agree to it, and the Capitulation was made,

Alba Regalis besieged and taken by the *Turks*.

1601. That he and his Garrison should with Bag and Baggage safely depart, with their Arms only, and no Cannon, by the Suburbs leading to *Raab*, and be brought with a Convoy half way thither. The Garrison hereupon falling to pilfer the Citizens Goods, and designing to carry as much as they could away with them, the *Tartars* at the Foot of the Breach observing the same forsaken, to the Number of 3000, immediately enter'd the Place, being soon after follow'd by the *Turks*, where there was nothing now but Rapine and Spoil committed for a while; but that ceasing, because there was no more to be had, the perfidious Wretches fell to the Massacring of the miserable *Christians*, and the Slaughter did not end till the *Basha* came and stopt it, with some Officers and Soldiers.

States of
Sweden.

Poland seeming to be the next Kingdom in our Way, and *Sigismund* being yet at least Titular King of *Sweden*, as well as *Poland*, we find he takes upon him to confirm a Treaty he had made with the *Danes* concerning the King of *Denmark's* bearing the Three Crowns in his Arms, while his Uncle *Charles*, Duke of *Sundermania*, and Governour of the Kingdom, called an Assembly of the States of *Sweden*, wherein they not only confirm'd him in the Administration, but were so far from having any Regard to King *Sigismund's* Authority, that they declar'd, among other Things, they would provide another Successor to the Crown, unless his Son *Uladislaus* came into *Sweden* by the Time limited by them: They likewise resolv'd to reform the ancient Liturgy, print the Laws of the Kingdom, and to fill up the Vacancies of the Senate.

Ticho-Brabe's Death

Thus having travers'd *Europe* for one Year, especially where any material Actions were to be met with, we conclude with the Remarkables of it, and observe, that it proved fatal to the famous *Ticho-Brabe*, who departed this Life at *Prague*, in the 55th Year of his Age: He was the Son of *Otho-Brabe*, Lord of *Knutstrop* and *Becatalbida*; born in 1546. He took wonderfully to Astrology, and was at great Expence to make new Discoveries in Astronomy; he also excell'd in Chymistry, and cured several Diseases that seem'd incurable; he had likewise a great Genius for Poetry, and

1601.

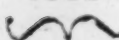
and extreemly loved Joaking, but could not abide Returns made upon him in that kind. He was so superstitious, that when he went from home, if he did but meet an old Woman, he would return, and look upon the meeting of an Hare as an ill Omen. As for his Syſtem, he makes the Earth immovable in the Center of the World, and the Sun and Moon take their Courſes round it, eſtabliſhing that ſame Globe in the mean time as the Center of the Firmament and *Primum Mobile*. The Sun he makes to be the Center of the Motion of *Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter* and *Saturn*. He travell'd much, and was highly eſteem'd and courted by the Princes of his Time. *Frederick II.* of *Denmark* gave him the Caſtle of *Urani-burg*, where he made his *Aſtronomical* Obſervations, and invented his new Syſtem: *Rodolphus II.* having offer'd him his Protection, he retired to *Prague*, and there died, as before-mention'd, of a Retention of Urine, occaſion'd by a fooliſh Reſpect to the Emperor as he rid with him in the Coach. He wrote *Progymnaſmata Aſtronomiæ inſtaurata de Mundi Aetherii Recentioribus Phenomenis, Epistoſas Aſtronomicas, &c.*

The Learned *Richard Strein*, or *Strenius*, Baron of *Strein's Austria*, and a Proteſtant, departed this Life alſo. He was well ſkill'd in the *Roman* Antiquities, which he very much illuſtrated by his Book, *De Gentibus & Familiis Romanorum*. He publiſh'd alſo ſome Diſcourſes in Defence of the Liberty of the States of *Holland*, but ſuppreſs'd his Name, that he might not offend the Princes of the Houſe of *Austria*. He writ alſo ſome Treatiſes of Divinity, and *Commonitorium de Roberti Bellarmini Scriptis atque Libris*.

1602.

Having in the preceding Year given ſome Account of the *Spaniards* Invading *Ireland*, we ſhall come now to ſhew the Manner of their Expulſion out of that Kingdom. The Lord Deputy *Montjoy* commanded *Bodley* to ſurvey the Works about *Kingsale*, to finiſh the Mount, and draw Trenches nearer the Town, which being Six Days a-doing, *d'Aquila* in the Interim ſent a Trumpet to the Lord-Deputy, deſiring to capitulate; and Sir *William Godolphin* being appointed to treat with him, *d'Aquila* took Notice, That he had found the Lord-Deputy a ſmart, but honourable

Spaniards
capitulate
and leave
Ireland.

1602.  Enemy; That the *Irish* were weak, rude and perfidious; That the Catholick King had sent him to assist Two Earls, but he now question'd whether there were now any such Earls in the World, since one Blast of War had blown one of them into *Spain*, and the other into the North of *Ireland*, where neither of them were to be found; and therefore he was willing to treat of a Peace, which might be advantageous to the *English*, and not prejudicial to the *Spaniards*, tho' he wanted nothing for a Siege, and daily expected Succours to enable him to effect what he came for. In short, 'twas agreed, That the *Spaniards* should surrender *Kingsale*, the Castle and Fort of *Baltimore*, *Berehaven* and *Castelhaven* to the Lord-Deputy, depart the Kingdom with their Lives and Effects, and Colours flying, and not to be molested by any *English* Ship in their Voyage to *Spain*; and these Articles being ratified, the *Spaniards* took the first Opportunity of returning Home.

And that they might have no Temptation to make another Descent into *Ireland*, the Queen sent a Fleet into *Spain*, which harra's'd their Coasts, and took a *Carack*, valued at a Million of Ducats, with the Loss of Five only. Indeed, *Levison* was not strong enough to master the *Spanish* Plate-Fleet of *America*, consisting of 38 Sail; but *Mounson* sailing upon their Gallies bound for *Flanders*, destroy'd some of them, while the rest made their Escape into *Dunkirk*. The *English* Merchants at this time making Complaint of the *Danes*, That they were deny'd the Liberty of Navigation into *Muscovy* by the Northern Ocean, and free Fishing upon the Coasts and Islands of the same, and that they were put under extraordinary Exactions in the *Sound* only for passing thro' it; a Treaty was set on Foot for accommodating of these Matters. The *Danes* were not only stiff in these Points, but insisted, we should not fish in the Islands and the *Norway* Seas, but upon certain Conditions, and without special Leave from their King; nay, they forbid the *English* to fish at the Isles of *Feroe*, under the same Penalty, against which Prohibition the *English* directly protested; and all that could be adjusted for the present, was, That the *Danes* promis'd effectually to intercede with the King for Ascertaining of his Toll,

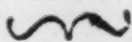
Toll, without altering the same at Pleasure : and that those Goods only should be confiscated which were conceal'd and not mark'd, with which the *English* Commissioners acquiesced, and the whole Affair was suspended to another Time, saving always the due Rights to the Queen, Kingdom, and her Subjects.

Now there happened a great Quarrel between the Jesuits and the Secular Priests in *England* ; for *Blackwel*, who was wholly at the Command of *Garnet* General of the Jesuits in *England*, usurp'd Authority over them, depriv'd them of their Faculties, and procured a *Breve* from the Pope, wherein they were declared Schismaticks and Hereticks, which they cleared themselves of by a Censure of the University of *Paris*. Publishing one Book after another, the Secular Priests highly extolled the Queen, and made it appear, That in the first Eleven Years of her Reign, there was not one Papist had his Life call'd in Question for his Religion ; and that in Ten Years after the Publication of the Bull of Pope *Pius Quintus*, and the Rebellion of the Papists, not above Twelve Priests were put to Death for Treason, till in the Year 1580. when the Jesuits first crept into *England*. Then they shewed at large, that the wicked Designs of the Jesuits confounded all, and enforced the making of Severe Laws against Papists. That after Seminaries for *English* Fugitives were made in *Spain* by the Procurement of *Parsons* an *English* Jesuit, and Fifty every Year were sent into *England* to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom. That *Parsons* excited the *Spaniards* to invade *England* and *Ireland*, and set up the *Infanta* of *Spain's* Title to the Crown of *England*. That *Holt* a Jesuit perswaded *Hesket* to raise a Rebellion, hired *Cullen*, *York*, and *Williams* to kill the Queen. That *Walpool* a Jesuit perswaded *Squire* to Poyson her : Insomuch that the Queen, whose Judgment was, that Conscience ought not to be Forced, was necessitated to use Severity, or betray her own and her Kingdoms safety. *Parsons* they reproached with being a Bastard, the Dregs of the People, and a Turbulent, Seditious Sycophant and Equivocator. The Defamatory Libels which the Jesuits made against the Queen, they condemned of Falshood, and the Authors as Traytors to God and her Majesty, and desired the *English* Papists not to send

1602.

A Quarrel between the Priests and Jesuits.

1602.



They are
banish'd.

send their Children to be Educated in the Jesuits Colleges, where they suckt in the Poyson of Treason and Rebellion with their first Rudiments.

While these Contentions were on Foot, and were encouraged by the Bishop of *London*, the Privy Council were of Opinion, that notwithstanding this pretended Animosity, they were both agreed to pervert her Majesty's Subjects, and therefore were both banished by Proclamation; and it came out but in time, for while they were managing these Disputes, *Thomas Winter* and *Tesmund*, a Jesuit, were sent over into *Spain*, where they carry'd on a dangerous Plot for cutting off *Q. Elizabeth*, and excluding *James, K. of Scots*, from his Succellion to the Crown of *England*.

Successes
against
the *Irish*.

After the *Spaniards* were driven out of *Ireland*, *Tir Owen*, in a great Fright, made haste to his Fastnesses in *Ulster*, and from thence forward could not rest in quiet, but Hunted with an evil Conscience, mistrusted every one, and continually removed from one Place to another. The Lord Deputy put his Solders into Winter Quarters, and as soon as the season of the Year would permit, he marched against the Rebels, and sent Sir *Arthur Chichester* and Sir *Henry Dockwra* to fall upon *Tir Owen*; but all approaches were so Miry, the March so troublesome, the Weather so foul, and their Guides so perfidious, that they were Forced to give over their Enterprize; yet in conclusion, the Garrisons Placed here and there by the Lord Deputy, did so vex and afflict the Rebels by often charging them, that when they saw themselves beset on every side, and that like wild Beasts, they were compelled to hide themselves in Woods and Forests, they began to submit to the Lord Deputy, striving who should be the first; complaining that *Tir Owen* for his own private Ends had exposed the Nation to ruin, and that the War was only carry'd on to serve his purposes, but was destructive in its consequence to every Body else. *Tir Owen* also finding his ill Successes had weakened the Fidelity of his Followers, and lessen'd his Forces, resolved, if it were possible, to save his own Life; therefore sent submissive Letters to the Queen and the Lord Deputy, with Prayers and Tears wherein he begged his Pardon, and giving such Signs of true Repentance, the Queen order'd the Lord-Deputy

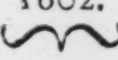
Tir-Owen
submits.

to receive him to Mercy, provided he would beg it upon his Knees with that humility and submission, that he pretended to in his Letters. Upon notice of this welcome News, *Tir Owen* repairs to Court, and being admitted into the Presence Chamber, where the Lord Deputy sat in his Chair of State, with a great Number of Swords-Men about him, he fell on his knees at the very Threshold, then advancing nearer, with a dejected Countenance said, *I acknowledge my Sin against God, and my Offence against my most gracious Queen and Sovereign Lady, to whose Royal Clemency, as to a sacred Anchor, I betake my self, offering up my Life and my Estate to be at her Disposal, whose former Bounty and present Power as I have felt, so I most humbly beseech her, that I may now taste of her Mercy, and be made an eternal Example of her Princely Clemency. My Age is not so far spent, nor my Body so feeble, nor my Mind so broken, but that by my valiant and faithful Service I may yet expiate the Sin of my Rebellion.* *Tir-Owen's* Rebellion being thus happily ended by the auspicious Conduct of the Queen, and the good Management of the Lord *Montjoy*, the Lord Deputy, we have now an Opportunity to inspect into Foreign Affairs.

This Year found the Court of *France* very jocund, there were nothing but Balls, Hunting Matches, and great Gaming: The Courtiers promised themselves a Golden Age, upon the Discovery of some Mines of Gold, Silver, Copper, and Tin; and the Parasites did not stick to say, Heaven reserved that Happiness for the Reign of *Henry* the Great, and that the Earth enamoured with his incomparable Vertues, opened her Breast to let him behold all that she had which was rich and beautiful: But the Charge proving greater than the Profit, all these Metallick Treasures vanished into Fume and Smoke.

The Alliance between *France*, the *Swiss* and *Grisons*, being expired after the Death of *Henry III.* the Agents of *Spain* endeavoured to break those People off from the *French*, particularly the Five petty Catholick Cantons: so that for some Time they had made One with them and the Duke of *Savoy*. The King now was very desirous to renew it with them, and the greatest Difficulty was to make the Treaty accord with what the King demanded upon the Foot of the old ones:

1602.

 *Sillery* thought he had overcome it, by promising the Payment of a Million of Gold Arrear ; but that being delayed, all was broke in Pieces, when *Biron* arrived at *Soleurre* this Year, and appearing there all splendid, martial and gallant, it had a great Influence over those warlike Spirits, tho' it was the Arrival of the Waggons loaden with Silver, that wholly won their Hearts. The Alliance was then renewed, to last not only during the King's Life, but also during the Life of the Dauphin. The Mareſchal crowned the Festival with a sumptuous Entertainment. This was not the least of his Services, tho' the last Day of his Glory and good Fortune ; for at his return finding *Lafin* was sent for to Court, he staid in *Burgundy* till *June* following.

Alliance
between
France
and *Swiss*
renew'd

An Edict
about
Lawyers.

About this Time happened some Commotions in *Guyenne* and *Languedoc* concerning the Continuance of Taxes; and while the King was in *Poitou*, the Parliament ordained that all sorts of Lawyers, pursuant to the 161st Article of the Estates at *Blois*, should at the end of all their Briefs set down the Particulars of all the Fees they had received, and give a Certificate of what they had gained of their Clients by their Pleadings; and in case of refusal, they were forbid to exercise their Profession, upon Pain and loss of Life and Estate. A great many of them would relinquish their Functions, rather than comply, and so the Matter at last came to nothing.

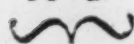
The King all this while was afraid of some intestine Troubles, and Dangers from the Intrigues of the *Spaniards*: Intimations he had already of *Biron's* Design; and therefore when he was come Back to *Fontainebleau*, he would needs have *Lafin*, who was privy to the whole Secret, brought before him. He was discontented before; the Ground they lay'd it upon, was that *Biron* with his own Hand had written a Project of the Conspiracy, and having given it *Lafin* to transcribe in his Presence, he afterwards rolled up the Original between his Hands like a Ball, and threw it into the Fire; but *Biron* not minding it farther, *Lafin* cunningly pulled it out again, and put it into his Pocket. Whatever his Intentions were at first, it's likely the Mareſchal was inclin'd to give all over upon the Delivery of the Queen of a Son; for in one
of

of his Letters to *Lafin* he said, That since God had bestowed a Dauphin upon the King, he would think no more of his Former Follies, and prayed him to return. *Biron* endeavoured to dissuade *Lafin* from going to Court, and required him to burn his Papers; but *Lafin* discovered all to the King, and gave him his Papers and Letters, with the Names of the Conspirators, amongst whom he involved so many Persons of Quality, even *Rhosny*, that the King was much astonished, and the Cabinet Council thought fit to disclose the Matter no further than as it concerned *Biron*, at least for the Present. There were Divers Artifices used before this to draw the Marechal to Court, but a noble Lord, his intimate Friend, gave him secret intimation to go into the *Franche Comte*, he being no longer safe in *Burgundy*; but he would take the other fatal Course, and arrived the 4th, of *June* at *Fountainbleau*. Here he found Things look with a dark Countenance upon him: His Sister the Countess of *Roussy* admonished him of the Danger, and wished him to make his Escape; but there was no need of it, if he had been ingenuous, and confessed the Whole, for the King generously resolved to pardon him: He therefore made Three several Attempts to perswade him to own the Truth freely, and sincerely assured him of a full and real Pardon, and told him, that what he desired to be informed in from his own Mouth, was not for want of other Evidence, but to save his Reputation, and keep the Knowledge of it from any but himself. But the Marechal would by no Means nor Argument comply; and therefore the King resolved to abandon him to Justice, but first communicated the Proofs he had to his Cabinet Council: Yet the good King was still loth to come to extremity; and therefore at Night in his Closet he made another Effort upon the Marechal, who was so far from complying, that he arrogantly replied, *That this was to press an honest Man too far*. So that the King at the same Time touched with Sorrow and Indignation, left him, saying, *Since you will reveal nothing, adieu, Biron*. In short, he was seized by *Vitry*, as he went out from thence, and carried next Day to *Paris*, where the Parliament was ordered to prosecute him. I will not here traduce his Memory, as some have done, with his ill Carriage and Demean-

Biron's
Conspira-
cy disco-
ver'd.

Biron
seiz'd.

1602.



Biron con-
demn'd.

Executed.

His Cha-
racter.

out during his Confinement and Examination. However, it was acknowledged when he was brought before the Parliament it self, he pleaded as he had fought, that is, he did Wonders; and besides the Reasons and Arguments he used for his Innocency, he added so lively a Representation of his brave Actions, and so many Motives of Compassion, that it drew Tears from the Eyes of some of the Judges, who would then perhaps have acquitted him; but being adjourned to another Day, the King sent an Order to them under the Great Seal, revoking the Pardon he had given the Mareschal by word of Mouth at *Lyons*, a very odd Thing; and then the Judges unanimously declared him guilty of high Treason, and adjudged him to lose his Head: In pursuance of which, on the last of *July*, about Noon, the Chancellor, with some others went to the *Bastile* to put the Sentence in execution, at the sight of whom *Biron* cried out, he was a dead Man, and asked if there was no Pardon. They gave a very odd Account of his Demeanour at his Death; one while he railed, another while he begg'd for Mercy: But having brought him at last into a Condition to hear his Sentence pronounced, he did it patiently, but excepted against those Words of *having conspired against the Person of the King*, crying out *That was false*, and persisted in it to his very Death, The fatal Stroke being given, his Corps was interr'd in the Church of *St. Paul*, attended with a vast Confluence of People from all Parts. He was a Person of a middle Stature, corpulent, had black Hair beginning to turn grey; his Physiognomy was cloudy and ominous, his Conversation rough, his Eyes sunk in his Head, which was little: His Designs were extravagant, his Conduct giddy, and he had such a Foolish Inclination to Gaming, that he lost in one Year above 500000 Crowns. But let them say all the Ill they can of him, he was certainly a gallant Man, and deserved a better Fate and Usage from a Master for whom he had performed so many signal Services.

The Baron of *Fontenelles*, and *Montbarot* Governour of *Renes* were apprehended as Confederates with *Biron*: The first was condemned to be broke alive upon the Wheel. The Count *d' Auvergne* was not detained a Prisoner above Two Months after *Biron's* Death, but re-

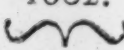
received into Favour by the powerful Intercession of the Marchioness of *Verneuil*, his Sister. The Marechal de *Bouillon* thought it more safe for him to be at large and acquit himself at a Distance; and therefore he appeared before the *Cambre my Partie* at *Castres*, and offered to justify himself there to them, whom he pretended to be his natural Judges. However it were, he drew from them an Act of Comparition (for which the King was very angry with them) and engaged the Reform'd Churches to write in his Favour to the King, and afterwards retired to *Geneva* and *Germany*. Towards the End of the Year, the Prince of *Jonville* was apprehended for negotiating some Contract with the *Spaniards*, and only committed to the Custody of the Duke of *Guise*, his elder Brother. The *Swiss* and *Grisons* now renew their Alliance with *France*, and 'twas confirm'd to them, That the Protestant Canton Troops should not be obliged to serve against those of their own Religion; and that the lesser Cantons should continue their Alliance with *Milan* and *Savoy*, provided 'twas not prejudicial to that newly made with the King. Sometime after this came out an Edict against Duelling, and Complaint being made, That Strangers melted down the Gold and Silver, and carry'd it out of the Kingdom, the King was unadvisedly perswaded to raise his Coin from 60 Sols the Gold Crown to 65, Francs worth 20 Sols to 21 and 4 Deniers, and so on in Proportion.

French
Coin
raised.

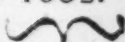
Geneva run a great Risque this Year of being surpriz'd in a nocturnal *Escalado* by *Charles Emanuel*, Duke of *Savoy*, to which Place he and his Family made long Pretensions; but the same was happily defeated by them, and their Religion and Liberties saved: And *Elizabeth, Q. of England*, to shew the great Regard she had for the Welfare and Support of this City, the Nursery of the Reform'd Religion, order'd a voluntary Contribution to be made in her Dominions, wherein both the Prelates and People were very liberal, and a great Sum was raised, and transmitted thither. In *Italy* the Marquess de *Fueutes* having corrupted the *Lanskeneghils*, that were in Garrison in *Fiinal*, made himself Master of the Place, as he did also of *Milefino*, without any just Cause or Provocation given.

The

1602.


 The War went on in *Hungary* with various Successes, and the *Christians* having first taken, and the *Turks* retaken *Alba Regalis* last Year, left Things in a kind of *Equilibrium*, tho', indeed, the *Turks* seem'd by the last Blow to have the better; for, besides 3000 *Christians* slain in that Place, the Captains, that were spared, were led Prisoners to *Constantnoiple*, as was also the brave Count *Ysolan*, notwithstanding all the just Remonstrances he made against it; and the *Turks* having repair'd the Breaches, and placed a strong Garrison of 6000 Men in it, over-ran all the Country as far as *Gran*; and *Hassan*, with his Army, hastened to *Constantinople*. 'Twas not long after his Departure, but the *Christians*, endeavouring to retrieve their Loss and Disgrace, to the Number of 20000, going down the *Danube* towards *Buda*, they first broke down the Bridge between *Buda* and *Pest*, by the Device of a Ship, that with great Violence run down against it, and while the *Turks* were running in Heaps out of the Water-City, to the Defence thereof, Count *Shults* on the other Side by Land, with a Petard, blew up one of the Gates of Lower *Buda*, and so entering, and killing all before him, fell upon the Backs of the *Turks* at the Bridge, many of whom he slew, and drove the rest into the River, where they perish'd, which made all the *Turks* flee into the Upper Town: Then by a Device, not unlike the other, they attack'd and took *Pest*, where they found good store of Wealth, and having left a good Garrison therein, return'd to besiege the Castle and Upper City of *Buda*, which they carried on partly by Battery, and partly by Mining, and in the mean while defeated a Body of *Turks*, drawn out of the Neighbouring Garrisons to relieve it. But the *Visier Basha*, in his Way to *Constantinople*, hearing the Danger this important Place was in, he suddenly and hastily return'd, and sat down before *Pest*, and divers brave Attempts were made here, and on the *Christians* Side to carry their Point: Divers sharp Skirmishes happen'd between the Garrison of *Pest* and the *Turks*, who had not lain long before the Place, but they were necessitated, because of the great Scarcity that crept into their Camp, by reason of the *Visier's* sudden Return thither, to raise the Siege, and to depart directly for *Belgrade*; immediately

1602.



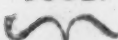
diately after whose Departure, *Nadaſti*, with 5000 Men, and ſome Pieces of Cannon going down the *Danube*, took *Adom* and *Teldwar*; but while *Nadaſti* was thus employ'd, the *Chriſtians* hearing that the *Turks* had got an Army of 30000 Men together to relieve the Place, they drew together into the Water-Town, while the *Turkiſh* Garrifon took the Opportunity to poſſeſs themſelves of their Trenches and Tents, and held them for Two Hours, till at length they were beaten back again into the City; and while divers Rencounters happen'd in the adjacent Parts, ſtill to the Diſadvantage of the *Turks*, the Beſiegers having beaten down a ſtrong Tower next the *Danube*, they were a little before Night about to have entred there, when ſuddenly there aroſe ſuch a Storm of Wind and Rain, that they could not poſſibly uſe their Arms, and the ſame was no ſooner over, but 2000 *Turkiſh* Horſe and Foot making a ſudden Salley, fell upon the *Stirian* Horſe; but tho' they were beaten back with Loſs, yet they came out again the Two ſucceeding Days, by which, and other Accidents, they gain'd ſome time to repair their Breaches again. And now the *Chriſtians* at length, having certain Information that the *Tartars* were come as far as *Temefwaer*, in order to relieve *Buda*, they thought fit to raiſe the Siege, and at the ſame time abandon'd *Adom*, leaving the *Turks* to make mighty Rejoycings there, and their Friends having prepared what Convoy they could for their Support, the Garrifons of *Conorra* and *Gran* having Intelligence of it, they ſet upon it between *Alba Regalis* and *Buda*, and took it.

Chriſtians
quit the
Siege of
Buda.

The Northern Affairs continue in a perplexed State; what K. *Sigifmond* did with *Denmark*, in reſpect to the Three Crowns, was little regarded by the *Swedes*, whoſe Commiſſioners meeting with thoſe of *Denmark* upon the Frontiers, they had not only great Conteſts about that Buſineſs, but alſo about *Lapland* and *Sonneberg*; however, they agreed to ſettle it upon the Foot of the Treaty of *Stetin*, tho' it was ſtill put off from time to time, till at length it broke out into an open War in 1611. as you'll hear in due place. In the mean time, during the Seſſions of the States of *Sweden*, already mentioned, Duke *Charles* the Governour ſtaid at *Fenkepin*, in order to have

D

early

1602.  early Notice of the Success of their Negotiation, and at the same time let the States of *Gothland* (which he had then convocated) know, that *Sigismund* had lost all his Pretensions to the Crown. Among the Members of the Assembly was *Joram Pozes*, who came out of Prison but a little before: But upon Notice that King *Sigismund's* Valet had left his Master, and fled into *Sweden*, he was apprehensive he might discover, that he was still engaged in that Prince's Interest; and with this Apprehension he retired to *Poland*, and there ended his Days. It was allged, he was the Person that advised the King to prefer *Demetrius* to the Crown of *Muscovy*, and that, by his Help, he might be in a Capacity not only to recover *Finland* and *Estonia*, but even *Sweden* it self. Whatever the Matter was, 'tis certain the *Poles* gave *Demetrius* an honourable and magnificent Reception, and promised to prefer him to the Throne; and in Recompence of that generous Offer, he assured them of his Assistance against *Sweden*. This *Demetrius* they gave out to be the Son of *John Basiovit*, whereas the *Swedes* knew him to be a Cheat and an Impostor. At length he marched from *Poland* to *Muscovy* at the Head of a strong Army: of which more hereafter. Let us now visit the *Netherlands* in our Return Home. The Siege of *Ostend* still continu'd, and the greater the Difficulty appear'd of bringing it to an End, the more resolute was the Arch Duke in his Endeavours to draw it to a Period; and while they were diligently raising new Works against it by Land, *Frederick Spinola* continually scour'd the Sea-Coast with a Squadron of Gallies he had a little before brought with him out of *Spain*; and his elder Brother, the Marquess *Ambrosio Spinola*, being arriv'd now in the *Low-Countries* with 8000 Foot, raised in *Italy*, they thought to make quick Work of it: But Things do not always succeed as Men imagine; the Besieged continued to make a brave Defence, and Prince *Maurice* having drawn an Army together of 24000 Foot, and 6000 Horse, with a suitable Train of Artillery, and other Necessaries, after many Feints, sat down before *Grave*, and attacking the Place with much Vigour, the *Spaniards* attempted in vain to put Succours into it; and so the Place fell into the Prince's Hands,

The Siege
of *Ostend*.

Pr. Mau-
rice be-
sieges and
takes
Grave.

Hands, with which the Campaign ended for this Year. 1602.

1603.

Now return we for *England*, where a melancholy Scene appears; for Queen *Elizabeth*, who had hitherto enjoy'd a perfect Health, began in her Climacterical Year, the 70th of her Age, to be sensible of the Infirmities of old Age, by a general Weakness and Indisposition that had lately seiz'd upon her, and therefore remov'd from *Westminster* to her Palace at *Richmond*, that she might enjoy a better Air, and more freely attend the Service of God and the Salvation of her Soul. And here commanding her Inauguration Ring to be filed off her Finger, because it was grown into the Flesh, and was painful, it was look'd upon as an ill Omen, and that the Marriage between her and the Kingdom was dissolving. Her Sickneſs began by a Swelling in her Throat, but that soon abated: Then by Degrees her Appetite fail'd; she had no Relish of any thing she eat, wholly resign'd herself to Melancholy, and seem'd afflicted with some peculiar Grief, that all, except herself, were ignorant of the Cause of: But whether occasion'd by the Violence of her Distemper, the Loss of the Earl of *Essex* (as his Friends perswaded themselves) or that, after so great Expences in the *Irish War*, she was prevail'd upon to pardon *Tir-Owen*, or that many of the Nobility declined their Duty to her to worship the Rising Sun, I will not take upon me to determine; tho', to their Reproach be it spoken, she saw herself but ill attended in her Sickneſs, and forsaken by all, but 3 or 4 Persons, which she was not insensible of, and therefore Grief and Indignation made her say, *They have yoked my Neck; I have none that I can trust: My Condition is strangely turn'd upside down.* In the Beginning of *March* her Melancholy encreased, and a Forwardneſs, familiar to old Age, seiz'd upon her, she would sit silent and not endure any Talk, unless it were with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with whom she often pray'd with great Fervency and Devotion, until, by Degrees, her Speech fail'd, and then heard him pray by her with great Attention. Now, the Lord-Admiral telling the rest of the Privy-Council what the Queen had sometime said to him about the

1603.

She names
her Suc-
cessor, and
dieth.

Succession, they all thought fit, that he, with the Lord-Keeper and the Secretary of State, should wait upon her, and, in the Name of the rest of the Council, understand her Pleasure concerning her Successor. The Queen made Answer, with her gasping Breath, *I said, that my Throne was the Throne of Kings, and that I would not have any mean Person succeed me.* The Secretary asking her, what she meant by these Words? *I will,* said she, *that a King succeed me: And who should that be but my nearest Kinsman, the King of Scots?* Then being put in mind by the Archbishop to think on God, *That I do,* said she, *nor does my Mind wander from Him:* And when she could no longer pray articulately, with Hands and Eyes lifted up to Heaven, she directed the Thoughts of her pious Heart to God, and pray'd, by sorrowing inwardly that she could not pray vocally, as was observ'd by the Signs she made to her Attendants, when she could speak no longer. And, on the 24th of March, peaceably resign'd her pious Soul to God, having reign'd 44 Years, 4 Months, and in the 70th Year of her Age, to which no King of England ever attain'd before nor since.

Her Character.

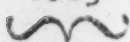
As to her Person, she had but little of a regular Beauty in her Face, but that was well proportion'd, and in the main very agreeable. Her Mein and Gate were noble, and in every thing she said or did there was something of Majesty, that wrought both Love and Reverence. In her Features, Person and Mein, she had more of King Henry VIII. than of the unfortunate Anna Bulloin; but they were his good, and not his ill Qualities. Her Youth was a continued Scene of Afflictions; but this was her Happiness, that she was too young to understand them. Her Brother King Edward took care of her Education, and her Improvement in good Literature was a sufficient Requitall. Queen Mary's Hereditary Aversion to her, upon the Account of their Mothers, and the inveterate Malice of the Popish Priests upon the Account of her Religion, had certainly overthrown her, if King Philip had not preserv'd her Life to be the Scourge of Spain, and the Terroure of the Romanists.

Her

Her Reign was long and glorious, she was the Darling of her People, the Dread of her Enemies, and so happy in the Choice of her Ministers, that Success attended most of her Enterprizes. She had the Art of pleasing her Parliaments, and had little Trouble in doing it; for they were composed of such grave and discreet Persons, that were Strangers to Faction and Ambition; such as came to the House, not to shew their Spleen, but to consult the common Good, and rather to comply than to contend with her Majesty; so that the Queen and they had ever the good Fortune to part in Love, she having first her Supplies, and they next what they desired. She was very sparing in conferring Honours, yet had always a Way to reward Merit, without proclaiming it. She found the Nation poor, but left it rich; and nothing seems to reflect upon her Memory, but the Death of *Mary*, Queen of *Scots*, of which so much has been said *Pro* and *Con*, that nothing shall be added, but that they both deserv'd to be pitied, the one for her Sufferings, and the other for being the Cause of them. But all that has been said in Commendation of this excellent Queen, was never intended so much for a full Character of her and her Councils, as to set out the great and visible Blessings of God that attended her, the many Preservations she had, and that by such Discoveries, as both saved her Life and secured her Government, and the unusual Happiness of her whole Reign, which raised her to the Esteem and Envy of that Age, and the Wonder of all Posterity. It was admired, indeed, that a Virgin Queen should rule such a Kingdom for above 44 Years, with such constant Success, with so great Tranquility at Home, with a vast Encrease of Wealth, with so much Glory Abroad, and improved our Naval Power to that Degree, that she died with an uncontroll'd Dominion of the Seas, and Arbitress of Christendom: All which may justly be esteem'd to have been the peculiar Rewards of Heaven, crowning that Reign with so much Honour and Triumph, that was begun with the Establishment of the true Religion.

Tho' upon the Queen's Death a strict Command *W. James* was given to keep the Gates of the Palace shut, yet comes to Sir *Robert Carew* found a Way out to carry the News the Crown

1603.



All Parties make
their
Court.

to carry the News to the King of Scots, who, about Nine in the Morning the same Day, was proclaim'd King, by the Name of *James I.* The King no sooner receiv'd News of his being proclaim'd, but he sends Sir *Roger Ashton*, a Native of *England*, to the Lords of the Council, to make Provision for his Journey and his Reception at Court: And now the Great Ones strive who shall be most obsequious to their new King, and court their happy Hopes. The King took his Journey thro' the North, and was magnificently treated in all Places, and the Multitude, still admiring a Change, made the Heavens eccho with their loud and repeated Acclamations, which a plain and honest Scotch Man observing, he said, *By my Saoul these People will spoil a gude King*; and, indeed, if what *Stow* says in his Annals of the first of his Reign, be true, he stumbled at the very Threshold, and made a very early Discovery of his Disposition to Arbitrary Power, when he came to *Newark*, for being told, That a Fellow had cut a Purse there, his Majesty, without any legal Process, sign'd a Warrant to the Sheriff of *Lincolnshire* to hang him, which was accordingly executed. The King, not accusom'd to such Shouting, and tired with the Croud, restrain'd them by Proclamation, that he might enjoy his Recreation in Hunting as he pass'd along, without these noisie Interruptions. At *Theobald's*, Secretary *Cecil's* House, he was met by the Lord-Chancellor *Egerton*, the Lord *Buckhurst*, Treasurer, the Lord *Nottingham*, Admiral, all of the deceased Queen's Council; and no Order of Men or Parties omitted paying their Court to him. The Bishops made thir Devoirs, to strengthen themselves against the Party that opposed the Hierarchy, and the Nonconformists complemented him, in Hopes of his Favour; between whom the King carried it smoothly, in Hopes to please them both, not leaving out the Papists, whom he also clos'd with, by taking the Lord *Thomas* and the Lord *Henry Howard* into his Council, who were Son and Brother to the late Duke of *Norfolk*, who suffer'd for his Mother. On these he also heap'd Honours, making the Son Earl of *Sussex* and the Brother Earl of *Northampton*, which almost intoxicated the Popish Party with Hopes of an Alteration in Religion.

Here



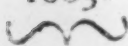
Here the *English* made their Court to the *Scots* that were most in Favour, and there the *Scots* laid the Foundation of their *English* Fortunes; the Chief of whom was Sir *George Hume*, who being privy to the Intrigues of *Gowry's* Conspiracy, was seldom denied any thing he ask'd of the King, for fear he should cackle: For now many of the *English* believ'd as little of the *Gowry's* Conspiracy, as the *Scots* themselves did; it being so improbable a Thing in it self, and attended with so many inconsistent Circumstances, that it was utterly disbeliev'd at the Time it was said to have been attempted, tho' the next Age swallow'd that Story for Truth, which their Ancestors took for a meer Fiction.

Now Ambassadors flock into *England* with Complements of Congratulation to the new King: The first that came was from the *Palsgrave* of the *Rhine*, presently after another from the *States* of *Holland* and *Zealand*, another from the *Arch-Duke* of *Austria*, another from the *King* of *Spain*, from the *Seigniory* of *Venice*, from the *Duke* of *Florence*, and last of all *Monsieur de Rosney* from the *French King*; all congratulating his Accession to the Crown of *England*: For Entertainment of which Ambassadors, and all others that should come after, the King constituted an Officer, by the Name of *Master of the Ceremonies*, allowing him 200*l.* a Year Fee; and the first that had the Place was Sir *Lewis Lukener*, a Gentleman of good Parts, and very skilful in the Neighbouring Languages.

Now happen'd so great a Plague in *London*, that the King, to shun the Contagion, left the Metropolis, and retir'd to the *Earl* of *Pembroke's*, at *Wilton*; and this Year broke out a kind of Treason, that no Body knew what to make of, and was left under so dark a Comment, that Posterity could never understand it since. 'Tis true, some lost their Lives for it; yet the World was never satisfied of the Justice of the Matter, and Sir *Walter Raleigh*, (the only Mark of Tyranny in this King's Reign) was beheaded many Years after, without all President, and, as most Men thought, without any just Cause, and seemingly against the King's Will, who in many Things was ever-aw'd by his Fears and timorous Disposition; but the *Spanish*

Sir *Walter Raleigh's*
hard Mea-
sure.

1603



Gold and Faction betray'd his Life, and perhaps, it was one of the greatest Master-pieces of that Ambassador to purchase *Rawleigh's* Head; yet, had not *Bristol* co-operated, the King would have never consented, and, it may be, that Lord served his own Ends in it, fearing *Rawleigh's* extraordinary Parts might once again have rais'd him to have look'd over *Sherborn Castle*, which was once his own; and how unjustly taken from him the World knew, tho' they durst not talk of it then.

Cobham's Conspiracy. As to the Particulars of the Conspiracy; the Earl of *Southampton*, who had been long bury'd in *Essex's* Ruins, was now deliver'd from the *Tower*, and the King looking graciously upon him, 'twas said, it displeased the new Baron of *Essington*, *Sir Robert Cecil*, and much more the Lord *Cobham*, the Lord *Grey* and *Sir Walter Rawleigh*; and being also discharged from their Attendance at Court, 'tis said, they broke out into a Conspiracy, and associating themselves with Two *Romish* Priests, and other discontented Persons, design'd to set up the Lady *Arabella*, to alter Religion, and subvert the Government, and had already divided the best Places among themselves. The Lord *Grey* was to seize upon the King and Prince. *Sir Walter Rawleigh* was to treat with Count *Aremberg* for procuring Money, and the Lord *Cobham* was to go to the Arch-Duke, and the King of *Spain*, to gain their Assistance. For these pretended Crimes they were arraign'd, and found guilty of High-Treason at *Winchester*. *George Brook*, the Lord *Cobham's* Brother, and the Two Priests suffer'd, and the rest were received to Mercy; but this Conspiracy was such a Mixture of Persons, Protestants, Papists and Atheists, that none knew what to make of it; but 'twas generally accounted a Trick of State to weaken a Party. The greatest Evidence against *Rawleigh* was *Cobham's* Accusation, which he only desired might appear *Viva Voce*, and he would yield without further Defence; but his Enemies knew *Cobham* would not, nor could not accuse him; for they were sensible that Accusation was procured after this Manner: *Cobham* was tamper'd with by *Wade*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, and *Salisbury's* great Confident, to accuse *Rawleigh*, but he refused it. *Wade* desired it under his Hand, that he denied also.

At

At last *Wade* desir'd *Cobham* to set his Hand to a Blank, and he being a weak Man consented to it; to which *Wade* wrote the Accusation, as will appear hereafter; for *Salisbury* urging *Rawleigh* often, if *Cobham* had accused him under his Hand, would he then confess it? *Rawleigh* reply'd, he knew *Cobham* was a weak Man and knew not how far he might be wrought upon, but was confident he would not accuse him to his Face, and therefore had no reason to venture his Life upon it. On this Defence he insisted till Nine at Night; at last his Fate carried him against his Reason, and he consented upon producing *Cobham's* Hand he would yield, then immediately that Paper was produced, which in Truth was his Hand, but the Contents was *Wade's* contrivance; as will now appear.

That excellent Princess *Queen Ann* being desperately sick of a Disease that her Physicians thought incurable; *Sir Walter Rawleigh* being an excellent Chymist, and Master of all kinds of Learning, undertook and performed the Cure; for which he would receive no other reward, but that his Majesty would send certain Lords to the Tower to examine the Lord *Cobham*, Whether he had at any Time under his Hand accused him of Treason. The King, at the Queen's request, and in Justice he could do no less, sends Six Lords, which for the Honour of their Families shall be nameless, to make enquiry of Him: *Cobham* protests he never did, and could not accuse him: But, said he, that Villain *Wade* did often solicit me to do it, but not prevailing, got me by a Trick to write my Name upon a Piece of White Paper, and if any Charge appeared against *Sir Walter Rawleigh* under my Hand, it was forged by that Villain *Wade*, by writing something above my Hand, without my consent or Knowledge. These Six returning to the King, made one of them their Spokesman who, said, Sir, My Lord *Cobham* has confirmed all that ever he wrote or said; which was an Equivocation, for 'tis true, he made good whatever he writ, but he wrote nothing to accuse *Sir Walter Rawleigh*. Thus was the King abused, and *Rawleigh* Trick'd out of his Life and Estate by the Malice of his Enemies.

This

1603.

The King
and Queen
crown'd.

A Creati-
on of No-
bility.

Fr. King
goes to
Metz.

This Year, tho' a great Plague broke out in *London*, whereof above 30000 died, yet in the Heat of the Contagion, on the 25th of *July*, being *St. James's Day*, the King and his Wife Queen *Ann* were both crown'd at *Westminster*. A little before this, the Prince was install'd Knight of the Garter, the Earl of *Southampton* and the young Earl of *Essex* were restor'd in Blood, and Honours so profusely scatter'd, that some Men were tempted to accuse the King's Politicks, and thought he weaken'd his own Interest. The *Scots* he brought with him wanted Means more than Honour, and the *English* he found here wanted Honour more than Means, and therefore supplied both their Wants with a liberal Hand. Sir *Robert Cecil* was made Baron of *Essington*, and soon after Viscount *Cranborn* and Earl of *Salisbury*; Sir *Robert Sidney* Baron of *Penhurst*, and not long after Viscount *Lisle*; Sir *William Knolles*, Baron of *Greys*; Sir *Edward Wotton*, Baron of *Morley*; Sir *Tho. Egerton*, Baron of *Elsmere*; Sir *William Russel*, Baron of *Thornough*; Sir *Henry Grey*, Baron of *Grooby*; Sir *John Petre*, Baron of *Writtle*; *John Harrington*, Baron of *Exton*; *D'Anvres*, Baron of *Dantzy*; Sir *Thomas Gerrard*, Baron of *Gerrards Bromley*; Sir *Robert Spencer*, Baron of *Wormleighton*; the Lord *Buckhurst*, Lord-Treasurer, he made Earl of *Dorset*; and his old Servant Sir *George Hume*, Earl of *Dunbar*.

Tir-Owen being by this Time come over into *England*, he had not only his Pardon, but many Civilities were used to gain him, the Edge of the People's Hatred being taken off by a Proclamation (of which the King was never no Niggard) that no Body should shew him the least Disrespect. Thus the old Year running out in *England*, we'll see what has been doing all this while upon the Continent; and beginning again with *France*, we find the King and Queen in *March* went to *Metz*, she having in *November* before been deliver'd of her first Daughter; and the chief Motive of this Journey was to discover what Practices *Bouillon* might possibly have contrived with the Protestants of *Germany*, and secure the City of *Metz*, which being at that Time in a great Combustion, might have sided with some other Party; but the King quickly brought it into a good State of Settlement.

Here

from 1600. to the Treaty of Nimeguen.

43

1603.

Here we are to observe, that ever since the King's Absolution at *Rome*, the Jesuits labour'd hard to be re-establish'd in *France*; but their vile Practices in *England*, *Venice*, and elsewhere, retarded it. However, as the King pass'd by *Verdun*, the Rector and Fathers of the College in that City, encouraged by *la Varenne*, petition'd the King, That the Decree of the Parliament of *Paris* might not extend to hinder their Children from studying in the Jesuits College. They had a favourable Answer, and being encouraged therewith, they sent *Armand*, their Provincial, and some others, to *Metz*, to pursue it farther, and managed the Affair so well, that the King gave at last his positive Word they should be restor'd, commanded the Provincial to come to him at *Paris*, and bring Father *Cotton* with him; after which he very kindly dismiss'd them. While he tarry'd in this City, he had Letters from the Elector Palatine in favour of *Bouillon*, and was waited upon by the Landgrave of *Hesse*, Dukes of *Newburg*, *Deux Ponts*, and *John George* of *Brandenburg*, who had contested with the Cardinal of *Lorain* about the Bishoprick of *Strasburg* ever since 1592. and all that the King did was rather to suspend than decide the Controverſie, by sharing the Revenue between them. The King went from *Metz* to *Nancy*, to visit his Sister the Dutcheſs of *Bar*, and design'd to have staid longer in those Parts to draw as many Princes of *Germany* as he could to unite, so as not to be oppress'd by the Grandeur of the House of *Austria*; but the Death of our Glorious *Elizabeth*, Q. of *England*, on the 24th of *March*, made him suddenly leave that Place, and return to *Paris*, from whence he sent *Rosney*, who was a Protestant, and before-mention'd, his Ambassador into *England*, to congratulate King *James*, and to require of that Prince the Continuation of his Friendship, and to sound his Mind in respect to the House of *Austria*, and other Alliances. In short, he brought back a Treaty made the 25th of *June*, whereby King *James* in his own, and *Rosney* in that of the French King's Name, promised to renew and strengthen the ancient and never-interrupted Alliances between *France* and *Scotland*, and those between the late Queen and *Henry IV.* That a League should be concluded between the Two Kings, for the Defence of their and France

Returns
to Paris.

League
between
England
and France

1603.

their respective Dominions, Persons and Subjects, and of their Allies, especially of the *United-Provinces*, whom they should forthwith powerfully assist with Forces, which should be raised in *England*, but paid by *France*, the one half by way of Deduction for what Money was owing to the *English* : That if either the one or the other were attacked by the *Spaniard*, his Ally should assist him with a Land Army, or a Fleet of Ships, at the Choice of him who should be so assaulted, which should consist at least of 6000 Men : That if both at the same Time should be assaulted, or become Assailants, each on his Part should make War upon the common Enemy.

K. Henry
sets up di-
vers Ma-
nufactu-
ries.

Before this Treaty the King had been troubled with a Stoppage of Urine ; but being cured of that, he applied himself to his Buildings ; and to make Money circulate better, he thought Trade was the best Means, and therefore he erected Chambers for that purpose. He knew he was not potent enough at Sea, and so he set up Divers Sorts of Manufactures, as Tapestries by the Means of some *Flemish* Artists, gilt Leather Hangings, Mills to work and cleave Iron, Gauſes and thin Linens, Earthen-Wares, Glass-Houses for Chryſtalline, Cloth and Serges, Stuffs and Silks, in Divers Parts of the Kingdom ; but above all he was intent upon the Silken Manufactory, and therefore he treated with certain Undertakers, who built several Places for the breeding of Silk-Worms, sent every Year into *Spain* for the Eggs, and gave order for the Planting a great many Mulberry-Trees, whose Leaves serve them for Food.

K. Henry's
Trials.

King Henry, about this Time, was not a little disturbed with the Jealousies of his Queen, the Malice of Mistresses, and the Heats of the Count of *Soissons*, who being much offended that *Rhosny* had refused to allow him a certain Impost upon Linen, which he had begged of the King ; this with the false Reports made to him by the Marchioness of *Verneuil*, caus'd him to talk of nothing but the killing of *Rhosny*, and the King could never allay his Passion, till he obliged *Rhosny*, to disown what he was accused of to have said of the Count, under his Hand, and offer to fight any Man that durst maintain the contrary. But these and the like Broilleries were not all this King's Trials, he had

had much to do with his own Ministers, who being animated with a Zeal against the *Hugonots*, and too much perswaded of the *Spanish* Grandeur, endeavour'd to divide him from the Protestants, to reduce him to an entire Submission to the Pope, to bring in the Jesuits, and to unite him with *Spain* and *Rome*, thereby to extirpate *Calvinism* from all his Territories. *Taxil*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, offered him all the Forces of *Spain*, and many Arguments to induce him to it; but he could by no Means be brought to it.

1603.
~~~~~

About the beginning of *October* the Reformed held a Synod at *Gap* in *Dauphine*, where they made several Reglements, more particularly, that the Word of God should be the sole Foundation of their Theology and Sermons: That those Scholastick Disputes wont to be used in their Synods, should be sent back to their Schools: That they should have no Effigies upon their Tombs, nor Coats of Arms nor Escutcheons in their Temples. They likewise enacted Divers other Things for the Maintenance and good Order of their Colleges and Academies, and the instituting of Seminaries and Libraries in each Province. One of their main Designs was to reconcile the *Lutherans* with the *Zuinglians* and *Calvinists*; but failing in that, they agreed that the Pope was the Antichrist, and in that quality should be inserted in their Confession (tho' oppos'd by the Great *Scaliger*, chiefly from a regard to the Moderation of *Clement VIII.* then in the Paper Chair) at which the King, and more particularly the Clergy of *France*, were not a little disturbed.

A Synod  
of the Re-  
formed  
held in  
*France*.

*France* did not more flourish thro' the Continuance of Peace with her Neighbours, than poor *Hungary* and other Parts suffer'd by the War, where the *Turks* having, out of their Garrisons, drawn together an Army of 18000 Men, designed to make Incursions into the *Christian* Territories, which *Collonitz*, Governour for the Emperor in those Parts, being aware of, he speedily drew together into the Suburbs of *Quermeng* a good Body of Men, and made such Preparation every where else for their Reception, that the *Turks* seem'd to be very shy of him every where. *Buda* being distress'd about this Time for want of Provision, the adjacent Garrisons of the *Turks* having provided 200 Waggon Load at *Alba Regalis*, with a Convoy of

6000

1603.

Convoy  
to Buda  
taken and  
retaken  
divers  
times.

6000 Men to bring it safe to them, the Garrisons of *Gran* and *Comorra* being advertised hereof, and combining together, charged them so home, that they came to handy Blows. The *Turks*, indeed, were more in Number, but the *Christian* Horse being for the most part *Hussars*, and the Foot pressing hard upon the Enemy, they at length gain'd the Waggon, and the *Turks* were almost all cut in Pieces: But the Garrison of *Buda* understanding what happen'd, and that the Provision designed for them was lost, they, animated with Hunger, and eager of Revenge, came with that Fury upon the *Christians*, that they put them to Flight, and recover'd the Waggon again. Yet see the Vicissitude of human Things, for the *Turks* had not been long Masters of their Store, but the Garrison of *Pest*, to the Number of 2000, having waylaid and surpriz'd them by a Forest, made them, to save their Lives, quit quickly their Stores, tho' many of them were first slain, and others taken Prisoners. There were various other Adventures happen'd between the Garrisons of *Buda* and *Pest*, with different Successes; but the Frost still continuing, very much distressed them both for want of Victuals; however, at length the *Turks* having receiv'd a Convoy of 50 Waggon, rejoiced mightily thereat; and the Garrison in that Jollity, attempted to surprize *Polotta* in the Night; but happily failing in the Enterprize, while they pretended to discharge their Fury at the Mouth of their Cannon upon *Pest*, their Powder happening to take Fire at the same time, blew up part of the Wall of *Buda*, to the great endangering of the Place; but that they shew'd themselves very vigilant to keep the Governour of *Pest* from it at some Distance, till they had in some measure made it good. Now, while *Radul*, the Vayvod of *Wallachia*, spoil'd, about this Time, the Town of *Silistria*, belonging to the *Turks*, *Collonitz*, before-mention'd, who lay in Ambush for Three Days for the *Turkish* Convoy going to *Canista*, at length discovering about 600 Men coming out of that Garrison, in order to go and meet the Convoy, they were quickly so hemm'd and enclosed by the *Christians*, that hardly Four of them escaped the Sword, and pursuing their Horse also which follow'd, they slew a great many of them: Yet, during

1603.



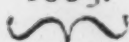
*Babotz* at-  
tack'd in  
vain by  
*Collenitz*.

*Fanizaries*  
and *Spa-*  
*bi's* mari-  
ny.

ring the Flight, Three of the *Turkish* Horsemen, ve-  
ry well mounted, and exceeding brave, adventured  
to pass by the *Christians*, to give the Convoy War-  
ning of the Overthrow, and that the Enemy was ready  
to surprize them, and therefore they should return to  
*Babotz*, from whence they came. In the mean time,  
*Collenitz* having Notice of their Retreat, entred upon  
a more bold, tho' unsuccessful Attempt, which was to  
attack *Babotz*; and tho' the Assault was carried on  
with as much Bravery as ever Men could shew, yet  
the Want of Petards, Scaling-Ladders, and other ne-  
cessary Instruments, made the Design miscarry, and  
so they retreated safe to *Comorra*, notwithstanding all  
the Attempts of the *Turks* to intercept them.

But to leave them now on both Sides to repose  
themselves a little upon the Frontiers, and to follow  
*Hassan Basha*, after his taking *Alba Regalis*, to *Constan-*  
*tinople*, he was there magnificently received by his  
Prince, and highly revered by all the People; and  
nothing now being wanting for the Crowning of his  
Desires, but the Solemnizing of his Marriage with  
the Grand Seignior's Sister, which he had promised  
him, it happen'd the *Fanizaries* and *Spabis*, with the  
other Guards, to the Number of 25000, suddenly  
came and presented themselves in Arms before the  
*Divan*, and having set Guards at the Court Gates,  
proudly demanded, some of their Number deputed by  
them might have Audience, who as soon as they were  
entred requir'd, That *Hassan Basha* should be deliver'd  
up unto them, who, as a Man altogether dismay'd,  
pass'd thro' this mutinous Multitude, to have gone  
to the Grand Seignior, protesting his own Innocence,  
and calling upon *Mahomet* to discover the Truth of  
all Things to them; but they, with a Thousand Re-  
proaches, asking him, *How it came to pass, while he*  
*was in Hungary, that the Rebels in Asia were neglect-*  
*ed, that were now come within 3 or 4 Days Journey*  
*of Constantinople?* He fearfully answer'd, *That he for*  
*his part had done his Duty, as well while in Asia as in*  
*Hungary;* and then going on, he said, *That the Re-*  
*bellion in Asia proceeded from the ill Government of the*  
*Grand Seignior's Mother and the Capi-Aga:* Upon  
which, being somewhat satisfied, they gave him  
Leave to go to the Sultan, to desire they might speak  
with

1603.



with him, and farther, That they might have the Heads of them Two given up to them, and threatning if he fail'd herein, he should surely feel the Effects of their Fury. Hereupon the Visier coming to the Grand Signior, and shewing at large the great Danger he was in, at last he declar'd he was of Opinion, it were best for him a little to give way to the Zeal of those Soldiers, wherefore, at the *Basha's* Perswasion, he shew'd himself, with the *Musti* and some other Reverend Doctors and divers *Basha's*, to the Soldiery, the Chief of which stepping forward, and desiring Leave to speak, he boldly demanded, in his fellow Soldiers Name, *That the Empire being in Danger to be lost, why the Emperor did not remedy it?* They desired to know, *Whether he knew of the near Approach of the Asian Rebels?* And, *Whether he would take care of the Government, or leave every Man to take what he could for himself?* And so forth. To this *Mahomet* (tho' full of Indignation) mildly answer'd, *He had resolved to reform Matters before their Complaints, and to take from them all Occasions of Discontent, whose Loyalty to him should be an Example to his other Subjects:* Wherefore they fiercely demanded of *Hassan Basha*, *Why he did not give the Sultan an Account of the Rebels Progress in Asia?* who answering, *He had done his Duty; but was always hinder'd by the Capi-Aga, who, with the Sultana, were the Cause of these Disorders:* They furiously answer'd, *They came thither for such Offenders Heads, being otherwise resolv'd to take another Course.* The Sultan reply'd hereto, *That there was no Reason for putting those innocent Persons to Death, but will'd them to be satisfied till Justice should take Place; and that he would give them his own Son, if he were found culpable:* They replied again, *That he had unjustly put his Brethren to Death but for the Preservation of the State; and that those whom they demanded, were so guilty as not to merit a formal Tryal, and that it must be so, or else they must take other Measures.* As for the Sultana, they were content she should be confined, so that at last the Sultan being necessitated to give way, the *Capi-Aga* and others were deliver'd up to them, and presently beheaded, tho' the Sultan's Mother was not then confined, but reserv'd to the farther Troubles of the Government; for some Officers

*Capi-Aga*  
beheaded.



ficers and Soldiers growing discontented at the dishonourable Peace *Mahomet* lately made with the *Asiatick* Rebels, and the Preferment of some of them, with his other Mismanagement of Affairs and Cruelties, they conspired to depose him, and set up his Son in his Stead, and having engaged the Sultana, the young Prince's Mother, on their Side, it happen'd, that a Letter sent to her by an Eunuch, importing, *Her Son should be soon set upon the Throne*, was intercepted by the Sultan, who thereupon put the Astrologer that had prognosticated a good Fortune to them, the young Prince and Eunuch, and Fifty more that were in the Conspiracy to Death, and so the Matter ended.

*Mahomet* puts some Conspirators to Death.

In the mean time, the *Tartars*, tho' refused Passage by the *Poles* into *Hungary*, yet forcing their Way thither thro' *Walachia*, did great Mischiefs there and in the adjacent Provinces, tho' they were frequently repulsed, and received Losses from the *Christian* Army, who now, under the Command of the brave *Collenitz*, besieged and took the Castle of *Loqua* from the *Turks*, who also deserting that of *Boulovenner*, were surpriz'd and overthrown: The *Turks* also being besieged by *Vasta*, the Emperor's Lieutenant, in *Moses* the Rebel's Castle of *Soloucofe*, in *Transylvania*, were at last forced to give it up to him: And Things in that Country continued with various Successes of Fortune between the Emperor's Troops and those of the Rebel *Moses*; but he at length being overthrown and slain in a Battle against the *Walachians*, put an End to that Dispute, and soon after terminated the Troubles of that Country.

In the mean time, the *Christian* Army, under the Command of the Lord *Russworm*, being come to *Pest*, in order at leastwise to secure that Place, the *Turkish* Army a few Days after, being an 100000 strong, came up and encamp'd in sight of the *Christians*, on the other side of the *Danube*, to whom divers of the *Christian* Soldiers quickly deserted, and were very kindly entertain'd; and where I at present will leave the Infidels, endeavouring to intercept some Provisions going to *Pest*, without Success, and come to observe that a *Turkish* Captain flying from *Alba Regalis* to *Raab*, and informing the *Christians* how they might come to

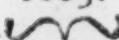
1603. the Suburbs of that Place, and plunder it, and, perhaps, surprize the Town too, and offering to be their Guide himself: The Garrisons of *Raab* and *Gran* hereupon joining together, march'd and happily surprized the said Suburbs, slew all that made resistance, took away whatever they could, and having set them on fire, safely return'd Home: But somewhat to allay this Success, the *Heydukes* in the Garrison at the Castle of *Adome*, hearing the *Turks* with a great Army marching that way, they set the same on Fire, and quite abandon'd it.

Suburbs  
of *Alba*  
*Regalis*  
surprized  
by the  
*Christians*.

All this while that Sultan *Mahomet* was wallowing in his Pleasures at *Constantinople*, yet he was perpetually stung with one Trouble or another, which greatly interrupted them: But that which most affected him, was the Rebellion of his Subjects in *Asia*, whom, with all the Concessions and Artifice he used, he could not reduce to due Bounds of Obedience; and therefore he resolved to try to make a Peace with the *Christians*; and it happening somewhat opportunely, that the *French* Ambassador being treating about the Liberty of Count *Yolan*, taken last Year at *Alba Regalis*, and unjustly detain'd Prisoner at *Constantinople*, that the Sultan granted the same, and gave the Count Instructions to treat with the Emperor about a Peace; and if the same were effected by the Count's Address and Industry, he should then be quite free; otherwise, he must return to his Captivity again, for which the *French* Ambassador became his Hostage. And at the same time *Achmet*, *Basha*, writ a Letter to *Collonitz*, the Emperor's General, tending to that End also; which Letter being transmitted to the Emperor, *Collonitz* was appointed with others to treat about it; but the *Turks*, unreasonably demanding the Restitution of *Transylvania*, *Gran* and *Pest*, for which they offered the inconsiderable Equivalent of *Agria* and *Canisia*, the Treaty quite broke off, and the *Christians* presently betaking themselves to Arms, resolved to prevent the Relief of *Buda*, which was very sorely distressed for want of Provision; and accordingly *Collonitz*, on the 22d of *Aug.* near *Mohatz*, fell on *Murat Basha*, who had 6000 *Turks*, and 2000 *Fanizaries* with him, as he encamp'd in a Plain, where, after a great many brisk Charges with his Horse, he forced the

the *Turks* to retreat to their main Army: But the *Christians* falling presently to Plunder, the *Turks* return'd again, and falling there upon them with great Courage and Vigour, they had unavoidably defeated them, had not the *Heydukes* out of their Boats on the River, come resolutely, and in good time to their Relief; but with this Succour, they suffer'd a 2d Loss and Repulse; for, besides 700 slain, 3 Pieces of Cannon, and *Murat's* Red Standard fell into the *Christians* Hands, as did also *Saxar Beg*, by whom the *Christians* learn'd divers Things of the *Turks* Designs against them.

At length the *Christian* Army under my Lord *Russworm* rendezvous'd about the 4th of *Sept.* and while the General by his Spies endeavour'd to get all the Intelligence he could of the Circumstances and Designs of the Enemy; the *Hussars* from *Gran* defeated a Body of 400 *Turks*, and Colonel *Shultz* another Party of the Enemy; after which the *Christian* General wisely fearing the *Basha* might come and encamp with his Army between *Vicegrade* and *Buda*, and so victual that City at Pleasure, he rais'd a strong Fort of an old Church between the said Places, and another called Fort *St. Andrew*, in the Isle of *Vicegrade*; and then having built a Bridge of Boats upon the River, which began in the Camp and ended in the Isle, he pass'd quite over to *Vaccia*; not long after which, the *Basha* with 10000 Horse and Foot, came to attack the First of the said Forts, but receiving quite another sort of Reception than what they expected, they were forced to retire with Loss: Upon this they began to make a Bridge over the *Danube*, in hopes thereby to pass over and annoy the *Christians* on the other side; which being understood by *Russworm*, and knowing by his Spies the exact Time they were to pass over, he planted 6000 Men in ambush, who had with them Four Culverins: The *Turks* were first charged by some close Fore-runners, sent out for that Purpose, whom they pursued till the *Christian* Foot in ambush finding in what Disorder they pass'd by, and the *Walloons* posted covertly upon the Banks of the River, and observing about 10000 *Turks* come over, they fired their Culverines upon them, which ceased not to open their Flanks, with the Loss of a

1603.  great many Men; while they were charged now by the *Christians* with extream Resolution and Vigour, and found themselves under a Necessity of flying, after they had lost 2000 Men; but the Survivors, being not able to recover the Bridge, were forced into the River, and to the Number of 5000 Men drown'd or slain, while the rest were taken Prisoners, Four Field-Pieces taken, Thirty Colours, Two Standards, and a very great Booty of Horses, Armour, &c.

7000  
Turks de-  
stroy'd.

However, the *Christians* fearing lest the *Turks*, as they had given out, should lay Siege to *Pest*, and finding they were gone now to encamp near *Buda*, they went thereupon and encamp'd before Fort *St. Andrew*, the Fields between the Front of the Two Armies, being plain and open.

But tho' the *Turks* seem'd to have no great Stomach to fight, yet in about Five Days after they detach'd 5000 Men within Half a Quarter of a League of the *Christians*, and behind them 10000 Horse and Foot to lie as close as possible they could a little out of the Way: The *Christians*, who knew nothing of these last, sent 1200 Men against the 5000 to skirmish with them, till the whole Army was drawn up in Order of Battle; but this not being the Infidels Aim, they endeavour'd all they could, by a slight Retreating, and sometimes making a Shew as if they would have fled, to draw the *Christians* into their Ambush, tho', when they found this would not do, they suddenly made a Stand, and charging the foremost of the *Christian* Carabins, they slew Four of them, till new Supplies coming on, the *Turks* were forced to retire with Loss. But the Success of *Collonitz* in the Isle of *Vicegrade*, where the *Turkish* Army was encamped, was not answerable hereunto; for he landing there on the 2d of *Octob.* with 600 *Heydukes*, with a Design to have surpriz'd the same, it was not kept so covertly, but that he was discover'd, and tho' the Field-Pieces he brought along with him did great Execution, and that the *Christians* maintain'd a Fight of Two Hours against the Enemy, yet they were forced to retire to their Boats with the Loss of 400 Men: But Count *Trautmansdorf* had better Success in *Stiria*; for the *Turks* having made a Bridge of Boats at *Lamascin*, to give them Passage into that Country, and



and secured it with new Forts, the Count attack'd the Forts with that Courage and Bravery, that at length he destroy'd the Bridge, and became Master of it, tho' not without considerable Loss on both Sides. *Lugaze* also, a Place of great Importance to the *Turks*, was about the same time deliver'd to *Basta* by the *Transylvanians*. In this Time the *Christians* for all they could do, could not draw the *Turks* to a Battle, who at length, after they supplied *Buda* with Provision, silently march'd off by Night, after all their Brags, and retired out of *Hungary*, after whose Departure, when the *Christians* had raz'd the Two Forts they had built between *Vicegrade* and *Buda*, they resolv'd upon the Siege of *Hatwan*, which was so well fortified by the *Turks*, and provided with Men, and all other Necessaries, as to be in a Condition to endure a long Siege. Count *Sultz*, and *Grafold*, General of the *Italians*, were, with their Men, order'd to make the Approaches, which they did by taking the Water-Mill, but being disturb'd therein by a Salley of the Besieged, there was a great many Men lost on both Sides, and *Grafold* unhappily fell among the rest. Now, the first Inconveniency the Besieged felt, was Want of Water, which thro' the Diligence of the *Christians* was taken from them, the Cannon in the mean time very furiously battering the Walls; so that the *Turks* seeing no Hopes left to defend it, and fearing to come to Extremities, capitulated, That they should only with their Lives and Liberties be gone, with 400 of their worst Horses to carry them whether they thought to retire, and to deliver into the Hands of the *Christians* all the Renegadoes in the Town; in Pursuance of which, they march'd out on the 29th of November, and were safely convoy'd to *Zolnoc*.

*Hatwan*  
besieged  
and sur-  
render'd  
to the  
*Christians*.

Besides this, there were divers other Conflicts between the *Christians*, *Turks* and *Tartars* before the End of this Year, generally to the Detriment of the last, and *Beged Basha*, thinking to surprize *Basta*, as he lay with his Troops dispers'd about *Lippa*, that wary old General turn'd the Tables upon him, and having attack'd his Troops in a Place of Disadvantage, he overthrew him, with the Loss of 1100 *Turks* upon the Spot, out of 5000, and having routed the rest,

*Beged Ba-*  
*sha de-*  
*feated by*  
*Basta*.

1603.

drove them into a Morass, where most of them perish'd, taking about Twenty Captains, and some few *Turks* more Prisoners, with a great and rich Booty : But, much about the same time, *Bethem Habor*, a notable Commander, becoming Head of the revolted *Transylvanians*, created *Basta* and the *Imperialists* no small Trouble : But we shall touch more upon this in the ensuing Year, and now take Notice, that *Zellaly*, formerly one of the chief Rebels in *Asia*, but since pardon'd, after he had served with 12000 Men this Campaign in *Hungary*, retired to his promised Government of *Bosnia*, and encamping near *Bagvalue*, the chief Town of that Province. *Zeffier Bascha*, who was Governour there, taking this as an Incroachment upon his Charge, and having drawn all the Force he could out of his Garrison, went out to crush him in the Bud ; but the crafty *Zellaly*, knowing his own Weakness, and having by Night caused divers great Fires to be made in his Tents, suddenly decamp'd, and the *Bascha* hasted thither to pillage it : But while the Soldiers were lading themselves with Booty, and thought themselves to be sure of the Prey, *Zellaly*, with 3000 brave Horse, surpriz'd the secure *Turks*, and cut them to Pieces to the Number of no less than 6000 Men, and the *Bascha* did not escape without much Difficulty. *Zellaly* pursuing his Victory, made all the chief Places in the Province quickly submit to him, and the People to swear Obedience and Fidelity to him ; and having gather'd a great deal of Wealth together, with a great many brave Horses, he put them into the strong Town of *Balvalue*, into which he entred in Triumph, with a Crown of Lawrel upon his Head, and his Soldiers singing his Praises amidst the Smoak of a Thousand Cannon for Two Days together, at what Time he gave out, it was his Resolution to take the Part of the *Christian* Emperor, if the *Bascha's*, or others should cross his Designs. *Mahomet* being inform'd of all this, under the specious Pretence of Honour and Preferment, sent for him to come to Court, though the crafty Rebel would by no means accept of it, but civilly answer'd, *He humbly thank'd the Sultan ; but for his part he desired no other Reward of his Services, than the*

Go-

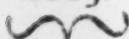
Government he had promised him, and which he was now possess'd of.

1603.

States of Sweden.

Thus much for the Affairs of *Turkey* in *Europe*, to which we are confined. Those of *Sweden* were not yet settled, the Crown being still not disposed of. The Governour, Duke *Charles*, knowing the Designs of *Sigismund* against that Kingdom, made as if he had been affraid, and therefore convening the States at *Nicoping*, and laying before them all the Intrigues of his Enemies, desired Leave to resign his Government, adding, That they might either make up Matters with *Sigismund*, or prefer the King's Brother, Duke *John*, to the Throne. The States would not hear of King *Sigismund*, but join'd with *Charles* in tending the Crown to *John*, upon certain Limitations; but that Prince perceiving the present Juncture of Affairs required a Man of mature Experience, rejected the Offer, and entreated *Charles* to accept of the Administration, protesting, That for his part he would be very well contented with his Favour and the Dutchy of *East Gothland*, and would live under him with all Submission and Fidelity. The States were much pleased with this Answer, their Inclinations being much more for *Charles*, by reason of his Merit; besides he was the only Son of *Gustavus* then alive; and the then critical Juncture requir'd a Man equally entitled to Experience and Valour, and fortunate in all his Attempts; but their Resolutions not coming to Maturity till next Year, we shall at present leave them, and in our Passage thro' the *Netherlands* (there being nothing else material to detain us by the Way) we must take Notice, that a little before the Surrendry of *Grave* last Year to Prince *Maurice* there was a Mutiny among the *Italians* in the *Spanish Service*; *Italians* who failing to possess themselves of *Diesl*, seized *Ho-Mutiny*, *Strat*, near *Breda*, and grew at length, with the Addition of divers Persons of other Nations, to the Number of 2000 Foot, and 1500 Horse, all good Soldiers; but yet not daring to trust to their own Strength, they treated with Prince *Maurice* about putting themselves under the Protection of the States, agreed to fight under him as long as the Army should continue in the Field that Year; That in case they should agree with the Arch-Duke, they should not for Four Months

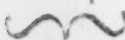
1603.



Vietus his  
Death.

Space bear Arms against the *United-Provinces*; That if *Hoftrat* should not be thought sufficient, some other Place should be assign'd them by the States; and that their Safety should by all other Means be provided for. *Maurice* having gain'd this Point, and *Hoftrat* being near *Bolduke*, he once more attempted to attack that Place, being encouraged thereunto by the Stiffness of the Inhabitants in receiving any Garrison into it: The Arch-Duke considering the Importance of it, and feigning an Occasion of Necessity, that a good Body of *Walloon* Foot should only pass thro' the Town at a certain Place to oppose the Enemy, as soon as he got them in, he easily brought the Magistrates to acquiesce with his leaving 3000 Foot there in Garrison, part *Wallons*, and part *Germans*; and so *Maurice* lost his Design a second time upon this important Place; and the Armies now marching into Winter-Quarters, we have nothing more to add, but that this Year died *Francis Vietus*, a Native of *Fentenay* in *Poitou*, and an excellent Mathematician. He discover'd many Faults in the *Lilian* Calendar, and made a new one conformable to the Feasts and Rites of the Church of the *Rome*. He decipher'd the intercepted Letters of the *Spaniards* during the League, and for Two Years discovered their Designs. His Essay upon *Apollonius* was so much valued, that Seven Years after, in Imitation of him, *Marinus Gellandus*, an excellent Mathematician of *Ragusa*, publish'd his *Apollonius Redivivus*, with a Supplement of *Apollonius Gallus*.

1604.



Peace  
with Spain

The *Spaniards* being very desirous of a Peace with *England*, *Philip III.* before he would openly seek it, had by an Ambassador last Year from Arch-Duke *Albert*, and *Isabella*, Princess of the *Netherlands*, felt the Pulse of our Court, which indeed beat high for it; so that now *John Fernandez de Velasco*, Constable of *Castile*, was sent Ambassador into *England*, to put a finishing Stroke to it, and on the 29th of *August* actually concluded the Peace, which before had been agreed upon by the Marquess of *Villa Mediana*. This Peace was advantageous to *Spain*, and, whatever some Authors have said to the contrary, was much more so to *England*, upon the Account of Trade, and the great Rise of the Rents throughout

Eng.



England in some time after was a clear Indication of it, tho' it must also be acknowledged, that the Treaty of Commerce now made might have been much better improv'd by our Government than really it was. To confirm this much desired Peace, the old Lord-Admiral was sent Ambassador into *Spain*. The *Spaniards* were astonish'd at the Splendor of the Ambassie, and the handsome Gentlemen that made up the Retinue; for the Jesuits had made them believe the *English* were as ugly as Devils, as a Punishment inflicted on the Nation for casting off the Pope's Supremacy; but when they beheld them to have the Countenances of Angels, they believed their Eyes, and said their Confessors were monstrous Lyars. The Ambassador had his reception in as much State, as his Entertainment with Bounty, the King defraying all Charges, and they were detained longer at their Landing than was usual, to have all Things in their way to *Madrid* in such plenty, and the whole Country might appear like the Land of *Canaan*, which in truth was but a barren Wilderness. In their abode at *Madrid* they gave them Roast Meat, but they beat them with the Spits, (as Sir *Anthony Welden* says) by reporting that the *English* stole the Plate that was used at Table, when in truth they were the *Spaniards*, who thought to make Hay while the Sun shone, not thinking ever to come to such a Feast again, and therefore would fill their Pockets as well as their Bellies, Food and Coin being equally scarce in that Nation. This Report passed currently, to the infinite Dishonour and reproach of our Nation, there being at that time the prime Gallantry of the *English*. Sir *Robert Mansel*, who was born to vindicate the Honour of this Nation, as well as his own, coming in late to Supper, took his place at the lower End of the Table, and falling to eat, saw a *Spaniard*, as the Dishes emptied, always putting some into his Bosom, and some into his Breeches, till they strutted. Sir *Robert* sending a private Message to the upper end of the Table, that there might be no disturbance, steps up, takes the *Spaniard* in his Arms and brings him up to the *Grandees* of *Spain*. Then pulls the Plate out of his Bosom, Breeches, and every part about him, which so amazed the *Spaniards* and vindicated the *English*, that not a Syllable more was ever heard.

The *English* slander'd and acquitted.

1604.

The Puritans Demands.

heard of that Matter, but all due Honour was paid to the Nation, and Thanks to him in particular, who with the rest at last returned to *England* in Safety.

All this while a great Difference being betwixt the Episcopal Party and the Puritans, and both active in attaining their Ends, the King thought himself unsecure among them, and therefore at the Importunity of both, appoints *January* 14th a Conference at *Hampton-Court*, where the Bishops Opponents, Dr. *Reynolds*, Dr. *Sparks*, Mr. *Knewstubs*, and Mr. *Chadderton*, desired in the Name of the Rest, that the Common-Prayer-Book might be amended, hotly disputed against the Cross in Baptism, the Ring in Marriage, the Surplice, the Oath *Ex Officio*, and other Circumstantials, which they said offended them, and ought to be removed. The King himself answers most of their Demands, sometimes applying *Lenitives*, other while *Corrosives*. When he saw their Oppositions proceeding rather from Stubborness in Opinion than Tenderness of Conscience: And so betwixt Sound Arguments and Royal Authority, silenc'd their Clamours for the Present, and reduced them to Conformity. The King managed this Discourse with so much Learning and Prudence, that the Audience were surprized to hear it, and Arch-Bishop *Whitgift*, a Learned and Pious Man, said, *He was verily perswaded that the King spake by the Spirit of God.*

*Whitgift* did not long survive this Conference but dying *February* 29th, was succeeded by Dr. *Bancroft*, a Man of a more rough and sturdy Temper, of whom more hereafter; we are now to observe on the other Side that the Jesuits being in hope to catch something by troubling the Stream, flock'd into *England* in great Numbers, and the King perceiving that their coming so near him, put his Person and Religion into Danger, he issued out a Proclamation, Commanding, all Priests and Jesuits to depart out of the Kingdom, and if any of them should presume to return again, they should be proceeded against according to Law. This somewhat allayed the Heat and Hopes of the Jesuits, but it made way for more dark and secret Conspiracies. Another Proclamation came out for Uniformity in Religion according to Law, and to reduce those that had not received satisfaction at the Conference;

after

Several Proclamations.

after this, Proclamations came out thick and threefold, against Monopolies, Protections, Salt-Peter-Men, Purveyors, Cart-Takers, and other insolent Officers, that were grievous to the Subject.

The King naturally desired not to be look'd upon, and those Noises and Formalities of the State which set a Lustre upon other Princes, were burthen some to him. The Parliament drawing on that was summon'd to meet upon the 19th of *March*, the King with the Queen and Prince, Four Days before, rode from the *Tower* to *White-Hall*; and the City and Suburbs being one great Pageant, wherein he must suffer his Ears to imbibe their Oratory, tho' never so nauseous to his Stomach, he endured the brunt very Patiently, tho' afterwards he forbid it upon all occasions. At the opening of the Parliament the King was pleas'd to entertain them with an excellent Speech, wherein he so interweaved the Rights and Duties of the Monarchy, with the Privileges of the Subjects, that all Parties thought it worthy of Commendations, and, to do him Justice, he shew'd his Master-piece in that Particular, and did not only please and close in with his own Subjects, but caus'd his Wisdom to be admired Abroad. One of the first Things in Return the Parliament did, was to recognize his Right to the Crown of *England*, to which they obliged themselves, their Heirs and Posterity, and the King as it were triumph'd upon the Throne of the Peoples Love and Duty: There was also, for the farther gratifying his Majesty's Desires about an Union between *England* and *Scotland*, an Act made this Parliament to authorize Commissioners to treat hereupon, which yet took no Effect, as will appear by the Sequel of this History. But Things did not go altogether so smoothly as might have been expected: The Clergy, or at least a part of them, under Archbishop *Bincroft*, exhibited to the King and Council 25 Articles, in the Name of all the Clergy of *England*, call'd *Articuli Cleri*, which were desired to be reform'd in granting Prohibitions, tho' there were a Parliament and Convocation then sitting, which as it ascribed an absolute Power to the King, so it struck directly at the Constituting of Parliaments, whose principal End is to redress Grievances and Abuses in the Nation: Tho

1604.

Quarrels  
between  
the Eng-  
lish and  
Scotch.

The Streets swarm'd with Quarrels and private Duels, especially between the *English* and *Scotch*; many Discontents arose between the Gentry and Commonalty about Inclosures, and between the Protestants about Religion, the Papists petition'd for a Tolleration, but not being able to procure it, they began now to hatch a most damnable Plot against the Royal Family, and all the Nobility and Gentry assembled in Parliament, who, according to their wicked Project, were to be blown up with 36 Barrels of Gun-Powder, placed in a Cellar under the Parliament-House; but of the Contrivance, Discovery, and the Consequence of this Conspiracy, more in the succeeding Years.

Jesuits re-  
stor'd in  
France.

We'll now cross the Streights of *Dover* into *France*, and observe, that after the King's Return from *Metz*, (as before-mention'd) the Jesuits and their Friends, but more particularly *la Varenne*, Comptroller-General of the Post-Office, never left him alone, till he had granted them an Edict to recal them, whereby they were reinstated in those Houses from whence they had been expell'd, restor'd to those of *Lyons* and *Dijon*, and to all that belong'd to them, and the same, with some Difficulty, was verified by the Parliament; so that now that pernicious Body of Men encreased and flourished mightily; nay, they were now allow'd to have always one of their Society, a *French* Man, attending upon the King, and sufficiently authorized by them to serve him as a Preacher or Chaplain, and to be responsible for the Actions of the Company; which was so far from being a Detriment to them, that they gained the greatest Honour, and were impowred to give Confessors to the King. Father *Cotton* was the first that held the Place; and their Credit grew so strangely fast at Court, that they got the following Year the Pyramid demolished, upon which was engraven the Sentence of *Chastel's* Condemnation above-mentioned, and their own Banishment; and in the Place of it they made a Conduit or Fountain, all whose Streams of Water, tho' clear and plentiful, shall never be able to wash away the Remembrance of so horrid a Crime.

Henry's  
Councils  
betray'd.

About the Beginning of this Year the Death of *Catharine* Dutchess of *Bar*, and the King's Sister, interrupted the Diversions of the Court; and all the Ar-  
guments



guments that were used to her could never bring her to forsake the true reformed Religion, in which she persever'd and died. But to proceed, the King was mightily concerned that the most secret Resolutions of his Council were known in *Spain*, by the Means, as at last appear'd, of *P. Hoste*, a young Clerk under *Villeroy*: He had been with *Rocheport* (when Ambassador) in *Spain*, and was there corrupted by *Rasis*, a Native of *Bourdeaux*, and a violent Leaguer, to accept a Pension of 1200 Crowns to betray his Master's Secrets; but *Rasis* at length finding himself neglected, discovered the Intrigue to the French Ambassador *Barraut*, and being assured both of a good Reward and a Pardon, set out for *France*, forthwith; at which the *Spaniards* taking the Alarm, dispatched notice of it to their Ambassador in *France*, who immediately sent away *P. Hoste* (for he was not yet secured, *Villeroy* designing to have spoke first to the King about it) for the *Low-Countries*; but he was pursued so close, that venturing to wade cross the *Marne*, he was there drowned. *Villeroy's* Enemies failed not to take advantage of this Escape to his detriment, and the King himself for some Days was a little reserved towards him, but came quickly to use him with the same Freedom and Kindness as before.

The *Spaniards* undoubtedly were much concerned at this Discovery, tho' it were but imperfect, as they were also much nettled at the Support both of Men and Money, that the King gave to the *Hollanders*; and therefore they laid 30 per Cent. upon all Goods imported to, or exported from *France*, which made *Henry* prohibit all Commerce with them; but both the one and the other were taken off by the Pope's Mediation. However, the *Spaniards* were still uneasy, and fell in with the *Italians* at Court and the King's Mistress, the Marchioness of *Verneuil*, to imbroil him with his own Wife; so that by their Malignity the Queen's Discontents increased daily, and the Contest between him and her was the continual Business of the Court; and the Marchioness fearing at last to be discharged, fell upon the Female Artifice of Remorse of Conscience for her Crimes, and begged leave to retire, and seek a Sanctuary out of the Kingdom for her self and hers. This did not take at first; for the

King

1604.

K. Henry's  
domestick  
Broils.

1604. King took her at her word, upon the approach of Easter, and gave her, tho' not her Children, leave to retire into *England*, but first Forcen her to surrender up the Promise of Marriage he had made her, and gave her 20000 Crowns consideration, and the Hopes of a Mareschal Staff for her Father. This done, the Queen being satisfied, and the Marchioness appearing no more, the Tempest seemed to be allayed, when her Father, and the Count, of *Auvergne* had contrived a dangerous Design with K. Philip's Ambassador of carrying her and her Children into *Spain*, with some Intimations of a secret Treaty to set her Son upon the *French* Throne. The Count was now retired to *Auvergne*, and they proposed to treat him in the same Manner as they had done *Biron*; but by the Means of great Friends he obtained a Pardon, and having prevailed with the King to let him continue his Correspondence with the *Spaniards*, under pretence of discovering their Designs to him, he juggled with both; so that the King at length, upon his refusal to come to Court, resolved to seize him at *Auvergne*, at what time *Entragues* the Marchioness's Father, and his Wife, were seized at their own House, and the Marchioness in her Hostel at *Paris*: The Count was committed to the *Bastile*, and both he and *Entragues* were ordered to be proceeded against as Criminals; of which more in 1605.

King's  
Buildings,  
&c.

Neither was the King at this Time at any good Terms with the Heads of the *Hugonots*, viz. the Mareschal de *Bouillon*, Duke of *Trimouille* and the famous *du Pleisis Mornay*: However, to divert himself amidst all his Vexations, he took to Building, and the like Occupations. *Henry III.* had begun the *Pont Neuf*, but this King finish'd it; he also carried on the Work of the *Louvre* Galleries, Castle of *St. Germain en Laye*, *Fontainebleau*, &c. and the *Grande*es follow'd his Example. There were also Projects of making Rivers navigable, of joining the *Seine* and the *Loire*, which *Resny* undertook, till the Change of Government made the Design miscarry; the *Loire* to the *Soane*, and the *Garonne* with the *Aude*: But these coming to nothing, we shall take Notice, that the Superintendant, by too eager a Pursuit of encreasing the King's Revenue, brought great Disorder into the Government. Formerly

merly the Offices of Judicature and the Treasury were to be resign'd, and the Resignee was to live 40 Days after, otherwise the King was to provide one: Now *Resney*, to encrease their Store, got a Declaration made, That the Office should be secured to the Wife and Heirs of those that were in Possession, provided they would pay yearly the Sixth Denier of that Finance or Revenue those Offices had been valued at, in Default whereof they should upon their Deaths revert to the King's Use: They could not but foresee, that this must perpetuate the Sale of Offices, prove very detrimental to the King and Subjects, and only prove an Advantage to some particular Persons, wherefore the Chancellor *Bellicore* kept the said Declaration in his Hands for some Months, and did not pass it till he was in Danger of losing the Seals for it.

From *France* we'll pass into *Flanders*: The *Spaniards*, under *Spinola*, tenaciously persisted still in the Siege of *Ostend*, and *Torgone*, an *Italian* Engineer, carry'd on a great Dike with prodigious Expence, Difficulty and Loss of Men on *Bredene's* Side, the more still to streighten it; many other Works were made, too long here to be enumerated. But was Prince *Maurice* on his part all this while idle? No; Two Things came mainly under Consideration either that the Army of the States should undertake some important Diversion, or attempt to raise the Siege; but the Siege of *Sluice* being resolved on, and *Maurice* having drawn a good Army together, attack'd this important Place with great Vigour, secured himself very diligently with strong Entrenchments, beat the Enemy divers times that came to succour it, and at length about the Middle of *Octob.* had it surrender'd to him upon Articles, that allow'd the Garrison, consisting of about 4000 Hunger-starved Soldiers, to march to *Damm*. *Maurice*, as well he might, valued himself very much upon this important Conquest, glorying, that in Three Months, and with so little Loss of Blood, he had made a greater Acquisition than that of *Ostend*, which would cost at least above Three Years time, and a vast Expence of Blood and Treasure. *Spinola* on his part, fearing the ill Consequence of this Loss, shew'd more Vigour than ever in pushing on the Siege

*Maurice*  
takes  
*Sluice*.

1604.

Spaniards  
take O-  
stend.

The Em-  
peror  
makes  
Peace  
with the  
Hunga-  
rians.

of *Ostend*, and advancing his Works at last so far, that the Besieged had no Ground in a manner now to defend, they were necessitated to surrender the Place about the Middle of *September*, upon all the most honourable Conditions that they could desire.

Having brought this famous Siege of *Ostend*, which lasted Three Years, Three Months and Three Days, to a Conclusion, we'll now direct our March into *Germany* and *Hungary*, where the Emperor being mightily solicitous for a Peace both with the *Hungarians* and *Turks*, a Negotiation was enter'd upon with *Stephen Botsckay*, a *Calvinist Hungarian* Lord, who, since the Defeat of Prince *Bathori*, and his Retreat into *Hungary*, had, with the Assistance of the *Turks*, possess'd himself of *Transylvania*, and that Part of *Hungary* which *Bathori* had enjoy'd. The Peace was at last concluded between the Emperor and the States of *Hungary*, and Prince *Botsckay*, the chief Articles whereof were as follows: 1<sup>st</sup>, That the *Catholicks*, *Lutherans* and *Calvinists* should have Liberty of Conscience in those Countries. 2<sup>dly</sup>, That *Botsckay* should enjoy the Principality of *Transylvania* during his Life. 3<sup>dly</sup>, That all Endeavours should be used to bring about a Peace with the *Turk*. 4<sup>thly</sup>, That the States of *Hungary* might, in the Emperor's Absence, receive Arch-Duke *Matthias* for their Governour. 5<sup>thly</sup>, That all other Trusts should be executed by Natives of that Kingdom. 6<sup>thly</sup>, That the *Jesuits* should pretend to nothing of their own, unless it were what the Emperor would please to bestow upon them.

Treaty of  
Peace be-  
tween the  
*Christians*  
and the  
*Turks*.

The *Turks*, on their part had, indeed, in the preceding Year often made a Motion of Peace, especially towards the latter End thereof; but in the Beginning of this there were Commissioners appointed on both Sides to treat of it; and the *Imperial* Commissioners, upon that *Basha's* Request, went to *Buda* upon that Account, where they were courteously treated, and after they had agreed on a Truce of Twelve Days, and were laden with Presents, they took their Leave of the *Turks*, and return'd again to *Pest*. Of this Truce the *Basha* of *Buda* immediately gave the *Turkish* Governours of the Frontiers Notice, with strict Charge they should abstain from all Acts of Hostility, till farther Orders from him, and the *Turks* and



and *Christians* began exceedingly to care for one another upon this Occasion. 1604.

But while these unwonted Courtesies pass'd between them, and Mens Minds were fill'd with the Expectation of an assured Peace, the Grand Seignior *Mahomet III.* makee his *Exit* at *Constantinople*, at the Age of 44 Years, of which he had reign'd Eight. He was a Man of no great Spirit, and yet exceeding proud, which made him the less beloved, especially by the *Fanizaries*, and other *Soldiery*, who despising his loose Government, and grieved to see the most important Affairs of State not only imparted to Women, but managed also and over-ruled by them, they not only rebell'd against, but often in their Fury were ready to depose him. He was wholly given to a sensual and voluptuous Life, the Marks of which he continually carry'd about him, with a foul, swollen, unweildy and over-grown Body, and a Mind answerable thereunto, he being wholly given over to Idleness, Pleasure and Excess, no small Means of shortning his Days, which he ended with Obliquy, unregarded of his Subjects, and by few or none of them lamented.

*Mahomet's*  
Death and  
Character

Sultan *Mahomet* being dead, his eldest Son *Ackmet*, then about Fifteen Years old, succeeded him in the Empire, who, to prevent the Insolency of the *Soldiery*, did, by the Advice of the Great *Basha's*, distribute a large Sum of Money amongst them, insomuch, that the *Spahis* and *Salictars* receiv'd Ten Crowns a Man, besides Five Aspers a Day Increase of Pay, as the *Fanizaries* did Thirty Crowns per Man, and one Asper more Pay a Day; and then being crown'd with great Solemnity, the first Act of Imperial Authority he was pleas'd to exert, was to remove his Grand-Mother, a proud ambitious Woman, from the Prime Administration of the Government, which she managed at her Pleasure in the late Sultan's Reign; he also set the *Persian* Ambassador at Liberty, and continued the Treaty of Peace in *Hungary* with the *Christians*, by the *Basha* of *Buda*, which on the *Christians* Part was managed by the Governour of *Gran*, and other Commissioners at *Pest*: Being arriv'd there, they invited the *Turks* to a splendid Entertainment, who, to the Number of 600 of the better Sort, accepted

*Ackmet's*  
first Act  
of Govern-  
ment.

1604.

Breach of  
the Treas-  
ty of Peace  
with the  
*Christians*.

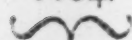
cepted of the Offer, and were magnificently treated; but the *Christians* understanding that the *Turks* had formed a Design to surprize the Place during their Jollity, were so far from believing their Protestations of no such Matter, that they would not accept their Invitation next Day to an Entertainment design'd for them at *Buda*, but return'd to *Gran*, yet so as that they left *Griesberg* at *Pest* with a Commission to treat with them, if he found them disposed to it. We have already told you how Count *Nolan* had been set at Liberty by the late Sultan a little before his Death, and of the Proposals he brought the Emperor from him; the *Basha* of *Buda* also made large Profers: But now they were so little desirous in Reality of Peace, that they dispatched a Messenger from *Constantinople* to *Buda* to forbid the *Basha*, upon Pain of his Head, any farther to continue the Treaty; so that this Peace, notwithstanding the many solemn Oaths of the *Turks* concerning their Sincerity in it, suddenly vanish'd inro Smoak, and the Consequence thereof was, that the Sultan was in Person coming into *Hungary* with a most puissant Army, tho' others in the mean time gave out, he was obstructed by the *Persian* Wars, and that an Army only under one of his *Basha's* should be sent thither, while some again pretended to amuse *Christendom* with the Rumor of Preparations only this Year, in order to do some mighty Things the ensuing one: And, indeed, they had so little Disposition to Peace, that when they got an Opportunity to provide *Alba Regalis*, *Agria* and *Buda* with all Necessaries, they first began to scoff and laugh at the *Christians* Credulity in Relation to it, and then renew'd their wonted Incursions into their Territories in a more cruel Manner than ever before, while the *Hussars* on the other Side endeavour'd to repay them in their own Coin, who having taken about 80 of them Prisoners, and being brought to the General, they upon their Examination confess'd, That they much wonder'd at the Simplicity of the *Christians*, as not to apprehend they had no manner of Inclination to a Peace; and that their Emperor's chief Aim was to ruin *Christendom*, whatever he pretended against the *Persians*. But, for all their evil Dispositions, they, as well as the *Transylvanians* and *Hungarians*, were not free

free from Embroilments amongst themselves: For, besides the Rebellion in *Asia*, they were together by the Ears in *Bosnia*; for *Zellaly* having forcibly driven *Zeffer* Basha out of that Province, as aforesaid, thought himself now sure of it, tho' he was sent for by the Sultan to *Constantinople*, which he refused; but *Zeffer* being now supported by the Sultan's Authority, suddenly with a great Army entred *Bosnia*, overthrew *Zellaly*, and never left, till he had utterly driven him out of the Province, tho' the Basha died soon after. As for *Zellaly*, the Great Basha's of the Court being loth to lose the Benefit of so great a Soldier, and yet not willing to trust him with so large a Government as that of *Bosnia*, they appointed him Governour of *Temeswaer*, from whence they advanced *Begredes* Basha into that of *Bosnia*.

But the Tumults, Disturbances and Rancour of the *Christians* being more inveterate than even those of the *Turks*, these last were desirous to take Advantage, for which End *Zellaly* laid a Design to surprize *Lippa*, in order to which he march'd, with all the Power he could make, from *Temeswaer* by Night towards that City, whose Walls he not only endeavour'd to scale, but also to force the Gates, wherein, tho' the *Christians* at first were much surprized, yet quickly resuming their wonted Courage, they so repulsed the Enemy, that they were glad to give over the Assault. About the same Time the Governour of *Cassovia*, in Upper *Hungary*, marching out with a good part of the Garrison to appease the Soldiers that mutiny'd in the adjacent Country, it happen'd that some *Turkish* Prisoners, then in the Town, were so encouraged by their Absence, as to attempt to gain their Liberty; wherefore, having broke their Irons, and slain their Keepers, they must necessarily have done much farther Mischief, if they had not been timely suppress'd; for they afterwards confess'd, their Design was that same Night to have set the Town in divers Places on Fire, and so to have escaped. Now as *Cassovia* providentially escap'd so great a Misfortune, *Canisia* had the ill Fortune alone to feel what they intended against the other; for a Soldier in the Citadel having by Chance thrown Fire into the Powder, provided for the Castle-Store, it in a man-

*Lippa* and  
*Cassovia*  
in Dan-  
ger from  
the *Turks*.

1604.



False O-  
vertures  
of Peace.

Particu-  
lars of the  
Siege of  
*Gran.*

ner blew all the Place up. At the same time, and while new Tumults in *Transylvania* and Troubles in *Hungary* encreased, the *Turks* at *Buda* sent 200 of their Garrison to fetch in Forage a little from *Pest*, which being discover'd by the *Christians*, they sallied out, and attack'd them with much more Men, insomuch, that the Infidels were at last overthrown, most of them slain, and the rest taken Prisoners; neither had they better Success with Two of their Spies at *Vienna*, who were discover'd some time after their Arrival there. However, the *Basha* of *Buda* understanding, that the Troops of the *Christians* began now to draw together, and make Head in *Hungary*, he thought it for the present best for him to betake himself to his old Shift of treating and concluding a Peace with them. But it was only to protract Time; for during this fair Shew, the Infidels surpriz'd the Castle of *Simnin*; the Governour of *Pest*, upon the Approach of the Grand Visier, deserted that Place, and the *Turks*, on the 18th of *September*, laid Siege to *Gran*, which was carried on and defended with equal Vigour; at length the Visier finding a more resolute Defence made than he expected, set up a Treaty of Peace, with a Design to gain it that way; but the *Christians* utterly rejecting that Proposal, it quickly broke off again, and the *Turks* were left to carry on the Siege with more Vigour than before; and, notwithstanding the Revolt of some *Cosacks* in their Service (most of whom were discover'd and slain) and the Murmur of the *Janizaries*, as well as Lieutenant-General *Basta's* Braving of them as it were with 7000 Horse in the plain Field, to put out of their Trenches to fight, they at length on the 2d of *October*, put out, and gave a second Assault upon *St. Thomas's* Fort with great Resolution and Bravery, and the same lasted a long time; but meeting with no less Opposition on the Besieged's Part, the Infidels at length gave over, with the Loss of 500 of their best Soldiers. But tho' the *Turks* had suffer'd a Repulse in Two Assaults, yet, perhaps, being encouraged by the Treachery and Desertion of the *Heydukes* in the Town, whereof there was not above 500 left of 6000 in Garrison there, on the 5th of *October* attack'd the Fort the third time, but still without Success; and this made them



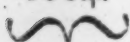
1603.



them bend their Thoughts and Hands to Mining, but they were also frustrated therein by the Counter-Mines of the Besieged; so that they came once more to their old Device of a Parley for Peace, and the Commissioners meeting in the Isle of *Gran*, the *Turks* offer'd the *Christians* *Agria* for *Gran*, but insisted to have *Fillec*, *Setchin*, *Palank* and *Novogrod* yielded up to them. But these Proposals being deem'd unreasonable by the *Germans*, the Treaty was broke off: Yet tho' the *Fanizaries* were unwilling to continue the Siege any longer, *Hassan* resolv'd to attack the Fort once more, which was done accordingly on the 10th of *October*, and no less than Six great Assaults made upon it; but failing of Success in every one of them, he was not only forced to give them over, but also to raise the Siege with as good a Mein as he could, to the no small Joy of the Besieged, who by firing their Cannon, and otherwise, fail'd not to express it on this Occasion. *Basla* slew many of the *Turks* in their Retreat, and found some Bullets and Cannon in their Camp; but tho' he was soon after advertised by Two *Turkish* Deserters, That the Enemy were not yet so far discouraged, but they design'd to make Incursions into the Country, he was not able to prevent it; for the plain Country of Upper *Hungary*, about *Palanka*, *Scobin* and *Villecamp*, were miserably wasted and destroy'd, especially by the *Tartars*, till *Collonitz*, with his *Hungarian* Horse, put a Stop to it, and made them retreat. However it was, not long after, the Visier, by his Letters to Count *Althem*, Governour of *Gran*, made mention of a Treaty of Peace, which, in all Likelihood, was the least Thing he had in his Heart.

But now while this poor Country began to feel some Relief by the Departure of the Visier and his Army, the Country of *Transylvania* became as much distracted as ever with intestine Troubles; for the Lord *Ifoian*, otherwise surnamed *Potschay*, under the Protection of the *Turks*, and styling himself Prince of *Transylvania*, committed great Disorders in the Country, against whom *Belgiosa* was sent with an Army to suppress him; but *Potschay* having cunningly tamper'd with the *Hoydukes* under his Command to desert him in Battle, the rest of his Followers valiantly

1604.



fighting, were almost all slain, and such as were taken Prisoners were by the Conqueror, contrary to his Faith, cut to Pieces; he sent a great part of the Colours he had taken to the Prime Visier, and, being assisted in his Enterprizes by the Grand Seignior with Men and Money, he gave out, He took upon him the Defence of the Reform'd Religion, and being much encreased in Strength and Number, he march'd to *Cassovia*, which was surrender'd to him, where he turn'd out the *Romish* Priests, and set up the Religion and Government himself best liked; nay, so prosperous was his Fortune, that the Grand Visier himself was obliged to be beholding to him, to colour the ill Success of his Campaign, by borrowing the Ensigns and Prisoners he had, which he afterwards confidently presented to his Master, as if they had been taken by himself.

In the mean time, *Potschay* was come to such an Head, that Lieutenant-General *Vasta* was forced to go against him, of whose Troops he defeated some near *Fillec*, and soon after overthrew their main Body, with the Loss of 1400 Men; but, for all that, the Citizens of *Cassovia* would not submit to him, and receive an Imperial Garrison, tho' *Esperies* did: But such were the Confusions and Disaffections of those Countries, that *Basta's* own Soldiers were ready to mutiny against him, and nothing but his Prudence and Liberality was able to appease them: The *Heydukes* also had a great Hand in these Troubles, seiz'd divers Places, and sometimes spared neither Friends nor Enemies. But of these enough.

*Charles*  
declar'd  
King of  
*Sweden*.

As for the Northern Climes; we left the States of *Swedeland* last in a grand Consultation about the Choice of a King; but at length, having maturely weigh'd all Reasons, they resolv'd unanimously, That Duke *Charles* should accept the Crown; That, after his Death, his Son *Gustavus Adolphus* should succeed; and that after him *Charles Philip*; but with the same Limitations that were stipulated in the Contract upon the Succession. In case all these died without Male Issue, the Crown was adjudged to Duke *John*, and his Descendants. All that opposed this Resolution were to be deem'd Traytors to the State; and the Children of those that were condemn'd at *Lindkoping* were

1604.

were declar'd incapable of any Place or Charge, unless they render'd themselves worthy of it by some distinguishing Merit. And further; They resolv'd to summon all those that went into *Sweden* with King *Sigismund*; to punish such as they could catch, and to oblige those who were travelling, or studying in Foreign Universities, to return Home, and swear Allegiance to the new King, under the Pain of being severely punish'd. They agreed, That Troops should be rais'd for the Security of the Kingdom; and that Duke *John* should be put in Possession of *East-Gotland*. They came to another Resolution, That if the Male Line fail'd, they would chuse a King descending from one of *Gustavus's* Daughters, among the Princes of *Germany*. They oblig'd the King of *Sweden* to marry a Protestant Queen, and excluded the Hereditary Prince from the Crown, if he should be possess'd of a Foreign Kingdom; nay, they ty'd up the King of *Sweden* from accepting of any other Crown, unless he resolv'd to make *Sweden* the Place of his constant Residence.

Duke *Charles* being thus declared King by the Convention that met at *Norweping*, he made an Expedition into *Livonia*, and endeavour'd to re-take *Wifsenstein*, but was so far from succeeding in his Attempt, that he lost before the Place 3000 Men, 21 Standards, and 6 Pieces of Cannon.

Meeting with nothing more of any Moment in these Parts, we must return to *England*, after having given you an Account the Remarkables of this Year, wherein happen'd the Death of *Janus Doufa*, Lord of *Norwicz* in *Holland*. He was born Anno 1545. Being Governor of *Leyden* in 1574. he defended it with great Obstinacy against the *Spaniards*, under *Requesenius*; and when the University was founded there, he was made the first Curator. He was a great Scholar, and a good Soldier, wrote several Tracts, as Poems, Notes upon *Salust*, *Petronius*, *Plautus*, *Catullus*, and the *Dutch Annals*.

This Year proved also fatal to *Ferom Mercurialis*, who was born at *Forli* in *Italy*: He became an eminent Physician, and a general Scholar. His Book *De Arte Gymnastica* gain'd him great Reputation; but his

Of King  
*Charles's*  
bad Suc-  
cess and  
narrow  
Escape in  
*Liefland*.

*Doufa's*  
Death.

*Mercuria-*  
lis his  
Death.

1604. other Works in his Profession being many, we shall not enumerate them in this Place.

Cardinal  
Offit's  
Death.

On the 13th of *March* died Cardinal *Arnold d'Offat*, Bishop of *Reunes*, and afterwards of *Bayeux*, aged 57 Years. He study'd at *Paris*, and afterwards applying himself to the Law practis'd at the Bar with great Reputation; at last he took Orders, and refused to be made Secretary of State by *Henry III.* However, he did good Service to *Henry IV.* in reconciling him and the Pope. He writ several Things, more particularly we have a Volume of his Letters extant, of which my Lord *Faulkland* used to say, *That a Statesman ought no more to be without them, than a Parson without his Bible.*

*Socinus*'s  
Death.

Near *Cracow* in *Poland*, *Faustus Socinus* now resign'd his last Breath. He was the Head of the *Socinians*, who deny the Divinity of our Saviour, and born of one of the noblest Families of *Sienna* in *Italy*. He had never study'd Philosophy or School-Divinity, but spent his Youth in the Duke of *Florence*'s Court, and a little time in Logick. He began to study Divinity at 35 Years of Age, being wholly prepossess'd with the Notions of his Uncle *Lelius Socinus*, whose Papers he had, and having well digested them, set up for the Head of a new Sect. Several of his own Company disliked his Proceedings, reproached him for writing with too much Rashness, and that he entertain'd too good Thoughts of himself. His Works are Explications of some Places of Scripture, Doctrinal and Polemical Treatises, in all which there appears more Subtilty and Acuteness than solid Judgment.

1605.  
Gun-  
Powder-  
Treason.

This Year began with creating Prince *Charles* Duke of *York*, and the King's assuming the Style of King of *Great-Britain*; but now as to the Particulars of the Powder-Plot, already mention'd by us, the principal Conspirator was *Robert Catesby*, a Gentleman of a plentiful Fortune, who first contrived the Stratagem, and communicated it to *Thomas Piercy*, *Robert Winter*, *Thomas Winter*, *John Grant*, *Ambrose Rookwood*, *John Wright*, *Francis Tresham*, *Sir Everard Digby*, and other Gentlemen of good Estates, who, like combustible Matter, took Fire at the first Motion, and thought

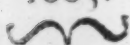


thought to gain themselves Eternal Reputation among the Papists by effecting it. The Foundation being laid, every Man betakes himself to his Post, being sworn to Secrecy. *Piercy* was to hire the Cellar to lay Wood and Coals in for his Winter Store; *Guido Faux*, a desperate Ruffian, who was to Fire the Train, was appointed to bring in the Wood and Coals: The Gun-powder was provided in *Flanders*, brought to *Lambeth* by Night, and covertly laid under the Wood, whilst others were providing Money and Materials to carry on their Design when the Blow was given. The King and Prince they look'd upon as already dead, and *Piercy* undertook to destroy the Duke of *York*; but because they must have one of the Blood Royal to pretend to, they intended to preserve the Lady *Elizabeth*, and make her Queen, that under her Minority they might re-establish Popery. They had designed the fatal Day to be upon the 5th of *November*, when the King and both Houses were to meet, and on that Day appointed a great Hunting-Match at *Dunsmore Heath* in *Warwickshire*, to be near the Lord *Harrington's* House, where the Lady *Elizabeth* was. Thus imagining their underground Treasons were undiscovered by Heaven it self, they stood gaping for their Prey, when behold one more tender-hearted than the rest of the Murderers, willing to save the Lord *Monteagle*; writ this Letter to him.

‘MY Lord, out of the Love I bear to some of your Friends, I have a care of your Preservation, to the therefore I would wish you (as you tender your Life) L. Monteagle, to forbear your attendance at this Parliament; for  
 ‘God and Man have concurred to punish the Wickedness of this time. And think not slightly of this Advertisement; for tho’ there be no appearance of any Stir, yet, I say, they shall receive a terrible Blow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurt them.  
 ‘This Council is not to be contemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm: For the Danger is past as soon as you have burnt this Letter. I hope God will give you Grace to make use of it, to whose holy Protection I commend you.

The

1605.



The Plot  
discover'd

The Lord *Monteagle* astonish'd at this Letter, tho' he knew not the Meaning of it, communicated the Contents of it to the Earl of *Salisbury*, and others of the King's Privy-Council. *Salisbury* could not unriddle the Meaning of it, but concluded the Author was either Fool or Madman from this Expression, *The Danger is past as soon as the Letter is burnt*: If the danger is past as soon as the Letter is burnt, there was no need of any warning; but he did not comprehend the meaning of it, for the Author only meant as to the Writer and Receiver, if he had Grace to make use of the warning. The King was Hunting at *Royston*, while they were laying this snare for him at *Westminster*. As soon as he came to *White-Hall*, the Earl of *Salisbury* shew'd him this Letter. The King considering it, said it was not writ by a Fool or Madman, but import'd some Danger, and his Fears exciting his care, he commanded the Lord *Suffex* to make a strict search about the Parliament House, who accompanied with the Lord *Monteagle*, entred the Cellar, and finding it cram'd with Wood and Coal, asked *Whinyard* of the Wardrobe, who was House-keeper, to whom that Fuel belonged. He said he had let the Cellar to Mr. *Thomas Piercy*, one of the Gentlemen Pensioners to the King; and close by a Corner of the Cellar stood *Faux*; who being questioned what he did there, said he was *Piercy's* Servant. The Lord *Monteagle*, as soon as he heard *Piercy* named, believed it was he that wrote the Letter to him, upon which there growing further suspicion, the King and Council ordered the Cellar to be search'd again the same Night by Sir *Thomas Knevet*, one of the Gentlemen of his Privy-Chamber, who with a Retinue coming into the Cellar, met *Faux* at the Door, and seized upon him, who seeing by searching further that all was discover'd confessed the whole Design, and was only sorry it was prevented, saying, *God would have concealed it, and the Devil discovered it*. In his Pockets they found a Match and a Tinder-Box; but upon his Examination he would say no more than *that he was sorry it was not done*. The Conspirators discover'd themselves, for finding the Gun-Powder was seized, they repaired to the Hunting-Match at *Dunsmore*, but being pursued by the High Sheriffs of *Warwickshire* and *Worcestershire*

shire to Littleton's House at Halbach : Piercy and Cates- 1605.  
by sallied out desperately, and fought till they were  
both slain, and so were John Wright and Christopher  
Wright. Tho. Winter, Fran. Tresbam and the rest were  
taken : But their Tryal and Execution falling within  
the Compass of the next Year, we shall till then de-  
fer it . Only I am here to observe as to the Letter a-  
bove inserted, to Monteagle, that Dr. Welwood in his  
Memories says, *It was a meer Contrivance of K. James him-  
self, the Plot being discovered to him before, by Hen. IV.  
of France thro' the means of de Rhosney, afterwards  
Duke of Sully and that Henry paid dear for his Friend-  
ship herein, there being Reason to believe, that it was up-  
on this Account among others, that a Party of the Church  
of Rome impley'd Ravilliac to murder him.*

We have already mentioned the Conspiracy of the Count of  
C. Auvergne, and his being seized in France, we come now to his Process : He was examined Three times, the King having given Notice to the Parliament, that they ought to have no regard to his Pardon, nor that Brevet he had granted him : the Marchioness of Verneuil, her Father, and Morgan an English Man of that Interest were likewise interrogated. The Count laid all upon the Marchioness, as thinking to escape that way, her Father on the contrary wholly acquitted her, and took all upon himself ; and the Business was carried on with so much Heat, that the Count, Entragues and Morgan were condemned to be beheaded in the Greve, and the Marchioness to be confined to the Nunnery of Beaumont, till more ample Information concerning her ; but the King's Affections quickly re- viv'd, and he gave her Liberty to retire from thence to her House at Vernucil ; he also converted the Punish- ments of the Count and Entragues to a perpetual Im- prisonment, then restored them to all their Honours and Estates, tho' not to their Officers and Commands : Morgan was only banished the Kingdom for ever ; and as for the Marchioness, she was in December by an Instrment declared perfectly innocent. The poor Count fared the worst, for he endured an Imprison- ment of Twelve Years, without any other Consola- tion than what he received from good and ingenious Books, the faithful Companions of all Ages, Fortunes and Places.

But

1605.

But for the Marchioness, notwithstanding some Affection the King shewed to *Bueil*, whom he made Countess of *Moret*, she was now recalled, her charming Humour and Conversation with the Picquant Reflections she made upon the other Court Ladies, being very agreeable to him. In the mean time Queen *Margaret* having been serviceable in discovering the Contrivances of *Auvergne*, had leave to come to *Paris*, where she lived in the Suburbs of *St. Germain*, with her little Court the rest of her Days, odly intermixing Voluptuousness with Devotion, the Love of Learning with that of Vanity, Christian Charity and Injustice; for as she had the Ambition to be often seen at *Churin*, to converse with Learned Men, and to bestow the Tithe of her Revenue upon Friars and Monks, she also took Pride in fresh Gallantries, inventing new Divertisements, and never paying her just Debts.

But to say no more of this unhappy, and truly unaccountable Woman; the King continued at prodigious Expences, in Gaming, Buildings and Mistresses; by whose Example, the Great Ones came to be amused, softned and impoverished, so as to be incapable of making any considerable Disturbance: But the King at the same time by Degrees reducing the Companies d'Ordonnance, and the old Regiments to a narrow Condition, yet allowing Pensions to above 1200 Persons, most of great Merit, there were great Discontents arose from it, which were presaged by Cardinal d'Ofsat to become Universal, and one Day to breake to some horrible Disorders: Some Sparks there were to be seen in *Quercy*, *Perigord* and *Limosin*, where *Biron's* Servants endeavoured to render the King odious; nay there were divers Assemblies of the Nobility held, and some earnest Money given for the levying of Soldiers, where the Name of the Marechal de *Bouillion* was made use of, tho'tis like they had no Orders for it. The King at the same time having just Cause to apprehend the *Spaniards* had a Design upon some Frontier Place, and that the *Hugonots*, under the Marechal's Conduct and Directions, might be enclin'd to form a separate Republick in the Kingdom, he sent *Rosney* to preside in their Assembly at *Chastelleraut*, where all Things were managed in good



good Order ; and he presented them with a Brevet from the King, which prolonged their holding the Places of Security for Three Years. This done, the King went with some Troops into the Provinces, where the Fire was kindling, where *Bouillon's* Friends were much startled to find them attack his Castles ; but when the Duke heard of it, he ordered them to surrender upon the King's first Demand. Several of those that were criminal, withdrew betimes to Places of Safety ; there was nothing in the World of any Credit could be produced against the Duke, but some few were proceeded against and executed at *Limoges*.

The King before his Return, took the Seals from *Bellieure*, and gave them to *Sillery* ; however he left the first still the Honour of being chief of the Council, which gave him occasion to say, *That a Chancellor without the Seals is a Body without a Soul*. Being returned to *Paris*, he resolved to suppress those Rents or Revenues, for the Creation whereof no Money had been given, and to redeem such as had been purchased at a mean Rate ; and therefore he named Commissioners for this purpose, who were the Presidents *de Thou*, *Nicholay*, and *Calignon*, with a Master of Accompts, and a Treasurer of *France* for this purpose : But others being afterwards named, and it appearing the Council had a Design to destroy or much lessen that Fond which was the clearest Subsistence of many Families in *Paris* ; the Persons concerned had recourse to the Provost of Merchants, *Francis Miron*, who stood up stoutly in their Defence, wrote to the King at *Fontainebleau* about it ; and his Enemies insisting to have him apprehended, for mentioning the Word *Nero* in some Discourse of his, the Citizens, had it not been for himself, would in all probability have armed in his Defence ; but the King's Prudence, and the Provost's humble Respect and Moderation, brought Things to cool, and all farther Proceedings touching their Rents were stopped.

By this time the Assembly of the Clergy having recovered much Force and Vigor, the Complaints and of the Demands they made to the King were very great, and Clergy. the Archbishop of *Vienne* was the Mouth of them, and made a long Discourse upon those Vexations the Church had suffered on all Hands, the infamous Trade of *Benefices*

1605. nefices, Simoniack Bargains, Pensions paid to Laymen, and frequent Appeals as gross Abuses: He said, *The Cause of all was, the Refusal of publishing the Council of Trent.* But as to the Reception of this Council, the King would not be positive, saying, *That it could not quadrate with Reasons of State, and the Liberties of the Gallican Church:* On the other side he declared, *He desired it as much as they, and was very sorry it met with such great Difficulties; That he would spare neither his Life nor Crown for the Honour and Exaltation of the Church: And as for Simonies, &c. they must lay the Blame upon those that practised it, and not upon him, for he made no Trade of Bishopricks, like the Favourites of his Predecessors, but bestowed them gratis upon Persons of Merit.* He replied to all their Papers at Leisure, and granted them an Edict for redeeming such Things as formerly belong'd to them, and had been parted with for little or nothing; nay, they insisted upon having a Power to redeem them, in what manner soever they had been sold; but the Parliament put in a proviso that it should not extend to the Prejudice of any, who had been in Possession Forty Years upon a legal Title. There was before the End of the Year a Conspiracy discover'd of *Merargues* to betray *Marseilles* to the *Spaniards*. He had a great Interest there, and was to have been Vigner the following Year. A Slave of one of his Gallies, to whom he had imparted the Design, discover'd it to the Duke of *Guise*; and *Merargues* soon after going thither about some Affairs of the Province, was seiz'd, with the *Spanish* Secretary *Brumeau*, and under the Garter of the last they found a Writing, which unfolded the whole Mystery; upon which they were both committed to Prison. The *Spanish* Ambassador seem'd to resent the Confinement of his Secretary very much, and proceeded farther to complain, That the King assisted the *Dutch* with Men and Money, and attempted to make the *Moriscoes* form an Insurrection in *Spain*: At length, after divers Explications on either part, the King assured that Ambassador, his Secretary should have no Wrong done him, and that he would send him the whole Result of the Process, to see whether he would own it or not. In short, he was discharged

King's  
Answer.

charged soon after, but *Merargues* was condemn'd and executed. 1605.

If from *France* we should pass into *Italy*, there we find Pope *Clement VIII.* go off this Earthly Stage on the 3d of *March*. He was succeeded by *Alexander de Medicis*, by the Name of *Leo II.* but he being old and sickly, lived not but to the 27th of *April*; and *Paul IV.* being enthron'd in *May*, he quickly fell out with the *Venetians*, and the Quarrel run so high, that it threatned a War. The Difference proceeded from certain Laws enacted by the Republick, and particularly one, which impower'd the Civil Magistrate to punish the Clergy; and another, That no real Estates should be settled upon Monasteries, being much the same as what we call, *The Statute of Mortmain*. Sir *Henry Wootton*, the King of *England's* Ambassador, contributed all he could to bring the Senate to throw off entirely the Hierarchy of the Church of *Rome*. We shall hear more of this Difference by and by.

*Paul* was also about this Time encumbred with the Decision of a Difference that had lasted for many Years between the *Dominicans* and *Jesuits* about Matters of Grace and Free-will: But he decreed at last, That both Parties, without reflecting upon one another, might follow their own Opinions, till such time as a Decree pass'd to justify either the one or the other.

From *Italy* we shall now make the best of our Way to *Hungary*. The *Turks* last Year miscarry'd in their Attempts upon *Gran*, but they effectually carried it in this: but other Things intervening in these Parts, we shall first give you the Particulars of them. *Belioisa*, *Basta's* Lieutenant, was said to have been the Author of the Troubles still remaining in *Hungary*, where the *Heydukes*, with a Body of *Tartars*, joining the Malecontents, surpriz'd *Gokaza*, overagainst *Gran*, where they slew the *German* Garrison, rifled and set the Town on Fire; but yet were quickly driven out by the Governour of *Gran*, and the Loss farther compensated by the *Imperialists* taking the Fortrefs of *Palantwar* from the *Turks*, with the Loss of a great Person of Quality and others to them. But the Infidels on the other Side, not to be wanting to themselves, about this time besieged *Vacia* not far from *Vicegrade*, garrison'd with *Germans* and *Hungarians*, of which

1605.  
*Vacia* be-  
 tray'd by  
 the *Hey-*  
*dukes* to  
 the *Turks*.

*Vicegrade*  
 besieged,  
 and sur-  
 render'd  
 to the  
*Turks*.

*Heydukes*  
 take *Sac-*  
*mar*.

which the last having Notice, they form'd a Conspira-  
 cy to deliver it up; for finding themselves much  
 stronger than the *Germans*, they slew most part of  
 them, while the rest made their Escapes by *Gran*,  
 and then put the *Turks* in Possession of that important  
 Place. Fluster'd with this Success, the *Turks* in Con-  
 junction with the *Tartars*, the revolted *Hungarians*,  
 and others, attempted to surprize *Gran*, but were re-  
 puls'd: However, it was no small Trouble to the  
 Emperor to see his Enemies thus grow, and his own  
 Troops dwindling away by Civil Dissentions, and  
 therefore he applied himself to other Princes for As-  
 sistance, tho' with little other Success than Promises;  
 while the Enemy in the mean time taking Advan-  
 tage of it, encreas'd both in Number and Strength,  
 and began to draw near to *Vicegrade*, scituated upon  
 the *Danube*, about Mid-way between *Buda* and *Gran*,  
 with a Design to lay Siege to it; and, indeed, they  
 no sooner appear'd before it, but the rebellious *Hey-*  
*dukes*, without any more ado, open'd the Gates of  
 the Town, and let them in, directing them at the  
 same time all they could how to attack the Castle,  
 to whose Garrison the Prime Visier *Hassan*, with  
*Begedes* Basha, sent a Letter to perswade them to  
 yield; but the Garrison stood valiantly upon the De-  
 fence of themselves and the Place, till extream Neces-  
 sity forced them to surrender upon Articles. *Basta* in  
 the mean time lying at *Esperies*, with his Forces much  
 diminish'd, and seeing the general Revolt of the *Hey-*  
*dukes*, publish'd a Proclamation, containing a general  
 Pardon for all those that would come in and return to  
 their Duty, but with little good Effect upon them;  
 nay, his own Soldiers not long after began to mutiny  
 for want of Pay, and it was not without much Dif-  
 ficulty that they were appeas'd by him; while the  
*Heydukes*, still proceeding in their Revolt, in the Be-  
 ginning of February besieged the Castle of *Sacmar*,  
 which was quickly surrender'd to them. Immediate-  
 ly after which they attempted to surprize the Castle  
 of *Tokay*; but the Governour being aware of it,  
 caus'd the Ice on the River to be broken Forty  
 Paces over, and cover'd it with Snow near the Place,  
 which the *Heydukes* adventurously marching on to scale,  
 there miserably perish'd. In the mean time, a Great  
 Man



Man among the *Turks* brought a great deal of Money to *Cassovia*, to be distributed among the Revolters, to keep them still in their Interests, which they effectually did: For not long after, viz. March the 2d, early in the Morning, they came before *Newhausel*, and used all the Arguments they could to persuade the Citizens to revolt, which took so well, that *Burbelius*, the Governour, with the *Cossacks*, thought it best sometimes to retire into the Castle, which the *Heydukes*, after they had got into the Town, presently summoned; but they met with so warm a Reception, that they were driven out of the Town again, which he afterwards better fortified against the like Attempts. He also, by his Lieutenant, near *Turtzo*, defeated a Body of them and *Turks*, and took away all their Booty. *Fillec* also, the Key as it were of that part of Upper *Hungary*, held by the Emperor, having been for some time besieged by the *Heydukes*, was about this Time given up by the Garrison for want of Water; but 4000 of them attempting to surprize *Waglasz* Castle, they were repulsed with great Loss; but marching from thence they brake into *Turson's* Country, committed all the Ravage they could, and forced the States to submit to *Potschay*, and swear Fealty to him.

1605.

Driven out of Newhausel

To remedy these Evils, the Emperor sent Two grave Commissioners to treat with *Potschay*; but he refusing to receive them, instead thereof sent Circular Letters to the Nobility and States of *Hungary*, to call them together to *Gerents*, to deliberate what was best to be done for them in so pressing a Conjuncture, when their Country was so oppress'd with *Germans* and Strangers. Neither was the State of Things with the Emperor in a much better Posture in respect to his Army under *Basta*, who mutiny again for want of Pay, severely threaten their General, and most miserably ravage and spoil the Country between *Esperies* and *Presburg*.

In the mean time, the *Heydukes* not only return'd to the Siege of *Newhausel*, but also took it, and afterwards made Incurfions into *Moravia*, where they committed intolerable Ravages; but they were at length driven out by Count *Lichtenstein*, Governour of that Country, tho' they carried, for all that, great Spoils along with them. About this Time also *Basta* lying

Moravia ravaged by the Heydukes.

1605. at *Presburg*, and understanding that 14000 *Turks* and *Tartars* being come to *St. George's*, 6000 of them were gone over the *Danube*, about a Mile below *Presburg*, he went out in the Night towards *St. George's* with 300 brave Horse, and falling into the Camp of the rest of the *Turks* and *Heydukes*, he slew 500 of them before the others could recover their Arms, and return'd with some Booty to *Presburg*.

*Begedes*  
Basha  
slain.

On the other Hand, the Garrison of *Comorra* understanding, that *Begedes* Basha, with a rich Convoy of Money, &c. design'd to go from *Buda* to *Botschay* the Rebel and the *Tartars*, under the *Kan's* Son, they lay so in Ambush for them, that they fell into their Hands; so that the Enemy was quickly routed, and many of them slain, among whom the Basha himself was one, while at the same time Seventeen Waggon-Loads of Money, and other valuable Goods, fell as a Booty to the *Christians*; and this Success was so much the more acceptable, because this subtle Basha had been the principal Abettor of all the late *Hungarian* Troubles. But to retrieve this Loss, the *Turks* and *Tartars*, about the 12th of *May*, joining with the Revolters Forces, burnt 14 Country Villages about the Lake of *Nevisdier*, and as many more about *Newstadt*, put Men, Women and Children to the Sword, impaled many, and carried Multitudes into Captivity. About the End of the same Month the Revolters surpriz'd *Smega*, *Grotta* and *Capernacum*, and *Ginsium* soon after, all which Places they plunder'd, as they did also *Hogengoe* and *Nidorprung*, which last they burnt, and this struck such a Terror into the adjacent Country, that they presently submitted to them: But some *Turks* and *Heydukes* about the Beginning of *June*, advancing again to *Presburg*, Three Troops of *Walloon* Horse, and some Companies of Musketiers sallied and attack'd them, slew about 500 of them, and most of the rest were drown'd in the *Danube*. To make Amends for this Loss, *Wesbrun* favouring the Proceedings of the *Heydukes*, the People secured the Officers, and sending the News to *Redevis*, *Botschay's* Lieutenant, they put themselves under his Protection, with which the *Turks* were so pleased, that they sent to their Sultan to desire him to hasten the Army away, because the Passages were now laid open for further Con-

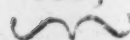
Revolters  
successful.

Conquests. And, indeed, Things began to look worse and worse every Day upon the *Germans*; for the *Hungarian* Revolters broke now into *Stiria* and *Austria*, and did so much Harm, that the Counts *Serini*, *Nadasti* and *Budiani*, who had done so great Things against the *Turks*, seeing all they had in Danger to be lost, submitted themselves, as well as many others, to *Botfchay*. However, the *Heydukes* had but ill Success at the Siege of *Odenburg*, they having been defeated by Count *Trautmansdorf*, the Governour, with the Loss of a great many Men and Colours. Now, the *Turks*, who were not to learn to make use of the Disorders of the *Christians*, had often solicited *Botfchay* to give up *Cassovia* wholly into their Hands, which the better to obtain, they sent Three Waggon-Loads of Money by a Convoy of 400 *Heydukes*, with some *Turks* joined to them; but being to pass by *Tockay*, and the *Heydukes* having Intelligence with the Governour of that Place, who sent 400 Men of his own to meet them, they join'd together, and set upon the *Turks*, and slew them every Man, and so with the Booty went in all to the Governour. But the Revolters, notwithstanding this and other Losses, daily encreasing in Strength, had *Totisa* yielded up to them; and *Bederius*, *Botfchay's* Lieutenant, with an Army of 30000 *Hungarians* and *Turks*, laid close Siege to *Newhausel*, which Place he designed to have taken with his own Men, as being loth it should fall into the Hands of the *Turks*, whom therefore he kept from attacking it, tho' to the Loss of a great many of his own Men; yet, notwithstanding a Body of *Fanizaries* and 3000 *Turkish* Horse came to reinforce the Besiegers, and with Mines and Attacks so destroy'd the Besieged, as to reduce them to about 200 Men, and they streightned with the Want of almost all Necessaries, yet they continued to make a most resolute and obstinate Defence. But the *Hungarians* in the Isle of *Schut* having about this Time submitted upon Articles to the Emperor, and Endeavours being also made about the Beginning of *July* to bring *Botfchay* to a Pacification, he gave in his Demands, which consisted chiefly for the Liberties and free Exercise of the Reform'd Religion of the *Hungarians*, and insisted to have the Principality of *Transylvania* conferr'd on himself.

1605.

*Stiria* and  
*Austria*  
ruin'd  
by the  
Revolters

1605.



Gran be-  
sieged by  
the Turks.

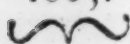
self during Life : But the Grand Seignior coming to hear of these Proceedings, immediately sent to dissuade him from an Agreement, and, besides present Offers and Largeſſes, promiſed to make him quickly King of Hungary. *Borſchay* being glutt'd with this, goes forthwith to *Transylvania* to take the Oath of Fidelity from the Nobility to himſelf, and then ſending Ambaſſadors into *Poland* for Aid, the ſame was denied him by that Republick, to his no ſmall Mortification. The *Turks* however having gain'd their Point, in breaking off the Accommodation, reſolved to carry on the War in Hungary with all the Vigour their Troubles and War in the  *Eaſt* would admit of, and *Sedar Baſha* being appointed General, he, in Conjunction with the Hungarians, having made up an Army of 50000 ſtrong, on the 20th of *Auguſt* laid Siege to *Gran*, and to deprive the Beſieged of all manner of Relief by way of the *Danube*, they made a great Bridge of Boats over it, fortified at both Ends with a ſtrong Guard : Then they ravaged the Iſle of *Gran*, that had ſtill remain'd faithful to the Emperor ; but upon their ſecond Attempt were many of them ſlain by the brave *Collonitz*, who commanded there. But now as to the Siege it ſelf, which was begun by their planting a Battery againſt the ſtrong Fort of *St. Thomas*, which much annoy'd them, and having, with vaſt Loſs and infinite Charge, made it aſſailable, on the 24th of *September* they mounted the Hill to make their Attacks upon it ; this they did in great Numbers, and tho' much expoſed to the Cannon of the Fort, came to Puſh of Pike and handy Blows in the very Breaches with the Beſieged. The Aſſault laſted Five Hours ; but the *Chriſtians* ſhew'd ſuch invincible Courage and Reſolution in their own Defence, that the Enemy was repulſed Three times, and forced to retire ; yet their great Numbers at laſt prevailing, after they had ſlain 900 of the *Chriſtians*, and Count *Oſtingen*, their brave Commander, they entered the Place over their reaking Bodies, and quickly diſpatched thoſe few which yet ſurviv'd therein. This done, they raiſed a Battery of Thirty great Cannon againſt the lower Town, which was environ'd with Palifadoes, but the ſame being quickly burnt down, they play'd ſo furiously upon the Place, that they



1605.

they made a fair Breach in the Wall; then preparing themselves to make the Assault, the *Janizaries* were those chiefly appointed for this Service, who fired most furiously upon the Besieged, and were mightily encouraged by the *Basha* himself to stand stoutly to it: The Fight was very terrible, and Bullets flew like Hail on both Sides; but tho' the *Christians* received no manner of Assistance from those of the upper Town, who expected to be attack'd themselves, and that many brave Men continually fell among them, yet they continued to make an obstinate Defence a long time, till the *Turks*, after Four desperate Assaults, having gain'd the Breach, entred into the City; and having so done, presently attempted the higher Town also, tho' not with the like Success; for they were beaten off from it. Upon this they applied themselves to Mining, and having brought the same to Perfection, they fired with that Event which themselves hoped for; for thereby Breaches were made, and the Fortifications thereof blown up, so that the Besieged lay open to their deadly Shot; but the Commanders within preparing to oppose the further Progress of the Enemy, the Garrison proved so disorderly, as not only to refuse, but hemming in Count *Dampier*, the Governour, they would have forced him to yield the City to the Enemy; but he opposed their Pressures upon him with so much Resolution and Constancy, and such notable Remonstrances to perswade them to hold out the Siege, that must unavoidably have engaged any, but such degenerate, base and discontented Persons as those under his Command: But, instead of that, they imprison'd the Governour, and then entred into a Treaty with the *Basha* about the Surrendry of the Place, which was soon agreed on, by his allowing them to march out with Bag and Baggage, their Colours fuell'd, Match lighted, but leaving all the Cannon and Ammunition behind them, and so they were safely conducted to *Commorra*, and used by the *Turks* with extraordinary Civility by the Way, which doubtless proceeded from their Satisfaction in the Reduction of that important Place, which, perhaps, had not fallen into their Hands, but for the Mutiny of those base Cowards.

1605.



Having tarried thus long in and about *Hungary*, we'll pass into *Poland*, where *Sigismund* neglecting no Opportunity to annoy *Swedeland*, that he thought had so basely used him, he form'd a Design of possessing himself of *Finland*; but the same happening to be discover'd to the *Swede*, the Person who concerted it was brought Prisoner to *Stockholm*.

*Swedes*  
attack *Riga*  
in vain.

In the mean time. King *Charles* intending to make Reprisals for the Loss he had sustain'd, call'd the States of the Kingdom together, at *Stockholm*. In that Convocation, some Persons in the *Pepish* Interest, were condemn'd. and Supplies granted to King *Charles*, to carry on the War in *Livonia*. Upon which, His Majesty laid Siege to *Riga*, with a choice Army; but as soon as he had invest'd it. receiv'd Advice, That the Enemy was within a few Miles of him; thereupon he decamp'd, and march'd all Night, in order to fall upon the Enemy. The Soldiers and Horses were extremly Fatigu'd, their Cloaths and Arms were all wet with the Rain that fell, during their march: However, without any Rest or Refreshment, they Attack'd the Enemy near *Kirkholm*, with a great deal of Precipitation; but were so warmly receiv'd by the *Polish* Army, under the Command of *Ledkowitz*, together with the *Courland* Cavalry, Commanded by their Duke. that the greatest Part of the *Swedish* Army was either Cut off, or taken Prisoners, and the remainder, with much a-do, escap'd to their Ships. In a Word. This was such a general Defeat, that King *Charles* himself had certainly fallen into the Hands of the Enemy, if one *Wreede* had not given him his Horse, upon which he made his Escape, tho' the poor unfortunate Man was kill'd upon the spot by the *Poles*. King *Charles* arriving at *Revel*, with a Heart full of Grief and Vexation, went from thence to *Sweden*: But King *Sigismund* could not pursue this Glorious Victory, by reason of the perpetual Commotions in *Poland*. About this time, the *Muscovites* having Massacred the Spurious *Demetrius*, rais'd *Suski* to the Throne; who, being engag'd in a War with *Poland*, ask'd Assistance from King *Charles*, offering to give him the City of *Kexholm*, and to pay the Auxiliary Troops. King *Charles* sent him *James de la Gardie*, with some Thousands of Men. This *James de la Gardie*

K. Charles  
assists the  
*Musco-*  
*vites*.

die, was but just come out of Prison; for tho' *Erick Foranson* had charg'd him with several Crimes before King *Sigismund*, yet he was found Innocent. 1605.

King *Charles* finding himself in a peaceable Possession of all *Sweden*, and King *Sigismund* sufficiently diverted by the Commotions in *Poland*, call'd a Convention of the States at *Upsal*, where he and his Wife were Crown'd; and some Days after, the reasons for excluding King *Sigismund* and his Posterity from the Crown, were Read again in the Convention. At the same Time, the States resolv'd to change the Ceremonies of the Church, and reduce 'em nearer to the Practice of the Reformed Churches; but the Clergy oppos'd the Alteration vigorously, and upon that Head call'd a Council at *Upsal*, in which the Professors distinguish'd themselves by a peculiar Warmth. And thereupon King *Charles* stripp'd the University of the Privileges he had formerly granted 'em, to which *Erick Foranson* contributed very much, by Wheedling the Rector of the University, and getting out of his Hands, the Original-Patent for their Privileges, upon a feign'd Pretence, That King *Charles* would, after his Coronation, not only confirm, but enlarge their Privileges. Thus were the Professors of the University of *Upsal*, at once depriv'd, both of their ancient and late Privileges. However, the Affairs of Religion continu'd on the same Foot as before; and the *Theses*, that *John Forbes*, a Scotch Man, publish'd next Year, produc'd no Effect.

The Coronation of King *Charles* and his Wife.

The University of *Upsal* loses its Privileges.

Having no more at present to say of the *Swedes*, *Poles* and *Muscovites*, and finding the *Danes* also and the adjacent Parts of *Germany* in a Calm, we hasten to the *Netherlands*, where Prince *Maurice* having form'd a Design upon *Antwerp*, the Vigilance of the Arch-Duke and *Spinola* prevented it; however, the Loss now sustain'd at Sea must needs be a Mortification to them; for a *Spanish* Squadron of Men of War, with some Land-Forces on Board, making the best of their Way for *Flanders*, were in the *English* Channel encountered by the *Dutch*, and most of them taken. On the other Hand, the Arch-Duke and *Spinola* having concerted a Design of carrying the War into the Enemies Country, they suddenly pass'd the *Rhine*, and entred into the Province of *Overyssel*, and first attack'd

*Dutch* at the *Spaniards* by Sea. Success of the *Spaniards*.

1605. and took *Oldensel*, after which they carry'd *Linghen* : *Bucquoi* also before the End of the Campaign made himself Master of *Vachendonch*, after which they retired to Winter-Quarters. But before we conclude the Year, let us take Notice of the Death of these Persons following.

Beza's  
Death

On the 3<sup>th</sup> of October died the most excellent *Theodore Beza*, at *Geneva*, being 86 Years, 9 Months and 3 Days old. He was born in 1519. at *Verelai* in *Burgundy*, from whence he was sent to *Paris* very young, where his Uncle took Care of him, sent him first to *Orleans*, and then to *Burges*, where he grew into Reputation, and had a good Genius for Poetry. He retired to *Geneva* in 1541. having publish'd a licentious Epigram, which lost him considerably. He taught Greek at *Lusanne*, and writ his Tragick Comedey of *Abraham's* sacrificing *Isaac*. Upon the Invitation of *Calvin* he went to *Geneva*, where he was receiv'd Minister in *Pontanus* his Stead, and then compos'd his Confession of Faith. He was at the Conference of *Prissi* in 1561. and the Civil Wars breaking out in *France*, he follow'd the Prince of *Conde*, and was with him at the Battle of *Dreux*. He return'd again to *Geneva* upon the Peace, and presid'd in the Synods of *Rochele* and *Nismes* in 1571. and 1572. In 1600. he went to wait upon *Henry IV.* who was come to the Neighbourhood of *Geneva*, who receiv'd him with much Kindness, admitted him to his Table, and presented him with 500 Pistoles, in the Remembrance of the good Services he had done his Father and Mother. He wrote many excellent Books, whereof there are several Editions, and many Catalogues; but his Memory in his old Age fail'd him to that Degree, that he could not remember present Transactions; yet he never forgot the Psalms in *Hebrew*, nor the Chapters of the New Testament, which he had learn'd in *Greece*.

Stow's  
Death

The Death of our Country-man *John Stow* is not to be overlook'd here, who depart'd this Life on the 5<sup>th</sup> of April. He was born in *London*, and was the Author of a Chronicle and a large Survey of *London*, wherein he hath perpetuated its Monuments and Glory. He was very punctual as to the Notation of Time,



Time, though he takes Notice of some inconsiderable Things.

1605.

*Robert Constantine* went also off this Stage of a Pleurisie. He was born at *Caen* in *Normandy*, where he was some time Professor in the University. He was a Physician, and withal very skilful in Languages, History and Plants; and, what is strange, he lived to the Age of 103 Years, without any Diminution of his Understanding, or Memory. His chief Works are, *Dictionarium Græcum & Latinum. Thesaurus Rerum & Verborum utriusque Lingue. De Antiquitatibus Græcorum & Latinorum Libri tres.*

*Constantine's*  
Death.

About the Beginning of this Year, these Conspirators in the Gun-Powder Plot, viz. *Thomas Winter, Guido Faux, Robert Keys, Thomas Bates, Robert Winter, John Graunt, Ambrose Rookwood* and *Sir Everard Digby*, were try'd, and having receiv'd Sentence of Death on the 27th of *January*, they were executed before the End of the Month; and the King gave the Lord *Monteagle*, the first Discoverer, 500 *l.* a Year for his Life, and 200 *l. per Annum* in Fee-Farm Rents to him and his Heirs for ever.

1606.

*Conspirators*  
executed.

While the Parliament was sitting, a Rumour was spread abroad, that the King was kill'd at *Okingsham*, which put the whole Kingdom upon providing to defend themselves by Arms: and tho' there was no Colour of Truth in the Report, nothing but a Proclamation could lay it. In the mean time, the Jesuits having solicited the King of *Spain* to invade *England*, and *Henry Garnet*, the Provincial of that Order, being found the Principal in that Conspiracy, he was condemn'd, and on the 3d of *May* executed for it. In *July* the King of *Denmark*, the Queen's Brother, came in the Way of a Visit only into *England*, and was entertain'd with all the Affection, Rejoycings and Magnificence the Court and Kingdom were capable of.

*K. of Denmark*  
in  
*England.*

In the mean time, the Parliament shewing much Concern for the King and Nation's Deliverance from the Gun-Powder Plot, made an Act for the Solemnizing of the 5th of *November* for a Day of Thanksgiving for ever. They attainted the Blood of those Traytors who had been executed, as well as those

*Parliament's*  
Proceed-  
ings.

who

1606. who were slain in the Field, or died in Prison. They likewise made good Laws for the Discovering and Suppressing of Popish Recusants, and gave the King Three entire Subsidies, and Six Fifteenths, besides Four Subsidies of Four Shillings in the Pound granted by the Clergy; but they put off the Treaty of Union with *Scotland* by an Act that referr'd it to be done the next Sessions of Parliament, which, *May 27th*, was Prorogued to the 19th of *November* following; but that Affair coming upon the Stage about the Beginning of the New Year, we shall say no more of it in this Place, but proceed to other Matters.

*Bouillon's*  
Agree-  
ment with  
*K. Henry.*

The first thing we meet with in *France* is the King's honouring *Rosney* with the Title of Duke and Peer of that Kingdom by the Name of Duke of *Sully*, which Lands that Lord had purchased since his Favour; and all the Business was now to bring the *Mareschal de Bouillon* to comply entirely with the King's Will, by putting *Sedan* into his Hands. *Sully* was absolutely for it, but *Villeroy* as stiffly opposed the King's going thither in Person; but tho' he failed herein, yet he had the Honour to conclude the Treaty with the *Mareschal*, who agreed to surrender the Place, and that the King should keep a Governour and Garrison there for Four Years, while the King on his part fully pardoned him, and received him immediately as much in favour, as he had been before he absented himself from Court.

The King, Queen and other Persons of Quality, being in *June* about to pass the *Seine* in the Ferry-Boat at *Port Neuf*, in order to go for *Paris*, one of the Coach-Horses straggled, and drew the Coach after him into the Water, where had it not been for immediate Help they had been all drowned; hereupon the Marchioness of *Verneuil*, as she was wont, maliciously drolled upon this Adventure, and told the King, if she had been there, she would have cried out, *The Queen's Drunk*, which rekindled the Queen's Resentments, and occasioned new Picqueerings. But to pass these Matters over, and but just to mention the Ceremonial Baptism of the Dauphin and the King's Two Daughters; for the Essential Baptism was immediately administered after their Birth; on the Day which preceded the Ceremony, a Light appeared towards the

the Western Parts of the Heavens, which expanding by little and little, cast forth as it were long Flashes towards the South and the East with most admirable Swiftneſs; after which appeared diverſifiery Chariots, which ſeemed to ſhock one another, and wherein they fancied to diſcern ſome Appearances of Lances, Pikes and Arms which darted them: It ended about Midnight, by an admirable clear Light, which ſeemed to make the whole Hemisphere ſparkle. Two Days after about the ſame Hour, ſuddenly appeared a great Light in the Air towards the Weſt, as it were to light the Scene, and give the Spectators the Pleaſure of a Combat, wherewith the Demons of the Air, if we may ſo ſay, would entertain the Court, and outvie their Di-vertiſements; for they formed as it were Regiments of Horſe and Foot furiously charging one another; ſome tumbled off their Horſes, and others were trampled under Foot; many Muſkets and Piſtols were diſcharged, the Fire and Smoke were viſible, and nothing was wanting but the Report: This airy Battle laſted about an Hour, and then all vaniſhed in a Moment.

1606.

Apparitions in the Air in France.

I might here mention, before the Concluſion of this Year in *France*, the Marriage of *Eleonora*, Siſter to the young Prince of *Conde*, with *Philip*, eldeſt Son of *William* Prince of *Orange*, who recover'd his Liberty from the *Spaniards* by renouncing of the Proteſtant Religion; and the King now compell'd *Placons*, an *Hugonot* Gentleman, to reſtore the Principality of *Orange* to him: But having not Leiſure to dwell upon theſe Matters, we'll leave them.

If from *France* we make our Paſſage into *Italy*, we find the foremention'd Difference between the Pope and the Republick of *Venice* rather augmented than diminifh'd, and you may be ſure his pretended Sanctity's Monitory againſt them did not at all contribute to heal the Breach. Moſt of the Princes of *Europe* ſeem'd enclin'd to take one or the others Part; thoſe of *Italy* were generally for accommodating Matters, for fear a Fire ſhould be kindled that might reach their Territories, a Paper War being already commenced, the Particulars of which being not to be comprehended within our Deſign, we now move into other Parts.

The

1606.

The War having been long and sharp in *Hungary*, and the Grand Seignior made uneasy with a Rebellion in *Asia*, he order'd the Visier to conclude a Peace with the *Christians* upon reasonable Terms. The *Imperialists* were no way averse to it at this Time also, notwithstanding the Ambassies of the King of *Persia* to *Vienna* to perswade the Emperor to the contrary; for, besides the Loss of *Gran*, the Obstinacy of the *Revolters*, and other great Disadvantages, *Newbaufel* was now surrendred to the *Hungarians*; and the Success the *Imperialists* had against the *Turks* and *Revolters*, who came to attack their Camp, and wherein they lost above 1000 Men, besides 200 Prisoners, and 1500 Horses, did by no means alienate their Minds from it, and therefore the Emperor's Commissioner having on the 6th of *December* receiv'd Letters from the *Basha* of *Buda* concerning the Negotiation, they went down thither next Day; but the *Turks* saying, They would do nothing without the *Hungarians*, the Matter for the present stopp'd here, tho' *Illishascus*, who was deputed by *Botschay* to treat about it, going to *Vienna* about the End of *December*, at length adjust'd all Matters there, but what referr'd to the free Exercise of Religion, with which the preceding Year ended.

The Peace being not yet concluded, the new Year began with the Continuation of the Troubles in *Hungary*, and the *Ottoman* Empire it self was render'd about the Beginning of *March* very uneasy with the *Spahis* Request to the Visier, That they might be allow'd to take up their wonted Pension themselves from the Farmers and Husbandmen here and there in the Country; which being refused them, they went to put the same in Execution without it: But their Insolency at length was most severely repress'd with various kinds of Deaths and Punishments. The Rebellion also in *Asia* still continued, and the *Persians* prosper'd, against whom the Prime Visier was order'd to go in Person: But, notwithstanding the *Turks* seeming desirous of a Peace with the *Christians*, and their Difficulties in the *East*, yet they endeavour'd to surprize *Raab*, as the revolted *Hungarians* also distressed *Esperies*, and took *Tockay*; yet there was no good Understanding at this Time between the *Heydukes* and  
*Turks*





*Turks* and *Tartars*: For the *Turks* coming to assault *Lippa*, a Town of the *Heydukes*, they forsaking the Town, fortified the Castle with some armed Men, and then placed many others in Caves and Cellars up and down, and laid great Store of Gun-Powder in the Streets; so that the *Turks* seeing the Gates open, and entering without Resistance, hasted to have taken the Castle; but the Powder in the mean time taking Fire, blew up a great many of them, and those conceal'd Persons issuing out presently thereupon, made a great Slaughter amongst them. At length the *Imperial* Council seriously weighing the Proposals of the *Hungarians*, by *Illishascus*, notwithstanding the great Opposition made by the *Romish* Clergy, and more particularly *Nicholas*, Bishop of *Vienna*, agreed to the Articles of Religion too, which seem'd to be most boggled at, which imported, That from thence forward it should be lawful for every Man throughout the Kingdom of *Hungary* to have the free Use of his Religion, and believe what he would. So now as this Peace seem'd to be a *Preludium* to that which follow'd between the Emperor and the *Turks*, so the great Fire which in the mean time happen'd at *Constantinople*, and the Loss esteem'd by it to have been Five Millions of Ducats, could be no Obstruction to it, and therefore Commissioners for the Emperor, *Turks* and *Hungarians* met in Three little Islands form'd by the *Danube* near *Comorra*, and, after many Consultations, on the 19th of *November* the Articles were fully agreed on, and are in Substance these that follow.

Peace concluded between the Emperor and *Hungarians*.

I.

That the Emperor shall in all his Letters, Ambassies, &c. use no other Style to the Grand Seignior but Son, and he again no other to the Emperor but Father.

Articles of Peace between the Emperor and the *Turks*.

II.

In the Beginning of their Letters to take upon them the Name and Quality of Emperor only.

III.

To take mutual Care for the Tranquility of *Hungary* and *Austria*.

IV.

## IV.

1605. Lawful for the King of *Spain* to enter into the Treaty.

## V.

The *Tartars* to be compriz'd therein.

## VI.

All manner of Hostilities to cease.

## VII.

All Prisoners of War to be set at Liberty, and others exchanged.

## VIII.

All Controversies about the *Danube* to be adjusted by the Governour of *Raab* and *Basha* of *Buda*, and the most important to be decided by their Imperial Majesties.

## IX.

The *Visier-Basha* to send Presents to Arch-Duke *Matthias*, and the Emperor to send 200000 Ducats to the Sultan, with mutual Ambassies.

## X.

The Peace to begin 1607. and to continue Twenty Years, and mutual Ambassies to be sent every Three Years with Presents.

## XI.

*Vachia* to be restor'd to the *Christians*, and *Gran* remain to the Sultan.

## XII.

Lastly, The *Turks* to exact no Tribute by the Point of the Sword, &c.

There were great Rejoycings made for this Peace in all Parts of *Hungary*; nay, when the Grand Seignior himself heard of it he, with a Body of *Fanizaries* and others, went in great Magnificence to *St. Sophia*, to give Thanks to *Mahomet*, and spent the next Day in Pleasures, designing from thence forward to turn all his Forces upon *Persia*, with which Intentions of his we conclude this Year in *Turkey*; only we shall observe, that the Great *Botschay* died at *Cassovia* the 30th of *December*, very much lamented.

A Peace having been thus concluded between the Two Emperors, the War in the North was still on Foot; for tho' King *Charles* of *Swedeland* had once or twice offer'd Peace to *Sigismund*, yet the Troubles of

Poland presenting him with a fair Opportunity, he sent an Army, under the Command of *Joachim Frederick*, Count of *Mansfield*, to invade *Livonia*, who presently carried *Wissenstein* with very good Fortune, and then leaving part of the Army before *Dorpt*, he with the rest advanced to *Wolmar*, but could do nothing before that Place; nay, the Garrison of *Dorpt* made a Salley, and repulsed that part that besieged them, when they were not much on their Guard. But on the other Hand, the Troops that *Charles* sent into *Muscovy* under *de la Gardie* and *Horn*, not only defeated the *Poles*, and *Demetrius* his Party divers times, but carried several of their Forts.

1606.

*Swedes invade Livonia.*

It's a long Way from hence into the *Netherlands*, which we do again make in our Way to *England*, where *Spinola* making way with his Army towards *Friesland*, laid Siege to *Groll*, which falling sooner than was expected into his Hands, he then attack'd *Rhineberg*, and *Orange* failing to relieve it, that also became a Prey to the *Spaniards*; but *Spinola* having not well ended the Siege before a new Mutiny began to be discover'd, whereby his Army was pretty much weaken'd, as well as by his late Enterprize, *Maurice* laid hold of the Opportunity of recovering *Groll*; he successfully carry'd *Lochem* in Three Days time; but the advanced Season of the Year, it being the Month of *November*, and the Approach of *Spinola* with a Body of well experienced and hardy Troops made him draw off, without any Loss, and so this Year terminated, which put a Period to the Life of *Justus Lipsius*, at *Lovain*, in the *Spanish Netherlands*, at the Death. Age of 59 Years. He was born at *Je*, near *Brussels* in *Brabant*, Octob. 15. 1547. being the Nephew of *Martinus Lipsius*, *Erasmus* his Friend. He was one of the most famous Men of his Time, Secretary to the Cardinal of *Granville*, and taught at *Louvain*. and other Universities, where he writ the History of our Lady of *Hall*. His Works are in Six Volumes in *Folio*.

*Spinola*

takes *Groll*, &c.

*Lipsius* his

What occurs first to our View at Home, is the Union between *England* and *Scotland*, which being the great Thing the King had set his Heart upon, *Sir Francis Bacon*, then Solicitor-General, came into the House of Commons, prepar'd for it, and first moved,

1607.

1607. moved, That the *Scotch* might be Naturaliz'd by Act of Parliament. The Motion was oppos'd by several strong and modest Arguments, among which they brought in the Comparison of *Abraham* and *Lot*, whose Families joining together, they differ'd, and alledged these Words, *Vade tu ad Dextram, ego ad Sinistram*. To which it was roundly answer'd, That that Speech brought the Captivity of the one, they having now disjointed their Strength.

Union between  
England  
and Scot-  
land de-  
bated in  
Parlia-  
ment.

But the opposing Party said, If they admitted the *Scots* to participate of their Liberties, they should be over-run by them; as Cattle (naturally) pent up by a slight Hedge, will get over it into a better Soil; and a Tree planted in a barren Place will thrive to excessive and exuberant Branches in a better; and of this there was a pregnant Instance in the Multitudes of *Scots* in *Poland*. The Reply hereunto was, That if they had not Means, Place, Custom and Employment (not like Men, but Beasts) they would starve in a plentiful Soil, tho' they came into it; and what Spring-tide and Confluence of that Nation had come over and dwelt in *England* during now Four Years of the King's Reign? Farther, they would never live so meanly here as in *Poland*, since they had rather discover their Poverty Abroad than at Home. Besides, there was a Question, Whether *England* had People enough, especially if they did but consider the drowned Grounds, and common Wastes in the Nation, the Ruin and Decay of ancient Cities; witness how many serv'd in Parliament for desolate Boroughs: Besides, their Wastes by Sea, as well as by Land, whereby they suffer'd the *Flemmings* to carry away all their Fishing, the Sinews of their Industry to be slacken'd, and they wanting active Spirits to corroborate them by Example. Besides this, planting of *Ireland*, which was a vast Kingdom, that abounded with Rivers, Havens, Woods, Quarries, good Soil and temperate Climate, was an Argument of it: Neither could it be said, that a Surcharge of People could be prejudicial to a Country, since the worst of it would be an honourable War to recover their ancient Rights, revenge Injuries, or attain the Honour of their Ancestors. Lastly, They ought not to forget the Considerations of Amplitude and Greatness,



ness, and fall at Variance about Profit and Reckonings, which were fitter for private Persons than for Kingdoms.

It was objected on the other Side, That the Fundamental Laws of both Kingdoms were different, and it was declared they should continue so, and therefore it would not be reasonable to proceed to that Naturalization, whereby to invest the *Scots* with our Rights, unless they would receive and submit to our Laws. To this it was answer'd, That in the Administration of the World under the Great Monarch of All, His Laws are divers; there being one Law in Spirits, another in Bodies; one in Regions Celestial, another in Elementary; and yet the Creatures are all one Mass or Lump. That in the State of the Church, among People of several Languages and Stocks, there was a Communion of Saints, and they were all Fellow Citizens and Naturalizants of the Heavenly *Jerusalem*, and yet the Ecclesiastical Laws, Politics and Hierarchies were different; for the Laws were rather *Figura Republice* than *Forma*, rather Bonds of Perfection, than Entireness; That our Common Laws, were not in Force in *Ireland*, *Jersey*, *Gernsey*, and the *Isle of Man*, and yet they had the Benefit of Naturalization.

To which it was reply'd, That these were only Rhetorical Flourishes; for God, who was the only Disposer of all his Creatures, kept them in Order and Obedience to Himself, by a Law which they could not deviate from, unless He withdrew His preserving Hand from them; but between Man and Man, or Nation and Nation, there could be no such Tye or Obligation to hold an Union where they had various Laws and Privileges. And for the Immunities given to the *Irish* for some Ages past, they were *English* Colonies sent thither, being a great part of them Native with us, of the same Blood and Stock, with whom they were ingrafted by Time, and made as it were one Body, the better to secure their Obedience, and hinder any League or Amity with a Foreign Nation: But *Scotland* had an entire Union with the *French*, continued for some Hundreds of Years, which was indissoluble, and therefore not yet compatible with the Freedoms of *England*. When they

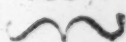
H

had

1607. had as much Experience of the Friendship of *Scotland*, as they shew'd the *French* they should encline to a more intimate Union; besides, there was an Inequality in the Fortunes of the Two Nations, and by that Commixture there might ensue Advantage to them, and less to the *English*.

To the latter part it was answer'd, *Beatius est dare quam accipere*; and *Edward I.* among his other Virtues and Excellencies, both in War and Government, was famous for none more than for his Design in his Conquest of *Scotland*, since he did not bend his Undertaking for glorious Acquests Abroad, but solid Strength at Home, which, if it had succeeded, could not but have brought in those Inconveniences that do arise from the Commixture of a more opulent Kingdom with a less; for 'twas not the Yoke either of Laws or Arms that could alter the Nature of the Climate or Soil, neither was it the Manner of the Commixture that could alter the Nature of it; and therefore if it were good then for *England*, it must be so now, and not to be valued the less because we paid not so dear for it. They strove farther to prove, That the Benefit of Naturalization was by Law to as many as were, or should be born, since the King's Accession to the Crown; for there was no more than to bring the *Ante-nati* into the Degree of the *Post-nati*, that adult Persons might not be in a worse Condition than Children, and elder Brothers in no worse State than younger. If any objected, the Laws were not so, but that the *Post-nati* were Aliens, as well as the rest, it was contrary to the Reason of the Law, the Wisdom of the Common Laws of *England* being admirable, in Distribution of the Benefit, and Perfection of the Law, according to the several Conditions of Persons. The Degrees were Four, Two of Aliens, and Two of Subjects. The first Degree was of an Alien, born under a King or Republick, which was an Enemy. Now, if such an one came into the Kingdom without a Pass, it was at his Peril, the Law giving him no Protection, neither of Body, Lands, nor Goods; so that if he were slain, there was no Remedy by any Appeal at the Party's Suit, tho' she were an *English* Woman, notwithstanding at the King's Suit the Case might be otherwise, in regard

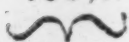
1607.



gard of the Offence against the publick Peace. The second Degree was of an Alien, born under the Faith and Allegiance of a King, or Commonwealth, that was a Friend. Now, unto such an one the Laws afforded greater Benefit and Protection in Things Personal, Transitory and Movable, as Goods, Chattles, Contracts, and the like; but not in an Estate of Inheritance; and the Reason for it was, because he might be an Enemy, tho' he was not; for the Government under which he was born might enter into a War against us, and therefore as the Law had but a Transitory Assurance of him, so it rewarded him with transitory Benefits. Now, the Third Degree was of a Subject, who having been an Alien, was made free by Charter and Denization, to whom the Law afforded greater Privileges, such as Power to purchase a Free-hold Estate to his own Use, as also entituled his Children, born after his Denization to inherit; but yet he could not make a Title, or deduce any Pedigree from any Ancestor Paramount; for the Law did not think fit to put him in the same Degree with a Native Subject, since his Affections could not so well be settled by any Kindness, as when from Men's Birth they were inbred and inherent. But for the Fourth and present Degree, it was of such a Person, that was neither an Enemy, nor could be so for the future, and therefore the Law allow'd him the full Benefit of Naturalization; whereupon it was urged, That if these were the true Steps and Paces of the Law, no Man could deny, but whoever was born under the King's Obedience, never could, *in aliquo puncto Temporis*, be an Enemy, and therefore in Reason *Naturales ipso Jure*; yet it was not superfluous to have it done by Parliament, for it would shew the World our Affection unto them, and good Agreement with them.

Then they shew'd by the Authority of History and Experience, the Inconveniences that might arise, in case this Union of Naturalization did not close and bind up the Veins, and so as to make it one perfect Body; for else it might be apt to open and break out again upon all Occasions, and relapse to the Detriment of both; and they instanced in the Wars of the *Romans* and *Latins*, which were occasion'd meerly

1607.



for want of this Union, and were never quit till they enjoy'd it; as also between the *Peloponnesians* and *Spartans*. They also produced more modern Examples in this kind, as in the Kingdoms of *Aragon* and *Castile*, united in the Persons of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, sever'd and divided from the rest of *Spain* in Privileges, and directly in this Point of Naturalization, or Capacity of Inheritance; the Consequence whereof was, That a Rebellion arose among them, which a Royal Army with Difficulty suppress'd, and they being made one incorporated Body with the rest of *Spain*, perpetuated Peace to Posterity. To this they added another Instance between *Florence* and *Pisa*, and said, That whatever Kingdoms and States had been united, and the Union corroborated by the Bonds of Naturalization, they could never be observ'd afterwards to disunite or sever again upon any Occasion, whereof divers Provinces of *France*, by Time annex'd to that Crown, were farther Witnesses.

Next they proceeded to shew. The Benefits that should accrue therefrom would be Security and Greatness; Security, by stopping up the Postern-Gates of our Enemies; so that we should not be so much a Temptation to the Ambition of Foreigners, when their Approaches and Avenues were taken away; for having had so little Success when they had these Advantages, they would have less Comfort when they wanted them. Greatness by this Union must needs follow, for having so many Iron-handed-Men in these Three Kingdoms, we should not only be able to pluck Gold from the (once poor) *Spaniards*, and *Indian* Mines, but keep the whole Christian World in Awe by our Arms.

King's  
Speech a-  
bout the  
Union.

But these Arguments not prevailing of themselves, the King thought fit to try what he could do with both Houses, whom he sent for to the Banqueting-House, and there laid before them, That the Union he desired was of Laws and Persons. such a Naturalization as might make one Body of both Kingdoms, that as there was but *Unus Rex*, so there might be but *Unus Grex*, and *Una Lex*: His Intention was not (as some vainly alleadged) to give *England* the Labour and Sweat, and *Scotland* the Fruit and Sweet, it being idle to talk of Transplanting Trees out of a barren Ground



Ground unto a better, and lean Cattel out of a bad Pasture into a more fertile Soil. Could any Man supplant them, unless they would? Or was *Scotland* so strong as to pull them out of their Houses? Whereas the least Grounds in *Scotland* would rather be planted by Swarms of People, than cumber the Streets in *England*. Then he desired,

1607.

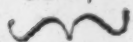
1. That all Hostile Laws should cease, seeing the King of *England* could not make War with the King of *Scotland*.

2. That there should be an Intercourse of Trade, he being no Stranger, but descended of their ancient Kings; and how could he be natural Liege-Lord to both, and they Strangers to one another? And should they, who were under the same Allegiance, be no freer, nor have any better Respect than *French* Men and *Spaniards*.

3. They all agreed; they were no Aliens, and yet would not allow them to be natural; That he was inform'd by their own Judges and Lawyers, at his first Accession to the Crown, That there was a Difference between the *Ante* and *Post* Natives of each Kingdom, which caus'd him to publish a Proclamation, That the *Post-nati* were naturalized by his Accession; but he confess'd, Judges might err, and so might the Lawyers on their Side; therefore he admonish'd them to beware to disgrace either his Proclamations, or the Judges; for so they might disgrace both their King and Laws, who had Power when the Parliament was ended to try them both for Estates and Lives.

He also proceeded yet farther, saying, For some Men, who with their flattering Speeches would have the *Ante-nati* preferr'd, alledging their Merit in his Service, such Discourses had *Mel in Ore*, & *Fel in Corde*, carrying an outward Appearance of Love to the Union, but a contrary Resolution in their Hearts; for he would have them know, it lay within the Compass of his Prerogative to prefer whom he pleas'd to any Dignity, Civil or Ecclesiastical; but he was so far from prejudicing the *English* therein, that he was willing to bind himself to reasonable Restrictions; besides, it was a special Point of the King's Prerogative to make Aliens Citizens, and in any Case, wherein the Law was thought not to be clear, *Rex est Index*,

1607.



for he was *Lex loquens*, supplying the Laws where they wanted; but this he spake, as knowing what belong'd to a King, and not intending to press it farther than might agree with their Affections, and stand with the Conveniency of both Nations.

Here he took upon him to state the Inconveniences that might be supposed to arise from *Scotland*.

1. An evil Affection in the *Scots* to the Union.
2. That the Union was incompatible.
3. That the Gain was little or nothing.

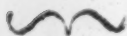
Now, if Things were so, why was there any Talk of an Union for the first? They alledged the Averseness of the *Scots*, from the Preface and Body of their Act, wherein they declar'd, they would remain an absolute and free Monarchy, and not alter the Fundamental Laws of their Kingdom; and yet at the Beginning of that Session of Parliament, the Opinion was current, That *Scotland* was greedy of the Union, and pursued it with so much Violence; That they cared not for the Strictness of the Conditions, so that they might attain the Substance and End; and yet they now said, they were backward, which was a Contradiction; for how could they own and deny the same Thing at one and the same Time? And by preserving their Fundamental Laws, they meant those Laws by which Confusion was avoided, their King's Succession and Monarchy maintain'd: To which he declar'd, That he was in Descent 300 Years before Christ, not meaning, as they did, their Common Law; for the *Scots* had no Law, but that which was *Jus Regis*: And for their Desire of continuing a free Monarchy, he hoped they meant not, that he should put Garrisons upon them, as the *Spaniards* did over *Sicily* and *Naples*.

Then he told them, That he governed *Scotland* with his Pen, he wrote and did more by a Clerk of the Council, than others would do by the Sword; and tho' he knew there were divers seditious Persons in that Kingdom, that might talk lewdly enough, yet none of them ever spake dishonourably of *England*, as they had done of *Scotland*; for if a Man spake unbecomingly there, the Chancellor by his Authority interrupted him; but here they had Freedom to speak what they list, and as long as they pleas'd, without  
Con-

Contradiction. Then he proceeded to shew what the Laws of *Scotland* were; and. 1. Those which concerned Tenures, Wards, Liveries, Seignories and Lands, were drawn out of the Chancery of *England*, brought into *Scotland* by *James I.* who was bred up in *England*, and differed only in Terms. 2. The Statute-Laws, to which he hoped they would be no Strangers. 3. The Civil Law, brought out of *France* by *James V.* and served only to supply in such Cases where the municipal Laws were defective, so that he hoped it was no hard Matter to unite the People together, who were in effect already subject to the same Law. And whereas it was objected that the King of *Scotland* had not a Negative Voice in Parliament, but must pass the Laws agreed on by the Lords and Commons, he assured them in the First Place, that the Form of Parliament there, was nothing inclined to Popularity; for about Twenty Days before the Parliament began, Proclamation was made through the Kingdom, that all Bills to be exhibited that Sessions should be delivered to the Master of the Rolls by a certain Day; then they were brought to the King, perused and considered by him; and only such as he allowed were sent into the Chancellor's Hands, to be propounded that Parliament, and no other; and if any Man spake of any other Matter than was in the Form first allowed by him, the Chancellor told him there was no such Bill allowed by the King: And when they were past for Laws, he ratified and confirmed them, first raising out what he did not approve of; and if this might be called a Negative Voice in Parliament, then he had one.

2. As for the Union between the *French* and *Scots*, which made this Union so incompatible; he assured it was a League only made between the Kings and not the People; for *Scotland* being solicited by *England* and *France* at once, for a League Offensive and Defensive against each others Enemies, there was a great distrust maintained in favour of *England*, that they being our Neighbours joined in one Continent, a strong and powerful Nation, it would be more Security to the State of *Scotland* to join in Amity with *England*, than *France* divided from them by the Sea, where they must abide the hazard of Wind and Weather,

1607.



ther, and other Accidents that might hinder Relief. But on the contrary it was alledg'd in favour of *France*, That *England* ever sought to conquer *Scotland*, and there would never be kept any sound Amity between them; whereas *France* lying more remote claim'd no Intérest, and therefore would be found a constant and faithful Friend, so it was concluded on their part; but by the Tenor it was ordered to be renewed and confirmed from King to King successively, by the Mediation of their Ambassadors, and therefore meerly personal; and so it was renew'd in the Queen his Mother's time, not by Assent in Parliament, which it could not have wanted if it had been a League of the People; and in the King's time when it came to be ratified, because it appear'd to be in *odium tertii*, it was by him left unrenew'd, in consideration of his Title to the Crown of *England*.

3. For the Profit and Conveniencies that should arise to *England* by this Union, who could be so ignorant as not to know the Gain would be great? Did they not gain by the Union of *Wales*? And was not *Scotland* greater than *Wales*? Should not Lands, Seas and Persons, be added to their Greatness? Two Snow-Balls put together grew greater, Two Houses joined made one the larger, and Two Castle-Walls made into one, made one as thick and as strong as both; and he profess'd he sought this Union only to advance the Greatness of their Empire here in *England*, yet in such Caution as might be consistent with the Welfare of both States; what was not desired had often been sought for and not obtained, to refuse it then now were double Iniquity; and for their Security in such reasonable Points of Restriction, which should be agreed to, they needed not to doubt his Inclination, for he would never say a thing he would not promise, nor promise any thing which he would not swear, nor swear any thing which he would not perform.

But notwithstanding all these Arguments and Flourishes made by the King and his Party to induce the Parliament of *England* to agree to the Union with the *Scots*, yet they apprehended so many and such great Inconveniencies in such an Union, where the Laws and Government were of a different Nature, that nothing



1607.  
 thing could bring them to comply with it. But what the King and his Party could do, was at length in about Two Years after this, in part gain'd, viz. when the Lord Chief Justice *Coke*, Lord Chancellor *Ellesmere*, and most of the Judges of *England*, in the *Exchequer* Chamber, gave their Opinions in favour of the *Post nati*, in that famous Case called *Calvin's Case*; and so the Matter has remain'd ever since.

The Parliament observing the King's Liberality, or rather Profuseness to favourites; and withal, that he had receiv'd since his Accession to the Crown 350000*l.* Subsidies, due to the late Queen, besides what they had given him, would raise no Money this Sessions; and so being prorogued to the 19th of *February*, 1609. it gives us Leisure again to visit our Neighbours. *France* affords little Matter for History this Year, only that in *July* King *Henry* re-united all his particular Demeans to the Crown; and for *Spain*, all that we meet with material there, is, that the *Cortes* or Parliament gave their King *Philip III.* Three and Twenty Millions, payable in Eight Years; the same to be raised out of the Eighth Part of all the Wine and Oil of the Growth of the Kingdom.

But however Matters were; *Spain* now, as well as Arch-Duke *Albert* were willing, after a War that had lasted 46 Years, to come to some Accommodation with the *United Provinces*: Father *Neyen*, a *Franciscan* Fryar of *Antwerp*, and Commissary General of his Order, first open'd a Way for it by the Means of a *Dutch Merchant*, a Friend of his, then at *Brussels*; and going himself afterwards to the *Hague*, and after some Hesitation, declaring, That the Arch-Duke and Arch-Dutche's did consent on their part, that the Declaration of Liberty of a Free State, which they knew the *United Provinces* pretended to, should precede, a Suspension of Arms was agreed on for Eight Months, to begin in *May*: The Kings of *England* and *France* were forward with their good Offices to promote a Truce; however, the *States* boggled at the Manner of the Ratification to be required of *Spain*, and insisted it should contain Word for Word, the same Declaration of Freedom, which the Arch-Duke and the Arch-Dutche's had made in their Instrument; and

1607. and Prince *Maurice* was as much against any Accommodation at all, as *Barnevell* was eager for it; yet Things at length were so far brought to bear, that the *Spanish* Deputies arriv'd the Beginning of *February*, 1608. at the *Hague*, in order to a Treaty; and there at present we shall leave them.

The Affairs of the North are not considerable for the present; all that we find is, that *Mansfield* took *Felim* for the *Swede*; and after that, without any apparent Necessity, and even without King *Charles* his Knowledge, agreed with General *Codgenitz*, upon a Suspension of Arms, which he afterwards counteracted by the King's Orders, and made himself Master of *Dinamunder* and *Kockenhausen*.

Arch-Duke *Matthias* made K. of *Hungary*.

Those of *Germany* stood thus; the States of *Hungary*, assembled at *Presbourg*, having receiv'd News, that the Emperor *Rodolph*, by reason of his Indisposition, could not possibly come among them as they had desired he should, proceeded to receive for their Governour Arch-Duke *Matthias*, whom they afterwards elected for their King, on Condition that he should confirm their Privileges, and grant them Liberty of Conscience for those new Opinions in Religion, which the greatest part of them had embraced.

The *Bohemian* Protestants hearing of it, sent Deputies to invite him to come into their Country, upon a Promise that they would endeavour to encline the States of *Bohemia* to follow the Example of those of *Hungary*. This Negotiation had that Success, that the Arch-Duke march'd immediately towards them with some Troops, and passing through *Austria*, sought also to gain that Country. This Proceeding by no means pleased the Emperor; wherefore he began to put himself in a Posture of opposing it; which the Electors and other Princes perceiving, they forthwith endeavour'd to accommodate the Matter, apprehending the ill Consequences that might otherwise ensue. They therefore wrote to *Matthias* for that Purpose, who for Peace sake consented to a Treaty, which was sign'd at *Prague* on the 6th of *June*, whereby the Emperor gave the said Arch-Duke *Hungary* and *Austria*, and also assur'd him of *Bohemia* after his Death, in case he died without Issue-Male.

For the better Performance of this Treaty, the Emperor sent Cardinal *Diedrichstein* to *Matthias* with the Regalia of *Hungary*, who receiving them from the said Prelate's Hands, retir'd with his Army, and march'd directly towards *Vienna*, which he enter'd on the 14th of *July*, and, pursuant to the Treaty, took Possession of that Arch-Dutchy, and there ratified the Truce with the Grand Seignior.

In the mean time, the *Imperial* Ambassador, towards the Beginning of this Year, in Pursuance to one of the Articles of the late Peace, going with his Presents to *Constantinople*, but not setting forward so soon as the *Turks* expected, both they and the *Tartars* began to suspect the Sincerity of the *Christians*; and therefore adventured not only to roam into their Territories, but also ill used the Hostages left at *Buda* for the Observance of the Peace; and when the *Basha* of *Buda*, some time after, allow'd them more Liberty, the proud *Fanizaries* were so offended, that they mutiny'd, and had like to have stoned the *Basha* to Death, reviling him to his Face, and calling him Traytor, and Betrayer of his Prince and Coutry, one of which Hostages they also grievously wounded; but tho' he seiz'd some of them in the Night, and caused them to be drown'd in the *Danube* yet they not long after designing an Inroad into the Territories of the *Christians*, to colour the same, procured the *Basha* to write to *Matthias* of a great many Wrongs pretended to have been done to the *Turks*, and Contraventions of the late Peace, and desired speedily to know, Whether the *Christians* would keep the Peace or no?

The former Contest was still on Foot between the Pope and the *Venenians*; but tho' both Sides seem'd to make great Preparations for War, they were not yet unwilling to hearken to such Measures as would have brought Things to an amicable Composure; and at length the whole Matter was made up by the Intervention of the *French* Ambassador, the Republick making some sort of formal Concessions, but standing immovable against the Re-admission of the *Jesuits*, and the Revocation of those Laws that had caused the Difference: But having before mention'd King *James* his Endeavours by his Ambassador *Worten* to make an entire Breach and Separation between the Republick and

1607. and the Pope, I chuse to give it you in the Words of a late Author, to this Effect.

There appear'd at thattime a wonderful Disposition in that State to work a Reformation in the Church, and throw off the Papal Yoke. In order to advance it King *James* dispatch'd Sir *Henry Wotton* his Ambassador to *Venice*; and hearing that *Spain* had declar'd for the Pope, he declar'd for the *Venetians*; and acquainted *Justiniani*, their Ambassador in *England* That he would not only assist them with all the Forces of his Kingdom, but engage all his Allies in their Defence. At *Wotton's* Arrival, the Breach between the Pope and the Republick was brought very near a Crisis; so that a total Separation was expected not only from the Court, but the Church of *Rome*; which was set on by the Learned *Padre Paulo*, and the Seven Divines of the State, with much Zeal, and conducted with as great Prudence. The Ambassador at his Audience offer'd all possible Assistance in his Master's Name, and accus'd the Pope and Papacy of being the chief Authors of all the Mischiefs in *Christendom*. This was received with great Deference and Respect to King *James*: And when the Pope's Nuncio objected, That King *James* was not a Catholick, and so was not to be rely'd upon; the Doge took him up briskly, and told him, That the King of *England* believ'd in *Jesus Christ*, but he did not know in whom some others believ'd. King *James* had sent with *Wotton* his Premonition to all Christian Princes and States, translated into *Latin*, to be presented to the Senate; which *Padre Paulo* and the other Divines press'd might be done at his first Audience; telling him, they were confident it would have a very good effect. The Ambassador could not be prevail'd with; alledging he had positive Orders to wait till St. *James's* Day, which was not far off. This Conceit of presenting King *James's* Book on St. *James's* Day, spoil'd all; for before that Day came, the Difference was made up, and that happy Opportunity lost. So that when he had his Audience on St. *James's* Day, and had presented the Book, all the Answer he got was, That they thank'd the King of *England* for his Good-will, but they were now reconciled to the Pope, and that therefore they were resolv'd not to admit of any Change in their Religion, according to their Agreement.



ment with the Court of Rome. How little Reputation he acquir'd in the Matter of the *Venetian Interdict*, appears yet more plainly in this, that in all the numerous Collections there are of Letters, that pass'd on that Subject between the Cardinals of *Foyeuse* and *Perron*, the Marquess *de Fresnes* and *Henry IV.* there is not the least Notice taken of King *James*, or his Ambassie.

1607.

But before we leave *Italy*, it's fit we should observe, C. Baro- that this Year proved fatal to Cardinal *Cesar Baronius*, *nius* his at the Age of 69. He was born at *Sora*, in the King- Death. dom of *Naples*, in 1538. At the Age of Twenty *Philip* of *Neris* employ'd him to Catechize his Children; after which for Twenty Years together he apply'd himself in holding Conferences of Ecclesiastical History in the Church of the Oratory at *Rome*, and undertook to refute the *Centuriators* in his Church Annals. He was made a Cardinal by *Clement VIII.* in 1596. and had been Pope, but that he had said, *That the Spanish Crown built its Right to Sicily on false Evidence.* His Annals cannot be perfect for Three Reasons: 1<sup>st</sup>, Because he was unskill'd in the *Greek* Tongue. 2<sup>dly</sup>, He was not Master of Chronology, neither could he thro' the Disadvantage of the Time he lived in. 3<sup>dly</sup>, He was unhappily prejudiced in Favour of the Church of *Rome*. Thro' his hard Study he could eat no Meat, which made sitting at the Table a Torment to him. He was very thoughtful, of a few Words, and seem'd morose, which indeed seem'd to proceed from his continual Application to his Work.

That famous Lawyer, Historian and Linguist *Paul Merula's* *Merula* now also made his Exit. He was born at *Dort*, Death. in *Holland*, and became History Professor at *Leyden*, after *Lipsius*. He wrote Comments upon *Ennius*, the Lives of *Erasmus* and *Junius*, a Cosinography, Treatise of Law, &c.

This Year produced no great matter of History, especially in *England*, where we find the Lord Treasurer *Buckhurst* dying suddenly, as he sat at the Council-Table, and was succeeded in his Office by the Earl of *Salisbury*, a Person well instructed by his Father the Lord *Burleigh*, a wise Man, and a Courtier from his Cradle, and tho' Nature was not propitious to his outward Form, he being crook back'd, the

1608.

1608. supply'd that Defect with extraordinary inward Accomplishments. The Earl of *Northampton* was also made Lord Privy-Seal, and upon their Shoulders it was that the King laid the Weight of all publick Business.

Extream  
Cold in  
*France.*

This Year the *French* called, *The great Winter Year*; for the Cold, which begun very severe on St. Thomas his Day, lasted above Two Months, without relenting in the least Degree, except for a Day or two; but petrified, as we may say, all the Rivers, froze most of the young Vine-Roots, and other tender Plants, starv'd above half the Wild-Fowl and small Birds in the Fields, great Numbers of Travellers on the Roads, and near a Fourth of the Cattle that were housed; and it was observ'd, that the Heats of the following Summer almost equal'd the Severities of the Winter; and yet the Year might be reckon'd among the most plentiful. The Thaw caused no less Damage than the Frost, and what happen'd at *Lyons* is extreamly remarkable: There was a Mountain of Ice-Cakes accumulated on the *Soane* before the Church of *de l'Observance*. The whole City trembled for fear it should carry away the Bridge upon its Breaking; but a simple Artizan having for a certain Sum of Money engaged to make it break by Degrees, and without any Damage, he lighted 2 or 3 small Fires on the Shore, and having mutter'd a few Words, this huge Icy Body burst, with a Noise like a Cannon, into an infinite Number of Pieces, the greatest of which did not exceed 4 or 5 Foot; but the poor Fellow, instead of being rewarded, was like to be severely punish'd, and his *Recipe* or Charm was publickly burnt in the *Town-Hall*.

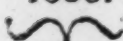
Having nothing more to detain us in *France*, but the Death of the Duke of *Montpesier*, whose only Daughter was marry'd to the King's Third Son *Gaston*, Duke of *Orleans*; and *Spain* being at present barren of any thing, but what relates to the Negotiation of Peace carry'd on in the *Netherlands*, we shall look Treaty of a little into that Matter. The *United-Provinces* insisted in the First place, That the King of *Spain* and the Arch-Dukes should absolutely acknowledge them free States, and amply renounce all Right or Claim they, or their Successors, might pretend to over those  
Pro-

Treaty of  
Peace in  
the *Ne-*  
*lands.*

Provinces, and oblige themselves not to make use of their Arms or Titles, or any thing that belong'd to them; of which Peremptoriness the Catholick Deputies complain'd much to the *English* and *French* Ambassadors: However, the Arch-Duke declaring himself willing to consent to the said Article, if the *United-Provinces* in Lieu thereof would give over their Navigation to the *Indies*: This appear'd to be an unsurmountable Difficulty, the *Spaniards* insisting positively upon it, and the States resolving never to make such a Concession, whatever the Event should prove, nor to admit the Roman Catholick Religion among them, which the other requir'd.

The *French* King was all this while very attentive to the Proceedings in *Holland*, and to heighten the Jealousie of the *Spaniards*, he made a new League with the States, That in case the Peace should succeed, he should be bound to assist them with 10000 Men at his own Charge, to oblige the *Spaniards* the better to keep it, and they to supply him with 5000, in case the *Spaniards* made War upon him: However, the Peace being now fallen to the Ground, Endeavours were used to have a long Truce concluded, and *Fanines*, the *French* Ambassador, used all the Dexterity he could to accomplish it; but the Slowness of the *Spaniards* causing new Apprehensions and Jealousie, this Year was spent out without coming to any Conclusion upon it.

Something like a Treaty there was now on Foot between the *Swedes* and the *Poles*, which last, in Consideration of the Letters King *Charles* had sent them the preceding Year, offer'd to enter into a Negotiation of Peace, or, at least, to make a Truce with *Sweden*; and agreed to a mutual Exchange of Prisoners. Accordingly *Charles* sent Plenipotentiaries to treat with them at *Revel*; but the *Poles* refused to treat with them, under Pretence, that the *Swedes* had possess'd themselves of *Dunamunder* and *Kokenhausen* before the Expiration of the Truce; and at the same time wrote to the States, That they knew no other King of *Sweden*, but King *Sigismund*; and that the *Swedes* themselves were the only Cause of the War. The Plenipotentiaries reply'd, That *Charles* was not at all oblig'd to stand to a Truce, that *Mensfeld* had concerted

1608.  certed with them without his Knowledge or Consent. But General *Codkenitz*, without listning to their Reasons, told 'em roundly, That he was more enclin'd to War than Peace, unless the *Swedes* would surrender the Castles they had taken. Upon which the *Swedish* Commissioners protested against the *Polish* Obstinacy, and so return'd to *Sweden*. The *Swedish* Fleet lay in the Mouth of the *Duna*, to intercept the Commerce of *Riga*; but the Inhabitants of that City, by the Help of an equal and continual Wind, sent out Fire-Ships, which set Fire to some *Swedish* Ships, and burnt them, and the whole Ships Crew. The same Year, the Commissioners of *Sweden* and *Denmark* had an Interview at *Wismar*, but to no Purpose; for the *Swedish* Ambassadors having staid too long at *Wismar*, to enjoy themselves and their Friends, the *Danes* arriving at the Time appointed, and finding the *Swedes* not come, drew up a Paper, which was sign'd by the Magistrate of the City, to testifie their Appearance, and then return'd Home; tho' at the same time the *Swedes* pretended they had been retarded by contrary Winds. Among many other Things, this Negligence was an Inlet to that bloody War that since broke out between *Denmark* and *Sweden*; besides that, it gave a disadvantageous Turn to *Charles's* Affairs ever after: For as soon as *Sigismund* had pacified the Intestine Troubles of his Kingdom, he bent all his Thoughts upon *Muscovy*, hoping either to raise one of his Favourites to that Throne, or ascend it himself, in order to be in a Capacity to reduce *Sweden*. *Charles*, either to cross his Designs, or in Hopes of some extraordinary Recompence for his Service, assisted *Suski* with fresh Succours, and that more zealously than before. But, after all, the *Muscovites* finding that the Game lay between the *Swedes* and the *Poles*, and being more afraid of the last than the first, seiz'd *Suski*, deliver'd him to the *Poles*, and offer'd their Crown to Prince *Uladislaus*, who was willing to accept it with a Proviso, of not being obliged to live in *Muscovy*. Upon this View, the *Poles* possess'd themselves of the City of *Muscow*: But the *Muscovites* quickly became weary of their new Guests, and rebell'd against them, Upon which the *Poles*, set Fire to the City, and ravaged it in a hideous Manner. The same time they had

The *Swedish* Fleet set on Fire before *Riga*.  
g4.

The Success of the *Poles* in *Muscovy*.



had equal Success in *Livonia*, where they took the City of *Pernaw*, by the Treachery of one *Daniel Wachsen*, who afterwards received a just Retribution for his Perfidiousness in *Stockholm*: And the *Danes* also at that Time began to commit Acts of Hostility against *Sweden*. And the Affairs of that Kingdom seem'd to take such an unhappy Turn, that the King thought nothing but the Assembling of the States of the Country could retrieve; of which more by and by.

1608.

As for *Hungary*, Things were pretty quiet there now, and the new King *Matthias* going thither, the first Thing he did was to confirm the Privileges, and grant the Liberty of Conscience he had promised. But on the other Hand, the Emperor *Rodolph*, who by Affairs of the Treaty of *Prague* was to have disbanded the Forces he had rais'd to go against King *Matthias*, on the contrary, suffer'd them to make Incursions into *Bohemia*, which chiefly falling on the Protestants, they, together with those of the same Profession in *Austria*, united their Forces to oblige the Emperor to grant them what they could not by other Means obtain. What favour'd them herein was the Resolution of *Matthias* to oppose the Emperor in his Intentions of getting one of the Arch Dukes of *Gratz* chosen King of the *Romans* to his Prejudice. This made *Rodolph* comply with those Protestants, rather than provoke them by his Obstinacy to join with *Matthias* in that Design.

There being no matterial Occurences in other Parts, besides those already accounted for, we'll return again to *England*, where we find the Prerogative Clergy having swell'd the High Commission to a great Height, it was complain'd of as a Grievance in Parliament, who sat again this Year; nay, Archbishop *Bancroft* (notwithstanding the Judges Answer to the Articles exhibited to the King, against granting Prohibitions, and that the Parliament was still sitting) repeated his Exhibitions formerly mention'd: But what Inclination soever the King might have to favour him, he had not Resolution enough to overrule the Judges Answer; it may be, lest the Parliament should interpose, or indispose them to grant him Money, whereof he stood already in no small Need;

1609.

1609. Need; but they appearing not so forward upon that Head to supply the King's Necessities, one Dr. Cowel publish'd a Book, call'd his *Interpreter*, wherein he premised these Three Principles: *First*, That the King was *Solutus à Legibus*, not bound by his Coronation Oath. *Secondly*, That it was not *ex Necessitate* that the King should call a Parliament to make Laws, but might do it by his absolute Power. *Thirdly*, That it was a Favour to admit the Consent of the Subjects in giving Subsidies. The King approving of this Book, and highly extolling the Civil Law in Derogation of the Common Law, it was not only publicly sold with Impunity, but this encouraged the Publication of divers others to the same Purpose, among which one *Blackwood* put out one, that concluded we were all Slaves, by reason of the Conquest. The Commons nettled herewith, intended to have proceeded severely against *Cowel*; but the King interposing, and promising to call in those Books by Proclamation, the Matter rested here: Yet neither this, nor the King's long Harangue to the Parliament, meeting with the desired Effect of getting more Money than one Subsidy and one Tenth, he was pleased by Proclamation to dissolve them *December 31. 1610.* after they had sat near Seven Years. His Majesty in that Proclamation set forth, That he had proposed many Things far differing from, and surpassing the Graces and Favours of former Times, both in Nature and Value, in Expectation of a good Conclusion of some weighty Cause, which had been there in Deliberation, not only for the Supply of the Necessities of his Majesty's Estate, but for the Ease and Freedom of his Subjects; but these being little taken Notice of the Two last Sessions, and the Members, by reason of the Length of the Parliament, debarr'd from the Hospitality they kept in the Country, and divers Shires, Cities and Boroughs having been burthen'd with the Expence of maintaining their Members; for these Reasons he was pleased to dissolve them.

March 10.  
1610.

Parliament dissolved.  
1610.

The *Netherlands*, which for many Years had been the Theatre of a bloody War, began to taste the Fruits of a happy Peace; the States being now entred into an Alliance not only with *France*, but also with the *English*, the *Spaniards* and Arch-Duke saw it

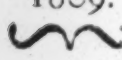
1609.

Twelve  
Years  
Truce.

it was their best way to agree with them; and at last a Truce was concluded at *Antwerp*, and proclaim'd there on the 14th of *April*, importing, That the Arch-Duke treated the States as free Provinces, upon which he had no manner of Pretence in Right of the Arch-Duchess *Isabel*; That there should be a Cessation from all Hostilities; That Traffick should be free, which however the *Spaniards* limited to *Europe*, without express License from the King; That they should hold such Places as they were in Possession of; That confiscated Estates should be restor'd; That the States Subjects should in the King's and Arch-Duke's Countries have the same Liberty in Religion, as had been granted to the Subjects of the King of *Great Britain* by the last Treaty of Peace; That the States should promise to make no Alteration in Religion in the Villages of *Brabant* depending on them; And that the Truce should continue for Twelve Years.

If from the *Netherlands* we make a Tour into *France*, we are to note, that King *Henry* this Year publish'd Two memorable Edicts, one in *May*, to punish Bankrupts with Death, as Robbers and publick Cheats; and the other in *June*, to prevent Duels: But there is no real Content to be met with in this World, and so this Great Prince had the Tranquility of his Mind frequently ruffled with the Discords of his Family, and more particularly the Dissain of the Marchioness of *Verneville* having encreased his Passion, this redoubled the Queen's Jealousie, and made the Marchioness stand more off, while *Sully* and some other Confidants labour'd in vain to reduce both to the King's Will and Pleasure. They menaced the Marchioness with the King's chusing another Mistress; and indeed to wean himself, he made publick Love to the Countess of *Moret*, and some time after to *Madam des Effarts*. At the same time, Means were used to moderate the Queen's Passion; but she was so absolutely govern'd by her Country-men *Conchino* and *Galigay*, those dangerous Firebrands, that no Good could be done with her. In the mean time, the zealous Catholicks of the King's Council, joining with and pursuing the Queen's Intentions, maintain'd dangerous Correspondencies with *Spain*, by the Intervention of the *Florentine* Ambassador, and made much

Fr. King's  
domestick  
Inqui-  
tudes.

1609.  ado about marrying the Dauphin and eldest Daughter of *France* with the Son and Daughter of King *Philip*; but King *Henry* was rather inclin'd to marry the Dauphin with the eldest Daughter of *Lorain*, and so to annex that Dutchy to *France*, and to bestow his Daughter upon the Duke of *Savoy's* eldest Son. You must know, indeed, that that Duke began to be dissatisfied upon divers Accounts with the *Spaniards*, and inclin'd to join in with the *French*; so that at last *Bouillon* having brought *Lesdeguieres* to discourse with him, a League was concluded, both Offensive and Defensive, between him and the King, whereof the said Marriage was to be as it were the Seal and Guarantee.

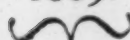
Designs of *France*. All this while the King's Design was to reduce the House of *Austria* within the Limits of *Spain*, and its Hereditary Countries. The *Hugonots* were much for it; but some *Romanists*, still leaven'd with the Remains of the League, were against it. However, the King for this End did all he could to settle the Tranquility of his own Kingdom, and to lay up all Things necessary for a War. He made himself pretty sure of the Two Northern Crowns, the *United-Provinces*, Duke of *Savoy*, the Protestant Princes of *Germany*, *Venetians* and *Swiss*; nay, the Pope himself, upon the Promise of re-uniting the Kingdom of *Naples* to the See of *Rome*, was drawn in; and when he had settled the Limits and Pretensions of the Christian Princes, his Design was to unite all for the Expulsion of the *Mahometan* Tyranny, which though, perhaps, not above his Courage, yet undoubtedly was above his Power.

However Things were, here comes a fresh Interruption to his Foreign Projects. *Henrietta Charlotte*, Daughter to the Constable *Montmerancy*, no sooner appear'd at Court, but the King was captivated with her Charms. To advance her in Honour he thought was the Way to win her; wherefore he marries her to the Prince of *Conde*, who was young, poor, and depended wholly upon him for his Support. The brave Prince quickly understood the Jig, and disdain'd to give way; upon which his Pension was taken away, and the Money promised upon Marriage not paid him. But this was so far from bringing him,



him, or indeed the Lady, to acquiesce, that he made his Escape with her to *Brussels*. The King was mightily concern'd hereat, and, upon the certain News of the Place of his Retreat, he sent to the Arch-Duke to give him up; but he was answer'd, That the Esteem he had for that Noble Blood having oblig'd him to allow him a Retreat, the Laws of Hospitality and Honour would not suffer him to deliver him up, and that there was no Ground to fear he would attempt any thing contrary to that Respect and Service he owed his Prince. This not satisfying him, he sent Ambassadors to *Brussels*, who talk'd louder, but to as little Purpose; so that now his Confidants would put him upon stealing the Princess away; nay, some contrived to do the same by the Prince: So that *Fuentes* assign'd him a good Guard for his Security, and so at present we leave him, and these Parts; and proceeding again into *Germany*, where, having already mention'd the Endeavours of the Protestants of *Bohemia* and *Austria* to have their Grievances redress'd, those of the Empire, after their Example, having not been able to obtain Justice, thought themselves oblig'd to have recourse to the same Means for their Security. The greatest part therefore of those Princes engag'd in an Union with divers Imperial Cities for their mutual Defence and common Advantage. The Elector *Palatine* was declared the Head of these, and their Union was otherwise named a Correspondence.

In Opposition to this, the contrary Party set up an Union, which they call'd the *Catholick League*, with this Difference nevertheless, that they engag'd Foreign Princes on their Side. The Occasion of this Difference was chiefly on account of the Inheritance of the Duke of *Cleves* and *Fuliers*, who dying without Issue, his Dominions descend'd to his Four Sisters, Two whereof had married Protestant Princes, and the other Two Catholicks, who both push'd on their Pretensions with the greatest Eagerness imaginable. The Landgrave of *Hesse* sided with the former, and brought them to join reciprocally in the Possession of those Dominions which they obtain'd of the States; and this was approv'd of by *France*, which they had drawn into their Interests. Notwithstanding the Em-

1609.  peror did all he could to prevent these Countries falling into the Hands of Protestants. The best Method he could think of to effect it was, by sequestering them into his own Hands; which he did by sending Arch-Duke *Leopold* to take Possession of them in his Name, who nevertheless was highly opposed therein by the Princes of the *Correspondence*, and the Foreign Princes and States, who foresaw the ill Consequences of such an Usurpation, and therefore protested warmly against it; vowing always to withstand it to their utmost Power. Hereupon they raised Forces equal to those of Arch-Duke *Leopold* and his Assistants, the Emperor and Arch-Duke *Albert*, at that time Possessor of the *Low Countries*.

Whilst this happen'd the Citizens of *Donaueurt* in *Swabia* drew a War upon themselves, by driving out the Catholick Inhabitants of that City, and rejecting the Proposals of Accommodation which the Emperor had made them. Hereupon the City was proscribed, besieged, and forced to capitulate. The Duke of *Bavaria*, who commanded at this Siege, declined violent Methods of taking it, tho' they were in his Power, thinking thereby to keep the other Cities of *Swabia* in their Duty: But therein he was mistaken, for they all jointly sided with the *Bohemian* Protestants, who had been disobligh'd by the Emperor's threatening to take their Privileges from them. They therefore, in Conjunction with the others, unanimously complain'd to the Protestant Union, then assembled at *Halle* in *Swabia*, who promised to take them into their Protection. These Protestant Princes had met at *Halle* chiefly about the Affairs of *Fuliers*, which they had espoused to that degree, that they had got together to the Number of 140 Voices, whereof the *Sieur de Boisfise*, Ambassador from the *French King*, was one, who promised in his Master's Name the Assistance of 8000 Foot and 2000 Horse. These Princes resolv'd among themselves to undertake the Maintaining the Two Protestant Princes of *Cleves* in their Possessions against Arch-Duke *Leopold*. The Emperor hearing of this call'd a Dyet at *Wirtzburg*, where it was likewise resolv'd to support the aforesaid Arch-Duke in his Pretensions. Now were great Preparations for War made on all Sides; which plainly demonstrated, that the Affair

Dyet in  
the Em-  
pire.

of

of *Juliers* was not the only Matter in question, but that there was some other great Design that lay conceal'd, which may appear in due time: But we move now to the North. 1609.

We left the *Suedes* last not only at the old War with the *Poles*, but very likely to come to an open Rupture with the *Dane*; and King *Charles* in this Juncture, thinking fit to call a Convention, he moved, that a Law might be enacted, declaring, That a Gentleman's Son, who studied not the Good and Service of his Country, should forfeit his Title to a Gentleman, and the Right of Succession to his Ancestors; but the Convention did not approve of the Motion, and when the Nobility refused to grant the King as much Money as he demanded for carrying on the War in *Russia* and *Livonia*, as well as in *Denmark*, from whence he was threatned, he harangued them with a great deal of Transport and Chagreen, upon which he was seiz'd with a sort of an Apoplexy, which not only interrupted the use of his Reason, but the Motion of his Body, and had prov'd fatal to the Government in the succeeding Wars, had not the incomparable Valour of his Son *Gustavus Adolphus* retriev'd it: But of him more in its proper Place. 1610.

We are now to remark, that this Year died *William Barclay's* *Barclay*, a *Scotch* Lawyer, who having lost all by the Civil Wars at Home, went into *France*, and made such a Progress in his Studies, that he became Law Professor in the University of *Pont à Mousson* in *Lorain*, and afterwards Chancellor of State to the Duke. He came into *England* in 1604. upon King *James's* Accession to the Throne, hoping that the Change of the Ruler would be follow'd with a Change of Religion; but being disappointed herein, he return'd into *France*, where he had the Place of first Royal Professor in the University of *Angers*. He writ *De Potestate Papæ. De Regno & Regali Potestate adversus Monarchomacas. In Titulos Pandectarum de rebus Creditis & de Jurejurando.* Death.

*Justus Joseph Scaliger*, the Son of *Julius Caesar Scaliger's* *Scaliger*, submitted to Fate *January 21st.* He was born at *Agen, Aug. 4. 1540.* began his Studies at *Bordeaux*, continued them under his Father, and finish'd them at *Paris.* He excell'd in Critical Learning, and was

1609. invited to be an Honourary Professor at *Leyden*, where he lived Sixteen Years. He wrote Poems, Notes upon *Seneca*, *Varro*, *Ausonius*, *Pompeius Festus*, *Emendatio Temperum*, upon *Eusebius Chronicon*, *Canones Isagogici*, &c.

1610. Having made a little Excursion from the last Year into this, in respect to the Affairs of *England*, because we would conclude the Proceedings of the King's first and almost Seven Years Parliament, it's worth observing, that at the Dissolution of them the King's principal Favourites were *Howard*, Earl of *Northampton*, Lord Privy-Seal; the Lord-Treasurer *Salisbury*; the Earl of *Montgomery*; the Lord *Walden*. afterwards Earl of *Suffolk*; *Richard*, after Earl of *Warwick*; the Earl of *Dunbar*, and Sir *Robert Carr*, a young *Scotch* Man, who quickly over-topp'd them all. He was born at *Edenburg*, of a comely and courtly Garb, and when the King had first Knighted him, he made him Gentleman of his Bed-Chamber, took the Pains himself to teach him the *Latin* Tongue, and by his daily Discourses laid a Foundation to capacitate him for a Statesman. Now to support these Favourites, and others of the King's Country-men of less Note, many Ways were used for raising Money during the Interval of Parliament, which, tho' they were found out progressively, and not in a short Series of Time, we shall for Conciseness sake sum them up together in this Place. 1. Monopolies. 2. Payments for new invented Knighthoods, call'd Baronets, the Price each 1000 *l.* and the King, to quicken the Market, promised to make but 200 of them, tho' when this was over, he kept it up all his Life-time after. 3. Commissions for reviving Obsolete Laws, for making Men who could expend 40 *l. per Annum* to compound for not being Knighted. 4. Payments for being made Knights of *Nova Scotia*. 5. The Purchasing of *English* Honours at certain set Prices, a Baron at 10000 *l.* a Viscount at 15000 *l.* and an Earl at 20000 *l.* 6. Payments for *Scotch* and *Irish* Honours, without any set Prices, the *Scottish* to have Precedence before the other. 7. Compositions upon defective Titles. 9. Money for making Prince *Henry* Knight. 10. To marry the Lady *Elizabeth* to the *Paltgrave*. 11. A

K James's  
Favou-  
rites.

King's  
Way of  
raising  
Money.

Bene-



Benevolence. 12. Money borrow'd upon Privy-Seals, besides Sales of Lands, Woods, Fee-Farm Rents, &c.

1610.



This is a sort of an ungrateful Recapitulation of Things done in this King's Reign, wherefore having just before mention'd Pr. *Henry*, now in the Sixteenth Year of his Age, the King, his Father, after he had first Knighted him, thought fit to create him Prince of *Wales*, with all the Pomp and Solemnity a Great King could express, or a meritorious or promising Prince could deserve; for as yet the King could discern nothing in his Actions, but the Slight of a towering youthful Deportment; but how far the King's Fears might afterwards blind the Eye of his Reason, when he saw him so much encrease in the People's Affection, to decline his Paternal Kindness, may have been the Subject of many's Fears, but shall not of my Narration. St. *James's* was appointed for the Prince's Court, where he was follow'd and attended by all our young Nobility and Gentry in as great State and Respect, as the King himself was by the old ones; and Sir *Charles Cornwallis* was sent Ambassador into *Spain* to treat of a Marriage between him and the King of *Spain's* eldest Daughter, which came to nothing.

*Henry* made Prince of *Wales*.

In treating last of the Affairs of *France*, having observ'd, that King *Henry's* Designs were to reduce the House of *Austria* within the Limits of *Spain*, and its Hereditary Countries, he had by this Time 30000 Foot and 6000 Horse, all choise Troops, marching towards *Compeign*. *Lesdequieres*, now a Marechal of *France*, had 12000 Foot and 2000 Horse, the Duke of *Savoy* and the *Venetians* were to join him with 30000 more. The Princes of *Germany* had but few less, and the *United-Provinces* upwards of 16000, to say nothing of their Naval Power. It was reckon'd, the War, one Way or other, would cost the King 1250000 Crowns per Month, the which he was prepar'd to continue for Five Years; for he had above 4 Millions ready Money, besides his Revenue, which, all Charges paid, amounted yearly to Six Millions; besides which, his Superintendant, in case of Necessity, promised 175 more upon Parties extraordinary. The House of *Austria* took no great Care to provide against so rude a Shock, the Reason whereof cannot

with

1610. with any real Certainty be assign'd. However it were, one *Ann Comans* gave Information of a horrible Conspiracy against the King; but they pretended she was mad, and shut her up: But, indeed, there were so many fomented against him, that it was almost impossible he should escape; and his Death was look'd upon as a Thing so certain, that it was reported in divers Foreign Countries before the fatal Blow was given.

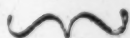
Prefages  
of the  
King's  
Death.

Here I will not interrupt the bloody Scene with the Ceremonies of the Queen's Coronation at this Time; but come to observe, that the King in the mean time being overwhelm'd with cruel Anxiety and Melancholy, of which he could not possibly divine the Cause, felt in himself the Symptoms of that Unhappiness which threatned him. He was often heard to send forth doleful Sighs and Words of ill Prefage; and there were some sad Omens that preceded his Destiny. It was observ'd, that some Days before, the May that had been planted in the Court-yard of the *Louvre*, was fallen down of it self. A Star appear'd visibly at Noon-day in 1609. and the preceding Year a great Comet. The *Loire* overflow'd most furiously, as it had done before the violent Deaths of *Henry II.* and *Henry III.* The Inhabitants of *Angoulmois* saw a fantastick Army, seeming to consist of 8 or 10000 Men, with a Commander of great Appearance at the Head of them, who having march'd upon the Earth above a League together, lost himself in a Wood. Two Years before, a Priest at *Montargis* found a Note upon the Altar, intimating, the King should be assassinated; and about the same time Two Gentlemen of *Gascogne*, of different Religions and Places, went on purpose to Court to advertise him of the doleful and pressing Visions they affirm'd to have had on the same Subject. There was one so bold as to tell the Queen, That Festival would terminate in Mourning and Tears; and that Princess starting one Night out of her Sleep, weeping, told the King, She dreamt they were stabbing him with a Knife. He himself was not ignorant, that the Number of the Years of his Reign, as a Magician had computed them to *Catherine de Medicis*, were almost accomplish'd, and he had some confused Knowledge of di-

vers

vers Conspiracies form'd against him: He had in his Life-time discover'd above Fifty, but this last prov'd fatal to him, of which take these Particulars.

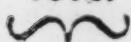
1610.



The Resolution to murder him had been a long time form'd by that execrable Monster *Francis Ravaiillac*, who was a Native of *Angoulesme*, about 32 Years old, and a Lawyer's Son, which Profession he at first follow'd; but afterwards he went into the Convent of the *Feuillans*, where he was a Novice; but they expell'd him for his extravagant Whimsies. Some time after he was charged with, but acquitted of a Murder. Then he became a Solicitor again, after which he turn'd Pedant in *Angoulesme*, and was so strangely prejudiced against the *Hugonots*, that he cou'd not hear the Name mention'd, but he fell into a Fury: He was by very odd Ways encouraged by the bigotted Popish Clergy to perpetrate the great Villainy, and at last went to *Paris* for that Purpose. The Day after the Queen's Entry, the King was to have solemniz'd the Marriage of *Mademoiselle de Vendosme*, the eldest of his natural Daughters, and next Day the Feast, then the following Morning to go for the Army; but on the Evening of the Day of Entry, as he was going to the Arsenal without Guards, to confer with *Sully*, an Embarrass of some Carts stopp'd his Coach in the Middle of the Street *de la Feroniere*; and his Footmen passing under the Channels of *St. Innocents*, the Villain stept upon the Spoke of one of the hind Wheels, and gave him Two Stabs in the Breast with a Knife, by the last of which his Arterial Vein above the Ventricle of the Heart was cut, so that he died in a Moment. It had been foretold him, he should die in a Coach, and therefore upon the least Jolt he would cry out as if he saw the Grave open to receive him. Every Body was so amaz'd at this Tragical Accident, that if *Ravaiillac* had but dropt his Knife, he might have gone off in the Crowd; but he boldly own'd the Fact; and 'tis remarkable upon the Seizing him, that there were 7 or 8 Men seen to come up with their drawn Swords, and crying aloud, He deserv'd to be cut in Pieces presently, and immediately shelter'd themselves in the Crowd; and that the Villain, instead of being presently put into Goal, should be committed only to the Custody

King Henry IV. assassinated.

1610.



of *Montigny*, who kept him Two Days in the *Hostel de Rais*, with so little Care, that any Body might speak with him, and, amongst others, a Friar, that was much obliged to the King, call'd him, *My Friend*, and said, He should have a care of accusing honest Men.

*Espernon*, *Montbason*, *Lavardin*, *Requelaurx*, de la Force and *Mirebeau*, who were in the Coach with the King, drove back to the *Louvre*, sent for a Chirurgeon and some Wine, that it might be believed he was not yet dead; and afterwards his bleeding Corps was for some Hours exposed, with Negligence enough, to any that would see him. The Queen in this sorrowful Exigency, left the Management of all to *Espernon* and *Lavardin*, who, with the Magistrates of *Paris*, took great Care to amuse the People, and keep the City from Tumults. This King died in the midst of the 57th Year of his Age, Three Months before the End

His Issue.

of the 22d of his Reign, leaving Three Sons, and as many Daughters, by *Mary de Medicis*, his Wife; the eldest, named *Lewis*, succeeded him; the second died before he was Four Years old; the third, whose Name was *John Baptista Gaston*, was Duke of *Orleans*. The Daughters were *Elizabeth*, married to *Philip IV.* of *Spain*; *Christian*, to *Victor Amadeus*, Duke of *Savoy*; and *Henrietta Maria* to *Charles I.* King of *England*. As for his Natural Children, besides those whom he could not, or would not well own, he had Eleven, Six by *Gabrielle de Estree*, viz. *Cesar*, Duke of *Vendosme*, *Lewis*, *Francis* and *Isabella*: these Three died young: *Alexander*, Grand-Prior of *France*; and *Catherine*, married to the Duke of *Elbeuf*. Two by *Henrietta de Balsac de Entragues*, to wit, *Henry*, Duke of *Verneuil* and Bishop of *Metz*; and *Gabriella*, Wife first to the Duke de la *Valette*, and then to the Duke of *Espernon*. One only by *Jacqueline de Beuil*, who was *Anthony*, Count of *Moret*; and Two Daughters by *Charlotte de Essars*, who were *Fane* and *Mary Henrietta*; the first was Abbess of *Fontcaurault*, and the latter of *Chelles*.

His Character.

They gave this King the Title of *Great*, and *Arbitrator of Christendom*; but certainly this last did not at least belong to him as long as *Elizabeth*, Queen of *England*, lived. He has been reproach'd by some as  
if



if he loved Money too well, and to acquire it, expos'd his Kingdom to the Avidity of *Partisans*, who more particularly made him establish the *Paulette*, or Annual Right; That the Inquisition he made after such Caterpillars serv'd more to confirm their Robberies, than to punish them; That he gave freer Access to Flatterers, than prudent Counsellors, and often suffer'd Importunity to wrest those Favours from him, which he had refused to bestow on Merit; That he was not grateful enough to Swordsmen; That he gave too much Way to his Lawyers and Judges in their Encroachments, and was content only that they oppos'd not his Absolute Will, and the Verification of his Edicts; That the Officers of his Treasury were grown vastly rich, by sharing the Lands and Estates of the Kingdom, which had been maintain'd by the Soldiery, and who should have reaped some Benefit by them. Now, if History might make Apologies, she might indeed vindicate him from the greatest part of these Reproaches, tho' not from the Fondness, or rather Frenzy, he had to Gaming, which does not become a Great Prince by no means, and which begot a great many Gaming-Houses in *Paris*, most pernicious Schools for Youth, and the fatal Rockson which many Noble Families have split; and much less can he be excus'd for abandoning himself to Women, which was so publick and universal from his Youth, even to the last Periods of his Life, that it will not admit as much as the Name of Love, or be allow'd but Gallantry. But, if it be possible, let us dispel these Defects, as well as his Renunciation of the Reform'd Religion, wherein he was bred by that excellent and religious Princess Queen *Margaret*, his Mother, by the Lustre of his great and glorious Actions, his continual Victories, and high Enterprizes, by his great Goodness to his People, and, above all, his Valour, try'd in so many Combats, and his never-failing Clemency, salutary to so many People; tho' when I say this, I must be oblig'd to draw a Veil over the Prosecution and Punishment of the Great *Biron*: However, take him altogether, these Two most Royal Vertues, which march'd in the Van of all his Undertakings, were ever contending which should overcome his Enemies in the noblest

1610. blest Manner; so that still it remains in doubt to which of the Two he was most obliged for his good Success, and whether it must be said, he recover'd and conquer'd his Kingdom by the Power of Fighting, or the Vertue of Pardoning, with which we conclude his Character.

*Lewis*  
XII. his  
Accession  
to the  
Throne.

*Ravaillac*  
executed.

The Opposition that seem'd to be made to the Regency of *Mary de Medicis* being removed, she was that very Afternoon of the Day whereon the King was slain declared Regent by the Parliament, and the same confirm'd the next by the young King himself in the Court of Justice; which being done, she first propos'd the Security of the Kingdom, next the Punishment of the Assassine, and lastly the Obsequies of the deceased King. In Pursuance of which, the first Act of State was the Reviving the Edict of *Nantes* to content the Protestants. Then *Ravaillac* had first his Hand pierced with the Knife wherewith he had perpetrated the horrid Parricide, and then burnt with Fire of Sulphur upon the Stage: In the next place he had Buskins full of boiling Oil applied to him, and boiling Lead pour'd into the Holes made in his Breast, Thighs and Legs; And Lastly, his Body was torn in Pieces by Horses. This dismal Execution was on the 27th of *May*, and, as an additional Punishment to his Family, within Fifteen Days after the Publication of the Sentence, they were order'd to depart the Kingdom, and never to return, and the rest of his Relations forbid to bear the Name of *Ravaillac*, upon Pain of Death.

*Mariana's*  
Book condemn'd.

A little after *Ravaillac* was executed, *Mariana*, a *Spanish* Jesuit, his Book *De Rege & Regis Institutione*, was burnt. Indeed, the Proceedings of the Parliament hereupon seem'd to be an evident Proof, that the execrable Assassine had seen the Writings and Sermons of some of the Doctors of the *Sorbon* (engaged in the League) and poison'd by the Books which the Jesuits publish'd to revive that pernicious Doctrine, which the Faculty of *Paris* had censured in 1413. and was confirm'd by the Council of *Constance*: The Decree, I say, made the same Day *Ravaillac* suffer'd, convinced the World, that they thought those Books and Pulpit Discourses had plunged the Knife into the Heart of *Henry*, as well as of his Predecessor; wherefore

wherefore the Parliament order'd the Faculty of *Paris* to meet, and confirm anew their ancient Censure against those who taught, That a Vassal or Subject might, and ought in Conscience to kill any Tyrant whatsoever, and assault him all sorts of Ways; and that that Action was not contrary to the Oath of Fidelity which Vassals and Subjects took to their Sovereigns. The *Sorbonists* not only obey'd the Order, but divers Persons, with much Zeal and Ardency, preach'd in their Pulpits against the Jesuits, who were ready to defend themselves; and more particularly Father *Cotton*, the late King's Confessor, being not able to bear the general Exclamation against his Brethren, did, contrary to the Advice of his Friends, address a long Letter to the Queen, to perswade the World, *Mariana* was a private Person disown'd by their Body, who had true Notions of the Authority of Princes, and the Obedience due to them. He was forthwith encounter'd with a Thousand Pamphlets, insulted in respect to his pretending to disclaim the Doctrine which he was plainly obliged to comply with in respect to present Necessity only; while others said, it came too late to the good Fathers, but, perhaps, would not be useless to the Children of him who was now in his Grave.

But, not to expatiate upon this Matter, and but just to mention the Funeral Obsequies of *Henry* the Great, which were perform'd with the usual Pomp; sometime before his Body was entomb'd, there was a secret Debate in Council concerning the Armies he had rais'd, and which were very chargeable to maintain. Some were of Opinion, it was not time now to give any Umbrage to the House of *Austria*: A potent and crafty Enemy would find way to embroil the State. The *Spanish* King had propos'd to the late King the double Marriage of the *Infanta* to the *Dauphin*, and of the Prince of *Spain* with the eldest Daughter of *France*. We ought (continued they) to disband the Troops which gave Jealousie to *Spain*, and resume the Negotiation of the Two Marriages, in order to make a firm Alliance. The Regent, by the Interposition of the Pope, was very forward to promote this Alliance; and the Chancellor being one of the Number of those who approved of it, but having Reason enough

1610. enough to oppose them, who proposed to have all the Troops disbanded, said, *Shall we make the World believe we all stand in awe of Spain? Shall we bid Desfiance to our best Allies? They will think we intend to abandon them: Who will hereafter seek the Alliance of this Crown? I think it advisable to keep up the Army in Compagne, and send one to Juliers to drive out Arch-Duke Leopold. The Army in Dauphin gives more Jealousie to Spain: This is commanded by a Protestant Marechal of France. I think these Two Reasons should move us to disband it; but common Prudence will not suffer us to disarm our selves entirely before the Return of the Prince of Conde, before we have certain Information of the Disposition of the Court of Spain, before the Power of the King and Queen Regent be well establish'd.*

*Conde returns.*

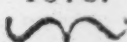
*Factions in France.*

This Advice was approved of as best. In the mean time the Prince of Conde, after having been much solicited by *Fuentes* to set up for King, tho' in vain, returned from *Milan* to *Brussels*, and from thence went into *France*, where a strong Party appeared for him, and the Duke of *Bouillon* would for the further strengthening of it, have perswaded him to embrace the Protestant Religion; but finding his Efforts would not do, he proposed to reconcile the Differences to the Marquess of *Ceuvres*, the Duke being willing to manage the Prince, if the other would treat with *Soissons*, who at last consenting, the Queen to whom he had communicated the Accommodation proposed, seem'd to be well satisfied with it, tho' she travers'd it underhand: For the Ministers made her sensible, if the Two Princes of the Blood, the Constable of *Montmorency*, the Dukes of *Guise* and *Espernon*, the Marechal de *Bouillon* and the Cardinal *Foyeuse*, were once agreed, her Authority would be much diminish'd by it. Hereupon *Bouillon* resolv'd to retire to *Sedan*, his Religion not giving him Leave to assist at the King's Coronation now approaching. In the mean time, he resolv'd to make a powerful Friend near the Regent, and to that End he pitch'd upon *Conchini*, the Husband of *Leonora Galigai*, a Confident of the Queen's; he had lately bought the Marquisate of *Ancre*: However, tho' he daily advanced in Favour, he strove to gain the Good-will of Conde, and was the Person employ'd by the Queen to divert the Prince and *Guise* from hearkening



ening to the Accommodation proposed by *Bouillon*. But the Mareſchal was too diſcerning a Man not to ſee that the Friendſhip of *d'Ancre* might be of great Service to him, and therefore he offer'd to lay down his Place of Firſt Gentleman of the Chamber, if *Conchini* would buy it, and the Bargain was ſoon concluded. In the mean while *d'Ancre* began to be inſupportable to the Princes and chief Lords of the Court. In the King's Journey to *Rheims* to be Crown'd, the Servants of the Marchioneſs had ſome Conteſt with thoſe of the Cardinal of *Foyeuſe* about Lodgings: *Conchini*, being now firſt Gentleman of the Chamber, had likewiſe a Diſpute about Precedency with *Bellegarde*, Grand-Eſquire, at the King's publick Entry into *Paris*, on his Return from his Inauguration. Hereupon, the Duke of *Eſpernon*, a Kinfman of *Bellegarde*, declar'd againſt *Conchini*; and the Count of *Soiſſons* being enraged at him for aſſiſting *Guife* to marry the Dowager of *Montpeſier*, would have no more to do with the Marqueſs, who endeavour'd to be reconciled to them. *Soiſſons* did not ſhew himſelf averſe to it, but inſiſted, That the Marqueſs and his Wife ſhould procure the Princeſs, Heireſs to *Montpeſier*, to be married to his Son the Count of *Engbien*, as alſo to ruin the Duke of *Sully*. As to the firſt, the Marqueſs deliver'd himſelf in general Terms, but ſpoke more poſitively as to the latter, if the Miniſters would ſide with him: However, *Soiſſons* durſt not conclude this Reconciliation, till *Eſpernon* was ſatiſfied; but having brought that dexterouſly about, the Miniſters were eaſily wrought upon to ruin *Sully*. *Villeroy* and he had no good Underſtanding one with another, and the former being the only Man who had taken Pains to keep the other in, thought himſelf to be the more neceſſary, and to have the better Intereſt, thereupon left the Court, which was a ſort of Menace that he would not return ſo long as *Sully* had a Share in the Government: *Conde* alſo, tempted by the Confiſcation of the Eſtate of a Superintendant, and a Proteſtant, declined interceding for *Sully*, whoſe Spoils would enrich him; A powerful Spur to make a Prince act, ſaid the Great Duke of *Roan*, one of the wiſeſt and beſt Men of his Time.

1610.



*Morisco's*  
banish'd  
out of  
*Spain.*

*France* was not less full of Domestick Feuds at Home upon this new Change of its Head, than *Spain* was unpolitick in the Management of her great Affairs of State. It's true, her Forces this Year surpriz'd the strong Castle of *Alarache* in *Africa*, and took it from the *Moors*, but the Banishment of such a vast Number of *Morisco's* out of *Spain*, and that even at a Time when such a Multitude of its Inhabitants had made a Transmigration into its new Acquisitions and Colonies in *America*, is such a Piece of Policy as is hardly to be met with in any Nation in the World; yet *Philip III.* his Piety was highly extoll'd for this Action by the *Romanists*; and as these *Morisco's* were the Mongrel Descendants of the *Moors*, that once bore such a Sway in *Spain*, and generally had profess'd *Mahometanism*, they gave out, that they had committed many Villainies and Sacrileges, and that understand they held Correspondence in *Africa* and *Turkey*, in order to bring the *Moors* back again into *Spain*. There were no less than 400000 of them forced to depart the Kingdom by the Edict now publish'd against them; and their Banishment, they tell us, was Prophetically foretold them by a Preacher upon this King's Birth-Day, who threatned them with a new born Prince.

Troubles  
in *Trans-*  
*sylvania.*

If from *Spain* we make our Passage by Sea into *Italy*, we shall find nothing of Moment to detain us there; but having Leisure to traverse the Countries as far as *Transylvania*, there *Gabriel Batori*, Prince of that Country, having put himself under the Protection of the *Turks*, against *Matthias*, King of *Hungary*, who pretended a Title, by reason of the Cession of Prince *Sigismund* to the Emperor, as King of *Hungary*: The Prince took *Hermenstad*, routed the Vayvod of *Wallachia*, and put another in his Place; then return'd to *Transylvania* to oppose *Matthias* his Lieutenant: But the Vayvod retiring to *Moldavia* to Prince *Constantine*, and insinuating unto him, That *Batori* had a Design to seize his Country, they join'd both together to oppose him, and defeated him near *Cronstad*, while *Forgatfi*, King *Matthias* his Lieutenant, seiz'd upon *Transylvania*; but *Batori* some time after, having received some Forces from the *Turks* and *Tartars*, he put *Forgatfi* so hard to it, that he forced him

to

to abandon the Country, and retire into *Wallachia*. Thus the Storm ceasing in *Transylvania*, a more violent one fell upon *Wallachia*; for the *Turks* understanding, that *Constantine* had reliev'd the *Wallachians* against *Bathori's* Tributary, he sent a new Prince, the supposed Son of one *Thomas*, alias *Aaron*, once a Prince there, with 15000 Men into that Country, with Letters charging the *Turks* and *Tartars* to assist him in his Pretensions; thus you have Two Pretenders already, but behold a Third set up, being the Son of one *Faniculo*, who once commanded there, and who, after many Turns of Fortune and Peregrinations, especially in *England*, was recommended by King *James* to his Ambassador, Sir *Thomas Glover*, at the *Port*, to solicitate his Restitution, though without Success.

But leaving these remoter Parts, we now come back thro' *Germany*: There the ill State of Things (as already recounted) having oblig'd the Emperor *Rodolph* to call a Dyet this Year at *Prague*: These Things were proposed in it, viz. The Reconciliation of the Emperor with his Brother *Matthias*; The Election of a King of the *Romans*; The Restitution of *Donawert*; and, The Accommodating of the Business of *Cleve* and *Fuliers*. As for the Two former of these Articles, nothing was done in them; *Donawert*, indeed, was order'd to be restor'd upon paying the Charge of the Siege; but for the State of *Fuliers*, the Emperor propos'd to the *Diet* to have that given to the Elector of *Saxony* and his Family, on condition that he would maintain it against those Princes that had pretended to it, he was accordingly invested in those Dominions; but notwithstanding all that had been done in the *Diet* as to this last Article: *Maurice* Prince of *Orange* and the Prince of *Anhalt* continued their Designs on the City of *Fuliers*, which by the Assistance of the *Mareschal de la Chastre*, who arrived from *France* with 12000 Foot and 2000 Horse, was surrendred upon Articles on the 2d of *September* and deliver'd into the Hands of the Princes of *Brandenbourg* and *Neubourg*, together with all the other Places of the Dutchy of *Fuliers*, which now durst not make any resistance.

Dyet in  
*Germany*.

1610.

Two Con-  
ferences  
of Accom-  
modation  
in Germa-  
ny without  
effect.

Tho' the *Protestants* had proceeded thus far, yet were they not deaf to Proposals of Accommodation; wherefore the City of *Cologne* was nominated for those Conferences. Many Princes came thither on both sides; but the Article of Sequestration being again advanc'd, it was absolutely disagreed to by the Assembly: And so they broke up without concluding any thing. Some Months after another Assembly met on the same account near *Leipsick*, who brought the Two Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenbourg* to sign a Treaty, importing that the Dominions of *Cleves* and *Juliers* should be enjoy'd by the Elector and other Princes of *Saxony*, jointly with the Elector of *Brandenbourg* and the Princes of *Neubourg*: Which Agreement, nevertheless, came to nothing, by reason the Duke of *Neubourg* would not come into it.

This Affair was not the only one that had set the *Protestants* against the *Catholicks*. Besides divers others, the *Bohemians* of that Perswasion had been extremely incens'd on account of the *Inquisition*, which was design'd to be establish'd among them; and at length, when they saw that Arch-Duke *Leopold* would quarter his Troops upon them, whether they would or no, they had recourse to King *Matthias* for his Protection. This Prince comply'd with their Request, and was almost as soon in *Bohemia* as those Deputies that came for him. The Emperor being frightned at the Speedy March his Brother had made to the *Protestants* Assistance, hearken'd immediately to, and acquiesc'd in, all the Proposals that were made to him for an Accommodation. But as the Principal cause of the coming of King *Matthias* was to secure that Crown to himself, such advantage was made of the Pusillanimity and want of Courage in *Rodolph*, that he was prevail'd on to renounce the Title he had to it in favour of his said Brother; who was Crown'd in a short Time after, but this not happening till 1611. we ought not to have made this Excursion, but observe, that *Gervase Babington*, Bishop of *Worcester*, died now at Sixty Years of Age, of the Jaundice. He was born in *Nottinghamshire* of a considerable Family, and first promoted by *Q. Elizabeth* to the See of *Landaff*, and afterwards to that of *Worcester*. He was famous for his Preaching, and wrote some Books in Divinity.

They

*Matthias*  
made K. of  
*Bohemia*.

Bishop *Ba-*  
*bington's*  
Death.

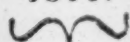


They were this Summer in *Constantinople*, and in the adjacent Countries, tormented with such Clouds of Grasshoppers, as darken'd the very Sun, and the *Turks* consulting what it might portend, were answered, They foresaw great Plenty to come; but, indeed, they left not any green Thing upon the Earth undevour'd, nay, they entred into their very Chambers, and very much annoy'd them, being almost as big as Dormice, with red Wings: Soon after which there fell such extraordinary great Hail in those Parts, with such abundance of Rain, as did very great Damage to their Buildings, and otherwise.

It's a great Way from *Constantinople* to *England*, where we are to take Notice, that *Carr* was still growing more and more in Favour, and now advanced to the Honour of Viscount *Rocheſter*, and soon after Knight of the Garter; and Sir *Thomas Overbury* was his great Confident, of whose Fortune and Tragical End we shall hear more by and by. Archbishop *Bancroft* died about the Beginning of this Year, with the Character of being a Person of a severe Nature, whose Roughness prevail'd little upon those that deserted the Ceremonies of the Church. It was he that had put the King upon erecting the new College at *Chelſey*, which was to be fill'd up with the best Scholars, and Men of the most pregnant Parts, especially in Polemical Divinity, in order to answer all Popish Books, and others that vended their Malignity against the Protestant Religion; but after his Death the Design dwindled, and came to nothing. He was succeeded in the See of *Canterbury* by Dr. *George Abbot*, to which he was translated from that of *London*.

We find Two Men try'd now for Hereticks, viz. Heretic's *Bartholomew Legatte* in the Bishop of *London's* Court, condemned and *Edward Wightman* in that of *Lichfield*. In the ed. King's Commission to the Lord Chancellor *Elſmere* for a Writ of Execution upon *Legatte*, he is charged with 13 blasphemous Positions, viz. That the *Nicene* and *Athanasian* Creeds contain'd not a proper Confession of the Christian Faith, or that he would not profess his Faith according to the same Creeds; That Christ was not God of God begotten, not made, but begotten and made; That there were no Persons

1611.



in the Godhead ; That Christ was not God from everlasting, but began to be God when he took Flesh of the Virgin *Mary* ; That the Apostles taught Christ to be Man only ; That there was no Generation in God, but of Creatures ; That this Assertion, God to be made Man, was contrary to the Rule of Faith, and monstrous Blasphemy ; That Christ was not before the Fulness of Time, except by Promise ; That Christ was not God, otherwise than an anointed God ; That Christ was not in the Form of God equal with God, that is, in Substance of God, but in Righteousness and giving Salvation ; That Christ by his Godhead wrought no Miracle ; And that Christ was not to be pray'd unto. As for the Form of the Warrant for his Execution, and perhaps the last that was made of this kind in *England*, unless that of *Wightman* was of a latter Date. Take it in these Words : 'The King  
' to the Sheriffs of *London*, greeting ; Whereas the Reverend Father in Christ, *John*, Bishop of *London*,  
' hath signified unto us, that when he in a certain Business of Heretical Pravity against one *Bartholomew Legatte*, our Subject of the City of *London*, of the  
' said Bishop of *London*'s Diocess and Jurisdiction, rightly and lawfully proceeding by Acts enacted,  
' drawn, proposed, and by the Confessions of the said *Bartholomew Legatte* before the said Bishop judicially made and acknowledged, hath found in the  
' said *Bartholomew Legatte* very many wicked Errors, false Opinions. Heresies and cursed Blasphemies,  
' and impious Doctrines, expressly contrary and repugnant to the Catholick Faith and Religion, and  
' the holy Word of God, knowingly and maliciously, and with a pertinacious and obdurate plainly incorrigible Mind, to believe, hold, affirm and publish :  
' The same Reverend Father, the Bishop of *London*, and other Divines, as also Men learned in the  
' Law in Judgment sitting and assisting, the same *Bartholomew Legatte* by his definite Sentence, hath pronounced, decreed and declared to be an obdurate,  
' contumacious and incorrigible Heretick, and rotten, contagious Member, to be cut off from the Church  
' of Christ, and the Communion of the Faithful :  
' Whereas the holy Mother Church hath not farther  
' to do and prosecute in this Part, the same Reverend  
' Fa-

‘ Father hath left unto us the said *Bartholomew Legatte*,  
 ‘ as a blasphemous Heretick, to our Secular Power,  
 ‘ to be punish’d with condign Punishment, as by the  
 ‘ Letters Patents of the said Reverend Father in  
 ‘ Christ, the Bishop of *London*, in this Behalf, above  
 ‘ made, hath certified unto us in our *Chancery*; We  
 ‘ therefore as a Zelot of Justice, and a Defender of the  
 ‘ Catholick Faith, and such Heresies and Errors every  
 ‘ where what in us lies, to root out and extirpate, and  
 ‘ to punish with condign Punishment such Hereticks,  
 ‘ so convicted, and deeming that such an Heretick, in  
 ‘ Form aforesaid, convicted and condemn’d according  
 ‘ to the Laws and Customs of this our Kingdom of  
 ‘ *England* in this Part occasion’d, ought to be burnt  
 ‘ with Fire, We do command, that the said *Bartholo-*  
 ‘ *mew Legatte*, being in your Custody, you do com-  
 ‘ mit publickly to the Fire, before the People, in a  
 ‘ publick and open Place in *West-Smithfield*, for the  
 ‘ Cause aforesaid; that you may cause the said *Bartho-*  
 ‘ *lomew Legatte* to be really burnt in the same Fire, in  
 ‘ Detestation of the said Crime, for the manifest Ex-  
 ‘ ample of other Christians, lest they slide into the  
 ‘ same Fault, and this that in no wise you omit, un-  
 ‘ der the Peril that shall follow thereon: Witness, &c.  
*Wightman* for his part being charged with the wicked  
 Heresies of the *Ebionites*, *Cerinthians*, *Valentinians*, *Ari-*  
*ans*, *Macedonians*, of *Simon Magus*, of *Manes*, of *Mani-*  
*chees*, of *Photinus* and the *Anabaptists*, and branch’d  
 into Sixteen Particulars, he ran the same Fate with  
*Legatte*.

But enough of Hereticks. We’ll now traverse the  
 Channel into *France*: We have before hinted a Dif-  
 ference between *Conchini* and *Bellegarde*, and the same  
 continuing all this while, *Soissons*, notwithstanding his  
 late Engagements with the former, revived his Friend-  
 ship towards, and would espouse the Cause of the  
 latter; but Matters being made up again by the means  
 of the Marquess of *Cœuvres*, *Conchini* thereupon pro-  
 mised to do all that *Soissons* had before desired; but  
 when *Esperson* and *Foyeuse* understood the Queen was  
 brought to consent to dispose of their Niece *Montpesier*  
 to *Enghien* without their Consent, they storm’d mighti-  
 ly at it. However, to pass over these Court-Quarrels,  
 and others that happen’d between *Soissons* and his el-

1611.

An Assembly of the Reformed in France.

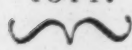
der Brother *Conti*, as also between the Count and the Duke of *Guise*; *Sully's* Disgrace was now at hand, and *Bouillon*, a Protestant like himself, was so far from supporting him, that he rather contributed to his Ruin, saying, He deserved the worst that could befall him; yet, that he ought not to appear among those who declar'd against him: That it concern'd him very much, that those of his Religion should not reproach him with removing a Man, who was so necessary to them in the Post he was in. *Sully* therefore being laid aside, retir'd to his Castle upon the *Loire*; and the next Thing that came upon the Stage, after having punish'd *la Escouman*, for having falsely accused the Marchioness of *Vernueil* and *Espernon* of being accessory to *Henry IV.* his Death, was an Endeavour to put a Stop to the Commotions in *Savoy*, and to prevent the Design of the Duke against *Geneva*; but what touch'd yet closer, was, how to manage the General Assembly of the Protestants, who were allow'd to meet on the 25th of May. *Bouillon* and *Lesdiguieres* shew'd much Zeal for the Interest of their Religion, and they engaged *du Plessis Mornay* to draw up Memorials to be sent into the Provinces, that all might agree what to ask of the Regent at that Juncture; but *Bouillon* quickly suffer'd himself to be won by the Court, and he had the Queen's Promise of the Government of *Poitou*, which she design'd to take from *Sully*, while *Villeroy* and *Ancres* drew his Instructions, and put Money into his Hands, to distribute it as he found convenient. At the same time it was thought necessary to adjourn the Assembly to *Saumur*, where *Bouillon* propos'd to preside. The Dukes of *Sully*, *Rohan*, *la Tremouille*, *Soubize*, *Chatillon*, *la Force*, and divers other Protestants of Quality, came to *Saumur*, most of whom had a Distrust of the Marschal, and therefore they agreed to stand by the first Motion made by himself, not to elect any great Lord for their President, but pitch'd upon the most excellent *du Plessis Mornay*, and then thought fit to renew the Oath of Union they had formerly taken on divers Occasions. *Beissie* and *Bouillon*, Counsellors of State, and the King's Commissioners at the Assembly, brought Hopes with them of the Favour of the Court; but whilst this was managing by Persons appointed



pointed for that Purpose, there arose a Debate about the Duke of Sully's Concerns: He refused to lay down his Place of Great Master of the Artillery, and his Government of *Poitou*; and to secure himself therein, he used his utmost Endeavours to engage all the *Hugonot* Party to concern themselves in his Preservation. *Bouillon* would have perswaded the brave Duke of *Roan* to abandon his Father-in-Law; but he being a Person of rare Probity, was steady to *Sully*; and the Assembly, according to his Example, declared for him also, alledging, that his particular Interest, and that of the whole Protestant Party were inseparable upon that Occasion. The Court taking this Language ill, resolved to break up the Assembly, in order to which *Bouillon* presented the Regent's Letter to them, and required the King's Orders to be executed, which was wisely obey'd by the President, tho' most of the Members highly resented this Manner of Proceeding. We might here take Notice of the unjust Censure pass'd upon the Book of *du Plessis Mornay*, call'd, *The Mystery of Iniquity*. or, *The History of the Papacy*; but waving that, we shall but just mention the Death of the Duke of *Main*, the famous Head of the Holy League; neither shall we enter upon the Detail of the Discontents of the Count of *Soissons*, which made him enter into new Obligations of Friendship with the Prince of *Conde*; nor upon the Disturbance at *Troyes* in *Champaign*, occasion'd by the Jesuits in that City; but now take a View of the Adventures of other Countries. *Spain* affords us nothing, but the Death of *Queen Margaret of Austria*, who for her extraordinary good Qualities was entirely beloved of the *Spaniards*.

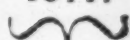
Other Parts of *Europe* affording us but little material, we pass to the *North*; and here to look back a little. From the Year 1603. they importun'd King *Christian IV.* agreeable to the Articles of the Treaty of *Stetin*, to make an End of the Differences between him and *Sweden*, upon the Score of the Three Crowns, as well as of *Lapland*, and the Castle of *Seneburg*, in the Isle of *Oesel*. They likewise represented to him, That he laid too great Imposts upon the Ships that came into the *Danish* Ports. But they could never bring it to a Conclusion; for, *Sweden* being then

1603.  
The Occasion of the Difference between *Denmark* and *Sweden*.

1611.  exhausted by long Wars, and at the same time, diverted in *Muscovy* and *Liefland*, he look'd upon that as a favourable Opportunity to annex *Sweden* once more to the Kingdoms of *Denmark* and *Norway*. To prevent this imminent Danger, Prince *Gustavus Adolphus*, with the Consent of the Senate, wrote Letters to *Christian*, inviting him to an amicable Decision of the Difference between the Two Crowns. The King of *Denmark* in his Answer complain'd, That *Charles* had assum'd the Title of King of *Lapland*, which, as he alledged, was rather a Dependance of *Norway*, than of *Sweden*; that he had built the City and Castle of *Gotheburg*, which was highly prejudicial to the *Norwegians*: by reason of the great Privileges granted to it; and that his Ships disturb'd the Commerce and Navigation of the *Baltick* Sea. To answer all these Grievances *Charles* sent *Chesnotophorus*, his Chancellor, to *Denmark*: But King *Christian* would not give him Audience, alledging, his Master should have sent him an Ambassador of Birth and Quality, and not the Son of a *Neritian* Priest: Nay farther, he return'd no Answer to Two Expresses from *Charles*, and gave Convoys to the West-Country Ships that were bound for *Riga*, and the other Ports of the Enemies of *Sweden*. *Charles*, to prevent the least Occasion of a War, re-call'd Admiral *Joram Gildenstern*, with the Fleet under his Command, leaving only *James Baat* with Eight Ships to cruise in the *Baltick* Sea. Admiral *Baat* represented to the *Danes*, that they transgress'd the Articles of the Treaty of *Stetin*, in succouring the Enemies of *Sweden*; but they were so far from satisfying him upon that Point, that they dispersed all over *Sweden* a great Number of printed Libels, in order to give a tolerable Colour to their Pretensions, and render the King odious to his Subjects. Hereupon *Charles* sent an Ambassador to King *James* of *England*, designing to make what Friends he could, and procure sufficient Succours against his Enemies. His Ambassador proposed to King *James* an Alliance, and the Marriage of *Gustavus Adolphus* to his Daughter *Elizabeth*; which tho' it did not succeed, yet King *James* assured him of his Friendship; and to procure an Accommodation between the Two Northern Crowns, sent *James*  
Spencer

Spencer to Sweden, and another Ambassador to Denmark; by whose Mediation a Peace was concluded Two Years after between the Two Kings. King Charles would gladly have accommodated the Matter in a friendly Way; and for that End, according to the Treaty of Stetin, propos'd to send Six Commissioners to the Frontiers, to treat with as many Danish Commissioners. But King Christian rejected the Proposal, alledging, That the Swedes always insisted on the Treaty of Stetin only to gain Time, without giving him any Satisfaction in his Pretensions.

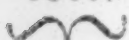
1611.



King Charles's Affairs in Muscovy began now to have a new Face; for, tho' James de la Gardie, defeated the Poles in several Engagements, and maul'd their Confederates; tho' he reliev'd Muscovy from a long Siege, and had Reason to hope the entire Expulsion of the Poles, together with the false Demetrius; yet when they came to a general Battle, near Clusium, the Muscovites not seconding him as they ought, nor having placed good Centinels, the Poles surpriz'd them, and put them to Flight, insomuch, that the Swedes being left alone, after a rough Engagement of Four Hours, were oblig'd to retire to the Body of their Army, where the Foreign Troops murmuring for want of Pay, went over to the Enemy. This treacherous Desertion of the Foreign Troops mov'd James de la Gardie to advise Charles to give the Country People's Farms to his Cavalry instead of Pay: in order to secure them in his Service, and prevent their Desertion for the future. After such bad Success, Gardie retir'd with some Hundreds of Swedes and Finlanders; and tho' he could not support the Affairs of the Muscovites, which seem'd to be desperate, yet he endeavour'd to undamage the King of Sweden, and possess himself of the Places that had been promis'd him. In the First place, he importun'd the Muscovites to deliver him Kexholm, without any Resistance; but they were so far from satisfying his Demands, that they robb'd the Couriers that were sent to Sweden with a Copy of the Treaty he had concluded with them, and refused them Entrance at Naugarde. Upon which he laid Siege to Kexholm, and order'd General la Ville to take Possession of Laduga. For that Purpose Charles sent him Succours from Sweden,

Charles  
unfortunate in  
Muscovy.

for

1611.  for the *Danes* had not yet declar'd open War against the *Swede*. Next Year General *Gardie*, having taken *Kexholm*, return'd to *Muscovy*, and encamp'd before *Naugarde*. He sollicit'd the *Muscovites* to prefer *Charles Philip*, the Second Son of *Charles*, to their Ducal Crown, in the Room of Prince *Uladislaus*, the Son of King *Sigismund*; though, at the same time, he had no Orders from his Master to that Effect, only some noted Men in the Country had encouraged him to hope it. To push this Matter home, after he had observ'd the Resolution and Inconstancy of the *Muscovites*, he attack'd *Naugarde*, and storm'd it. The Garrison having retired to the Castle, capitulated, to put themselves under King *Charles's* Protection, and to raise one of his Sons to the Empire of *Muscovy*, provided he allow'd them the free Exercise of the *Greek Religion*, and protected them against their Enemies. This done, *Gardie* put a Garrison into the Castle, and administred the Oath of Allegiance to all the *Muscovites* upon the Place. He likewise added to the Conquests of *Sweden* the Cities of *Noteburg*, *Ivanagorod*, *Fama* and *Coporio*.

At the same time, the *Danes* seem'd to multiply their Acts of Hostility upon *Sweden*, tho' *Charles* sollicit'd them often to a Friendly Decision of the Difference between 'em; particularly, as the *Swedes* say, because *Christian IV.* and He, were the only Kings of the Evangelical Religion, for whom the Papists were laying Snares on all Hands. But the *Danes* had taken Umbrage at *Charles's* Correspondence with, the King of *England*, and abus'd *James Spencer*, his Ambassador, when passing through *Denmark*, in his return to *England*: For, they not only Robbed him upon the Frontiers, but Kill'd one of his Servants, and Wounded Four more; insomuch, that the Ambassador himself escap'd with much difficulty to save his Life. *Charles*, having notice of so black an Action, and so direct an Infringement of the Law of Nation, Writ very sharp Letters to the *Dane*, upon that Head; and, at the same time, call'd a Convention of the States at *Orebro*, to concert preparatory Measures against *Denmark*. The Convention declar'd *Nemine Contradicente*, That they were ready to assist His Majesty, to the utmost of their Power, in case the *Danes* would not listen to



a reasonable Accomodation. On the other Side, the King of *Denmark*, having perswaded the *Hanse* Towns to discontinue their Trade with *Sweden*, during the whole course of the War; sent a Herald to *Sweden*, to Declare War by Sea, and Land. The reasons alledged in the *Manifesto*, were; 'That King *Charles* assum'd the Title of Lord, or Sovereign of *Lapland*; That he Built Forts upon his North Frontiers, and granted them Privileges to the prejudice of *Norway*; and, That he disturb'd the Commerce and Navigation of the *Baltick-Sea*. After this Declaration, he brought Two Armies into the Field; one of which Attack'd *Elfsbourg*, and the other laid Siege to *Calmar*. Upon which, *Charles* sent an Herald to *Denmark*, who declar'd War against *Christian*; and gave in a Memorial, refuting the Reasons he alledg'd for the War. Indeed *Charles* had a Rightful Title to *Lapland*; for from *Tirisfiord*, to the Neighbourhood of *Malanger*, the *Laplanders* paid equal Tribute to the *Swedes* and *Norwegians*; and from *Malanger* to *Waranger*, they always paid *Sweden* a double Tribute. As for the City of *Gothebourg*, it was Built upon the Territories of *Sweden*, and the Privileges conferr'd upon it, had no relation, either to *Denmark*, or *Norway*, but only to *Sweden*. Neither had *Charles* disturb'd the Commerce of the *Baltick*, unless it was with reference to those, who carry'd Provision and Ammunition to his Enemies. On the contrary, the *Swedes* alledg'd their King had just Reason to declare War against *Denmark*; since, contrary to all Justice, *Christian* bore in his Arms, the Three Crowns, made Pretensions to the Castle of *Sonnebourg*, in the Isle of *Oesel*, and rais'd Taxes from the *Laplanders*, who were under the Dominion of *Sweden*. They affirmed likewise that he entertain'd those, who fled out of *Sweden* for High-Treason; gave Convoys to the Ships, that furnish'd the Enemies of *Sweden* with Provisions; wrote Letters in as Mandatory a Style, as if the *Swedes* had been his own Subjects; abus'd his Ambassador, when he pass'd through his Country, and sollicitated the *Hanse* Towns, to discontinue their Trade with *Sweden*.

This

1611.

*Danes*  
take *Cal*  
*mar*, but  
are de-  
feated by  
the *Swedes*

*Swedes*  
burn *Chri-*  
*stianople*.

This done, *Charles* sent Prince *Gustavus Adolphus*, with part of the Army, to *Calmar*, and follow'd himself with the rest of his Troops, in order to Relieve that place. Its Garrisons consisted of 1675 Men, besides the Burghers; and was furnish'd with 104 Brass-Guns, not to mention the Iron-Guns in the Castle; so that during the Siege, they consumed 73 Barrels of Powder. The *Danes* made Two Assaults upon the City, and were repuls'd; but at the Third Assault, they entered it, with the Loss of 1500 Men; and were just begun to Cannonade the Castle, when *Charles* arriv'd with all his Troops, and drew up his Army in Battle-Array, in the sight of his Enemies: But they fortify'd their Camp, and continu'd within their Trenches, because King *Christian* was not there. Next Day, the *Danes* march'd out of their Trenches, and gave them Battle, and lost 700 Men, together with *Lucas Krabbe*, their General, and a great many were taken Prisoners: And after that, the *Danish* Army durst not appear in the Field: Tho' both Parties continu'd to Skirmish and insult one another. Prince *Gustavus Adolphus*, at the Head of 500 Horse, surpriz'd *Avescher* and *Bleking*, called afterwards, *Christianople*, where the *Danes* had lodged their Magazines, and where the *Swedish* Troops got a very rich Spoil, committing all to the Flames that they could not carry off, as well as at last the City itself. Afterward, the *Swedes* who lay before *Calmar* made a Salley from within; and getting upon the Ramparts, dislodg'd the *Danes* of one of the Bastions of the Cittadel, and set Fire to the City. In this time, while the Soldiers were Plundering the Houses, *George*, Duke of *Lunenbourg*, came up with the *Danish* Army, and dislodg'd the *Swedes*, who lost 1000 Men in that Enterprize, The *Danes* likewise made an Assault upon the Bastion of *Grimscheer*, and were repuls'd with much Loss. King *Charles* having an opportunity to enter the Castle, encouraged his Subjects to Signalize themselves by their Valour, put in another Governor, namely, *Christopher Soma*, who was naturally a very Talkative Man, but behaved himself very ill in that Post; for when he saw the *Swedish* Army retire to *Risby*, because they were incommoded by the Cannon of the City and Castle, he

he invited *Steen Malteson*, the *Danish* General, into the Castle, and soon after, deliver'd up the Place to the Enemies, without any urgent Cause or Necessity; for he had abundance of Provisions, and Ammunition; and the Garrison was resolv'd to make a vigorous Defence. Among other Presents, the *Danes* rewarded his Treachery, with the Gift of the Territory of *Kolsthorp*. Scituate between *Lubeck* and *Segeberg*. This perfidious Man, to colour his Treachery, had the Impudence to alledge, That it was long of King *Charles*, that the Castle was Surrender'd, Because he did not send him the Succours he had promis'd; and that he had not above a Barrel and an half of Powder, when he Surrender'd; adding, that he was ready to justify himself before disinterested Judges, provided it was out of his own Country; for he would not return to *Sweden*, while Chancellor *Chesuocophorus*, and Secretary *Erick Olufson*, sat at the Helm of Affairs; and pretended, he could not brook the snappish Answers that *Charles* gave him, upon the Instigation of these Two Ministers. Afterwards the *Danes* attack'd the Isle of *Oeland* and *Borkholm*, which *John Ulfsperre*, the Governor, after a vigorous Defence, was obliged to surrender, when he saw himself deserted by his Soldiers. King *Christian*, having tender'd the Oath of Allegiance to all the Inhabitants of the Island, return'd with his Army to *Calmar*, where King *Charles*, who lay encamp'd before the City, sent him a Challenge, to which the K. of *Denmark* sending a harsh Answer, there pass'd such Satyrical scolding Letters between the Two Kings, as were altogether unworthy their Majesty and Character, and their Troops had several sharp Skirmishes for some Days: At last *Christian* return'd to *Denmark* the *Swedes* following him in vain; but afterwards they fell upon the rest of the Army before *Calmar*, and put them into such Disorder, that the *Danes* were obliged to decamp, and many of them being intercepted by the *Swedes* in their Way to *Blecking*, were obliged to Winter in the Isle of *Oeland*: But even there they were not safe; for Prince *Gustavus* crossing over quietly with 2000 Men, master'd the Island, and, by the Help of the Succours he had from the Country, carried the Castle of *Burholm*; and thus it was that this brave young Prince pur-

Castle of  
*Calmar*  
betray'd  
to the  
*Danes*.

*Charles*  
sends a  
Chal-  
lenge to  
*Christi-  
an IV*.

*Gustavus*  
takes *Oe-  
land* and  
*Barcholm*.

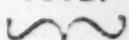
1611. purchased so much Glory in his first Attempt, and toward the End of the Year succeeded his Father in the Kingdom; who in Nov. departed this Life in the 61st of his Age, with the Character of a wise and valiant, tho' not always a fortunate Prince: And because *Gustavus* at the Time of his Father's Death was not at full Age, *Charles* left him under the Guardianship of Queen *Christina* his Wife, Duke *John*, *Magnus Brahe*, *Nils Bielke*, *Sewerd Riblin*, *Foram Gildenstern*, *Havis Ulfsparre*, and *Axel Oxenstiern*. For tho' the *Muscovites* had sent an Ambassador to *Sweden*, pursuant to the Treaty made with *James de la Gardie*, to desire the Protection of that Kingdom, and offer the Crown of *Muscovy* to Pr. *Charles Philip*; yet the *Swedes* laid but little Stress upon the Promises of such a light, wavering Nation. On the other side, 'tis true, the Governour of *Revel* had made a Truce in *Liefland*, with the *Poles*, for several Years; but that was not to be depended upon, because the Treaty was not ratified by the Two Kings. And as for the *Swedish* Concerns with *Denmark*, the *Danes* had gain'd a considerable Advantage over them, by the Taking of *Calmar*; insomuch, that the Fort of *Risby*, on the Confines of *Smaland* and *East-Gotland*, was the *Swedish* Frontier Garrison; in which, *Nils Sternschild* made a vigorous and brave Defence. About the same time, the *Danes* attack'd *Elfsburg*, but were repuls'd by *Oluf Strale*, the Governour of the Place. On the other hand, the *Swedes* render'd themselves Masters of *Fempteland*, and made the Inhabitants swear Allegiance to the Crown of *Sweden*. Now also, a Convention was held at *Nikoping*, for settling domestick Affairs; in which, to cultivate a good Understanding at Home, Duke *John* not only resign'd his Guardianship, but made an absolute Cession of all his Rights and Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden*; in recompence of which, the States added to his Dutchy some Lands in *West-Gotland*. The Queen likewise resign'd her Guardianship, because *Gustavus* her Son, tho' but Eighteen Years of Age, gave full Proof of the necessary Qualities for Governing the State. Thus *Gustavus* enter'd upon the Administration of Affairs; and the necessary Measures for the present Juncture, were concerted by the same Convention. *Nils Bielke* and
- Nils*

King  
*Charles's*  
Death.

1612.  
The *Danes*  
repuls'd  
before  
*Elfsburg*,  
and lose  
*Fempte-*  
*land*.

The  
Queen re-  
signs her  
Guardian-  
ship.





*Nils Hilliebock* were sent to *Finland*, to administer the Oath of Allegiance to the Inhabitants, in his Majesty's Name. But the most troublesome and tedious Business was, the War with *Denmark*; for the *Danes* could never have a more favourable Opportunity to commence a War; the *Swedes* being then engaged in the Wars with *Muscovy* and *Poland*; besides, the Conquest of *Calmar* was very advantageous to them. However, *Gustavus* did all he could, to put himself into a Capacity to resist his Enemies. He sent *Manneboen* to the *Netherlands*, with Orders, not only to raise some Thousands of Foot Soldiers and Seamen, but to give Commissions to particular Ships to war upon the *Danes*. He had Six Men of War ready to go for *Holland* to fetch the new-raised Men; but the *Danish* Fleet block'd them up in *Elfsburg* Haven. The *Danes* intended to attack *Elfsburg* and *Gulberg* in *West-Gothland*; and *Nykoping*, in the Province of *Smaland*, that being Masters of these Three Places, they might have an open Passage through all *Sweden*. To countermine this Project of the *Danes*, *Gustavus* made an Irruption into *Schonen*, where he committed great Ravages, tho' in his Retreat the *Danes* cut off 300 of his Men: At the same time Duke *John* enter'd the Country of *Hal-land*, and defeated a considerable Party, commanded by the King of *Denmark*, and *George*, Duke of *Lunenburg*, and besides the Slain, took several Prisoners of Note: In the mean time the *Danes* assaulted Fort *Gulberg*, but were beat off with Loss, and met with the like ill Success at *Elfsburg*. To give the Besieged time to breath, *Kruntz* went and took *Nilosse*, and after he had cut off some Hundreds of Soldiers, set fire to the Place: The like he did in the Lordship of *Bahus*, where he burnt all before him, as far as *Friederickstadt*.

*Gustavus*  
invades  
*Schonen*.

Having dwelt thus long on the Northern Wars, we proceed now to *Germany*. We have already mention'd *Rodolph's* divesting himself, tho' in a manner wholly upon Force, of the Crown of *Bohemia*, which was presently put on *Matthias* his Head, and he now took so little Care of the Affairs of the Empire, that he thought to get rid of them also, by throwing them off on the King of the *Romans*, whom with that Design he had call'd a Dyet to elect; but falling sick in

L

that

1612. that very Juncture, the Assembly only agreed privately on the Person they intended to chuse, and so *Redolph's* refer'd that Affair to another Session, which was appointed in *February*; but the Emperor's Malady encreasing, he died of a Dropsie on the 10th of *January*. This Prince was never married. He was little capable of the Imperial Dignity in time of Peace, and less in time of War. He employ'd his Time chiefly about Sciences, and especially *Mechanicks*, and might be seen a whole Day together in Artificers Shops. He was also a great Lover of Chymistry, and one of his great Diversions was Distilling; so that his Time being taken up in this manner, and he himself being naturally timorous, his Enemies entrenched on his Authority, and left him but the bare Title of Emperor.

A Dervise  
attempts  
to kill the  
Sultan.

*Turkey* affords us hardly any thing worth our Journey thither. We find the Plague that furiously raged in *Constantinople* force Sultan *Ashmet* to his Country Palace, call'd the *Seraglio* of *Dorat Bascha*, to avoid the Danger; but while he was here, and went to visit the stately Mosque he caused to be built there, a Dervise threw a great Stone at him, to knock him down, but the same falling upon his Shoulders, did but lightly hurt him, for which he was beheaded next Day. The Provinces of *Moldavia* and *Wallachia* being in great Turmoil and Disorder at this Time, engaged the *Turks*, as their Manner was, to make use of this Opportunity to their own Advantage; but finding they could not with Conveniency make an absolute Conquest of these Countries, yet they set up such Princes in both the Governments, as they thought would be agreeable to their Interest: For *Constantine* in *Moldavia* was dispossest and taken Prisoner, and one *Stephen*, the pretended Son of Prince *Aron*, put up in his Stead, and *Batori* in *Transylvania*; he was much molested by *Bethlem Gabor*, his mortal Enemy, and being at length miserably massacred by his own Soldiers, *Bethlem* was soon after declared Prince of *Transylvania* by *Serder Bascha*, who at his Introduction gave him this Advice, *Batori shall serve for an Example to bad Princes: I do not think you will follow his Steps. Beware you attempt not any thing without the Privy of my Master. Maintain Peace* with

with your Neighbours, and make Men of Experience and Honesty of your Council.

There being nothing to stop us in our Return Home till we come into *France*; there were Treaties now on Foot both at *Paris* and *Madrid* about Two Matches; the one between the Prince of *Spain* and the Lady *Elizabeth*, the *French* King's Sister, and the other between the same King and the Princess *Ann* of *Spain*; the Consummation of which was put off, because the Parties were so young: However, this began to cause Intrigues in both Courts; after which the next Thing that came upon the Stage, was the Pope's Nuncio complaining of the Edict of the Parliament of *Paris*, given in Favour of the University against the Jesuits. He did all he could to get the Sentence mitigated; and to that End *Conchini* was ordered to speak to the President of the Parliament from the Queen, and inform'd them, that she wish'd their Edict were limited. Other Ministers were employ'd on the same Purpose; but *Verdun*, the chief President, both wisely and courageously answer'd, Her Majesty would do better to dissolve the Parliament, than oblige it to alter its Acts for the Pleasure of a Foreign Minister; and he would make but very small Concessions in their Favour.

There was also a great Stir at this Time about a *Richer's* Book written by *Richer*, Syndick of the Doctors of *Paris*, that seem'd to intrench upon the Power of the Church of *Rome*: Cardinal *Peronne*, and the Bishops of the Province of *Sens* condemn'd it in an Assembly held by them; and not only so, but they found a Way, tho' by unjust Methods, to divest the Author of his Headship of the Doctors of the *Parisian* Faculty; and the Cardinal of *Bouzi* declar'd one Day to him from the Chancellor *Sillery*, That he should be taken up, if he answer'd any of the Libels his Adversaries publish'd against him.

Amidst these Traverses, the Queen-Regent diverted herself more than Religion or Decency, in the Second Year of her Mourning, would allow of; and the Double Marriage before mention'd being solemnly declared on the 25th of *March*, she appointed a magnificent Tournament in the *Royal Square*, where the Three Champions were the Dukes of *Guise*, *Nevers*

1612.

and *Bassompierre*: The Constable and Four Marshals of France were to be Judges. In the mean while, the Prince of *Conde* and *Soissons* were not present at the Declaration of the Marriage, but retired from Court in Discontent; yet being brought back again, the Duke of *Mayn* was appointed Ambassador to *Spain*. In the mean time, the Duke of *Pastrada* and *Don Inigo de Cardenas*, King *Philip's* Ambassador in Ordinary in France, sign'd the Marriage between the Princess *Elizabeth* and the Prince of *Spain* on the 25th of *August*. The Lady's Dowry was 500000 Crowns in Gold, which was to be paid down the Night before the Consummation of the Marriage. She renounced all her Right to the Succession of the Crown of France. On the other Hand, *Mayn* was receiv'd with great Honours in *Spain*, made a most splendid publick Entry, and on the 22d of *August* sign'd the Articles at *Madrid*. He harangued the *Infanta* in Quality of Queen of France, and at his Departure entreated her to give him some Orders to the King his Master. To which she answering, *Affure him, that I am very impatient to see him*; her Governess, the Countess of *Altamira*, reply'd, *Oh, Madam, what will the King of France think, when the Duke shall report to him you have so great a Passion for Marriage? You have taught me*, answer'd the *Infanta*, with a great deal of Liveliness, *that one must always speak Truth*.

The Regent having concluded these Matches, was also very desirous to have her second Daughter *Christiana* married to the brave *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*; and the *English* Ambassador, after the way *Villeroy* had spoke to him, gave King *James* to understand. That it would be his Fault, if that Affair were not concluded. The King thereupon order'd the Lord *Rocheſter*, his Favourite, to write to the Prince, then at *Richmond*, about it, and to pray him to speak his Mind freely. The Prince had Notice, that the Lady was not yet Nine Years of Age, and that her eldest Sister's Portion was but 500000 Crowns of Gold. *Rocheſter* insinuated, the Regent would give more with her, in case the Augmentation of her Fortune were insisted on. The Prince hereupon, with a Prudence much surpassing his Years, answer'd the King, his Father, upon all the Articles of the Letter from his Ambassador



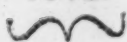
ambassador in *France*, which he sent him at the same time; our *English* Historians are so silent about this Matter, and the Prince's Letter is so remarkable, as not to be omitted upon divers Accounts, but more particularly since it seems to have been the last this Noble Prince ever wrote; for it bore Date *October 14.* and he died the 6th of *November* following, as shall be mention'd in its proper Place. I shall therefore insert it here.



‘AS for the Time they will bring the Princess into *England*, I believe the sooner the better, and that your Majesty ought not to demur hereupon. As long as the Princess shall be in *France*, the Queen her Mother will be Mistress, either to forward the Marriage, or to stave it off; and to oblige her Daughter either to give her Consent, or hinder her from it: The younger she is, the more Time we shall have, and Easiness, to instruct her in our Religion, and convert her. Since they ask your Majesty to explain your self as to the Liberty the Princess shall have in the Exercise of her Religion; I desire you, Sir, to answer your Ambassador positively, that you will not agree to any other Conditions with *France*, than what the Duke of *Savoy* demanded when he offer'd you his Daughter; that is to say, That the Princess shall have Liberty to follow her Religion in private, in the most retired Chamber of her Apartment. I confess, that these are too strait and narrow Conditions; but if *France* speaks sincerely, I do not question but she will be contented with them.

*Henry* very well knew the covetous Humour of his Father, for which Reason he had a Touch upon the Article of her Fortune, in a somewhat more nice Manner: ‘If your Majesty (continued he) regards the Greatness of a Dowry, I think you will prefer the Princess of *Savoy*; she brings with her 200000 Crowns more than the Lady of *France*; for at least I can scarce perswade myself, that the Regent will give more to the second Daughter than to the eldest: But if your Majesty lays aside Interest, to do what shall be more to the Mind of the general Body of Protestants abroad, it seems to me you will rather incline

1612.



‘to *France* than *Savoy*. Lastly, I fear lest your Majesty  
 ‘should not be content with the Indifference I shew  
 ‘for all the Propositions of Marriage which are made  
 ‘me; I must humbly beg your Pardon for it: ’Tis  
 ‘you, Sir, who is to take the most advantageous Re-  
 ‘solution that may be for the Good of the State; I  
 ‘have but little Experience in Political Affairs, and  
 ‘cannot speak like a Man smitten in Love upon this  
 ‘this Occasion.

Being as it were insensibly brought back into *Eng-  
 land*, by our falling upon this proposed Match, and  
 having already mention’d the Intimacy between Sir  
*Thomas Overbury* and *Rocheſter*, King *James*’s new Fa-  
 vourite; this begat a Strife between the Earls of *Sal-  
 isbury* and *Suffolk*, who should engross him, each  
 presenting, proffering and accumulating Favours up-  
 on *Overbury*’s Kindred. His Father was made Judge  
 in *Wales*, and himself offer’d an Office; but *Overbury*  
 was naturally of a proud and insolent Temper, and  
 being elevated with being the Confident of such a  
 Favourite, whose Beneficence could not be retail’d  
 without him, with a kind of Scorn neglected both  
 their Friendships, and yet made use of them. Before  
 this time that great Engine of State, the Lord Treas-  
 urer *Salisbury*, had made an Alliance with the House  
 of *Suffolk*, by marrying his eldest Son, the Lord  
*Cranborn*, to *Catherine*, eldest Daughter of that Fa-  
 mily; and that Malice might not become Hereditary,  
 was a great Means in marrying the young Earl of *Es-  
 sex* to the Lady *Frances Howard*, another of those  
 Sisters. The Earl of *Essex* was Fourteen Years of  
 Age, and the Lady Thirteen, when they were mar-  
 ried, and therefore he was sent to travel till Time  
 might render them fit for Cohabitation. The Lady  
 was kept at Court by her Mother, where the sower  
 Breath of that Age tainted her Reputation, and be-  
 ing a celebrated Beauty, the Prince of *Wales* made  
 many amorous Glances at her, the Ambassadors of his  
 Respect: But the Lady rather favouring the growing  
 Fortune of the Viscount *Rocheſter*, the Prince slighted  
 her, as rather done out of Spight to cross *Rocheſter*’s A-  
 mours, than any real Inclinations of his own. The  
 Countess of *Essex* had now a hard Game to play, viz.

The Earl  
 of *Essex*  
 unhappily  
 married.

To

To keep her Husband from enjoying her, and to secure the Viscount's Respects; for dishonest Love is always full of Jealousie. In order to strengthen her Designs, she consults one Mrs. Turner, a Doctor of Physick's Widow, whom Prodigality had reduced to Poverty, and that render'd her fit for any Mischief; she introduced into their Consultations one Forman, an Astrologer, and a reputed Conjuror, who supply'd the Lady with Charms, Spells and Potions, to cool the Husband's Heat, and enflame the Gallant's Passion.

1612.

The innocent Earl being made sensible of his own Misfortunes, complains to her Father, through whose Importunities and Threatnings she was perswaded to retire into the Country with her Husband, where her Disappointments enraging her Spleen, she could scarce afford to be civil to him, but was always murmuring and complaining against him, and at length wrote to her Correspondents Forman and Mrs. Turner, That she saw little Effect produced by all the Potions she had given her Husband; for he seem'd more eager after her than ever, and she knew the Viscount would never love her, if he knew her Husband should enjoy her, whom with Difficulty she had put off; but how long she should be able to resist his Violence she knew not, and therefore, unless they design'd to see her the most miserable Creature in the World, they should speedily assist her, and for their Reward they should make their own Proposals. Now all the Tricks of Sorcery and Womanish Aversion being employ'd to debilitate the Earl, he suffer'd her to steer her own Course, and next Winter up she came to London, with all the Ornaments Art and Nature could invent. to allure the Viscount's Affections: And her Absence encreasing his Passion, they had frequent Meetings. Persons qualified for such Offices were employ'd, and when Nature grew weary and exhausted, new Spirits were purchased at any Rates to keep up their lustful Embraces.

Whilst Fortune thus smiled upon the Viscount Rochester, it frown'd as hard upon the Lord Sanguir, a Baron of the same Nation, and marry'd into a good Family in England; who valued himself upon his Skill in Fencing, and intending to affront and disparage a Fencing-Master in his own School, whose

The Lord Sanguir's Misfortune.

1612. Name was *John Turner*, and he, apprehensive of his Design, press'd so rudely upon the Baron, that he put one of his Eyes out. The Baron being afterwards in the Court of *France*, and the King understanding he lost his Eye by a common Fencer, said to the Lord *Sanguir*, *Vive ti'llencore, Is the Man alive that did it?* This Question put the Baron in meditating a Revenge, and some Years after coming into *England*, he hired Two of his Country men, *Gray* and *Carlisle* to murder him, which they did with a Case of Pistols at his own House in *White-Friars*. One of the Murtherers was apprehended upon the Borders of *Scotland*, the other in a Ship bound for *Hamborough*, and the Lord *Sanguir* having absconded, and hearing a Thousand Pound was offer'd for his Head, he resign'd himself to the King's Mercy; but no Intercession could prevail, and their Lives satisfied the Law, without allowing the Baron a Noble Death, the King saying, *That Hanging was too good for him.*

No bester  
trick'd by  
*Salisbury*.

*Rocheſter* had not yet so monopoliz'd the King's Affections, but that *Salisbury* was still a Rub in his Way, so that he could not arrive to that Pitch of Grandeur in his Time that he afterwards obtain'd. One Thing among the rest wherein he put the Slur upon him, was in moderating the King's Bounty on this Occasion. The King had given *Rocheſter* 5000*l.* (others say 20000*l.*) which the Treasurer thought too great a Largess, where there was no kind of Merit, and therefore laid the Money in Silver upon Tables in his Galleries in *Salisbury* House, and having invited the King to Dinner, made this Room the Passage to his Entertainments. The King, surprized at these great Heaps of Money, asked for what purpose it was assigned. The Treasurer told him he had Order from his Majesty to give so much to the Viscount *Rocheſter*. The King that either carelessly thought 5000*l.* was no more than the Noise so much makes in *Scotland*, which is about 500*l.* only, or cunningly knowing the Treasurers meaning; said, *It was too much for one Man*, and made him be contented with less than half of it. Now the King translated his Mothers Corps from *Peterborough* to a Magnificent Tomb at *Westminster*, attended by many Prelates and Noblemen who paid this last Tribute to her Memory.

Not



Not long after, viz. November 6th, happened the Death of Prince *Henry*, who was the Darling of Mankind, a Youth of vast Hopes and extraordinary Virtues but was too soon Man to be long lived, or too Good for such a wicked People. The World is always willing to attribute the Death of Princes to unfair Practices, and it was the general Rumour of that time that the Prince was Poysoned, and it had been happy if there had not been too much cause to give that Suspicion Credit. There is yet a Sermon in Print Preached at *St. James's* upon the Dissolution of his Family, that boldly insinuates such a Thing. Sir *Francis Bacon*, Lord Chancellor of *England*, in his Speech at the Tryal of the Earl of *Somerset*, had some reflections upon the Intimacy of that Lord with Sir *Thomas Overbury*, which seem to point directly that way : And some that knew the bickerings betwixt the Prince and him while he was but Viscount *Rocheſter*, especially Sir *James Elphington*, who offer'd to kill him, for misrepresenting the Prince's Actions to the King, shew it but too plainly ; for the Prince being an open hearted Man, and resenting every Injury done to the Nation, had sometime said, *That if ever he were King, he would not leave one of that Family to piss against a Wall*, and therefore he and the *Howards* could not think themselves secure, till he had one way or other paid his Debt to Nature.

However, whether it were to appease the Clamour of the People, or out of Curiosity, the Doctors *Mayerne*, *Atkins*, *Hammond*, *Palmer*, *Gifford* and *Butler* were order'd to Dissect the Body, and to give their Opinions of it, which were, That they found his Liver paler than ordinary, in certain Places somewhat wan, his Gall without any Choler in it, and distended with Wind ; That his Spleen in divers Places was more than ordinarily black ; That his Stomach was in no Part offended ; That his Midriff was black in many Places, and in several Places spotted, and of a thin watery Blood ; That the Reins of the hinder Part of the Head were fuller than ordinary ; but that the Ventricles and the Hollownes of the Brain were full of clear Water. The Prince's Corps was deposited at *Westminster*, Decemb. the 7th, the Funeral Solemnity being

1612.  
P. Henry's  
Death,  
and how.

1612. being compleated with the Tears and Lamentations of the People.

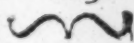
Baronets  
instituted

But to dwell no longer upon this melancholy Subject, the King in 1609. having taken into Consideration the Peace and Security of *Ireland*, had granted the City of *London* the present Possession and Plantation of the Province of *Ulster*, who therefore now sent thither about 300 Persons of all sorts of Handicrafts-men, chiefly to inhabit *London-Derry* and *Cole-rain*, and appointed Alderman *Cockain* the first Governour. Now, to advance this, or the like Colonies in that Kingdom, King *James* about this time began a new Order of Knighthood, called *Baronets* (already mention'd by us) and appointed certain Laws to make them capable of being admitted: *First*, That they should maintain Thirty Foot Soldiers in *Ireland*, for Three Years, at the Rate of 8*d.* per Day, and to pay down the Wages for one whole Year at the Passing of their Patent; That they should be Gentlemen of Blood of Three Descents; And, *Lastly*, have Lands of Inheritance in Possession, or immediate Reversion, to the Value of 1000*l.* per Annum. But these and other Limitations being soon broke off, we shall say no more of them, but proceed to another Year.

1613.  
Prince *Palatine* married to the Lady *Elizabeth*

The last concluded not more moanfully by Reason of the Death of the brave Prince *Henry*, than this was jovial upon the Celebration of the Marriage of the Elector *Palatine*, *February* 14. with that lovely and vertuous Princess the Lady *Elizabeth*, with all the Pomp and Glory that so much Grandeur could express, and is fitter for Discourse in a Prince's Court, than to fill a Page in History. The City of *London*, by their Mayor and Aldermen, in their Formalities presented the fair Bride with a Chain of Oriental Pearl, of such a value as was fit for them to give, and her to receive; the People shewed their affection in bountifully contributing to the Payment of her Marriage Portion, and now being tired with the Entertainments, and all the Shows and Diversions that could be devised, the Lord Admiral being ready with a Fleet in the *Downs*, for their Convoy, they soon arrived at *Flushing*. The Duke of *Lenox*, the Earl of *Arundel*, Viscount *Lisle*, and the Lord *Harrington*, with

with Divers Ladies and Persons of Quality attended them to *Heidleberg*, and some time after the *English* returned home, except the Lord *Harrington* that died by the Way.



The Earl of *Salisbury* dying about this time, *Roche-Overbury's* *Tragedy*.  
*ster* now become Earl of *Somerset*, took upon him the whole Administration of the Government, receiving Pacquets and dispatching Answers, without the Knowledge of the King or Council, and all done by the Assistance and privity of *Overbury*; but when he understood that *Somerset* intended to marry the Lady *Essex*, he dealt freely with him, and told him nothing could be more destructive to both their growing hopes, than to lay the Foundation upon so much Injustice, as to marry another Man's Wife while her Husband was living, and therefore passionately desired him to cast his Thoughts upon a more honourable Object, and not upon one whose disloyalty to her Husband, was branded with perpetual Infamy: But the Earl bewitched with the Charms of his amorous Mistress, did not only estrange himself from *Overbury*, but denounced enmity, and also excited the Countess against him; and she mustering up all the Passion and Envy that a Female Malice could invent, never left him till she had discharged all the Volleys of her Rage upon him. She importunes the Earl of *Northampton* her Uncle to vindicate the Honour of their Family; and he joining with the Earl, they agree to take away *Overbury's* life by Poyson; but that not being to be done in a publick Way, they contrive to exasperate the King against him, and procure him to be imprisoned, that they might with greater privacy effect his ruin. The King about this time intending to send an Ambassador into *Flanders* to the Arch-Duke, (tho' others say into *Muscovy*) the Earl recommended Sir *Thomas Overbury* to him for that Service. *Overbury* refused it, but was not so little a Courtier, or void of Reason, as not to see the Danger of disobeying the King's Commands, and therefore acquainting *Somerset* with it, he acted on both sides, promising to mollifie the King's displeasure, and on the other part aggravated his offence in refusing the Employment, which incensed the King against him; so the poor Gentleman was sent to the Tower for his Contempt, and to compleat

1613. pleat the Tragedy, Sir *William Wade*, Lieutenant of the Tower, was displaced, and Sir *Fervaise Ellvais* put into his Room.

The Countess of *Essex* sues for a Divorce.

The Sentence of Divorce pronounced.

*Overbury* being thus caged, the Countess employs every Engine to sue out a Divorce from her Husband, and to procure *Overbury's* Death, that had laid such a Stain upon her Honour, that nothing but his Blood could expiate. The Earl of *Northampton* resented his Niece's Grievances, acquaints the King with the Infirmities of her Husband, That since her Marriage she hath not enjoy'd the Rights of a Wife, and that there was a great Affection between her and the Earl of *Somerset*. The King immediately grants a Commission under the Broad-Seal, to try the Cause, who met accordingly; but before they proceeded further, they empanell'd a Jury of Twelve discreet Matrons to search the Countess, whether she was a Maid or not, as she pretended to be in her Allegations. The Countess pretending to be ashamed and bashful to undergo such an Examination, procured Leave of the Court to appear in a Veil before the Matrons, and by that Means had Opportunity to fob a young Girl into her place, who passed in the Opinion of the Jury to be a Virgin; and the good Earl himself to be rid of such a Plague, confessed he had attempted several times to enjoy her, but never did; and upon these Grounds the Judges proceeded to a Divorce, declaring, *That Robert, Earl of Essex, and the Lady Frances Howard, contracted by shew of Marriage, did cohabit in one House, and lie together in one Bed, Nudus cum nuda, & solus cum sola, and that the Lady Frances did shew her self prompt and ready to be known of him, but that the said Earl neither did nor could have Knowledge of her. And that the said Lady Frances by Inspection of her Body was proved to be apt for Carnal Copulation with Man, and yet was a Virgin; therefore we the said Judges deputed in the Cause, first invoking the Name of Christ, and setting God before our Eyes, do pronounce, decree and declare, the pretended Marriage to be utterly void, and of no effect. And that the said Lady Frances was, is, and ought to be free and at liberty from any Bond of such pretended Marriage de facto between them. And we do pronounce, That she ought to be divorced, and so we do free and divorce her, leaving them as touching other Marriages, to their*



own Consciences in the Lord. Which our definitive Sentence and Decree we ratifie and publish. Thomas Wint, Lancel. Elic. Rich. Coven. and Litchfield, John Ross, Bishops. Julius Cæsar, Thomas Parry, Daniel Dun, Knights. 1613.

These Bishops and the rest of the Judges (says *Wilson*) could not be ignorant what scandalous Reports flew abroad concerning this Lady, and however sweetened by Greatness, yet carried an ill Savour among honest Men, that were not blinded by Interest, or deafened by Prejudice, which made the Bishops of *Canterbury* and *London* decline sitting, tho' named in the Commission. And indeed all that can be said in favour of the Rest, is, that they might not know, that another Female was imposed upon the Jury instead of the Lady *Essex*.

Now the Lady bestirs her self to accomplish the Death of Sir *Thomas Overbury*, and Two of her Engines, *Forman* and *Gresham* being dead, she relies wholly upon the Assistance of Mrs. *Turner* who procured one *Weston*, formerly her Husband's Servant, to be the Tool to effect their wicked Purposes. The Lady got Sir *Thomas Munson* to recommend him to Sir *Fervaise Elvis*, and he to Sir *Thomas Overbury* to wait upon him, by whose Means and the Lieutenant's Connivance, several lingring Potions were given him in his Broths, Meats and Tarts; nay, his very Salt was mix'd with White Mercury, which threw him into extream torments and languishing. In the mean while the Lady shines at Court, and is become the King's Favourite as well as *Somerset's*, who marries her with all the State and Magnificence that could fill a Court with Delight, or People with Admiration: *Overbury* hearing what he had suffer'd for opposing what was now effected, and still presuming upon *Somerset's* false Friendship, he importun'd him by a Letter to procure his Liberty, as he had often promised: The Favourite, not willing to have him come to Exclamations, answer'd, That the King at that Time was full of Business, but he would take the first Opportunity to sollicite him for his Enlargement, and make use of his Indisposition as a Ground for the King's Clemency to work upon, enclosing in his Letter a white Powder, which he desired him to take, assuring him, that tho' it made poison'd him

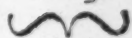
*Overbury's*  
Death  
contri-  
ving.

1613. him sick at first, it would do him much Good in the End. The innocent Gentleman took the Powder, which having a poisonous Quality, added to his Affliction; but there must be something more violent still to compleat the Work: Thus he continued languishing under horrible Tortures about 4 Months, and his barbarous Enemies being more impatient that he survived so long, than that he suffer'd so much, compleated their Wickedness by a poisonous Glisten, prepared by *Franklin*, which put an End to his miserable Life a few Days after. The Earl of *Northampton*, who was a prime Actor in this Tragedy, endeavour'd basely to murther *Overbury's* Fame, as well as his Person, by raising a Report, That he died of the Pox, and had such strange Sores and Ulcers in his Body, that stunk so intolerably, that the People, being not able to bear the noisom Smell, were forced to throw him in a loose Sheet into a Coffin, and bury him privately on *Tower-Hill*; concluding in a Letter to *Somerset*, That God was gracious in cutting off evil Instruments before their Time, tho' he little thought he pronounced his own Doom by it, as you'll hear among the Transactions of the next Year.

The Affairs of Italy.

1612:

As for *France*, this Year was usher'd in there with the Chevalier de *Guise's* his killing the Baron de *Luz*, which greatly provoked the Queen Regent against the *Guises*; whereupon the Duke of *Guise* would strike in with the Prince of *Conde's* Party. *Bassompierre* endeavour'd to divert him from it, and in short managed the Matter so well, that both he and *Espernon* were brought to Court again. In the Interim, *Francis*, Duke of *Mantua*, the Queen Regent's Nephew, dying about the latter End of the preceding Year, and leaving by his Wife *Margaret*, Daughter to *Charles Emmanuel*, Duke of *Savoy*, but one Daughter, about Four Years old: His Brother *Ferdinand*, the Cardinal, succeeded him without any Molestation in the Duchy of *Mantua*; but *Montferat*, not being a Male Fief, it was to descend to the young Princess. This embroil'd the Cardinal with the Duke of *Savoy*, who had an Eye upon *Montferat*, and at last actually invaded it. This occasion'd great Commotions in *Italy*, and brought *France* and *Spain* to concern themselves in it. There was an Agreement hudled up between



tween them; but the *Spaniards* carrying Things on that Side with an high Hand, and the Duke of *Savoy* being very inclinable to break again, the *French* began to speak in Earnest of sending some Troops into *Italy*; upon which King *Philip*, who in Reality had no Mind to a War, coldly desired the Prince of *Piedmont*, then in *Spain*, to write to *Turin*, that his Majesty would not fall out with *France*, and that he would give no Occasion to others to break with *Spain*: Further, he sent Orders to his Ambassador in *France*, to declare he would withdraw his Troops from *Monferrat*, provided the Cardinal Duke would grant an Amnesty to his Subjects, who had sided with the Duke of *Savoy*, and desisted from demanding Reparation of Damages; so that at length another Negotiation was set on Foot to terminate all Differences in an amicable Manner. The *Venetians*, not a little concern'd at the Affairs of *Montferat*, were now also much infested by the Depredations of a People call'd *Uscocchi*, living about the Gulph of *Quarnaro*, where *Istria* closes the Confines of *Italy*, under the Government of *Ferdinand*, Arch-Duke of *Austria*, against whom the Republick made frequent Complaints, as well as the *Turks*, and streightned *Signa*, into which they were receiv'd by *Ferdinand*, that they might defend that Frontier against the *Turks*.

We shall not enter upon a Detail of the *Florentines* taking and destroying *Agliman* in *Caramania*, because 'tis without the Bounds of our History, but acquaint you, that the *Turks* having already made Preparations against *Transylvania*, *Achmet* was now marching thither with a mighty Army in Person; but hearing by the Way, that *Bechlem Gaber* was acknowledged their Prince, under his Protection, he turn'd head towards *Constantinople*, and the rather because of the troubled Affairs of *Asia*, where the Rebels of *Natolia* had burnt and destroy'd several Place, and a certain *Arab* having revolted from him, usurp'd the Title of King, having drawn 50000 Men to his Party, with which he ravaged the Sultan's Territories, and threatned them with a greater Ruin. The *Spaniards* likewise and *Portuguese* had made Incursions into divers Places upon the *Red-Sea*, and taken and plunder'd *Aden*, a Place of great

1613. great Importance; but *Achmet* could not for the present go into *Constantinople*, because of the Plague which raged there; yet when the same ceased, the Sultan, for fear of Infection, caused all the Dogs in the City to be transported to *Scutari* in *Asia*, and order'd a daily Allowance of Bread and Flesh for them, which being not enough, the Inhabitants were much oppress'd, and ready to mutiny; but, by the Advice of the *Mufti*, they were at length transported from thence to an uninhabited Island, a considerable Way from *Constantinople*, where they all perished; for the Grand Seignior, before they were sent away, having propounded to the *Mufti* to have them all slain, he answer'd, *Every Dog had a Soul, and therefore it was not fit to kill them.*

There was nothing else very remarkable in relation to the *Turks* this Year, only that the Grand Seignior having now, and in the preceding Year, sustain'd a Loss of Gallies and Frigots in the *Mediterranean*, by the Gallies of *Naples*, *Malta* and *Florence*, and in the *Black-Sea* by the *Cossacks*, he impos'd a great Tax upon all his *Christian* Subjects towards the Repairing of it, insomuch, that he required the *Armenians* to build him Nine Gallies at their own Charge, and the *Greeks* Twenty, with which we shall leave these Parts.

K. *Matthias* dis-oblige the Protestants.

King *Matthias* on his Side, like his Predecessors, (now he was fix'd on the Throne) would have brought the Protestants over to his Religion, which so far disoblige'd them, that they refus'd him Assistance against *Bethlem Gabor*, Prince of *Transylvania*, before mention'd, when he demand'd it in a Dyet held at *Ratisbonne*; nay, so great an Influence had they got over that and another at *Lintz* next Year, that they easily obtain'd a Resolution to do themselves Justice against the Roman Catholick Magistrates that had injured them.

1614.

The Actions of the Swedish and Danish Armies.

As to the Northern Crowns, the *Danes* carried on the War with more Vigour and Success than before: For, in the first place, they dislodg'd *Baat* of Fort *Kiszby*, and having transported their Troops to the *Isle of Oeland*, defeated the *Swedes* that oppos'd them, and storm'd the Castle of *Berchholm*. After which, *Elfsburg* and *Gulberg* surrender'd; for the first of these Places,



Places, was through *Nils Sternschild's* Negligence, not furnish'd with a sufficient Number of Men ; and *Oluf Strale*, their Commander, was remiss in the Performance of his Duty. *Gustavus* assembled all his Forces, to oppose the March of the Enemies, who were moving with a powerful Army towards *West-Gothland* ; but finding his Army not so numerous as the *Danish*, he did not think it proper to hazard a Battle, chusing rather to gall them some other way. The Enemy having Notice of *Gustavus's* Design, return'd with all Diligence to *Elfsburg* ; and his Majesty, who was very vigilant upon all Occasions, kill'd him a great many Men upon his Retreat. On the other Side, the *Danes* invaded *Smaland*, and posted themselves near *Wimmerby*, to keep the Country in Awe ; but as soon as they had Advice of *Gustavus's* March, they retired to *Calmar*. However, being sensible that the *Swedish* Fleet was very ill provided, they gall'd the *Swedes* very much, on the Coasts of *Smaland* and *East-Gothland*, and not only burnt *Westervick* and *Suderköping*, but gave chase to Twelve *Swedish* Men of War, after they were much damaged ; *Gustavus Adolphus* routed a considerable Party, under the Command of *Brede de Ranzan*, near *Tennewaldbroo*, and another Party near *Eköfö*. In the mean time, King *Christian* having cross'd *West-Gothland*, went to lay Siege to *Jenköping*, but finding he could do nothing there, immediatly decamp'd, and retired with all Diligence to *Holland*. If he had had the Resolution to have staid, *Gustavus* would have given him Battle. Upon the Side of *Norway*, the Enemies invaded *Dalia*, and forced Three Bailiffs of that Province to administer the Oath. As for the *Swedish* Fleet, it was in such a wretched Condition, that it could do nothing. *Christian* himself went aboard his Fleet, and ventured to come near *Elfsnabben*, where *Gustavus* had certainly intercepted his Retreat, if he had not very quickly gone out at the Streight thro' which he enter'd. All the King of *Denmark* got by this hazardous Attempt, was a View of the Danger that attended the coming up to *Stockholm*, and was the greatest Exploit that *Christian* performed during this War, which was not at all answerable to the Hopes he had conceived.

1613.

A Peace  
concluded  
between  
Sweden  
and Den-  
mark.

In the mean time, *James*, King of *England*, was very zealous in procuring an Accommodation between the Two Crowns, by the Interposition of his Two Ambassadors, *James Spencer* and *Robert Armstruten* the former at the Court of *Sweden*, and the other in *Denmark*: And at this time, indeed, the *Swedes* had Reason to wish for a Peace, to recover their exhausted Strength: but at the same time the *Danes* were sensible they could not continue the War much longer, because the Plague and Famine had impair'd the Number of their Men both in *Calmar* and the Isle of *Oeland*. However *Gustavus* raised 2300 Men in *Scotland* and the *Netherlands* and hired Five *Scotch* Ships, which pillaged the City and Lordship of *Drontheim*, and then made Sail to *Sweden* by the Way of *Fialle*. At last the Two Kings agreed to send Plenipotentiaries, to negotiate a Peace at *Knaredb*. In the Beginning of the Negotiation the *Danes* objected against the Authority of *Gustavus's* Commission, and desired other Credentials sign'd by Duke *John* and the States of *Sweden*, especially because *Gustavus* was not quite Eighteen Years of Age: But the *Swedes* in like manner desiring Credentials from the State of *Denmark*, they dropp'd the Objection, and the greatest Difficulty to be adjust'd was, That the *Danes* claim'd a Perpetuity to the City of *Calmar*, the Isle of *Oeland*, and the Castles of *Kisgby* and *Elfsbourg*, with all their Dependancies: At last they entred upon this Expedient, That all these Places should be restor'd to the *Swedes*, upon the Payment of a Million of Crowns. There was an Introduction prefix'd to this Treaty, for fear any thing should be insert'd to the Disadvantage of King *Charles's* Memory; nor were there any Foreign Princes included in the Treaty, as is usual, because the King of *Denmark* would not have the *Dutch* mention'd. The Two Kings during the Negotiation resided not far from the Place of Interview, for the Conveniency of Conferring with their respective Plenipotentiaries; and the Peace having been concluded so near the End of the old Year, viz. on the 19th of *January*, we shall mention it once for all in this Place, and proceed to the Death of the

1614.

*Badius's* his  
Death.

Learned Dominick *Badius*. He was born at *Lisle* in *Flanders* in 1561. He began his Studies at *Aix la Chap-*

*Chappelle*, and continued them in *Leyden* and *Geneva*, and afterwards studied, and became Doctor of Law in 1585. Coming into *England* with the States Ambassadors, he was very much esteem'd for his Learning; from whence he return'd for the *Hague*, and then going for *France*, *Harlay*, President of the Parliament of *Paris*, made him Councillor to it; but he return'd to, and died at *Leyden*, as aforesaid. He wrote *Monita Civilis Sapientie. De Induciis Belli Belgici. Commentariolus de Fenore*: And *Wouwer* wrote his Epitaph.

1613.

This Year proved fatal to that Learned French Man *Isaac Caufabon*, who in 1555. was born at *Bordeaux*, a small Town in *Dauphine*. *Joseph Scaliger* himself owns him to have been well skill'd in the Greek Tongue. He taught at *Geneva*, and was Professor of the Greek Tongue at *Paris*. where he was made Library-Keeper to King *Henry IV.* after which *James I.* drew him into *England*, where he made good Use of him till his Death, which happen'd when he was 55 Years old. The most noted of his Works are his *Notes on Suetonius, Diogenes Laertius, and Strabo*; his *Epistole, Animadversiones in Athenicum, Polybium, Strabonem, &c.* He writ a Critick on *Baronius* his Annals, and having bought the Manuscripts of *Polyænus* very dear, publish'd them.

1614.

Being come as far as *Leyden*, let us once more cross the *Brittish* Channel, and visit our own Country. We have before given some Account of *Northampton's* being engaged in poisoning *Overbury*: His own Fate now draws nigh. He was, besides other Preferments, Lord-Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*; and *Romish* Priests, by his Permission, swarming in great Numbers into *England*, there was a Clamour at last made against it, upon which he exhibited an Information against some of them, who justifying the Truth of what they were accused of, Archbishop *Abbot* at the same time produced a Letter from the Earl to Cardinal *Bellarmino*, wherein he declared, That however the Circumstances of the Times compell'd him, and that the King urged him to turn Protestant, yet his Heart stood firm for the Roman Catholics, and he would be ready to further them in any Attempt. This procured him the King's Frowns,

1614.

*Northamp-  
ton dies.*

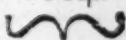
King's  
Pleasures.

Parlia-  
ment cal-  
led.

and the Prisoners Release; upon which he retired, disposed of his Estate, and, *June* the 15th, died a Papist.

About this time the Severity of some Bishops forced divers Persons to leave the Kingdom for Non-Conformity, and to retire to *New-England*; but this, or the ill Consequence of it, was little regarded; but as the Year was the Meridian of the King's Reign in *England*, so it was of his Pleasure. He was much addicted to Hunting and Drinking; ordinary *French* and *Spanish* Wines would not do, but he must have strong *Greek* Wines, and a special Officer to attend him at his Sport, to fill his Cup when he call'd for it. He also grew very unweildy; so that when he was treist on Horse-back, he rode on in that manner, without poising himself on his Saddle; nay, when his Hat was put on, he would not once take the Pains to alter it. His Ears also were but too much open to Favourites and Flatterers; for, to say nothing of his Profuseness to *Somerset*, and others, there is a remarkable Instance of it to Sir *Henry Rich*, afterwards Earl of *Holland*, who seeing some Persons pass by with 3000 *l.* for the Privy Purse, and whispering *James Maxwell* thereupon, *That he wish'd he had so much Money*, the King, who would needs know what he had spoke, and being told it, said, *Marry thou shalt*, Harry, and presently commanded the Porters to carry it to his Lodgings, with these Words, *You think you have a great Purchase; but I am better pleased to think how much I have gratified you with this Money, than you can be in receiving it*: Then for Flatterers scarce was any thing heard without the Prelude of Sacred, Peaceful, Wise, most Learned, &c. But these having no Influence at all for replenishing his Coffers, so much exhausted by the other, he was brought under great Necessities, and, after the Interval of about Five Years, he had no other Way than to call a Parliament, who meeting accordingly on the 5th of *April*, they, instead of contributing to the King's Wants, laid open his Wastes, especially upon the *Scots*, and besought him for the future to put a Stop to the Flocking of that Nation in such Numbers into *England*. Then they enquired into the Causes of the unexpected Encrease of Popish Recusants since the Gun-Powder-Treason, laid it up-  
on





on the Admission of some Popish Nobility into his Councils, the Silencing of watchful Ministers, the several Treaties he had engaged in, not only for the Marriage of the deceased Prince *Henry*, but also of Prince *Charles* with the Daughters of Popish Princes, to the Disheartning of Protestants, and Encouragement of Recusants; and having proceeded to other Mismanagements of State, he could bear it no longer, but dissolv'd them, and committed the most leading Members Prisoners to the *Tower*, and elsewhere; a great Violation of *English* Liberty. This done, a Benevolence was requir'd of the People; but some good Patriots having assured them, that it was against Law, Reason and Religion, since the King therein went contrary to his Coronation-Oath of Maintaining the Laws, Liberties and Customs of the Realm, there was but a little Money got, tho' a great deal of Love lost.

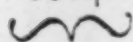
Benevolence demanded.

The King of *Denmark* being resolved to give the King, and his Sister the Queen *Ann* another Visit, arrived in *London* *July* the 2d, and return'd Home in the Beginning of *August*. We shall also now pass into Foreign Parts. We have told you already, that the Business of *Montferat* in *Italy* had like to have embroil'd the Crowns of *France* and *Spain*; but at the same time, the Joy which the Queen Regent conceiv'd to find herself freed from a Rupture, was but of a short Continuance; for the Retreat of the Prince of *Conde*, and several other Great Lords, from Court, much alarm'd her. *Bouillon* had very cunningly form'd this new Party to serve his own Interest; and therefore he brought the Dukes of *Nevers*, *Mayenne*, *Vendosme*, *Longueville*, *De Piney* *Luxemburg*, and divers others, into new Engagements with the Prince, in order to demand conjointly a Redress of the Disorders of the Government: On the other Hand, it was so much for the D. of *Savoy's* Interest to cut out Work for *Mary de Medicis*, that he must by all means correspond with the Prince of *Conde*, and endeavour to raise a Civil War in *France*, tho' he pretended quite the contrary, and would give his Assistance against all those that offer'd to disturb the publick Tranquility. There was a great many Expedients propos'd by the Council in this difficult Conjunction; and the Regent at length

King of *Denmark* comes in to *England*.

Civil Troubles in *France*.

1614.



Conde's  
Proceed-  
ings.

wrote a Circular Letter to all the Parliaments of the Kingdom, and other Civil Officers, to exhort them to be faithful to the King, and not suffer themselves to be surpriz'd by the Prince of *Conde* and his Party. In the mean time, the Duke of *Nevers* seiz'd on the Citadel of *Mezieres* in *Champagne*, where *Conde* and the rest of the Party meeting, the Prince wrote a Letter to the Queen in Form of a Manifesto, complaining of many Grievances, and demanding the Assembling of the States of the Kingdom within Three Months at farthest, the Suspending the Marriage of the King and his Sister till after the Sitting of the States, and the placing near her Majesty Persons of known Honesty and Integrity. At the same time he wrote to his Uncle the Prince of *Conti*, to the Dukes, Peers, and Officers of the Crown, to the Parliaments and Cardinals, and sent them a Copy of his Letter to the Queen. None of the Parliaments had Courage to answer the Prince; however, the Queen return'd him a large one, in Form of a Manifesto, to clear herself of his Imputations; and tho' a Negotiation was resolved on in Council, she was so far from relying upon it, that she concerted Measures for the raising of 6000 *Swiss*; but not daring to trust the Duke of *Roan*, who was their Colonel-General, and who was desirous to become the Head and Defender of the Reform'd, he quitted his Post for a Sum of Money, and the same was given to *Bassompierre*.

Now the better to engage the Prince of *Conde* and his Adherents to rise against the Government, *Bouillon* flatter'd him with Hopes the Reform'd would declare for them, and he had taken Care to discover this Project to the most intimate Friends of *Roan*; and *Conde* seem'd so well perswaded of the favourable Inclinations of the *Hugonots*, that he wrote to the Deputies-General of the Reform'd Churches, to let them know the Obligations he laid upon them, in not forgetting their Interest in the Manifesto: But the wise *Du Plessis Mornay* had the Address to prevent the Deputies from interesting themselves in this Affair. On the other Hand, when *Bouillon* had join'd the Prince in *Champagne*, he advis'd him to send some of his Domesticks to the Chief of the Reform'd, to exhort them to take up Arms; they did not doubt if *Roan* and *Du Plessis*

Mor.

*Mornay* could have been wrought upon, but they could easily bring in the rest; but nothing would work upon the latter; yet *Roan* did not seem very backward to join the Party, tho' at the same time much courted by the other Side. Great Endeavours were used to accommodate Things before they came to Extremity, and at last, by the good Offices of Friends, a Treaty was concluded at *St. Menchoud* in *Champagne*, May 15th, whereby the Castle of *Amboise* was to be put into the Prince of *Conde's* Hands, till the Meeting of the States; *Nevers* had *St. Menchoud*, as some have related, besides Money: *Blavet*, and other Places, fortified in *Bretagne* by the Duke of *Vendosme*, were dismantled, and his Government restor'd to him.

We shall not trouble our selves with the Decree made by the Parliament of *Paris* against *Suarez*, and the Bustle the Pope made about it; but proceed to shew, that the Duke of *Vendosme* refused to consent to the Treaty of *St. Menchoud*: But *Roan* himself had not Interest enough in the *Hugonot* Party to make them rise, as *Vendosme* imagined. *Roan* made an Essay to call a general Convocation of those of the Reformed at *Tonnes*: 'Tis not certainly known what his real Intentions were, in respect to the Prince of *Conde* and his discontented Party; but the wise *Du Plessis Mornay* prevented it. In the mean time, the Regent resolving to avoid War as much as might be, sent *Chevreaux* to *Vendosme* into *Bretagne*, in order to bring him to an Accommodation, which he could not accomplish till the Third Journey he made thither; but then the *Swiss* were received into *Blavet*, and the Duke was re-established in his Government by Letters Patents from the Queen. All this while *Conde* was uneasy, he would have engaged *Du Plessis* and the Reformed in his Interest, but failing of that, he desired him to prepare a Memorial of those Things that were necessary to be done in the Assembly of the States: Then he went to the Duke of *Roan*, to whom he made heavy Complaints of the *Mareschal De Bouillon*; but *Roan* remonstrated to the Prince, That he ought not to depend so much on the States of the Kingdom; and added, That the Queen would have more Authority there than he. The Prince far from being pleased, writ to the President *Jeannin*, to ac-

1614. quaint him that his Discourse with *Roan* only tended to hinder him from joining with *Vendosme*, a mean Artifice to excuse himself, and to expose one of the greatest and honestest Men of his Time. Enraged at the many Disappointments he met, he formed a Design to make himself Master of *Poitiers*; but failing of that, he retired in much Confusion to *Chateauroux* in *Berry*, and endeavoured all he could to insinuate into the Reformed, that the King and the Queen's Journey to *Poitou* and *Bretagne* foreboded no good to their Religion: But *Du Plessis* was still in the Gap, and waiting upon the Queen her self at *Tours*, remonstrated many excellent Things to her, for the Good of the Kingdom, and the Interest of the Reformed Religion in particular. After which the Court proceeding to *Poitiers*, and *Villeroy* having admonished *Roan* that the Queen was surprized he did not appear at Court, since she was so near to *St. Jean de Angeli*; he immediately went to pay his Respects to their Majesties, and was receiv'd very kindly. From hence the Court went to the Meeting of the States of *Bretagne* at *Nantes*, where all Things terminating to the Regent's Satisfaction, and quite contrary to *Vendosme's* Intentions, she return'd triumphantly to *Paris*, and was concern'd about the Affairs of *Cleve* and *Fuliers*, but more in the new Differences that did arise between *Spain* and *Savoy*, which the *French* endeavour'd to accommodate.

K. Lewis  
at Majority.

In the time that *Rambouillet* began his Negotiations in *Italy*, *Lewis XIII.* entred into the 14th Year of his Age, which was that of his Majority, conformable to the Edict of *Charles V.* and the first Thing he did appear'd to be an Act of Religion and Justice, and that was the Confirmation of the Edict of *Nantes* in all its Articles, which they would, as they said, inviolably keep and observe. He also confirm'd his Father's Edicts against Duels, and others against Swearing and Blasphemy. Next Morning, being the 2d of *October*, the King went to take his Seat of Justice in the Parliament of *Paris* with great Pomp and Splendor.

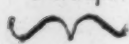
States of  
France  
last Meeting.

We shall proceed now to the Meeting of the States-General of *France*, wherein were made the last Efforts of dying Liberty; it was at first agreed they should meet



meet on the 25th of *August* at *Sens*, while the King was still in his Minority. But the Queen not pleased therewith, they were translated from thence to *Paris*, and there to sit on the 10th of *October*. The Spiritual House or Chamber consisted of 140 Members, the Chamber of the Nobility consisted of 132 Persons, and that of the Third State of 182 Deputies, all Officers of Justice, or concern'd in the Revenue. The Cardinal of *Joyeuse* was at the Head of the Clergy, the Baron of *Senecy* was President of the Chamber of the Nobility, and *Miron*, Provost of the Merchants of *Paris*, of that of the Third Estate. They were no sooner met, but several Pamphlets came out against the Queen, House of *Guise*, Ministers of State, Officers of the Revenue, and those that were entrusted with the King's Education, as also against the Governours of several Cities and Provinces, against the intolerable Oppressions of some of the Sovereign Courts, and lastly against the double Match with *Spain*. The Jesuits were not spared in them, but charged with divers Enormities; whereby the People being much hated, and *Conde* promising to stand by them, and get their Grievances redress'd, these Difficulties much embarrass'd the Queen's Cabinet-Council, who at last could find no better Expedient than to sow Divisions between the Three Houses: To compass this Design, they resolv'd the Clergy and Nobility should prepare some Articles of Reformation, and draw up some Regulations, which they were sure the People would not give their Consent to: They began with the Nobility, and engaged them to desire the Suppression of the Duty called *Paulette*, which made all Offices in Courts of Justice, and of the Finances and Revenues Hereditary upon paying a certain Sum Yearly to the King. This was a very good Plot; for the Third Estate consisting of such Officers, such a Proposal could not be very acceptable to them; however, finding themselves under a sort of Necessity to comply, they did so, without any more ado; but desired the Clergy and Nobility to concur with them in demanding Two other Things, which were the Lessening of the Taxes, and Suppressing of innumerable Pensions, which the King paid without any Necessity. Now this Reformation, tho' tending much

1614.



to the Disinterest of the Nobility, yet being as plausible as the Suppressing of the *Paulette*, they durst not openly reject it, but endeavour'd to put it off. Things being at this Pass, and the Third Estate still persisting in their Resolution not to concur with the other Two Houses about the taking off the Annual Duty, unless they would likewise concur with them in demanding the Abatement of the Tallies, and taking away the Pensions; the Clergy and Nobility petition'd the King, That he should supercede the said Annual Duty, till the States-General had more strictly enquired into that Affair, and to revoke certain Taxes relating to Salt, from which they themselves pretended to be free. The King gave them fair Words, and at the same time it was intimated to them, that he wished the Three Houses would draw up a general Account of their Grievances and Demands: On the other Hand, the Third Estate, pursuing the Steps of the Nobility and Clergy, petition'd the King to supercede the Levying of the Tallies, and paying of Pensions; and the Deputies that spoke on this Occasion reflecting on the Nobility, as having a great Share in the Profusions of the publick Treasure, it was highly resented, with which Divisions the Courtiers were not a little pleased.

It would be endless to enter upon every particular Project, invented by them for the Perplexing of one another; we shall but just mention the Singularity of the Clergy upon this Occasion, whom nothing less would serve than addressing the King to have the Council of *Trent* published; and to make it go down the better, they proposed it with this Restriction, *Without any Prejudice to the Rights of his Majesty, the Liberties of the Gallican Church, and the Privileges of Chapters, Monasteries and Commonalties.* But this and all their other Artifices would not take with the 3d State; yet they had better Success in the House of the Nobility, tho' they shewed at first great Averseness to consent to what was desired of them. On the other hand, the Court seemed very much pleased with the Compliance of the Clergy and Nobility; for besides what they had openly done to defeat the Designs of the 3d State, they drew an Article, to desire the King to conclude his Marriage with the *Infanta*, and that

that of his Sister with the Prince of *Spain*: But the Three States concurring to desire the King to erect a Court of Justice, consisting of Persons of their Number, to enquire into the ill Administration of the publick Revenue, was no small Mortification to the Queen Mother, who was afraid of being called to an Account now for the Money disbursed during her Regency, as well as the Farmers and other Managers of the Revenue. There was a pretty favourable Answer given first by the King, which was farther explained by his Mother, to this Proposal; and then the Chancellor *Sileri* acquainted them, that notwithstanding the King was not obliged to let his Subjects know the Particulars of the Administration of his Finances, yet he was pleased to lay before them the State of the Receipts and Expences; but this being looked upon as an Evasion, the Nobility pressed the other Houses to reiterate their Demands, and receiving the same Answer as before, the Nobility proposed to attend the King the Third time; but the Clergy refusing their Concurrence, they were brought to be content with the bare Reading in their Houses of I know not what Account of Receipts and Expences, which the Court thought fit to send them. The 3d State would have proceeded farther, but no great Good being to be expected on this Head, they on *Decemb. 15.* begun to prepare their Cahier, the Deputies of the City of *Paris*, and of the Government of the Isle of *France*, proposed to insert a very material Article therein for the Sovereign Power of the King, and the Security of his Royal Person, which was to this effect: 'That for preventing the Consequence of a pernicious Doctrine, which had been broached some Years since against Kings and Sovereign Powers establish'd by God, his Majesty should be desired to cause to be published in the Assembly of the States-General, as an inviolable and fundamental Law of the Kingdom; That the King being recognized Supreme in *France*, and holding his Authority from God alone, there was no Power upon Earth either Spiritual or Temporal, that hath Right to deprive him of his Kingdom, nor to dispense with, nor to absolve his Subjects from their Allegiance and Fidelity, they owed him for any Cause what-

Articles  
of the 3d  
Estate for  
the Sovereign  
Power of  
the King.

1614.

' whatsoever ; That all the Subjects of the Realm  
 ' should acknowledge this Law for sacred, true and  
 ' conformable to the Word of God, without any Di-  
 ' stinction, Equivocation or Limitation ; That all the  
 ' Deputies of the States-General, all the Magistrates  
 ' and Clergymen having Benefices, should be obliged  
 ' to take the Oath, before they were admitted to the  
 ' Possession of their Benefices and Dignities ; That  
 ' all Tutors, Regents, Doctors and Preachers, should  
 ' be obliged to defend the same, and that the contrary  
 ' Opinion, as well as that Doctrine, which held it  
 ' lawful to murder and depose Sovereign Princes,  
 ' and to rebel against them upon any Account what-  
 ' soever, should be declared false, impious, detestable,  
 ' and contrary to the Constitution of the *French Mo-*  
 ' *narchy*, which depended immediately upon God  
 ' alone ; That all Books teaching such wicked Do-  
 ' ctrine, should be looked upon as seditious and dam-  
 ' nable ; That all Foreigners who should presume to  
 ' defend it, should be adjudged Enemies to the  
 ' Crown ; That all the King's Subjects of whatever  
 ' Condition or Quality, who should embrace that  
 ' Doctrine, should be punished as Rebels, Infringers  
 ' of the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdom, and  
 ' guilty of High-Treason ; That if any Foreign Di-  
 ' vine, either Regular or Secular, should publish any  
 ' Book containing Propositions directly or indirectly,  
 ' contrary to this received Law as aforesaid ; Such  
 ' Ecclesiasticks or Religious that were of the same  
 ' Order in this Kingdom, should be obliged to con-  
 ' fute the Book of such their Brethren, without any  
 ' regard at all to the Person, but with all the Sinc-  
 ' rity and just Arguments they were able, upon Pain  
 ' of being punished as Favourers of the Enemies of  
 ' the State.

The Generality of the Members of the 3d State,  
 were for embracing this Article ; but the next Day  
 after the Passing of it, the Clergy made a great deal of  
 Noise, crying out, *All is undone, all is undone ; there*  
*are Raskals and Hereticks in the Assembly, that have con-*  
*spired the Ruine of our Religion* : And then bestirring  
 themselves very much, they, by assuring the Nobili-  
 ty, that they should insert nothing in their Cahier re-  
 lating to the Nobility, or the Third Estate, without

first



first acquainting them with it, the Expedient took 1614.  
with them; but the Third Estate stoutly insisting upon the Article, the Parliament of *Paris* at last interposed, and *Servin*, the King's Advocate-General, remonstrated on the 31st of *Decemb.* to the Parliament,

'That the King's Council, the Attorney and Solicitor  
'having certain Advice, that certain Persons had taken the Liberty to call into Question, and held for Problematical the following Maxims, which had been all along received in *France*, and were even born with the Crown, *viz.* That the King acknowledged no Superior in Temporal Things within his Kingdom, but God alone; and that no Power upon Earth had any Right to absolve his Majesty's Subjects from their Oath of Allegiance, and the Obedience they owed him, nor to suspend, deprive or depose him; and much less still to attempt, or cause any Attempt to be made by any Authority whatsoever, either publick or private, on the sacred Persons of Sovereign Princes; and at last he concluded with this Request, 'That the Court would be pleased to put a Stop to all farther Proceedings, and command that the Decrees formerly made in that Behalf might be revived and published anew in all Places within their Jurisdiction, that so the King's Subjects of all Ranks and Qualities might be confirm'd and strengthen'd in the said Maxims and Rules for the Security of his Royal Life, and the publick Peace and Tranquility, with strait Prohibitions to depart from them under the same Penalties as were prescribed in the precedent Decrees.

Decree of the Parliament of *Paris*, upon the Discrepance in the Assembly of the States-General.

Having brought the Proceedings of the Gallican Affairs of States to the Close of the Year, we shall now traverse *Italy*. the *Alps* into *Italy*, where Things were not right, especially between the *Spaniards* and Duke of *Savoy*: *France* seem'd only to concern herself no farther than a bare Mediation by the Marquess of *Couvre*; the *Venetians* pretended to little more; but the Governour of *Milan* insisting positively, That the Duke should disarm, and that within Six Days, the Treaty vanish'd. The King of *England*, by Sir *Dudley Charleton*, his Ambassador at *Venice*, shew'd himself very partial in *Charles's* Favour; the *Venetians* only comforted and exhorted him to an Agreement with the Duke of *Mantua*, and to

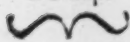
1614. to a Peace. The *Savoyards* received a Check upon the *Sesia*; the *Germans* in the *Spanish* Service burnt *Caresana* and *la Meta*, and the *Savoyards* in Revenge fired some Towns in the *Milanese*; but the *Spaniards* took *Oneglia*; and *Inoisia*, Governour of *Milan*, proud of Success, would not grant the Duke a Suspension of Arms for Forty Days, tho', after all, he could not before the End of the Year hinder Prince *Thomas* of *Savoy* from surprizing, burning and plundering *Candia* in the *Milanese*.

But to leave the Broils of *Italy*, and traverse the Countries into *Turkey*, there the Prime-Visier *Nassuf* had for some time been in mighty Esteem with the Sultan, but now his Decline and Ruin comes on with winged Haste: He was the Son of a *Greek* Priest near *Salonica*, and having been taken for Tribute by the *Turks*, he was raised in time, after some small Preferments, to be *Capi-Aga*, then *Basha* of *Aleppo*, after that Governour of *Mesopotamia*, and, and after the Death of *Murat* *Basha*, honour'd with the Dignity of Grand Visier; but now the Sultan, I know not out of what Freak, growing jealous of his Actions, resolved upon his Death, and having entrusted the same with the *Bostangi* *Basha*, the Manner of his Execution is variously reported, which we shall not run into, but only give it briefly, as related by one, that was then present at *Constantinople*. The Grand Seignior's Displeasure was not so secretly kept, but the Visier discover'd somewhat of it, and therefore endeavour'd by Presents, both to the *Sultana* and others, to pacifie him, tho' in the mean time he provided for his own Safety, by sending Horse-men daily over into *Asia*, with an Intention to pass thither himself, after he had gather'd a sufficient Strength; but it falling out on their Sabbath, that the Moon was ecclipsed, about Eight at Night, and that the Grand Seignior had formerly given out, he would about that Time go and visit a new Mosque, which was then in building, all the Streets thereupon were hung with *Arras*, and the Cry, according to Custom, was, *The King comes*, at which Noise the Visier, being then in his House, could not but go down to salute the Sultan as he pass'd by; but instead of him, he met with his *Bostangi* *Basha*, whom he had caused to be drest like himself, who

who being come before *Nassuf's* Door, and finding him stand there, he suddenly leapt to him, and told him, *It was the Sultan's Pleasure he should deliver up the Seal*; whereat, the *Visier* being amazed, he ask'd, *What the Sultan meant to do?* To whom the *Bostangi* reply'd, *That he knew not what the Prince's Pleasure was; but if he would not deliver it, he would return to him with that Message*; whereupon *Nassuf* drawing the Seal out of his Bosom, and delivering it, the *Bostangi* then shew'd him a Warrant for his Head, to which he presently submitted; and then Two *Jamoglanes* strangled him; his Head was immediately cut off, and carried to the Grand Seignior, while his Body was thrown into the Street, to be trampled on. It was thought the *Visier's* Death was procured by the wife *Cicala*, *Baisha* of *Babylon*, who had been deposed by *Nassuf* from his Government; and being a little before return'd to *Constantinople*, and *Nassuf* not allowing him any Access to the Grand Seignior, he thereupon wrote a Letter to the Sultan, wherein he accused him to have conspired with the *Persians* to kill him, and charged him with many capital Crimes: This Letter he sent by his Wife, who was the Grand Seignior's Sister; which tho' admitted into his Presence, she could not deliver into his Hands, because of *Nassuf's* Vigilancy; however, she leaving it in his Chamber, and the Grand Seignior finding and reading it, he was much incensed against the *Visier*, and never quiet till he had his Head. My Author saith, they found in his House Eight Bags of Gold, each containing 10000 *Chequins*: In whose Room *Mechmet* *Basha*, Admiral at Sea, was made Prime *Visier*, and so we leave him.

We have mention'd before the Sultan's intended Expedition into *Transylvania*, instead of which he writ Letters in a very imperious Style, to the Nobility and States of that Country, which were fixed in the Form of a Mandate throughout all *Transylvania* against the Emperor's Party, in Favour of *Bethlem*, who at the same time defeated some Troops of the Garrisons of *Lippa* and *Jenna*, insomuch, that the Governours of those Places were forced to send to *Vienna* for Aid; when a *Chiaux* arrived at *Lintz* with Letters from the Grand Seignior, importing, That his Imperial Majesty

1614.



It should take care to preserve the Twenty Years Peace between them, and complaining, That in the Emperor's Name they had seized on some Places in *Transylvania*, a Province always under the Sultan's Protection, whose Princes received it from his Hands, and whom he was bound to defend; That *Batori* had constrain'd the Sultan to aid *Bethlem*, whom, after the other's Death, he had peaceably vested in the Principality, and whom he expressly commanded to suffer not the least Enterprize upon his Territories: Then he exhorted the Emperor, if he desired the Continuance of the Peace, to command his People to make Restitution of the Places usurp'd, or to signify his Intention by the same *Chiaux*, to the End he might be satisfied. The Emperor answer'd him by a Letter, That the Business was of such Importance, that he desired to confer with the Princes and States of the Empire about it, and then he would acquaint him with his last Resolution; And, Lastly, That he should rest assured, that for his part he would not attempt any thing contrary to the Peace. In the mean time, there was a petty War in *Hungary*, the Incursions and Spoils beginning between the *Turks* and *Christians* afresh; for the *Turkish* Garrison of *Agria* took a great Number of Cattle from the *Christians*, but the *Heydukes* being advertised hereof, they pursued them so close, as to make them leave their Booty behind them; and the *Basha* of *Agria* coming to oppose the *Heydukes*, lost 200 Men in an Action that pass'd between them; after which the *Heydukes* ravaged the Country about *Zolnoc*, while 400 *Boothalers*, some *Turks*, some *Heydukes*, seiz'd upon *Balaster*, *Micolat* and *Filec*; but they were so ill used by the *Hungarians* at the Recovery of them, that most of them lost their Lives, and the rest were taken Prisoners.

In the mean time, while the States of *Austria*, *Stiria*, *Bobemia*, &c. were taken up about the Affairs of the present Conjunction, and more especially that the Protestants of *Germany* were very intent about accommodating the Difference about the Succession of *Cleve* and *Fuliers*, *Bethlem Gabor* labour'd to recover those Places which had been lost; but the Governours of *Borene*, *Genna* and *Arach*, being aware of it, they gave Notice of it to *Fargatsio*, the Emperor's Lieu-



I  
v  
b  
i  
n  
f  
v  
h  
h  
P  
P  
v  
T  
C  
E

c  
R  
th  
in  
A  
li  
p  
da  
to  
B  
ke  
th  
w  
th  
ou  
un  
an  
G  
di  
ha  
m  
he  
an  
fo  
w  
Cb  
in

s  
e  
n  
s  
s,  
d  
r  
e  
o  
:  
e  
e  
g-  
e  
a  
s  
at  
e  
t-  
n  
as  
s  
at  
es  
e,  
d  
ft  
;  
ut  
y-  
y  
of  
ne  
i-  
of  
at  
c-  
of  
er  
r-  
it,  
r's  
u-

Lie  
vin  
bro  
inv  
ma  
for  
ver  
he  
Ar  
ho  
pu  
pet  
van  
Th  
Ch  
Ex  
  
clu  
Re  
the  
in  
Af  
lin  
pic  
de  
to  
Be  
kan  
th  
wa  
tho  
ou  
un  
an  
Gu  
di  
ha  
ma  
he  
an  
for  
wl  
Cb  
int

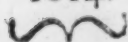
Lieutenant-General in Upper Hungary; but receiving no seasonable Supply, and Sander Basha having brought a Reinforcement of Troops to Bethlem, he invested Lippa on the 25th of October, and having made a large Breach, it serv'd at first for a Passage for 400 Men to escape, who left the Governour in a very ill Condition to defend the Place, and therefore he presently capitulated and surrender'd; Genna and Arach being deliver'd up by the same Capitulation; however, he Articled neither of them Three should be put into the Hands of the Turks, but they should perpetually remain united to the Principality of Transylvania, and to take all the Turks Interest in it away; That the States of the Country should pay the Charges of his Troops to Sander Basha upon his Expedition.

Lippa,  
Genna and  
Arach sur-  
render'd  
to Beth-  
lem.

We have already taken Notice of the Peace concluded between the Danes and Swedes, the principal Reason for which was, that the latter wanted to have their Hands free, in order to carry on their Interests in Muscovy, which, at that Time, began to have a good Aspect; for the North Part of that Empire was willing to have a Swedish Prince for their Sovereign, hoping by that Means to promote their Trade. James de la Gardie wrote very pressing Letters to the Swedes, to strike the Iron while it was hot, and not lose Time. Besides, Horn ask'd Leave to possess himself of Plefkaw; but that Enterprize was render'd ineffectual, through a very gross Mistake; for when an Officer was going to post a Petard at the Gate, he order'd those about him to retire, meaning they should step out of the Way, till the Petard went off, but they understood him as if he had order'd them to be gone, and so relinquish'd the Attack. In the mean time, Gustavus return'd a very civil Answer to the Naugardians, promising to give them a Visit as soon as he had settled his Affairs in Sweden. For 'tis to be remark'd, that Gustavus was doubtful at first, whether he should take the Empire of Muscovy to himself, and annex it to Sweden, or give it to his Brother. 'Twas for this Reason that he continued unresolv'd for a whole Year, and from time to time put off Prince Charles's Voyage; till at last la Gardie penetrating into the present Juncture and Constitution of Affairs,

A Nego-  
tiation for  
prefer-  
ring a  
Swedish  
Prince  
to the  
Throne of  
Muscovy.

1614.



perswaded Sweden to act vigorously in the Affair, as soon as the War with Denmark was put to an End: But then it was too late. On the other Hand, the *Muscovites* observing, that *Gustavus* in his Letters, spoke only of his own Voyage, and not of his Brothers, began to suspect, that he had a Mind to reduce the Empire of *Muscovy*, or, at least, a Part of it, under the Dominion of Sweden. Besides, they were convinced, that these Two States could not possibly be well govern'd by one Sovereign, and for that Reason intended to have a Sovereign of their own. And farther, they were very much disoblig'd by *Gustavus's* asking of them the Remainder of a Debt with too much Severity, and seeming to charge them with Ingratitude, at a Time, when they had offered their Crown to his Brother, and promised to support him; whereas, a softer and more gentle Usage might have been expected upon such an Occasion. But, after all, the People of *Naugardie* answer'd *Gustavus*, with all Respect and Submission, beseeching him to send his Brother *Charles* without any Delay, since his Majesty was so much diverted at Home, that he could not come to retrieve the Affairs of *Muscovy*, which were then in a low and perplex'd Condition. 'Tis certain, Prince *Charles* could never have had a more favourable Juncture: For not only the Impostor *Demetrius* was kill'd, but the *Poles* were then dispossest'd of the Castle of *Muscow*, and the Kingdom of *Poland* was in great Disorder, by reason of Three different Factions in their Army: But the Matter was, that the *Swedes* did not pursue the Business with the necessary Vigour, partly by reason of the heavy War with *Denmark*, and partly because a tender Mother scrupled to let her Son go to a turbulent and unruly People, especially considering that the *Muscovites* requir'd, that he should bring but very few Strangers with him, as if they had resolved before-hand to send him back, if he did not please them. 'Tis likewise to be observ'd, that *la Gardie* was envy'd by a great many, as being of Foreign Extraction; and the *Swedes*, who deriv'd their Extraction from ancient Families in the Country, did not like that he should bring about an Affair of such Importance; and for that Reason set a great many Intrigues on Foot to thwart his Design. Up-



on this Consideration, he protested to King *Gustavus*, 1614. That in case the Negotiation did not succeed, he was innocent. In the mean time, the *Swedish* Troops were not idle in *Muscovy*: For *Nicholas Slange* took the Town of *Noteburg* by Capitulation, and put a *Swedish* Garrison into it, in the Name of *D. Charles Philip*, as being the intended Gr. D. of *Muscovy*. The same Method was used with the other Places that the *Swedes* subdued, namely, *Coporia*, *Fama*, *Audgo* and *Ivanogoro*: So that the *Swedes* were not unprovided of Places of Strength.

In the mean while, tho' the War with *Denmark* was at an End, yet *Sweden* felt its fatal Consequences: For the *Danes* had demolish'd all the Forts that they gave up to the *Swedes*, and pillaged all the Cities that they march'd out of. Besides *Gustavus* was obliged to retain the Foreign Troops in his Service, by reason of the *Polonian* and *Muscovite* Wars; and upon that Head, his Subjects were much incommoded: For, notwithstanding that he laid no great Stress upon the Promises of the *Muscovites*, and was not fully satisfied with their particular Design upon Duke *Charles*; yet he hoped by that Means to have a Barrier to cover his Provinces, and to recover from the *Muscovites* the Money that was due for the Succours he had sent them. 'Tis certain, the Affairs of *Muscovy* were just then upon the Turn; for they expected, with the utmost Impatience, the Arrival of Duke *Charles*; and their Ambassadors made pressing Instances at the Court of *Sweden* upon that Subject. At last, when they perceived the troublesome Consequences of their Negligence, no Body would own that they were in the Fault. In Effect, most of the *Muscovites* relented in their Affection for *Sweden*, because they suspected, that *Gustavus* was more intent upon enlarging the Bounds of his Dominions, than procuring the Empire of *Muscovy* to his Brother, and relieving its distressed Estate. With this View, they held an Assembly at *Muscow*, in order to concert Measures for the Election of a new Sovereign. Thereupon the *Cossacks*, with most of the People, gave their Votes for *Michael Foederowitz Romanof*, a young Man of a considerable Family, but not descended of the Family of the Grand Dukes. However, the principal *Muscovites* opposed the Election, partly thro' Envy,

The  
*Swedes*  
negligent  
in the Af-  
fairs of  
*Muscovy*.

A new  
Duke of  
*Muscovy*  
elected.

1614. and partly because they imagined, that a Native of *Muscovy* was not capable to retrieve their Affairs from the confused Condition they were then in; and that a Foreign Support was necessary for that End, especially considering, that the *Poles* were making Preparations for a new Expedition into *Muscovy*. On the other Hand, the elected Prince would not accept of the Dignity, and for that Reason retired to a very remote private Place. After they had look'd for him a long time in vain, they at last found him, and with their Importunities prevail'd so far upon him, that he accepted the Crown. After that, the most considerable Persons of that Country voted for him, notwithstanding all the Opposition that *la Gardie* could make. Thus it was that Duke *Charles* lost the Empire of *Muscovy* by coming too late.

1615. Having done at present in these Parts, we resume the Thread of Affairs at Home. We left *England* last with the Dissolution of the Parliament, without giving the King any Supplies, and with his demanding a Benevolence thereupon with no very good Success: However, the King pursued his usual Diversions, and began now to cast his Eye upon a new Favourite, Mr. *George Villiers*, the youngest Son of Sir *George Villiers* of *Leicestershire*, by a second Venter, his Mother's Name being *Mary Beaumont* (not of the honourable Family of the *Beaumonts*, as some would have it, but a Servant in the Kitchen to Sir *George*, till his first Lady's Death, after which he marry'd her :) Her jointure upon his Decease amounted to no more than 200*l. per Annum*. To supply that Defect, for the better Education of her Children, she marry'd *Thomas Compton*, a rich Country-Gentleman, whereby she was enabled more especially to breed up *George* very well, who, after he had been some time in *France*, return'd Home; and the Matter was so contriv'd, that he was to appear with all the Advantages that Art and Nature could furnish him before the King at the Acting of a Play by the *Cambridge* Students, who was presently smitten with him; but being willing to receive none into Favour, but such as the Queen recommended, and she observing something in *Villiers* that she utterly disliked, Archbishop

Abbot,

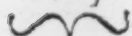
A new  
Favourite  
in Eng-  
land.

1615.

Abbot, who had undertaken the Matter, with no small Difficulty brought her to it, and that not without her telling him, *That he, among the rest, would live to repent it.* The King brought him near his Person by Degrees, that he might not expose him to the Malice of a jealous Competitor: But the Courtiers soon perceiving the King's Inclinations, began to adore the rising Star, and great Feuds were raised between the Two Favourites and their Friends; which the King being made acquainted with, and willing to reconcile the Clashings between his declining and rising Favourite, employ'd Sir *Humphry May* to tell the Earl of *Somerset*, That *Villers* was willing to be his Servant and Creature, and that if he accepted his offer, he should still remain a great Man, tho' not the only Favourite. The Earl seem'd averse to this Proposal. Then Sir *Humphry* told him in plain Terms, That he was sent by the King to advise it, and that *Villers* would wait upon him immediately, which he perform'd accordingly, saying, *My Lord, I desire to be your Servant and Creature, to receive my Court Preferment from your Favour, and your Lordship shall find me a very faithful Servant.* My Lord return'd this quick and smart Answer, *I will have none of your Service, and you shall have none of my Favour. I will break your Neck if I can, and of that be confident.* However, *Somerset* finding the Pulse of his Conscience always beating thick at the Remembrance of *Overbury's* Death, thought fit to preserve himself, by procuring his Majesty's Pardon, tho' there was nothing yet laid to his Charge, but *Imbezilling the Jewels of the Crown.* The King grants his Pardon in as ample Form as he could desire it, which was forthwith sent to the Broad-Seal; but the Queen having Notice of it, and using her Power with the Lord-Chancellor, put a Stop to the Seal, till the King should come to Town, who was then on his Progress in the *West*; and then what was mutter'd in Corners before, rung openly in the Streets; the Discovery is reported to be made various Ways, but the most probable is, that the Apothecary's Boy that gave Sir *Thomas Overbury* the Glyster, falling sick at *Flushing*, reveal'd the whole Matter, which Sir *Ralph Winwood*, Secretary of State, had a full Relation of by his Correspondent, and a small

*Somerset declines.*

1615.



The  
King's  
Imprecations.

Breach being made, he had Enemies enough to enter and overthrow him.

The King, then at *Reyston*, being inform'd of these Transactions, was strangely surpriz'd, and imprecated a Curse upon the Judges and their Posterities, if they did not endeavour to discover it; and if he should spare any that were guilty, he wish'd God's Curse might light upon him and his Posterity; so violent the King appear'd in the Prosecution of it. Now the Earl's Ears were continually beaten with fresh Reports, but he thought himself too firm in the King's Favour to be removed; therefore when the Lord Chief-Justice *Cook* sent for him, he went to the King with a Complaint, as thinking it a great Presumption; but the King made Answer, *Thou must go then; for if Cook sends for me, I must go too.* Others say, when he came to take his Leave of the King, he embraced and kiss'd him often, wishing him to make haste back, shew'd an extream Grief to be without him, but as soon as his Back was turn'd, said with a Smile, *Now the Dee'l gang with thee, I shall never see thy Face again.* His Countess was already apprehended, and committed to Custody in *Black-Fryars*. As soon as he came to *London*, he was seized on, and committed to the Charge of Doctor *Mountain*, Dean of *Westminster*, and then they went roundly on with the Business, and tryed, convicted and condemned all the Offenders.

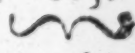
The Of-  
fenders  
executed.

*Wesson* was the first that suffered by the Hands of Justice, and being tempted at the Gallows to deny his former Confession, his Soul being prepared for Death, resisted the Temptation, and penitentially sealed the Truth of his Confession to his last Breath, and *Hollis*, *Wentworth* and *Lumsden*, who would have perswaded him to pervert Justice, were fined in the Star-Chamber for attempting it. Mrs. *Turner* follow'd next: She had been a Pattern of Pride and Lust, but dying very penitently, I shall not call to mind the Looseness of her Life. Sir *Jervaise Ellowis* was the Third, who suffered on *Tower-Hill*, and was much pitied, being drawn in by the E. of *Northampton*, to connive at what another acted. The Fourth that was executed was *Franklin*, a Fellow whose sordid Beha-

viour

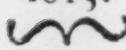


viour at his Death, agreeing with his pernicious Life, 1615.  
is scarce worth the mentioning.



The E. of *Somerset* and his Countess being arraigned and tryed, all the Letters that passed betwixt her and *Forman* were read in open Court, and the *Wax* and *Brazen Puppets* were produced to discover the Folly as well as the Baseness of her Actions: But the Earl and she being both condemn'd found the King's Mercy, and after some time of Imprisonment in the *Tower*, were set at Liberty, and lived in a private and almost obscure Condition: Shewing, *That no Content or Happiness can be truly established, but on the solid Foundation of Justice*: For that Love that made them break through all Opposition, either on her side declining to some new Object, as was commonly reported; or his inclining to Reluctancy, their Loves grew so weak that at last it pined quite away, and they lived long after in the same House as Strangers to one another. She died before him an infamous Death, her Disease being too nauseous for any modest Pen to mention; and of the Earl, I will say no more, but that he would have passed for a good Man, if he had not doated on so ill a Woman, whose Lewdness and her Kindred brought him to Ruin.

The Decree of the Parliament of *Paris*, about Allegiance to the King, and the Security of his Person, being the last Act of the preceding Year in *France*; in Conformity thereunto, Two Days after, they drew up and presented their Declaration, which the Clergy impugned with all their Might, as they did also the 3d State, against whom Cardinal *Peronne* appeared very active. In short, they seem'd wholly to gain their Point, but at the same time to give no manner of Umbrage as if they were disloyal to their Prince, they politickly drew up an Article against those who should maintain, that it was lawful in certain Cases to conspire against the Lives of Princes; and the Decree of the Council of *Constance*, whereby that pernicious Doctrine was condemn'd, was tack'd by them to the Article. They desired the Concurrence of the Nobility and 3d State hereunto; but on the 5th of *Jan.* the King called before him the Dispute about the Article of the 3d State above-mention'd, and suspended the Execution of the Arrest of the Par-

1615.  liament of *Paris*, in relation to the Allegiance due to their Prince. But how advantageous soever that Arrest was to the Clergy, yet they were not satisfied with it, which redoubled the Indignation of all good Men against them, neither would they rest till such time as having brought the Nobility to join with them, they made a new Remonstrance to the King for obtaining the Articles of the Third State to be suppressed, as also the *Paulette*: Nay, they pushed this Affair at length so far, that they got the King to order the said Articles to be struck out of the *Cahier General*, which was obeyed by most of the Deputies with great Regret. Pope *Paul V.* looking upon this Advantage gain'd by the Clergy and Nobility as the greatest Victory that ever the Holy See obtained over its Enemies; he was so well pleased therein, that he sent a Brief of Thanks to each of the Two Orders. In the mean Time the Clergy having prepared a Remonstrance, and an Article against Duelling, both the Nobility and the Third State concurred with them therein, which seemed to produce a good Harmony between them, but this was of no long Duration; for *Bonneval*, one of the Deputies of the Nobility, having caned *Chavaille* a Deputy of the Third State for the lower *Limosin*, Complaint was made of it to the King, who referring the same to the Cognizance of the Parliament, it bred ill Blood between the Houses: The Court hereupon thought it a favourable Juncture to break up the Assembly, which was the last they have had in *France*, and after all very little or nothing done to purpose by them.

States General  
broke up.

Affairs of  
*Italy.*

The Court being now rid of an Assembly they did not care for, they were involved in a new Perplexity by the new Differences arisen in *Italy*, between the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Savoy*, which were come even to an open Rupture; but recovering a better Temper in time, and the *French* King being informed King *Philip* was well enough enclined towards a Peace, and that the Duke of *Lerma* had made some Proposals pursuant thereunto, Orders were given to *Gueffier* immediately to go for *Piedmont*, and to tell *de Rambovillet*, that he should press the Duke of *Savoy* to accept of the Conditions the King of *Spain* would be pleased to comply with. The Duke at first shewed him-

himself very averſe to any Agreement ; but at length recollecting a better Temper, he gave a Promise in Writing under his Hand, whereby he engaged himſelf at the earneſt Deſire of his moſt Chriſtian Maſteſty, to accept the Conditions that *Silleri* had brought from *Madrid*, but at the ſame time he demanded Four Things of the *French* King, viz. That he would pardon all the *French* Men that had ſerved in the Troops of *Savoy*, notwithstanding the Prohibitions that had been made ; That he would procure the Re-eſtabliſhment of the Trade between the *Milaneſe*, and the Dominions of his Highneſs ; That he would command all the Governours of his Provinces in the Neighbourhood of *Savoy*, to ſend him Succour without expecting any farther Orders, in caſe the *Spaniards* ſhould not preſerve the Conditions propoſed in the Treaty ; And Laſtly, That the Duke ſhould be allow'd to keep up 5000 Men for the Security of his Frontiers, viz. 2000 *Swiſs*, and 3000 of his own Subjects. The *French* Court having readily agreed hereunto, and the Duke of *Savoy* having demanded the Guaranty of his *Britannick* Maſteſty, the Peace was at laſt ſigned June 21. and the *French* Ambaſſador engaged in his Maſter's Name, that he would take into his Protection the Perſon and Dominions of the Duke of *Savoy*, in caſe the *Spaniards* ſhould attack them either directly or indirectly ; that he would give him ſuch Relief, as ſhould be ſufficient for his Defence ; and that he would forthwith command the Mareſchal *Leſdeguieres*, and all the Governours of the Provinces adjoining to his Dominions, to ſend him ſome Troops, without ſending any farther Orders, if the *Spaniards* ſhould violate their Words : After the Duke had perform'd *Bona Fide* the Conditions of the Treaty, that Trade ſhould be re-eſtabliſhed between the *Swiſs*, the *Grifons*, the Duke's Subjects and the *Milaneſe*, on the ſame Foot as it was before ; and laſtly, That the *French* King ſhould pardon all his Subjects, that had been in the Duke's Service, contrary to his Maſteſty's Prohibition ; and that he ſhould reſtore to them his Favour, and their Eſtates and Dignities.

But to ſay no more of this Treaty, nor of the Diverſions of the *French* Court ; we ſhall here obſerve by the way, that about this time it was that *Luines* began

1615. *Luines* his Rife. gan to make his Fortune in *France*, and to insinuate himself into the King's Favour by his Skill in Falconry, wherein that Prince much delighted; he found also the Secret of making *d'Ancres* his Friend, and at last ruining him. On the other side, the Princes were still discontented, while the *Mareschal de Bouillon* endeavour'd to set the Parliament against the Court, and then to gain over the Reformed Party, among whom he had a pretty large Interest: The Parliament at last came to this Resolution, That seeing the Princes, the Dukes, Peers, and the other Officers of the Crown were Members of that Parliament, they might well invite them themselves to come and take their Places upon such important Occasion as that was; that those great Persons did not want particular Leave from the King for that Purpose: Did not their Birth or their Dignity give them a Right to sit in Parliament whenever they pleased? And a Decree being issued out accordingly on the 28th of *March*, that they should appear and take their Places, the Court was much alarmed, and therefore the King forbid the Prince of *Conde*, and the other Lords of the Party to go thither; and next Day the King's Officers in Parliament were commanded to Court, and severely reprimanded. *Servin* the Advocate-General wisely and generously defended the Proceedings of the Parliament, but with all just Deference to the Court, who for all this, forbid the Parliament to proceed any farther to put their Decree in Execution; and that the King's Will and Pleasure was, That his Council at Law should wait on him, to inform his Majesty how the Parliament had received his Orders. The Parliament weakly complied herewith, tho' *Bouillon* did not trouble himself much about it; but on the contrary, their Mortifications were conducing to the End he had propos'd to himself, of engaging them at last to break out; and in order to prepare the Minds of the People the better to receive the Complaints and Manifesto's, the Prince of *Conde*, and those of his Party, were contriving for raising the People against the Queen and her Favourite *Conchini*; a Motion was made, whether it would not be proper to beseech the King to give an Answer to the Parliament, and to acquaint them with his Will, according to his Promise:



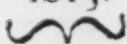


mise: This causing some new Alarms at Court, there was a great deal of Bustle about the Matter, and at length the Result of the whole was the King's forbidding the Parliament to make any Remonstrance concerning the Government of the Kingdom.

Now, in so great a Commotion of Minds at the Court a little before, in the Assembly of the States-General, in the Parliament, and amongst the People, the Queen-Mother endeavour'd to make herself sure of the Reform'd of *France*; and therefore, on the 12th of *March*, the King put out his Declaration, wherein he protested, That his Intentions had always been to maintain all his Subjects in a good Correspondence, and inviolably to observe what the late King and himself had granted to those of the Reform'd Religion; and commanded, that the Edicts, Declarations and private Articles made, should be religiously kept and maintain'd. In the mean time, the Parliament, besides some pretty sharp Remonstrances concerning the ill Administration of the Government, concluded them with intreating the King, according to their Decree made the 28th of *March*, That he would be pleased to permit them to invite the Princes, Peers of *France*, and Officers of the Crown to their Assembly; that so being acquainted with the Abuses of the Government, they might give a larger Information thereof to his Majesty. The Main of the Answer was return'd by the Queen-Mother, full of Heat and Passion, and not much better continued by the Chancellor *Sillery*; and the Conclusion was, That the King made in his Council a Decree for repealing that of the Parliament, enjoining them not to meddle any more for the future with State Affairs, unless when they should receive Orders from him to do so: And to the End that the Remembrance (as they would have it) of such Disobedience should be quite lost, his Majesty commanded that the Ordinance and the Remonstrances should be quite razed and torn out of the Records; nay, the Court began now to stand up so much for Absolute Will and Pleasure, that all the Arguments the Attorney and Advocates General who had their Seats in Parliament did use, could not exempt them from being the Bearers of the said Decree; and so at present we leave this perplext Matter.

Edict in  
favour of  
the Re-  
formed of  
*France*.

1615.



During these Contests with the Magistrates, there had been often mention made in the King's Council, of a Progress he was shortly to take into *Guyenne*, to meet the *Infanta* of *Spain*, who was to be brought to the Frontiers of the Kingdom, and to conduct thither the Lady *Elizabeth* of *France* affianced to the Prince of *Spain*. *Conde* and those of his Party did whatever they could to oppose it; but the other Interest prevailing, the Prince and his Followers withdrew from Court, after which abundance of Pamphlets flew about in favour of them. This made the Court look about them, and the Queen Mother perceiving by this time that her high Carriage towards the Parliament had brought her into the Snares her Enemies had laid for her, she began to labour now to find out some Expedients to content them: And indeed the Difference with the Parliament was adjusted, when they publish'd an Answer to the Marechal *Bouillon*'s Letter to President *Jeannin*, upon occasion of *Conde*'s withdrawing from Court, as forementioned; for they said therein with much Confidence, That their Majesties believed, that the Magistrates of the Parliament were too wise to defer any longer reconciling themselves to their King, who desired to own them as his faithful Subjects and good Servants: Those that flattered themselves they should make use of the Disgust and Succour of the Parliament as a specious Pretence to justify the Troubles they would fain stir up in the Kingdom, were willing with their Eyes open to deceive themselves: The King would be always equally supported both by his Magistrates and Military Officers, whenever they should have occasion to repulse the Efforts of Rebels, and preserve the Authority which God had put into his Hands. The Court was not so wholly taken up with quieting the Parliament, but that they were at the same Time contriving how they might gain over the Prince *Conde*, and get him to accompany the King in his Progress to *Guyenne*. *Villeroy*, Secretary of State, was sent to negotiate the Matter with him, first at *Creil* upon the *Oyse*; then at *Clermont*, from whence the Prince removing to *Coucy*, the Dukes of *Longueville* and *Mayn*, the Marechal de *Bouillon*, and Count of *St. Paul* went thither to him, as did also *Villeroy* and *Jeannin*, to see if they could come to any

Ac-

Accommodation: But Secretary *Ponchartrain*, coming thither the Second Day of the Conference, and carrying a Letter from the King to the Prince, wherein his Majesty plainly declared, that being resolved on his Progress for *Guyenne* the 1st of *August*, he had sent *Ponchartrain* to have a positive Answer whether the Prince would accompany him or not; *Villeroy*, as well as the Prince and his Party, were much surpriz'd at this Letter; to which the Prince answered, That he thought they had too much precipitated the King's Progress to *Guyenne*, before they had settled the Affairs of the State, and redressed the Abuses of the Government, according to the Remonstrances of the States General and the Parliament. Then he alledged, and this proceeded from the evil Counsel of some disaffected Men, and that he had too long postponed the rising openly against them, lest he should offend the Queen, who protected them; and concluded, that the same Persons continual abusing the Name and Authority of the King, to the subversion of the State, and weakening of the Kingdom, he thought himself obliged to declare openly to the King, that the Contrivers of those Disorders represented by the Parliament, were the Marechal d'*Ancre*, Chancellor *Sillery*, his Brother, *Bullion* and *Dole*: Wherefore he humbly intreated the King to make an Enquiry against them. The King hereupon, *July 20.* put out his Declaration against the Prince, while *Bouillon* on his part endeavoured to engage the Reformed on that side; but the wise *Du Pleffis Mornay* stood still in the Gap, to prevent those People from imbroiling themselves with the Court, tho' some Sermons of the Popish Clergy at this time might have been a Motive to incite them to it.

1615.  
French  
King's  
Letter to  
Conde,  
and the  
Prince's  
Answer.

Some few Days after the Publishing of the King's Declaration, the Prince dispatched a Gentleman with Letters to their Majesties, wherein he intreated them to give him leave to send to all the Parliaments, all the considerable Corporations in the Kingdom, and in a word, to all the Princes and States in Alliance with *France*, a Manifesto dated at *Coucy*, wherein he complained, that the Queen being too credulous, and prepossessed with evil Counsels, would not be prevailed upon by the several Remonstrances he made her. He

P. of Con-  
de's Mani-  
festo.

form'd

1615.

form'd a very strange Representation of the Management of Things in the Assembly of the States General, exclaimed much against the Clergy and the Marechal *d' Ancre*, and laid open the great Oppressions of the People : He highly extolled the Parliament, and to gain over the Reformed to his Interest, declared, that the Edicts of Pacification ought to be kept as the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdom, and made a very lively Representation of the just Grounds of Suspicion which had been given to the Reformed. Lastly, he declared in his own, and the Names of all his Party, that they were not consenting, and had no hand in all the pernicious Counsels made use of for the Administration of the Government, and that they thought themselves under an Obligation to expose their Lives and Fortunes, to bring off the King from Oppression, to preserve him from the Dangers where-with he was threatned, to cause the Edicts of Pacification to be maintained, to procure the Relief of the People, and to make Justice reign throughout his Dominions. The Prince presently dispersed his Manifesto into all Parts of the Kingdom, while the Court were busy in their Preparations to oppose him. *d' Ancre* was propos'd by some secret Enemies as a proper Persons to command the Army ; but upon better Thoughts *Espernon* and *Sillery* carried it for the Marechal *Bois-Dauphin*, which *d' Ancre* perceiving, he used all the Artifice he could to ruin both of them. In the mean while the King sets out on his Progress to *Guyenne* ; but they first seized and imprisoned the President *au Mortier, le Jay*, as suspected of being in the Interest of *Conde*.

Assembly  
of the Re-  
form'd.

On the other Hand, there was Leave given that an Assembly of the Reformed Churches should now be held at *Grenoble*, at which time *Bouillon* advis'd the Prince to write to the *Rochellers*, to desire them if possible to prevail with the Rest of the Reformed, and perswade them to follow their Example, and join with him for the Prosecuting his pious Intentions for the Safety of the Kingdom, and the Security of the Reformed Religion ; but the Duke of *Roan* having a much better Interest at *Rochel* than the Marechal, it was not very difficult for him to elude the other's Solicitations. The Prince sent also his Manifesto and

Let-



Letter to the Assembly at *Grenoble* for the same End, and with as little Apperance of Success : For *Frere* the King's Commissioner assisted by *Lesdeguieres*, crossed all his Intrigues, and brought the Assembly to send Deputies to the King, who made several Demands to him at *Tours*, where *du Plessis Mornay* also attended. The Court was indeed much puzzled, when their Articles concerning the better Government of the Kingdom was read : However, the Queen and the Ministers not thinking it fit to discover their Resentments, they promised them an Answer at *Poitiers*, where they arrived on the 4th of *September* ; and the Lady *Elizabeth* falling sick of the Small-Pox, they were obliged to continue in that City, till she was perfectly recovered. *Conde* did not or could not make use of that Opportunity for his Advantage ; but the Cardinal of *Foyeuse* dying at this time, and the Dukes of *Guise* and *Espernon* each of them demanding the Collation of the Benefices vacant by his Death for one of their Sons, this wrought some Inquietude at Court, and made the haughty *Espernon* very uneasy ; tho' he was yet more sensibly touched with another Mortification, which was, that his eldest Son the Count of *Candale* should now from some particular Disgusts declare himself against his Father, in favour of the Prince of *Conde's* Party, and publickly, tho' not over sincerely, embrace the Reformed Religion. The Assembly of the Reformed at *Grenoble* were likewise about this time induced to favour the Prince and his Interest, which *du Plessis Mornay* endeavoured all he could to resist, as foreseeing the bad Consequences of it to those of his Religion ; but whatever Motives the Queen now had, she seemed so little to regard the Demands of the Assembly, or the Interest of *Conde*, that she procured an Act to be drawn up on the 10th of *Sept.* at *Poitiers*, whereby the Prince and all his Adherents were declared Rebels, and guilty of High-Treason. There was some Opposition made in the Parliament of *Paris* against the Verifying of it, but the Court Slaves carried it. *Du Plessis* was all this while labouring at Court with no less Application and Diligence than he did at *Grenoble* : But all his Remonstrances not being able to bring the ill-advised Queen to give some Satisfaction to the Reformed, and answer their Memorials ;

1615. morials; and *Roan* being at this time disobligh'd by the Queen's refusing him the Reversion of the Government of *Poitou*, which the Duke of *Sully* his Father-in-Law was possess'd of, his Brother the Duke of *Soubize* and *Bordes Mercier* being secretly gained over by *Bouillon*, took the Opportunity to promote their Designs; insomuch, that *Roan* already upon the Turn, through the Sollicitations of his Brother, hearken'd to the Proposals of the Count of *St. Paul* of joining in with them to oppose the Conclusion of the Double Match: And hereupon he and *Bouillon*, tho' with different Prospects, so managed Things in respect to the Assembly at *Grenoble*, that all the Interest which *Lesdeguieres* did make could not hinder them from removing to *Nismes*; to which the Court politickly gave way, for want of a better Opportunity to prevent it. For the Prince of *Conde*, who was already powerful on the other side of the *Marn*, was making Preparations to pass the *Loire* also, and to advance towards *Poitou* and *Guyenne*, where *Roan* and *Soubize* design'd to join him with their Troops; the Prince immediately march'd towards *Paris* with about 5000 Foot and 2500 Horse, and rendezvous'd at *Noyon* in *Picardy*. It was believed *Bois-Dauphin*, who was much superior in Number, might easily have disperst the Prince's Army; but he continued encamped at *Dammartin*, while the *Parisians* upon the Prince's March, were frighted out of their Senses, for fear he would come up and attack their City. At *Meri*, upon the *Seine*, the Prince and his Followers being flush'd with the happy Beginning of their March, put forth a Declaration contrary to that given by the King at *Poitiers*, and against the Decree issued out by the Parliament of *Paris* pursuant thereunto: It wholly tended to justify himself and his Party, and laid all the Blame of his taking up Arms upon his Enemies.

Assembly  
remove to  
*Nismes*.

Prince of  
*Conde's*  
March  
and Decla-  
ration.

As soon as the Prince's Army had pass'd the *Seine*, they advanced towards *Sens*, which the Prince design'd to have surpriz'd; yet *Bois-Dauphin* not only broke all his Measures, but the Duke of *Pincy-Luxemburg* having joined the Prince a little before with 300 Horse, yet refusing to accept of the Quarters assign'd him by *Bouillon*, who was Commander in Chief next

to the Prince, *Bois-Dauphin* had the Opportunity to take him and all his Men Prisoners. The Two Armies were so near one another, that every Body expected a Battel: but *Bois-Dauphin* lost the best Opportunity he could have wish'd for, he having better Troops, and much superior in Number to the Enemy: So that *Bouillon* being deliver'd from so great a Danger, pass'd the *Loire* with great Diligence; after which being join'd by 600 Germans, the Prince march'd with all possible Diligence till he arriv'd on the Frontiers of *Touraine* and *Poitou*.

On the other Hand, the brave *Roan* was nothing near so fortunate as *Bouillon*; for at his Arrival in *Guyenne* he understood, that the Count of *St. Paul*, and the Roman Catholick Nobility of his Party, had made their Treaty with the Court; which unexpected Turn, though it disappointed *Roan* and his Friends, yet they did not lose their Courage: However, all that the *Marquess de la Force*, and other considerable Protestants, could do, could not get above 2000 Men together. In the meantime, the Court being happily arriv'd at *Bordeaux*, were still very uneasie upon the Account of *Roan's* being thus in Arms; wherefore they sent an Ensign to him and his Party at *Tours*, to know the Reason why they had taken up Arms; to whom at length they return'd this Answer in Writing, *They have denied Satisfaction to our General Assembly: The Remonstrances of the Prince of Conde and the Parliament of Paris have been reject'd with Scorn; They give out every where, even in their Sermons, that the double Match with Spain has been concluded with a Design to destroy the Protestants.* This done, *Roan* advanced and possess'd himself of *Leitoure*, the chief Town in the County of *Armagnac*, and some other Places in *Guyenne*, while the Courts of France and Spain agreed up on the Celebration of the Two Marriages on one and the same Day, which was October the 18th, one at *Bordeaux* in *Guyenne*, and the other at *Burgos* in *Castile*. On the other Hand, notwithstanding the Army of the Prince of *Conde* was in a very poor Condition when he march'd into *Poitou*, yet the Neighbourhood and various Motions of his Highness did not a little disturb the Joy which the Consummation of the Marriage gave to the Queen.

1615.

Prote-  
stants de-  
clare for  
Conde.

Treaty  
between  
Conde and  
the Re-  
formed.

Mother; and the Uneasiness of the Court still more encreased by the Advice they received, that the Duke *de la Trimouille*; but especially *Soubize*, *Roan's* Brother, had declared for the Prince, who was now received into *St. J. d'Angeli*: *Rechel* embraced his Interest, and the D. of *Sully* did the same, after a long Negotiation. The Count of *Candale* seem'd to act very sincerely in favour of the Prince at *Nismes*; and, notwithstanding all the Opposition made by *Chatillon*, *Lesdeguieres* and *Du Plessis Mornay's* Friends, he brought the Reformed over, and had the Subtilty to get himself chosen their General in the *Cevennes*. Then the Reformed proceeded to a Treaty of Union between themselves and the Prince, which being much solicited by the Duke of *Roan*, that he might not be left at the Discretion of the *Marschal de Bouillon*, it was at last concluded at the Camp at *Sanzai*, in *Poitou*, Nov. 27. and the principal Articles of it were, To endeavour jointly the Safety of the King's Person, and the Preservation of his Authority, according to the Project contain'd in the famous Article of the Third Estate; To oppose the Publishing of the Council of *Trent*; To prevent the mischievous Consequences of the double Marriage with *Spain*; To insist upon the Establishment of a good Council; To advise his Majesty to procure an exact Observance of the Edict of *Nantes*, and that the Reformed might be maintain'd in the Possession of all the Rights and Privileges that had been granted them by the late King. Both Parties likewise obliged themselves to stand inseparably united, not to quit their Arms till the Conditions agreed on were perform'd; And, Lastly, Not to make any Treaty of Peace without mutual Consent. However, this Treaty with the Prince caused a great Scandal in the Protestant Churches, and elsewhere, and so much the more, because the King had, but a few Days before, issued out a Declaration, to assure his Protestant Subjects of the firm Resolutions he had to maintain the Edicts of Pacification, and to take away all manner of Jealousies from them upon Account of the double Match with *Spain*; And, Lastly, To invite those that had sided with the Prince to return to their Duty. But this would not now do.

It



It was not long after these Transactions, that *Cesar*, Duke of *Vendosme*, declared publicly for the Prince, and gave out, That he had arm'd, in Conjunction with them, for revenging the Death of the late King his Father, for which he would venture his All. The Court on their Side removed *Bois-Dauphin* from his Command, and *Guise* being made Lieutenant-General, the Queen-Mother set her Engines now at Work, to see if she could divide the Prince and his Party, and began with *Mayn* and *Bouillon*, who had the greatest Interest amongst the Malecontents. In the mean time, the King of *England*, by his Ambassador *Edmunds*, made a seasonable Offer of his Mediation for adjusting those Differences, which he was afraid would break out into a Civil War; and we shall conclude the Year in respect to the Affairs of this Country with the good Disposition of both Parties towards it.

The Affairs of *Germany* are not so considerable, as to require us to make any long Stay there. The Differences already mention'd being not compos'd in the Dyets held at *Ratisbonne* and *Lintz*, there was another assembled at *Nuremberg*, to take new Measures; and there it was resolv'd by the Protestants especially, to have Recourse to the El. of *Saxony*, about *Cleve* and *Juliers*, who politickly told them, in order to get both the *Spaniards* and *Dutch* out of those Places, That if the latter were perswaded to retire, the former would do so likewise; but this Contrivance meeting with no Success, we'll leave it, and pass towards the East, from whence a Meteor appearing about this Time, made Sultan *Achmet* at *Constantinople* and his Empire uneasy for a while, and of which take these Particulars.

There came a Person out of *Asia* into *Europe*, who The Sto-  
fied himself the Son of *Mahomet* III. and the Brother ry of *Ja-*  
of this Emperor, alledging, that his Father by Four *caia*.  
Women had as many Sons, viz. *Mustapha*, who was  
strangled; *Jacai*, who was himself; Sultan *Ach-*  
*met* and *Osman*. To look back a little into his Life,  
they tell us, his Mother's Name was *Helen*, and a  
*Christian*, who while at *Magnetia*, for fear of his be-  
ing murder'd, gave out, that *Jacai* was dead of the  
Small-Pox; to corroborate which, she mournfully fol-  
low'd another that died of the same Distemper, to the

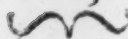
1615.

Grave: She, with *Astan Mehemet*, a faithful Eunuch, came over with the Child to *Theffalonica*, and communicating his Quality, and her own Religion, to the Archbishop of that Place, he was bred up under the Abbot of *St. Michael*, and there became a *Christian*; and then leaving the Monastery, in Company with the Eunuch, pass'd up and down *Greece* in the Habit of a Religious *Dervise*, and then went to *Scopia*, where hearing of his Father *Mahomet III.* his Death, and that his elder Brother *Mustapha* (for it seems there was another *Mustapha*, the Son of this *Helen*) had been before strangled by his Order, he continued irresolute for a while; but then, by the Eunuch's Advice, went to the Son of *Peri Basha*, who was up in Rebellion against *Achmet*, and quickly found himself obey'd by an Army that was ready to fight for him; for the *Testerdar* being sent against the Rebel by the Grand Seignior, with 7000 Horse and 3000 Foot, was upon the Banks of the *Bardate* ready to give him Battle: There was a sharp Engagement between them; but the Troops of *Peri* were at last defeated and *Jacaia* being wounded in Four Places, was forced to save himself on the other Side of the River, where wandring up and down in the Fields, he found Relief with a poor Peasant, and soon after with a Neighbouring Abbot, who entertain'd him as one of the *Testerdar's* Pages, as he gave himself out to be. His Wounds being cured, he return'd again to *Greece*, and by the Advice of his Mother and the Eunuch, concluded to send to *Constantinople* to the *Vilier's* *Dervise*, then at ill Terms with Sultan *Achmet*, to sound his Disposition, and endeavour to gain him to his Party. The Eunuch was the Agent, who so far engaged the *Dervise*, that they conspir'd to kill *Achmet*, and set *Jacaia* upon the Throne. Hereupon they resolve to go to *Constantinople*; but when they were ready to execute their Design, the *Dervise* died by some Means or another, and *Jacaia* wandred into *Wallachia* and *Moldavia*, from whence he got into *Poland*, and afterwards to the Emperor's Court to *Prague*, where finding nothing but fair Words, he went to *Florence*, and from thence to *Naples*, *Milan* and *Rome*: Last of all he came into *France*, and lived there under the Protection and by the Liberality of

of the Duke of Nevers, where he died. I know not, but tho' many suspected him for an Impostor, yet those that knew him have acknowledged, that by all the careful Observations they made of his Carriage and Actions, they always noted in him a Mind born to great Matters. But, to say no more of the unfortunate *Jacala*; as we noted before, that *Stephen*, the pretended Son of *Aaron*, was by the *Turks* constituted Vayvod of *Moldavia*; we are now to observe, that proving to be a great Tyrant, and, amongst other Mischiefs, endeavouring to root out all the Nobility of the Country, they resolved to revolt against him, and to that End invited Prince *Alexander*, the Son of Prince *Jeremy*, from whom they had received such good Usage, to come into *Moldavia*, and make Head against him; he quickly took the Fort of *Cochin*, his *Cossacks* overthrew a Body of *Tartars*, and *Stephen*, after several Defeats, being forced to flee, *Alexander* was proclaim'd Prince of *Moldavia*, who at the same time knowing it was no less to preserve than to acquire, by the Advice of the Nobility, resolved to send an Ambassie to the *Port*, to let the Grand Seignior know, He never had any Intent to take up Arms against him, but that he had been invited by the *Boyars* to relieve them from the unspeakable Cruelties of *Stephen*: They were also to let the Sultan know, That when he advanced *Stephen*, it was upon the false Suggestion of his being the Son of a Prince of *Moldavia*; That his Predecessor had promised the deceased Father of Prince *Alexander*, and to Prince *Simon*, his Uncle, that after his Death his Sons should succeed him; and that, if need requir'd, he would give Prince *Bogdan*, his Brother, as an Hostage to the Sultan for the Tribute he would pay him during the first Year. But the Prince's Ambassadors hoping to go by the Way of *Buda* towards *Constantinople*, the *Basha* of that Place, who was *Stephen*'s Friend, first imprison'd them, afterwards sent them to *Stephen*, then at *Braille*, who one Night after Supper cut off their Heads, and then threw their Bodies into the *Danube*: Then receiving 4000 Men from *Mickma*, Prince of *Wallachia*, he gather'd together the Relicts of his Army, and being willing to try his Fortune another time, received a great Over-

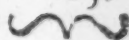
*Stephen*  
routed,  
and *Alex-*  
*ander*  
made  
Prince of  
*Moldavia*-

1615.



throw from Prince *Alexander*, who hearing that *Michna* and *Ibrahim* with an Army of 40000 *Turks*, *Tartars* and *Wallachians*, was coming to take *Stephen's* Part against him, he dispatched Ambassadors away to *Michna*, to know his Intentions and to discover the Truth of that Report, but *Michna* referring them to the *Basha*, he presently sent them to Prison, tho' after the *Basha's* Departure towards *Constantinople*, the Prince immediately dispatched Ambassadors to *Alexander*, to excuse the Fact, that he had no Design to invade him, unless forced to it by the Sultan; but for delivering up of *Stephen* desired to be excused in that. *Alexander* in the mean time, deeming it not prudent to be over secure, sent a Spy to *Wallachia* to observe *Michna's* Actions, by whom he understood, that one *Skinder Basha* was come thither with a great Army, and that *Stephen* was there likewise, who press'd them continually to enter into *Moldavia*; and to begin the War, he surpriz'd the Town of *Beralde*; but *Alexander* dispatching some Forces thither, quickly recover'd it; and not only so, but Prince *Coresci* being willing to secure *Vasseloy*, and marching thither with 2500 choice Horse, the *Basha* sent his Son, a Youth, under the Direction of an old *Turk* of great Experience, with 7000 Men against him. The Prince being advertised of this, and knowing they were to pass a Wooden Bridge over a River running by the Town, he placed his Men so, as the Enemy could hardly discover them: When some of the *Turks* had passed the Bridge, Two Squadrons sallied out from the Town, and charged them so furiously, that they were in a manner all cut off, and amongst them their chief Commander, while the rest hearing the Alarm, durst not advance, but speedily retreated, being pursued by the Prince for Four Leagues, he killing or taking Prisoners all he found by the Way; and among the Last one who was said to be the *Basha's* near Kinsman, whom Prince *Alexander* not only courteously entertain'd, but furnish'd him with an Horse, and sent him back to the *Basha* under a good Convoy, and withal a Letter, intreating him not to favour *Stephen* any longer, and promising, if the Grand Seignior would let him peaceably enjoy *Moldavia*, he would be most faithful to him, and pay him the





accustom'd yearly Tribute: But the *Basha* making no Account of it, and 800 of *Prince Alexander's* Horse being massacred for their Insolencies by their Landlord at *Ticouth*, with other Apprehensions and Discouragements, he thought it best towards the latter End of the Year to retire to the strong Fortress of *Cochin*, and the *Basha* being advertised of it, he march'd with *Mitchna* and *Stephen* towards *Yas*, but the Weather proving extremely cold, they were forced to halt till it grew warmer.

In the mean time, while the Affairs of *Muscovy* were still in great Confusion, the Slowness of the *Swedish* Duke *Charles* had put them last Year upon the Choise of a new Duke from among themselves, upon which great *Change de la Gardie* advis'd King *Gustavus Adolphus*, to accommodate Matters with the *Poles*, possess himself of the North part of *Muscovy*, and to make use of *Colmogored*, as a necessary Instrument for bringing his Designs to bear. But *Gustavus* was so much diverted by the Business of *Elfsbourg*, which he meant to wrest out of the *Danish* Hands; that he had not time to carry on an Affair of such Importance with the Vigour and Diligence that was requisite. In the mean time, *James de la Gardie* overperswaded the Inhabitants of *Naugarde*, to take a new Oath to *Prince Charles*, and in regard the *Swedes*, then in *Muscovy*, were 1000 Men fewer than before, He sent *Danite Hebron* to *Germany*, to raise 1000 Foot, to which he joyn'd 200 *French*, and with that Body reinforc'd the Garrison of *Naugarde*. Soon after, *Gustavus* sent him strong Succours from *Sweden*; and *Charles* arriving at *Wibourg*, accompanied by the King's Commissioners, Presently the Deputies of *Naugarde* came to congratulate the young Prince's Arrival, and importun'd him with all imaginable vigour, to repair immediately to *Naugarde*; but the *Swedish* Commissioners would not consent to it, alledging, that all the other Cities of the Empire of *Muscovy* ought to send Deputies, to signify their being satisfied with the Election they had made; and that they should first concert the necessary Measures for the Regulation of the State. But the *Muscovites* persisted in their former Resolves, and requir'd, that *Prince Charles* should shew himself at *Naugarde*, which

D. Charles  
his Arri-  
val in  
Muscovy.

1615. had formerly been a separate State from the rest of *Muscovy*, or, at least, repair to *Ivanograd*, to shew that he began to take possession of the Empire. But, after all, the *Swedes* would not depart from their precise Order, and Instructions given them by *Gustavus*: Tho' the Deputies of the Two Nations, had several Contests upon the Matter: yet the *Swedes* had so much influence over the *Muscovites*, that they perswaded them to renew their Oath of Fidelity to Prince *Charles* with the Sign of the Cross. After which, they withdrew, and talk'd no more of Accommodating Matters; Tho' *Gustavus* had given positive Instructions to his Deputies, to possess themselves immediately of *Nau-garde*, and all the Countries pertaining to it, in case the *Muscovites* did not voluntarily receive Prince *Charles* for their Sovereign; yet *la Gardie* thought it too precipitant an enterprize, especially considering that they were not furnish'd with necessary Means for putting it in Execution: Besides, that the *Muscovites* coming to know their Design, would certainly fall upon the *Swedes*, and it would be very improper for the *Swedes* to leave behind them the Towns of *Angdo*, and *Tephen*, which had revolted. They attack'd these Towns, but retir'd with great loss. On the other side, *Michael Foederowitx*, being chosen Grand Duke, as aforesaid, committed several Acts of Hostility upon the *Swedes* in the Province of *Naugarde*. Thus it was, that the *Swedes* having conceiv'd great Hopes of the Friendship and Alliance of the *Muscovites*, engag'd in a Bloody War with them, by virtue of their Negligence in slighting the favourable Opportunity that was offer'd them.

Some time after, the *Poles* remarking, that *Gustavus's* Affairs were in a better Condition and that he was free for the *Danish* War, began to be apprehensive, that he would attack them in the time of their Commotions. Upon this apprehension, they Solicited *John Sigismund*, Duke of *Brandenburg* to mediate an Accommodation with *Sweden*. Accordingly that Prince sent Letters to the *Swedish* Deputies at *Revel*, offering his Mediation, and setting forth, that they would oblige him mightily, if they would represent the Affair favourably to the States of *Sweden*: For it was with these that the Negotiation was to be carried on, since  
King

1615.

King *Sigismund*, in his Credentials, would not give *Gustavus* the Title of King of *Sweden*. But the *Poles* knowing, that *Gustavus* would never consent to a Treaty in the Name of the States of *Sweden*, without including himself, found out an Expedient, viz. That the Generals of the Two Nations should have an Interview to treat of a Suspension of Arms; and that their Resolutions should be ratified on both Sides. Accordingly the *Polish* General in *Muscovy* wrote to *la Gardie*: And on the other Hand, *Farensbach*, the *Polish* General in *Livonia*, acquainted *Oxenstiern*, Governour of *Revel*, that he had Orders from the Court of *Poland* to conclude a Truce with him for Three Years. Upon which the Deputies on both Sides met at *Silnis*, just by *Derpt*, and there prolong'd the Truce till *Michaelmas*. but, after all, there being little to be expected from a Truce that was not confirm'd and ratify'd by either of the Kings, and *Sigismund* finding a Peace with *Sweden*, or, at least, a firm Truce, absolutely necessary for the Good of his States, he once more sollicitated the Elector of *Brandenburg* to offer his Mediation to the *Swedes*, to bring his Design to bear. He likewise sollicitated *James*, K. of *England*, and the States-General of the *United-Provinces*, to interpose their Interest in that Affair. And the Elector sent the same Letters to *Sweden* to be communicated to *Gustavus* and the Senate. But *England* and *Holland* had not so much the Interest of *Poland* in View, as the Danger the Protestants of *Germany* were in, who would receive a considerable Relief in *Sweden*, when it came to an Accommodation with *Poland*, and had its Hands free.

The Generals treat of a Suspension of Arms.

*Gustavus* made as if he inclin'd to comply with their Proposals and Sollicitations, provided it should not be prejudicial to his Royal Dignity, or to his lawful Title, for continuing in the Possession of *Sweden*. In the mean time, the Resolutions concerted by the Generals were ratified by the Two Kings, and held as inviolable, bating that *Gustavus* would not suffer *la Gardie* to join with the *Poles*, by acting in Concert with them against the *Muscovites*, for fear of irritating them. This done, the Deputies prolong'd the Truce for Two Years, i. e. to the 20th of *Jan.* 1617. and this Resolve was confirm'd and ratified by

The Truce prolong'd between *Sweden* and *Poland*.

1615. the Two Kings. Besides, the Diversions which *Gustavus* had Abroad, he was much perplex'd at Home, till he settled the States of his Kingdom by good Laws and wholsome Edicts. At the Assembly of the States call'd at *Oerebro*, he reduced into good Order all the Procedures with Reference to the Affairs of Commerce, the Duties of Entry and Export, the Equipage of the Army, and a great many other Things, which are equally useful and necessary to the Good and Prosperity of a State. So that, indeed, the *Swedes* were indebted to this King for the best Regulations their Country can boast of.

1616. Having done once more in these Parts, let us return again to *England*, from whence we first set out. The Lady *Arabella Stewart* now dying in the Tower, it set Mens Tongues and Fears at Work, that she was dispatched by the same Method as *Overbury*. She was a Daughter of *Charles Stewart*, younger Brother to King *James's* Father by *Elizabeth Cavendish*, and marry'd to Sir *William Seymour*, Son to the Lord *Beauchamp*, and Grandson to *Edward*, Earl of *Hertford*, both at some Distance ally'd to the Crown, which, indeed, was the Occasion of all her Troubles.

We have already taken Notice, that in Prince *Henry's* Life-time there had been some Overtures of a Marriage between him and a Daughter of *France*; the same was now aim'd at for Prince *Charles*, and for that End the Lord *Hays*, a Man wholly addicted to fine Cloaths, Courtship and Gallantry, was sent Ambassador into *France*, attended with a great Train of young Noblemen, and other Courtiers; and the Day of Audience being appointed, all the Argument and Dispute was between the Lord Ambassador and his gallant Retinue, in what manner they should go to Court; at length it was agreed for the Foot-Cloth; but this Ambassie came to nothing.

Great Waverings were now discover'd in Mens Minds in point of Religion; some went over to the Church of *Rome*, others embraced our Communion, the most considerable of whom was the Archbishop of *Spalato*, a Man, tho' old, corpulent, and unfit for Travel, came into *England*, where he preached and

wrote



1616.

wrote against the Church of *Rome*, and extoll'd the Protestant Religion, till he came to be Dean of *Wind-  
sor* and Master of the *Savoy*, which he enjoy'd some Years; but then, whether out of a changeable Humour, or that he was in Expectation of greater Preferment at Home, he return'd to *Rome*, where he renounced and reproached the Protestant Religion: But all he could do to please them had no Effect; for the Inquisition laying hold of him, he died in Prison, and after his Death they burnt his Body for a Heretick.

In the mean time, the States of *Holland* having now enjoy'd Seven of the Twelve Years Truce formerly mention'd, had vastly enlarg'd their Trade, not only in *Europe* and *Africa*, but in the *East-Indies* and *Turkey*; but they could never be esteem'd High and Mighty as long as the *English* possess'd the *Brill*, *Rammekins* and *Flushing*, the Keys of the *Maes*, *Rhine* and *Scheld*. They owed *England* at this time at least 6000000 *l.* but how to get rid of this Debt, and the Cautionary Towns into their own Hands, was now the Game they had to play. *Barneveldt*, Pensionary of *Holland*, and a Man of no small Reach, observing the King's Necessities, and the no good Terms he was at with his Subjects since the Dissolution of the last Parliament, advis'd the States not to pay the *English* Garrisons in those Towns, tho' expressly contrary to the Agreement made with Queen *Elizabeth* in 1598. Upon Complaint hereof, the King at first began to talk high, and would make them feel the Effects of his Resentments; but upon a due Consideration of the Badness of his Affairs, it was agreed to enter into a Treaty with the *Dutch*, about the giving up of those Towns, and his Majesty was easily brought to accept of 2480000 *l.* in full Satisfaction for the whole Debt, which was scarce Twelve Pence in the Pound; and so those Towns were put into the Possession of the States. tho' the King got not all the Money; for the Lord-Treasurer *Suffolk* kept back so much of it, that he was afterwards fined 30000 *l.* for it in the Star-Chamber, and had not come off so, if the Lord Chancellor had not been his Friend: As for the Soldiers, the King being *Rex Pacificus*, they might go now where they pleased.

All

1616. All the Care the Favourites had, was how to share the Money among themselves, of whom, you may be sure, *Villiers*, the new Favourite, now made Baron of *Waddon* and Viscount *Villiers*, had not the least; nay, so great Power had he already obtain'd, that upon the Lord Chief-Justice *Coke's* refusing to admit a Clerk of his Nomination into the Green-Wax-Office, in Prejudice of his own Right, he was put out, and Sir *Edward Montague* put into his Place.

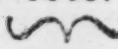
Fr. King's  
Letter to  
*Conde*.

We left *France* last with some Account of its Civil Dissentions, the Mediation of the King of *England*, and the Disposition of both Parties to an Accommodation, and the first of this Year the King answered *Conde's* Letter (already mention'd) and declared, That both himself and the Queen, his Mother, were always inclin'd to reform the Council, and that their Majesties would have had a Regard to the Remonstrances of the Parliament, and the Memorials of the States-General, had they not been prevented by the over-hasty Retirement of the Prince. Then he concluded his Letter with some Testimonies of his good Intentions for giving Content to his Subjects, and withal agreed to have a Conference with the Prince by some Persons his Majesty should be pleas'd to appoint for that Purpose. The Prince did not fail to acquaint the Assembly at *Nismes* with these Paces, who thereupon agreed upon some Articles that were presented to the King in the Name of the Prince and of the Assembly, and unanimously demanded, That the Preliminaries of the Conference might be agreed upon. Herein the King was most humbly intreated to grant Peace to his Subjects, and to give Leave to the Prince and Deputies of the Assembly to enter jointly into a Conference with such Persons as the King should appoint; to deliver his Brief for transferring the Assembly to some other Place nearer the Court, and consent, that the *English* Ambassador should be present as a Witness on both Sides of the Transactions of this Negotiation. The Prince also would have the Countess of *Soissons* and Dutches of *Longueville* present, desired to be informed of the Place and Persons the King should appoint, and lastly intreated him to declare what should become of the Two Armies till the Negotiations

gotiation was concluded. The Second Article of the Demands met with great Difficulties ; for the King not owning the Assembly at *Nismes* to be legal, would not receive their Letter, nor hearken to their Deputies: But *Thianges* the Prince's Envoy insisting stiffly upon it, the Court was obliged to find out this Expedient ; That the King should deal with those of *Nismes* as with Persons that were come to Court of their own accord by themselves, and that he should not own them for a General Assembly of the Reformed Churches of *France*. This done, it was agreed the Conference should be opened on the 10th of *February* at *Loudun*, and that the Deputies of *Nismes* should be admitted to it ; and in order to the better managing of Affairs, the King then published a Suspension of Arms till the first Day of *March*. In the mean time, the King arrived at *Tours* towards the End of *January*, with a Design to continue there to see the event of the Conference. Here it was that the Queen Mother was in great danger of losing her Life, by an extraordinary Accident, of the Floor of the Room wherein she was sinking on a sudden ; but her Elbow-Chair standing by chance upon a Beam that stood fast, she passed over her Bed, and so got away with Safety : The young Count of *Soissons*, Duke of *Espernon*, *Bassompierre* and several other Eminent Persons, fell down and were much hurt. The Queen sent to them all to condole their Misfortunes, except *Espernon*, tho' he were much more hurt than any of the rest, which made him conclude his Disgrace was resolved on ; and indeed *Concubini* and *Galigai* had prevailed with the Queen to sacrifice him to the Resentment of the Prince of *Conde*, who was not able to bear with him any longer ; he was soon discharged accordingly, which together with his Son the Count of *Candale*, appearing as a Lord of the Reformed Party at *Loudun*, must needs be great Mortifications to a proud and haughty Spirit, as the Duke was well known to be of.

Upon the opening of the famous Conference, *Conde* The Conference of *Loudun*. promised to let *France* know, he had no other Design than the Good and Tranquillity of the Country : and having said as much to the Duke of *Roan*, that Great Man tells us himself, *That the Prince and his most Trusty Friends concerned themselves more with their own pri-*

1616. *private Interest, than the Publick Good.* The Countess

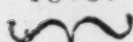
 of *Soissons*, Duke of *Nevers*, Monsieur *Villeroy*, and *Pontchartrain*, both Secretaries of State, the President *de Thou* and *de Vic* Chancellor of State, were Commissioners for the King; when on the other side *Conde* appeared in Person, accompanied with his Mother, the Dutchess Dowager of *Longueville*, the Dukes of *Mayenne*, *Vendosme*, *Longueville*, *Roan*, *Luxemburg*, *Tremoville*, *Sully*, the Marechal *de Bouillon*, Count of *Candale*, and the Deputies of the Assembly of the Reformed Churches, which the King had translated from *Nismes* to *Rochel*, which was the Expedient found out for making it a lawful Assembly; the *English* Ambassador also appeared here as Mediator. *Villeroy* strenuously applied himself at first to divide the Lords of the Prince's Party, and to gain over *Conde* himself by promising him great Advantages from the Queen, which met with but too much Success both upon him, *Mayenne* and *Bouillon*, but *Longueville* was not so easily to be brought over: On the other hand, *Vendosme*, *Roan* and *Sully* joined to the Reformed, were not for Peace, but upon Conditions advantageous to the Protestant Party, and to curb that boundless Authority which the Kings of *France* had at last unjustly usurped over their Subjects. *Roan* laid a great many cogent Arguments before the Prince to prevent his so ready a Compliance; so that what with one and another Accident and Interest, the Treaty spun out near Three Months, and the Suspension of Arms was renewed several Times. In the mean while, the Prince presented Thirty Articles to the King's Commissioners, some of which were granted, some put off, and others with some Alterations and Amendments agreed to by the Court. The Prince had digested these Articles with much Dexterity, as if all were designed for the Publick Good; and the first of his Demands was, That an exact and speedy Enquiry should be made after those that had been any Ways concerned in the Death of the late King, and that the Bishops should be ordered forthwith to publish the Canon of the Counsel of *Constance*, and the Decree of the Faculty of *Paris*, against all who should presume to attempt any thing against the King's Person; and it was farther



ther declared, that such had all along been the Intention of his Majesty.

It was not so with the Two following Articles, which required, That the Article of the Third State, concerning the Security of the King's Person and the Independency of the Crown, might be granted; and that all necessary Things in order to its Observation might be dispatched; That his Majesty would order the Superfeditings of the Decrees, which the Parliament of *Paris* had made relating to the same, to be taken off. In short, That those Decrees might be solemnly renew'd, and all the Declarations made and sent out of the Kingdom to the Prejudice of the King's Person, and against maintaining of his Sovereign Authority, might be declared null and void, and contrary to the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdom. Now as to the first of these Two Articles, it was answered in general Terms, The King would provide for it, with the Advice of the Princes of the Blood, &c. But for suspending the Parliament's Decrees, they said, That, after mature Deliberation in the King's Council, they had been so order'd, to the End a good Correspondence might be kept with the Pope, and that the King had never made any Declaration contrary or prejudicial to his Sovereign Authority, or to the Independency of the Crown. The Court made not much Opposition against some other Articles, whereby the Prince demanded the Preservation of the Liberties of the *Gallican Church*; The Annulling of what the Clergy had undertaken for the Publication of the Council of *Trent*, The exact keeping the Edicts of Pacification, and of all that had been since granted to the Reformed; The Preserving the Authority and Jurisdiction of the Sovereign Courts; The Regulation of the whole Body of the *Gendarms* according to the ancient Statutes, and the Abatement of real and personal Taxes, called *Tailles*. All those Articles were granted in general Terms, while some others were cunningly enough eluded; but the Queen-Mother was, after all, put to a very great Perplexity, concerning Two private Claims of *Conde* and *Longueville*; nothing less would serve the first, than to make himself Head of the King's Councils, to sign all the Decrees that should be

1616.



Treaty  
sign'd.

be dispatched, the Account of the King's Treasury, whatever should be Weekly resolv'd on in the Finance; and, in a Word, he demanded the whole Ministry; while *Longueville* required Satisfaction to be given him concerning the Cittadel of *Amiens*, whose Government had been given to his Enemy the Marechal *d'Ancre*. *Villeroy* gave the Prince Hopes, he might obtain his End, which was made use of by his Enemies at Court to disgrace him; however it were, the Queen resolv'd to conclude the Treaty with *Conde*: And when the Duke of *Mayenne*, and Marechal *de Bouillon* had very near obtain'd all that they demanded, they then labour'd hard to prevail with the other Lords, and the Assembly of the Reformed at *Rochel*, to accept of the Conditions of the Treaty; but this would have been a more difficult Work, than either the Dukes of *Roan* and *Sully*, *Soubize* and *Candale*, would have imagined, had not the Princess's Illness, and some other intervening Accidents, wrought them into a Compliance; tho' the Prince himself, as weak as he was, precipitated the Signing of the Treaty, without hearkening to any Remonstrance, or waiting for the Answer which the Assembly of *Rochel* should have made him: Divers of the Party as well as the Reform'd, murmur'd much against the Prince, for being so hasty in this Work; but it was done, and then came out an Edict given at *Blois*, for the Pacification of the Troubles, whereby the King confirm'd all the Articles agreed upon by his Commissioners at the Conference of *Lou-dun*, and granted a Pardon for all that had pass'd, since the Prince of *Conde*, and the Lords of his Party had taken up Arms.

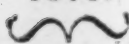
D. of *Roan*  
makes his  
Peace  
with the  
Queen.

The Edict being thus pass'd, *Conde* went to take Possession of his new Government of *Berry*, *Longueville* retired Home, *Roan* and *Sully* went to *Rochel*, *Mayenne* and *Bouillon* to Court, while the Marechal *d'Ancre* began now to be generally hated by every Body, and received daily Mortifications and Insults, that were certain Presages of his approaching Ruine. All this time the Duke of *Roan* observing the Motions of all others, and finding every Body intent upon his own Interest, a Person of so great and discerning a Genius as he, could not be wanting to him-  
self

self upon such a Conjunction, and therefore having prevail'd with the Duke of Sully, his Father-in-Law, to resign his Government of *Poitou*, upon Condition the Queen should confer it upon himself, this he successfully accomplish'd; and nothing now remain'd more to do, than to obtain the King's Letters Patents, which the Court promised to grant him, upon Condition he would go thither himself to receive them; and upon his Arrival there, he deliver'd himself to the Queen at a private Conference, after so free and excellent a Manner, as became one of the Greatest Men then living.

All this while *Bouillon* and others were very restless, and their main Design was to ruin the Mareschal *d'Ancre*, which the Queen perceiving, she concerted forthwith to break off their Measures, by labouring to gain the Prince of *Conde* over to her Interest: She sent *Richlieu*, Bishop of *Luffon*, twice to him for that Purpose, with whom the first Trial of his Skill prov'd very successful; however, the Prince made his own Conditions, and the Queen and *Conchini* promised he should have the sole Share in the Government exclusive to all the Lords of his Party, and that he should likewise be the Head of the Council of the Treasury. In short, this did the Work effectually, and the Prince accordingly, on the 20th of *June*, arriving at *Paris*, *Conde* was received very graciously by the King and Queen, goes to and with the loud Acclamations and Rejoicings of the Court. *Parisians*, and all the Great Men of the Party flock'd to his House to wait upon him. Neither was *Conchini* himself backward to go and pay his Devoirs to his Highness, though he durst not do it without a good Guard. However, the Prince had not been long at Court, before the Dukes of *Guise* and *Mayenne*, with the Mareschal *de Bouillon*, at leastwise in Appearance, drew him in to contrive and agree with them upon Ways how they might ruin *Conchini*. *Conde* met them sometimes in the Night, but they were always divided in their Opinions, some proposing one Way, and some another; but, in short, the Prince himself having once started, that the best Expedient for it would be to turn the Queen herself out from being at the Head of Affairs, all the Company were for it, but the Duke of *Guise*, perhaps, for no other Reason,

1616.



than the ancient Emulation between his House and that of *Bourbon*. About that same time, the Lord *Hay*, being come Ambassador Extraordinary from *England* to *France*, where he appeared with great Magnificence, and was most splendidly entertain'd, the Prince, among others, resolv'd also to treat his Lordship. It's not known how it came into *Conchini's* Head to make a Visit to his Highness upon the Day of that Feast; but so it was, and when his Enemies heard it, they presently propos'd to murder him; but the Prince being unwilling to violate the sacred Rights of Hospitality, would by no means allow of it; and soon after he sent a Person to acquaint the Marechal with the ill Designs contriv'd against him, and to advise him to retire from Court, which he did next Morning accordingly, and went to *Caen* in *Normandy*; tho' the revengeful *Italian* had, before his Departure, taken such Measures, as to make most of his powerful Enemies, and even the Prince himself, sensible, that he was still in a Capacity, not only to withstand them, but also to overthrow all their Projects.

Queen advised to seize the Prince of *Conde*.

*Barbin*, the Queen's Stewart, whom she had made Comptroller-General of the Finances, advis'd her to secure the Prince, and those of his Cabal, in order to support her Authority, which she perceiv'd now manifestly to sink, and that of the Prince to encrease daily, since *Conchini* had withdrawn from Court. The Pope's Nuncio did, indeed, now endeavour to reconcile the Prince and some of the Lords to the Queen, but to no purpose; and the Queen seem'd still to be more averse thereto, by the Discourse made to her by the Duke of *Sully* at this time, *That her Authority must unavoidably sink, and that of the Prince be established, unless she took good Care to prevent it.* 'Tis hard to penetrate into the secret Intentions of this old and able Courtier by this Pace; all that could be guess'd at, was, that he made it in Concert with the Duke of *Roan*, perhaps, with a Design to advance their own Interests in effecting a Reconciliation between *Conde* and the Queen-Mother; 'tis certain, that *Roan* and *Sully* did not design the Ruin of the Prince, but they might be afraid, if he became too powerful, he might then sacrifice them to the Resentment of *Bouillon*. But, what-



whatever the real Intentions of these Two Great Men were, the Queen was now fully bent upon securing the Prince, who going, attended by the Dukes of *Mayenne* and *Vendosme*, with the *Mareschal de Bouillon*, to wait upon her on the 30th of *August*, they continued about an Hour and an Half in her Chamber, when *Galligai* and *Barbin* were of Opinion, so fair an Opportunity was not to be slipt for securing them all Four; but all Things being not yet ready to the Queen's Mind, the Execution of her Design was deferred till the 1st of *September*. Now, whether the often Comings and Goings, which were taken Notice of, when these Great Persons were in the Queen's Chamber, had given any Jealousie to the Duke of *Mayenne* and *Bouillon*, or whether they had received any secret Notice, they began to be upon their Guard; but *Conde*, being no ways apprehensive of any Danger, went in great Pomp next Day to the Council, about Ten in the Morning; and the Queen looking upon him with great Scorn, said to *Bassompierre*, *Here is now the King of France, but his Royalty shall be like that of the Bean, it will not continue long.* The Duke of *Mayenne* was all on the Scout, and finding the Danger, sent *Thiangés* to warn the Prince not to go to the *Louvre*; for when the Prince was going out of the Council to the Queen's Chamber, he found Two of the *Guard de Corps* set as extraordinary Centinels at the Door; however, he went in, but the Queen being retired into her Closet, *Themines*, the Officer appointed for that Purpose, coming up to the Prince with his Two Sons, arrested him in the King's Name, saying to him, besides many other civil Terms, *That the King had ordered him to secure his Person, lest he should fall into some worse Hands.* The Prince desired he might have the Liberty to speak to their Majesties to justify himself, but that not being allow'd him, it was said, he turn'd himself to the Persons there present, and ask'd, *If no Body had Courage enough to declare in his Behalf?* And perceiving *du Vair*, the Keeper of the Great Seal, Sir, said *Conde* to him, *I know you are a Man of Honour, have you advised them thus to break the solemn Promises they have so often made?* *Du Vair* generously answer'd, *That they had not consulted him in that Matter, and that he should be for the speedy*

Prince of  
*Conde* arrested.

1616. *repairing the wrong Measures they had taken; for, in short,* said he, *the shortest Follies are best.* It's not to be supposed, that so brave and good a Man as the Duke of Roan would have insulted the Prince under his Misfortune, as one Historian of those Times would have it; it's apparent that he and Sully had quite different Sentiments of the Matter. In the mean time, the Lords of the Prince's Party having in this Conjunction made some fruitless Efforts to cause an Insurrection in *Paris*, most of them took the Road for *Soissons*, where *Guise* and his Brother *Chevreuse* arrived before *Mayenne* and *Bouillon*; *Vendosme* was already in *Picardy*, where being just like to be taken, he fled to *la Fere*, a Place of which he was Governour. On the other Hand, *Themines* for his brave Exploit was made a Marechal of France, and *Montigni*, an ancient and brave Officer, happening to come that very Day to *Paris*, and loudly exclaiming, he deserved a Marechal's Staff better than the other, he had the same Dignity conferr'd upon him.

Assembly  
of the  
Lords of  
Council.

It was expected, that the Imprisonment of the Prince would have caused great Commotions at *Paris*, and in the Provinces, against which the Queen took all manner of Precaution, while the discontented Lords on their part were taking Measures for raising a powerful Army; and when *Mayenne* and *Bouillon* had join'd *Guise*, *Chevreuse*, and their Brother the Cardinal, they dispatched Letters to *Vendosme* and *Longueville*, to desire them to come and meet them at *Couci*, where they were no sooner met, as was also the Marquess of *Cauvre*, lately brought over to the Duke of *Vendosme*'s Party, his near Relation, but Notice was given, that *Guise* lay under some Cloud of Anxiety and Trouble; wherefore they labour'd all they could to keep him stedfast to their Party, more particularly used the utmost Terms of their Eloquence to fix his Irresolution; and his Opinion was, that they should speedily march with what Force they had to the very Gates of *Paris*: But his good Advice being rejected, they agreed to make new Levies, and to rendezvous at *Noyon*. On the other Hand, the King's Council did not think it fit, for the Majesty of a Sovereign, to answer any otherwise than by a publick and solemn Declaration those who should ask him, why

why he had caused the first Prince of the Blood to be arrested; and the Council also then resolved to have Three Armies, the Duke of *Angoulesme* to command the first against the Lords in *Picardy*; *Montigni* the Second, in order to reduce the Province of *Berry*, that had declared for *Conde* their Governour; and *de Souvre* the Third in the Province of *Tourain*. The King went into the Parliament on the 6th of *Septemb.* in order to have the said Declaration confirm'd, as also a Pecuniary Edict: It seem'd to have been drawn up with a great deal of Skill and Cunning; but Men of Sense could not hear, without Grief and Indignation, the wicked and hainous Crimes laid to the Prince's Charge, without bringing any reasonable Proof for making good the Allegations against him. Soon after the Ratification of this Declaration by the Parliament, they had News at Court, that the Duke of *Nevers* had join'd the discontented Lords; but for all this, the Instability of *Guise* and *Longueville* made them all uneasie; nay, they entertain'd such a violent Suspicion of the former, that *Bouillon*, without any more ado, moved the rest of the Lords to cease him; but *Mayenne* prevail'd to lay this Advice aside. The Cardinal of *Guise* spoke openly against his Brother's Conduct, and promised *Mayenne* and the rest, that he would not forsake the Party. But it was at that Time reported, that *Charvallon* and *Boissise*, the King's Commissioners, were arrived at *Villiers Coterets*, in order to treat with them, and in Effect they sent to the Lords to desire them to agree about a neutral Place in the Country to hold their Conferences in, because the King's Orders did not allow them to go as far as *Soissons*: Wherefore the first Interview was agreed to be at *Cravincou*; the *Spanish* Secretary was come thither with the Commissioners, and had Orders to acquaint *Guise*, that the Ambassador would be the Queen-Mother's Security for what she should promise to his House: Hereupon the Duke, forgetting his Proposals and Promises to the other Lords, publickly declared his Readiness for a speedy Agreement. At the same time, the Duke of *Angoulesme* advancing with the King's Army as far as *Villiers Coterets*, and the Lords knowing how unprovided they were to resist him, they were much alarm'd at it, and there-

A Conference between the King's Commissioners and the discontented Lords.

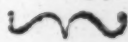
1616. fore contented themselves to manage the Matter so dexterously, that they should not be obliged to go to Court during the whole following Winter, and that the Garrisons of the Places under their Government should be well maintain'd. They presented, indeed, Thirteen Articles of their Demands; but that was only to make a Shew; they knew well enough the Posture of their Affairs was such, as not to permit them to hope the Court would take them into Consideration.

After this first Conference, *Guise* represented to the Lords of his Party, That if he should take a Turn to Court, his Presence and Sollicitations might, perhaps, render the Queen somewhat more tractable; however, tho' they were sensible, he concern'd himself more about his own private Interest, than for any thing else, yet they outwardly seem'd to approve of his Proposals. Wherefore the Duke and his Two Brothers arriving at *Paris* on the 25th of *September*, they were very kindly received; but to shew, that neither they nor their Party should be able to obtain any thing in favour of the Prince of *Conde*, he was the Night following removed to the *Bastile*. *Guise* was surprized at it, but being convinced there was no Danger, he and his Brothers continued still at Court, while *Boissise* was sent back to *Soissons*, to acquaint the Lords with the King's Pleasure, and the Resolutions that had been taken in Council upon their Thirteen Articles; but the Lords being dissatisfied with the Answers made to their Demands, only set down at the Bottom of the Paper, 'Tis by the express Command of the King, and to obey his Orders, that we have received the Articles and Answers brought unto us by M. *Boissise*. Done at *Soissons*, the 6th of *October*, 1616. The Court seem'd as if they were extreamly pleased with the Lords; wherefore a Declaration of the King, which was already drawn in their Favour, was, at the Desire of the Court, approved of in Parliament, besides another in Favour of the Duke of *Longeville* for having seized *Peronne*.

If I should enter upon the Particulars of the Duke of *Espernon*'s Attempt upon *Rochel*, under Pretence of its belonging to his Government, there would be no

great





great Pleasure in perusing them; tho' that proud and haughty Man made himself sufficiently ridiculous by it. Neither shall we concern our selves at present with the renew'd Broils between the *Spaniards* and Duke of *Savoy*, where the *French* were still Mediators, and the Constable *Lesdeguieres* concerned himself more in that Affair than the Court desired. But we are now to take Notice, that K. *Lewis* fell dangerously ill, his Fr. King Sickness proceeded from an extraordinary Swoon, sick. which seized him on the 1st of *November*, and his Fits grew so strong upon him, that his Physicians almost despair'd of his Life. As soon as the News reach'd *Soissons*, the Lords there seem'd much afflicted at it; and the Cardinal of *Guise*, who had lately join'd himself with *Luines*, with a Design to ruin *d'Ancre*, caused it to be insinuated into the King, that the Lords who were retired from Court were extreamly concern'd for the Illness that had so suddenly fallen upon him: *Lewis* took this very kindly of them, and appeared to be weary of being under the Guardianship of his Mother; so that Things began now to work powerfully at Court, and great Efforts were made for the ruining of *d'Ancre*, while he on his part endeavour'd to make his Power higher than ever; and the first Thing he got effected, was to take away the Seals from *du Vair*, who was intimate with *Luines*, and to bestow them upon *Mangot*, and much about the same time, *Richlieu*, Bishop of *Lussan*, was made Secretary of State. We have already mention'd *Barbin's* being made Comptroller-General of the Finances; to this Person belong'd one *Deageant* as first Commissioner, and the greatest Instrument *Luines* made use of to remove *d'Ancre*, and by an unavoidable Consequence to ruin *Barbin*, their Interests being inseparable. Now *Deageant* coming one Night Counter- to the King with an extraordinary Earnestness, had sent Let- in his Hand a Packet of Three Letters, whereof one ters. was directed to the Queen-Mother, the other to the disaffected Lords, and the Third to himself. The Letters were writ without either Date or Superscription, and the Stile was well enough; and the whole Design was to bring the King and his Mother to believe they were writ by some good religious Man, favour'd with the most intimate Revelations of the

1616. Almighty : The Two Letters to the Queen and the discontented Lords had several cogent Arguments enforced with Texts of Scripture, and some Examples out of prophane History. As for the Letter to *Deageant*, it enjoyn'd him, upon the Penalty of Divine Vengeance, wherewith he was menaced by the pretended Prophet, to cause the Letter directed to the Lords to be sent to them by the safest Ways he could, and to deliver the other into the Queen's own Hand, most humbly beseeching her to read it privately, seriously, and consider it, not to communicate it to any Body, but more especially not to acquaint *d'Ancre*, who was most particularly concern'd therein ; and lastly, after she had perused it, to deliver it again to *Deageant*. As for the Letter to the Lords at *Soissons*, he endeavoured to convince them by many weighty Reasons, That they had taken up Arms unjustly ; That the Strength of the Kingdom would be debilitated by their Civil Broils, which would give the Enemies of *France* an Opportunity to attempt something against the Interest of the Crown ; That their Revolt would afford Pretensions and Means to the Reformed for advancing their own Affairs, to the Prejudice of the Catholick Religion : But *Luines* presently insinuated into his credulous Master, That it was not convenient to send the Letter to *Soissons* ; that to the Queen wholly tended to make her remove *d'Ancre* and his Wife ; *Deageant* agreed with the King and *Luines* to go with all Privacy to inform the Queen, That he had a Paper of great Moment to deliver her, which he begged she would keep very secret : But she communicating it to her Confessor and her Confident *Galigai*, they soon suspected the Imposture, and laugh'd at it, tho' in truth it proved the Source of their Sorrows ; of which more hereafter.

War in  
Italy.

If we look into *Italy*, the *Spaniards*, notwithstanding the Peace of *Asti* last Year, seem'd now inclined to break it ; upon which the Duke of *Savoy* apply'd himself to the Republick of *Venice* for Succours, who advanced Money for raising some *Switzers* and *French* to serve him : and the Duke of *Nemours*, a Branch of the Family of *Savoy* in *France*, seem'd forward to bring the Duke Supplies, who enters *Montferrat*, ravages the Country, and takes *Villa* ; but upon the Approach of the

the *Milan* Troops, quits and burns it; and the other in their Turn serve the Villages of *Piedmont* with the same Sawce. *Tolledo's* chief Design seem'd to be upon *Vercelli*: There was a brisk Action happen'd between him and the Duke at *Apertote*, somewhat to the Disadvantage of the latter; and *Mortara*, Governour of *Alexandria*, took *Canelli* and *Cortemiglia* from him. *Bethune*, the *French* Ambassador, was still meditating a Peace, but without Effect; and the Year ended in these Parts with Preparations for a more vigorous Pursuit of the War in the next.

1616.

The *Venetians* and Arch-Duke *Ferdinand* were still at ill Terms about the *Uscocchi*; besides what petty Actions happen'd between their Troops, the *Venetian* General *Justiniano* laid Siege to *Gradisca* in *Friuli*; which spinning out into the next Year, at length terminated without Success.

Having proceeded thus far in the Transactions of the Year, let us resume the *Moldavian* War, where *Pr. Alexander* about the Beginning of *March*, being reinforced with 3500 *Cossacks*, under the *L. Tischevich*, and soon after with 1500 *Polanders*, under *Postoski*, with other Succours, so that his Army was now encreased to about 12000 strong, he sent 1000 Horse to discover the Posture of the Enemy; but being discover'd by *Michna's* *Tartars* and a great Body of *Turks*, and hemm'd in by them, they made so brave Resistance, that the Fight continued from Ten in the Morning till Night, and of the whole Number there were but Twelve Men that made their Escape, the rest being either slain or taken. Now the *Basha* and *Stephen* were much puff'd up with this Success, but *Michna* conceived no Joy at it; for hearing, that the Princes attended him at *Cochin*, with a Resolution to defend themselves, and remembring, that an *Italian* Fortune-teller had told him, That if ever he came to fight with the *Poles*, he should be in Danger of his Life; he pretended he had received Advice from his Lieutenant, that a great Body of *Tartars* had entred *Wallachia*, and spoil'd the Country, and therefore he took Leave of the *Basha*, and return'd; upon which *Stephen* wrote to him, That they had defeated the *Poles* in Battle, and, besides a great many made Prisoners, had slain 6000 of them upon the Place; all which he did only to jeer him:

The various Fortune of *Alexander* in *Moldavia*.

But

1616.

But he will meet presently with more serious Affairs, that will not occasion much Merriment for him: For he and the Bascha, with a *Tartar* Prince, called *Monozza*, being now 20000 strong, resolved to advance towards *Cochin*, and halting within Two Leagues thereof to refresh their Army, Prince *Alexander* in the mean time drew his Army into Battle-Array in a little Plain, within a Quater of a League of *Cochin*, leaving 1000 choice Horse in the Town, under Prince *Coresky's* Command, being confident the *Turks* would encamp between the Town and the Prince's Army, and consequently if defeated they might have no Means to retire into the Fort, which was accounted impregnable. The Prince drew also Eight Pieces of Cannon out of the Fort, and planted them within a Trench cover'd with Wood. The Bascha on the other Side being by Seven in the Morning come near *Cochin*, and having encamp'd there, according to the Prince's Expectation, and the *Tartars* desiring to have the Van in the Action, they fell furiously on the *Cossacks*; but the Cannon, which they observed not, playing upon them, they began to retreat with Loss, being pursued by the *Cossacks*, while the Lord *Tischewich* with 1500 Horse bravely engaged a Squadron of *Wallachians* and *Moldavians*, who came to succour the *Tartars*, and tho' also supported by 3000 *Turks*, yet were made to recoil, when Prince *Alexander* cried, *Now, my Companions, behold the Enemy in Disorder; let us resolutely charge them, and the Victory is certain.* Then advancing with the rest of the Army, and giving the Signal for Prince *Coresky* to fall and charge the *Turks* in the Rear, tho' he was rather beforehand with them, for fear he should have no Share in the Action, the Bascha seeing the Stratagem, he retired in much Fear and Confusion with *Stephen*, with a great part of the *Turkish* Cavalry, leaving the Princes now to carry all before them, and where they slew of the Enemy that Day no less than 12000 Men, besides Wounded and Prisoners. This great Success of the Prince, which was also attended with more against *Michna*, the *Wallachian*, whose Country now the *Boyars* offer'd to *Alexander*, tho' he thought fit to refuse it, brought *Abraim* Bascha to write, as if he had been his Friend, and thereby acquaint him, That he should from thence

He over-  
throws  
the *Turks*  
and *Tar-  
tars*.



thence forward live quietly in *Moldavia*; for the Grand Seignior's Prime Visier (who was *Stephen's* main Support) was now in Disgrace; however it was in Reality, he seem'd not only at this Time to solicit the Advantage of *Alexander*, but having Orders to seize *Stephen*, and send him dead or alive to *Constantinople*, this he effected accordingly at *Braile*, and his Prisoner was forced afterwards to turn *Mahometan* to save his Life. Not long after this, Prince *Alexander* being certainly inform'd, that *Michna*, by the Sultan's Order, was appointed to succeed *Stephen* in the Principality of *Moldavia*, and that *Skinder Bassha* his General in *Europe*, with a powerful Army, was to settle him there, and expel *Alexander*, he found that the Bassha in *June* came to *Tergovist* in *Wallachia*, with an Army of about 20000 *Turks* and *Wallachians*, and was there join'd with 10000 more of *Michna's* Men, and so *Michna* was solemnly proclaim'd Prince of *Moldavia*, and in the Beginning of *July* they directed their March towards that Country, about which Time the General of the *Turish* Army growing discontented at the Successes of the Princes, writ to *Michna* and the Bassha, That if they would advance the eldest Son of the late Prince *Simon* to be Prince of *Wallachia*, he would so soon weaken the Prince's Army, that he must unavoidably yield or flee. This being agreed to by them, he drew the *Cossacks* to mutiny, and to the Number of about 2000 Men, they march'd away from Prince *Alexander* towards *Poland*; *Birho*, his own General, having also treacherously forsook him with 2000 Horse, it wrought great Confusion in the Prince, and his Army too. He first expostulates the Matter with *Michna* in a Letter, and then perceiving, that the Bassha had sent 12000 choice Men to pursue the *Poles*, then at *Cornard*, betwixt *Tas* and *Cochin*, he suddenly caused his Army to advance towards *Cochin*, at which time Prince *Coreski*, who staid with 2500 Horse near unto *Cotncord*, was encountred by a great Body of *Turks* and *Tartars*, whom he could not discover, by reason of a little Mountain that hid them, by whom, after many severe Charges, he was forced to retreat, tho' with this Advantage, that he had almost slain 6000 of them to 150 of his own Number; but himself was wounded with Two Arrows, one in the Thigh, and the

1616.

1616. the other in the Back. Now the Commander here in Chief of the *Turks* having been reinforced with 16000 Men from the *Basha*, sent a Captain to Prince *Alexander's* Camp to challenge Prince *Coreski* to fight him, who, tho' he were neither able to stand nor ride, would yet needs accept it, if he had not been dissuaded from it; but *Tischevich* taking up the Quarrel, these Two Bravo's coming to the Place appointed for the Combat: The *Turkish* General, being about Fifty Paces from his Army, caused Water to be brought him, wherewith he wash'd his Mouth, Eyes, Nose and Privy-Parts; then turning towards the East, he made his Prayers, after which he mounted, and rode softly towards his Adversary, and so the Combat began. Their chief Arms were Bows and Arrows, which they spent without Hurting one another, till at last *Tischevich*, having a Petronel, shot the *Turk* thro' the Body, then wounded him on the Right Arm, and at the next Blow slew him. Soon after this, the Traytor *Bitbo* found a Way with 2000 Horse to get before the Prince's Army, and cut off the Passage between *Cotnard* and *Borbocan*, and being now environ'd on all Sides, the *Basha* sent to them to yield, promising they should depart with Bag and Baggage; they answer'd with one Accord, That they would rather die than agree to it: Hereupon the *Basha* and *Michna* causing their Cannon to fire upon them, there were a great many of them slain thereby; so that the Princes now saw nothing before them but total Ruin; but *Tischevich*, for all that, with 500 Horse, resolving to force his Way thro' 3 or 4 Squadrons that were posted by the Wood Side, as the most suspected Place to keep any from escaping, they executed the same with such Fury, that he overthrew all that they encountred: But the *Turks* Cannon by this time having overthrown many of their Carriages, which served as a Rampier for them, a Squadron of *Tartars*, and another of *Turks*, came up to force the Camp, which made the *Christians*, who saw no Way in the World to escape, cry out, *They yielded*. Hereupon the Enemy spoil'd the Camp, and the Princes *Alexander* and *Bogdan*, with their Mother, were deliver'd to *Skinder Basha*, and carried Prisoners to *Constantinople*, where, for fear of perpetual Imprisonment, they turn'd *Mahometans*.

Prince  
*Alexander*  
surround-  
ed.

*homertans*; Prince *Coreski* was also discover'd and taken, and the young Princess his Wife carried Prisoner into Tartary, from whence she was ransom'd for 3000 Chequins. But so much for these Matters. 1616.

We have formerly mention'd the Peace concluded in 1606. between the Emperor and the *Turks*, but now we are to inform you, that, after many Interpretations and Explications of the said Treaty, the Ambassadors of both the Emperors at *Vienna* agreed on the following Articles, to take away all Pretensions of Controversie in Explication of the former ones.

I.

That the Peace of *Situa Torock* should last the full Term of Twenty Years. Articles of the Peace between the Emperor and the *Turks*.

II.

Since the Time *Agria*, *Canisia*, *Alba Regalis*, *Pest*, *Buda*, *Zolnock*, *Hatwan*, and other Places that have been taken, their Villages, &c. shall belong to them; and that those Villages, which since the Peace have been hindred from paying their Tribute, shall be view'd by joint Commissioners, shall be set at Liberty, and restor'd to their proper Owners; and for those that pay towards *Newigrade*, and other Places, they shall be register'd by Commissioners, that so they may not be molested; so shall the Villages that pay on both Sides, that lie near *Gran*; and for the 158 Villages about *Gran*, the 60 nearest to it to be adjudged as it has been agreed on, and Commissioners to take Order for it, they shall not be disquieted, and nothing exacted from the Tribute.

III.

The Judges of Villages shall pay unto the Lord the Tribute, according to ancient Custom; and if they do not bring it, the *Basha* or *Beg* of the Place shall summon the Inhabitants Thrice, then write to the Emperor's next Governour, that the Tribute may be sent, and upon Failure, to force the Inhabitants to pay it, and make them Slaves: The Commissioners shall set down the Limits and Bounds of the Lands and Seigniories in *Hungary*, *Croatia* and *Slavonia*.

IV.

Justice shall be done on the Infringers of the Peace within Three Months, all taken Prisoners since the Peace to be set at Liberty.

## V.

1616. Information shall be taken of all Fortifications made since the Peace, and any done contrary to it be visited by the Captains on either Side, or a Nobleman of each Party, and the Fortifications to be demolished.

## VI.

Any that shall by wicked Practices go about to infringe the Peace, Notice shall be given of them to either Party, and no Credit yielded to bare Reports.

## VII.

Priests, &c. of the Church of *Rome* free to build Temples in *Turkey*, to solemnize their Religion, and not to be disturbed therein.

## VIII.

The *Hungarians* of either Party are free to rebuild ruined Villages, and they shall pay Tribute, if it had been the former Custom so to do.

## IX.

There shall be free Intercourse of Trade between the Subjects of both Nations; and if a Merchant is to pass by any dangerous Place, they are to be allow'd a Convoy, and no more than the Thirtieth shall be paid on either Side.

## X.

All Merchants from the Empire and *Spain*, having their Passes, may freely traffick in *Turkey*, paying 3 in the Hundred, and 2 per Cent. to their own Agents and Consuls; and if any Merchants chance to die, the Agent or Consul shall cause his Goods to be seal'd up, and the Sultan's Treasurer shall lay no Claim thereto; and the *Cadi*, or Judge of the Place is to decide the Merchant's Controversie, if it exceeds not 4000 Aspers, in which Case it is cognizable before the *Cadi* of the Port.

## XI.

Lastly, That the Post shall be free, neither shall the Messengers of the *Basha's* and *Begs* go any more into the Villages, but the Judges shall bring and deliver the Tribute.

This



This Truce not only made *Bethlem Gabor*, Prince of *Transylvania*, quit his Irruption into *Hungary*, but proved greatly advantagious to the Duke of *Newbourg*; for he thereby getting the Assistance of the *Spanish* Troops, under the Command of Count *Henry de Bergh*, easily became Master of most of the strong Towns and Fortresses in the Dutchies of *Fuliers* and *Bergh*, to which he made Pretensions.

About this time, the Emperor considering, that neither he nor his Two Brothers had any Children, thought good to adopt his Cousin-Germain, Arch-Duke *Ferdinand*, for his Heir; and at the same time, upon the earnest Solicitations of his said Brothers and the King of *Spain*, surrendred the Kingdom of *Bohe-* The Em-  
*mia* to him, upon which he was declared and pro- peror  
claim'd Successor to that Kingdom, tho' upon Con- parts with  
dition that he would not presume to act at any Time *Bohemia*.  
without the Emperor's Consent; but he was not Crown'd till the 29th of *June* following.

In the mean time, while *Gustavus*, King of *Sweden*, having recall'd Duke *Charles* out of *Wicburg*, went in Person to the Frontiers of *Muscovy*, in order to have a near View of Affairs there, with Reference to his Intrigues still on Foot with the *Poles* and *Muscovites*; and forasmuch as he found the Inhabitants of *Naugard* would by no means suffer their Country to be annex'd to *Sweden*, but absolutely insisted upon bringing Duke *Charles* back, in order to the eluding *Gustavus's* Pretensions, he thereupon made Preparations to reduce them by Force of Arms: *La Gardie* writ a Letter to them in the King's Name, proposing amicable Terms, which they rejected, and solicited the Emperor, *England*, *Denmark* and *Holland* in their own Favour, which indeed hastned the Truce before mention'd with the *Poles*, and the Treasury being much exhausted in *Sweden*, the Foreign Troops were disbanded, and their Room supplied with *Swedish* Garrisons; so that the War going on, the *Swedes* made a considerable *Swedes*  
Progress in *Muscovy*; for *la Gardie* attacking 8000 of Progress  
them, that had fortified themselves near *Brunitz*, to in Musco-  
hinder the Communication with *Naugard*, and having y.  
cut off one part of them, put the rest to Flight; after which the *Muscovites* deserted *Sartura*, into which the *Swedes* put a Garrison: Besides, *Horn* besieged  
*Audgo*,

1616. *Audgo*, and the King coming from *Nerva* to the Siege, carried the Place. At the same time, some *Muscovites*, that had made an Irruption into the Neighbouring Country, were attack'd, and put to Flight by *Hans Mank*; after which they were defeated near *Ladoga*, as well as in several other Places. However, the Affairs of *Sweden* absolutely requiring *Gustavus's* Presence, he return'd Home, and took *la Gardie* with him, leaving the Management of the War of *Naugard* to *Krusz*, who, with *Horn* and *Martinson*, had Power to make a Peace with the *Muscovites*. About this time, *Gustavus* made an Alliance with *Holland*, not only in point of Commerce, but of mutual Succour they were to fend each other. At the same time, the Protestant States of *Germany* solicited the King to enter into a League for their common Defence, which under his then Circumstances he could not embark in, tho' he gave them sufficient Testimony of his Inclination to their Party, by promising to assist them upon Occasion to the utmost of his Power.

Alliance  
between  
*Sweden*  
and *Hol-*  
*land*.

1617. Having made such a Tour, give me Leave now, like a weary Traveller, to return Home; but our Domestick, as well as Foreign Affairs, allowing us to have but very short Rest, we are to take Notice, that it was now Fourteen Years since the King had been in *Scotland*, and thither he takes a Progress this Summer, attended by the new Favourite Viscount *Villiers*, on whom he had showered Titles and Preferments, and now we must behold him at some distance, being created *Jan. 5th*, Earl of *Buckingham*, as he was before Master of the Horse, and Privy Counsellor, and now Reigns sole Monarch in the King's Affections, the King is not well without him, and the Nobles of the Court cannot be happy but by him, so that all Addresses are made to him for every Place, or Office, in the Court or Commonwealth. Now also the King put out a Book that gave toleration for Sports and Recreations after Evening-Prayer on Sundays, enjoying all Ministers to read it to their People, and those that refused to read it were brought into the High-Commission-Court, Imprisoned and Suspended, which gave great offence to many good People.

*Villiers*  
dignified.

e,  
co-  
h-  
py  
a-  
er,  
s s  
th  
rd  
er  
is  
n-  
y  
ae  
n-  
h  
k  
n-  
m

v,  
ur  
to  
at  
en  
n-  
s,  
s,  
g  
re  
w  
ae  
bf  
ll  
e,  
g  
e-  
g  
at  
n-  
re

at

*Sta*  
oth  
had  
all  
Fif  
be  
pra  
or c  
Pa  
*Spa*  
pif  
Po  
wo  
ho  
the  
wa  
Au  
the  
Bo  
his  
he  
not  
ing  
A  
wi  
fer  
the  
the  
fac  
qu  
th  
fer  
ra  
ftu  
a  
T  
ha  
a  
gu  
F  
ta  
an  
at



1617.

The Boy  
of Bilson.

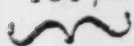
About this time appeared a Boy born at *Bilson* in *Staffordshire*, whose Father, Mother, Neighbours and other People thought to be posselt with a Devil, for he had such strange, sudden and violent distortions, that all Men judged were preternatural, and being but Fifteen Years of Age, could not well be suspected to be an Impostor. The Jesuits visited the Boy frequently, prayed by him, and used such other *Charms* and *Exorcisms* as were fit to make them admir'd; giving his Parents good Hopes of dispossessing him of that *foul Spirit*, and convince the Country how much the Popish Religion excelled the Protestant, who had not the Power of Casting out *Devils*. The Boy in his Fits would rave against an old Woman in the Neighbourhood, intimating by Signs and ghastly Postures, that she had sent a Spirit to torment him, and when he was out of his Fits accused her to be a Witch, and the Author of all his Misery. The old Woman is sent to the Bishop's *Chancellor* at *Litchfield* to be examined; the Boy was brought thither to confront her, and having his Back towards her, at her coming into the Room, he falls into a bitter Agony, crying out, *Now she comes, now my tormentor comes*, wreathing, tearing and twisting himself into such horrid Shapes, that at once bred Amazement and Pity in all the Spectators; Which with some other probabilities, caused the *Chancellor* to send the Women to *Stafford Goal*. At the next *Assize* the Boy and his Parents appear'd Witnesses against the Witch. The Boy was placed in Court with his face to the Bench, eyeing the Judge, and sitting very quietly; and as the Woman was coming in, when the Court thought it was impossible the Boy could be sensible of her appearing, he fell into a greater fit of raging than ever he was posselt with before, and so stupendiously unnatural, that all thought nothing but a *Diabolical Spirit* could work such horrid effects.

This being done so publickly, the Old Woman that had no good report among her Neighbours, being of a froward Temper, incident to old Age, was found guilty by the Jury, and condemned to die. An innocent Woman condemn'd.

Doctor *Morton*, Bishop of that Diocess, and a Pious Bishop Father of the Church, hearing the Jesuits had been tampering with their Exorcisms to dispossess the Boy, and suspecting a fraud, desired the Judge to Reprive

Morton  
Reprieve

1617.



the Old Woman till the next Assize, and he would take the Boy home with him, have him carefully and strictly look'd to, and doubted not before that time but to find out the Contrivance. The Judge granted the Bishop's request, and the Boy was carried to *Eccleshall Castle*, the Bishop's Palace; whither his Fits followed him with great violence; for being put out of his road, and People hindred from coming to admire him, he grew *Sullen*, and would not eat sometimes, in Two or Three Days together, so that his Belly was almost clung to his Back, and he had a new swelling about his Throat, that never appeared before. He lay in his Bed, sometimes as it were senseless sometimes staring with his Eyes, and foaming at the Mouth, sometimes striking those that stood near him, his own careful Mother not excepted. He never spoke but in his Fits, and then a strange kind of Gibberish, at other Times he only muttered and made Signs. The Bishop often visited him, sometimes striving to soften him with gentleness, at other times he handled him roughly, with chidings and threatnings, but his Evil Spirit would be mollified by neither. The Bishop one time spoke to him out of the *Greek Testament*, and it brought him into a Fit; at another time he repeated some Verses out of the *Greek Poets*, which his Spirit was not so Learned as to distinguish, since that put him into a Fit again, with confirmed the Bishop that he was a pertinacious *Impostor*, but how to conjure it out of him was the Difficulty. Finding that Words and Menaces made no impression on him, he fell to Blows; for, taking him out of his Bed, and having one to help him, the Bishop gave him Six smart Lashes with a Rod, at which the Boy was no more concerned than an insensible Stock. They also thrust Needles into his *Toes* and *Fingers*, to bring him out of his Fits, but with all their persecutions he neither Winched nor stirred, so that the Actors were more troubled to execute than he to suffer.

In this condition growing almost desperate, he would make Signs for Knives to do himself a Mischiefe, therefore strict care was taken, and many watchful Eyes set over him to prevent any such Danger. Thus he continued almost a Quarter of a Year, at last his Urine grew so black that the Physicians were of opinion *that*

Na-

Nature had left her usual Operations, having never found in any humane Body so much *Adust* matter to give so deep and deadly a Tincture. This struck the good Bishop very near; for he was sensible what Reflections the Jesuits would make, if he should miscarry under his Hands, and therefore used all Means possible as well to preserve as discover him; but finding the Boy endure so many Trials with patience, he resolv'd if his Water continued black, to sift the Matter no farther. To find out this, he set a trusty Servant to watch him thro' a hole that look'd into the Chamber upon the Bed, which the Boy knew not of. The Bishop and his Family going that Morning to Church, all Things were very still in the House, and the Boy finding all quiet, no Noise about him, he lifts up himself, stares and listens, and at length gets out of his Bed, and in the Straw or Mat under it, takes out an Ink-horn, and makes Water in the Chamber pot through a Piece of the Cotton in his hand, another little piece of the Cotton he put into his *Preputium*, covering it with the Skin, which was for a reserve if he should be forced to make Water before company, and then hides his Ink-horn and returns to Bed. The Man that was appointed to watch him seeing all this, discovered it to the Bishop at his coming home, who went to him presently and ask'd him how he did? The Boy according to his usual manner pointed to his Water, looking ghastly on it, and muttered out his own howling tone: The Bishop that now intended to deal roundly with him, said, Sirrah you have Ink in your Bedstraw, which you black your Water with, and your Knavery is found out, and calling in his Man he took out the Ink-horn, where the Boy had hid it, and justified that he saw him make Water through the Cotton, which with the Bishops threatening to send him to the House of Correction, struck the Boy into such a Terror, that he rose from the Bed, and fell upon his knees and humbly besought the Bishop to pardon him, and he would discover the whole Truth. As he was putting on his Clothes, the Bishop shew'd him the grievousness of his sin, which had such an effect upon his mind. that he melted into Tears, calling to God for Mercy, this done he confess'd that a Pedlar with a Pack on his Back met him when he was going from School,

1617.

The Bishop troubled for the Boy.

The Imposture discover'd

1617.  
His Con-  
fession.

and perswaded him to go with him to Mr. *Stafford's* House, assuring him of good entertainment. When he came thither he was brought to Four *Remish Priests* who gave him Money, and many fair Words, promising him great Matters if he would follow their instructions ; which he consenting to, they were Three Days teaching him how to demean himself, and after he was well tutor'd and had practis'd his Tricks privately, they sent him home to his Father (who thought he had been lost) to exercise them in a more publick Way. He came home in a very distracted manner, to the Amazement of his Parents, and in a short time drew much Company to visit him, and his Parents being poor got Money from many charitable People, which encouraged him to persist in that Way ; But when the Fame of *his being possessed with an evil Spirit* was sufficiently spread abroad, the Priests came to dispossess him ; yet he found so much sweetness in the *Ease and Profit* of that life, that he would not be wrought upon by them, tho' they charmed him never so cruelly ; for they beat him, pinch'd him, and used him severely to make him desist. *Thus were the deceivers deceiv'd.* The Bishop ask'd him why he accus'd the poor Woman of *Witchcraft*, he answer'd, the Priests told him he must lay the cause of his being possess'd upon some old Woman, and she being known to him for a reputed Scold he fix'd it upon her. Then the Bishop ask'd him how he came to fall into his Fits a little before the Woman appeared in the Room, both at her Examination and Arraignment, his back being toward's her. As to that at *Litchfield*, he said he heard some Body about him mutter *she is here*, which made him cry out, *she comes, she comes.* And for the other at *Stafford*, he heard the People remove, and her Chains gingle as she came, which gave him the Sign. Lastly, he ask'd him how he made his *Throat swell*, he shew'd it was by thrusting his Tongue being very long, down his throat, which trick he found out himself, *the rest were taught him by the Priests.* Thus did the good Bishop preserve an innocent old Woman, condemn'd by the Law to die, discover'd the abominable Forgeries of the Priests, and converted a wicked Boy, whom afterwards he bound Apprentice, and proved a good Man.

Ha-



Having done with this strange Story, which yet is attested by the best Authors of those Times, we come now to say somewhat of the Expedition of the Learned and valiant Sir *Walter Raleigh* to *Guiana*, he having been kept Twelve Years a Prisoner in the Tower, <sup>ca.</sup> where he compiled his incomparable *History of the Old World*, a Design so vast, that no other Man of less Parts and Abilities both of Body and Mind could have accomplished; and now desiring Leave of the King to visit the New World in *America*, the King looking upon him as a Man whose Skill in Navigation might redound to the Advantage of *England*, gave him Liberty, and a Commission under the Great Seal of *England* to equip and set out Men and Ships for that Service. His Reputation and Merit brought many Gentlemen of Quality to venture their Estates and Persons in the Design, and being gallantly furnish'd with all Things necessary, either for Peace or War, they set out from *London*, March 23. and met with no Difficulty till they came to *Cape Vert* in *Africa*; but there, and at *Bravo*, met with many violent Storms, which was a great Hindrance to their Voyage, for they were forced to leave their Cables, Anchors and Water-Casks behind them, when they were driven from the isle of *Bravo*; so that by Length of Time, Heat of the Climate, and Want of Water, a great Sickness fell among them, and swept away many of their best Men, both for Sea and Land Service. But, with much Patience and Hardship, getting Sight of the Coast of *Guiana*, they came to an Anchor in the River *Caliana*, where they landed their sick Men, set up Barges and Shalops, that were brought out of *England* in Quarters, wash'd their Ships, took in fresh Water, and being fed and assisted by the *Indians* that Sir *Walter Raleigh* had formerly known, who in this general Contagion having grappled long with Sickness, and not yet able to move otherwise, than by being carried in a Chair, gave Order to Five small Ships to sail into the River *Arenoqua* (having Captain *Kemish* for their Commander) to the Mine he had told Sir *Walter* of in *England*. In those Five Ships were Five Companies of Foot, under the Command of Capt. *Parker*, Capt. *Thorn*, <sup>The chief</sup> *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Walter's* eldest Son, Capt. *Thorn*, <sup>Com-</sup> *manders*, <sup>manders.</sup>

1617. *burst* and Capt. *Chidley*, Gentlemen of great Valour and infinite Patience, in suffering Hunger, Heat and Labour. As they passed up the River the *Spaniards* began the War, and shot at their Ships with great Guns and Muskets; however, the *English* landed their Forces, without much Loss, near the Town called *St. Thomas*, which, with little Difficulty, they made themselves Masters of. In the Assault Captain *Walter Raleigh*, the Admiral's Son, was killed, to the great Grief of the Assailants. The other Five Ships staid with Sir *Walter Raleigh* at *Trinidado*, having no other Port capable to receive them nearer *Guiana*.

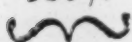
The Voy- But that which spoil'd Sir *Walter's* Design, was, that age spoilt, the King, unwilling to disoblige his Brother of *Spain*, and by whom, gave Count *Gundamor* an Account of this Expedition from the very Beginning of it, and by that Means the King of *Spain* had Time to give his Subjects Notice to provide against him at *Guiana* before Sir *Walter Raleigh* got out of the River of *Thames*. But the *Spaniards* at *St. Thomas*, their Supplies not being come, being not strong enough to defend the Town and the Passages to the Mines, they quitted it, and fortified the Way to the Mines; but the Passages leading to the Mines that *Kemish* had in his Eye, being, as Sir *Walter* expresses it, *Aspera* and *Fretosa*, and *Kemish* finding the River so low, that he could not come near the Mine by a Mile, and also that the Ascents were guarded with Musketeers firing upon them, he thought the Enterprize too hazardous, and therefore return'd.

Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, with the News of his Son's Death, and *Kemish's* Return, without effecting the Work, was perplex'd to the very Soul, telling *Kemish*, He had undone him, and wounded his Credit with the King past Recovery; but he must think (he told him) to bear the Weight of the King's Anger as well as himself. *Kemish*, much troubled in his Mind, retired to his Cabin, and shot himself, and the Bullet only cracking the Rib, which was too slow for his Fury, he desperately thrust a Knife in after it up to the Hilt, and with him the Glory of the Voyage expir'd: For the Design being thus broken, their Ships being leaky, Victuals failing, and missing the Golden Showers they gaped after, some of the Men began to mutiny;

*Kemish*  
kills him-  
self.

mutiny; some would go Home, others would stay; 1617.  
 some would go for *Italy*; some for *France*; few into  
*England*, fearing the *Spanish* Power more at Home  
 than they did in the *Indies*: At last they arrived at  
*Kingsale* in *Ireland*, and from thence came to *Plimouth*,  
 where suspecting Danger, *Raleigh* attempted to make his  
 Escape in a Bark to *Roche*, but being apprehended by  
 his Kinsman Sir *Lewis Stukely*, he was brought to Lon- Sir *Walter*  
*don*, and recommitted to the Tower. No sooner was *Raleigh*  
 he there, but *Gundamor*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, did apprehended.  
 so aggravate this Fact to the King against him, that  
 it seem'd nothing would give Satisfaction but *Ra-*  
*leigh's* Head, without which he doubted there would  
 follow a Breach of the League between the Two Na-  
 tions. *Raleigh* excused it, by saying, He was urged  
 to it by the *Spaniards* first assaulting him; besides, He  
 could not come to the Mine without winning this  
 Town; But the *Spanish* Match being on foot, *Gun-*  
*damor* was too powerful an Adversary for him, and  
 the King preferring the publick Peace before the Life  
 of one Man, already condemn'd, gave way to have  
 the Sentence of his former Condemnation executed  
 upon him. In order to it, he was brought to the  
 King's Bench-Bar, not to be newly Arraign'd or In-  
 dicted, but only that the former Sentence might be  
 averr'd against him; so he was carried back to the  
 Gate-house, and from thence, the next Day, to the Pa-  
 lace-yard in *Westminster*, where a Scaffold being erect-  
 ed, he lost his Head, after Fourteen Years Reprieve And be-  
 from the former Sentence. At which Stroke such A- headed.  
 bundance of Blood issued from his Veins, that shew'd  
 he had a sufficient Stock to have continued many  
 Years, being now above Sixty, if it had not been ta- 1618.  
 ken away by the Hands of Violence. This was the  
 End of the Great Sir *Walter Raleigh*, great in Favour  
 with Queen *Elizabeth*, and, next to *Drake*, the great  
 Scourge and Hate of the *Spaniards*. He had many  
 Things to be commended in his Life, but none more  
 than his Christian Constancy in his Death, which he  
 underwent with such an undaunted Resolution, that  
 one might perceive he had a sure and certain Hope of  
 a joyful Resurrection, which utterly obliterated the  
 Scandal of Atheism, with which his Enemies endea-  
 vour'd to blacken him.

1617.



1618. Having been obliged to make an Excursion into before our Time, because we would not give you this Expedition of Sir *Walter Rawleigh* in a broken and disjointed manner; we shall now recur to the preceding Year again; and having already given an Account of the amusing Letters sent to Queen-Mother and discontented Lords in *France*, we are now to observe, that Things and Peoples Minds grew more and more exasperated at Court, and amongst the discontented Lords in this Juncture, *Lesdeguières*, contrary to the Inclination of the Court, was setting out for *Piedmont* with some Forces for the Assistance of the Duke of *Savoy* against the *Spaniards*. *Nevers* was raising Soldiers, and master'd the Towns of *Champagne*: *Bouillon* carried on his Intrigues in *Germany*, *Holland* and *Liege*; but the Queen-Mother being well inform'd of his Designs, did content herself with sending Troops to *Champagne*; but wrote to the *French* Resident at *Brussels* to obtain from the Arch-Dukes, That they would not allow him to carry Arms and Ammunition, and march Soldiers through their Territories to *Sedan*. The *Mareschal* did all he could to palliate his Designs, and would by his Letters to the King, and otherwise, make the the World believe, he was under a Necessity of doing what he did, for fear of a Surprize from the Arch-Dukes, and many other Considerations: The Duke of *Mayn*, thinking himself also aggrieved, wrote to the King to demand one *Vaugre* might be brought to his Trial for having made an Attempt upon his Life. His Letter was artificially enough answer'd by *Richlieu*; but at the same time that the Queen was making the King her Son to write in this manner, *Luines* was labouring all he could to perswade him to give the discontented Lords all possible Satisfaction, by removing *d'Ancre*, against whom every Body began to exclaim, and taking the Government upon himself; while the Queen on her part was exerting her Authority with the greatest Rigour; and it was thought very hard Usage, that a Declaration should be put forth against the Duke of *Nevers*, making him to be a Rebel, and guilty of High-Treason, when he had not broke out yet into Rebellion. *De Berville*, General of the Fathers of the Oratory, bestirred himself much

*Nevers*  
proclaim  
ed a Re-  
bel in  
*France*.

at



at Court in favour of the Duke, while he himself wrote very submissively to the King by way of *Manifesto*, which was seconded by several Remonstrances from *Vendosme* and *Mayn*, with the *Mareschal de Bouillon*, all full of sharp Complaints against *d'Ancre* and his Wife; and having excused as well as they could some Things *Nevers* had done in *Champagne*, they humbly desired the King to redress the Abuses of the Government, to cause the Treaty of *Loudun* to be put in Execution, and to call again into his Council the Princes of the Blood, Dukes and Peers, the Ancient Officers of the Crown, and the Ministers of the late King. Now before the Court went about to answer these Remonstrances of the Lords, the violent Queen prevail'd with the Council to get them declar'd Rebels; while the Lords justified themselves in a very long Manifesto against the Tyranny of *d'Ancre* and his Adherents, alledging, he made himself as great and powerful as the ancient Mayors of the Palace; so that Things grew more and more desperate every Day: Neither was the Court a little disturbed that the Reformed should now call a General Assembly together at *Rochel* without the King's Leave. But, after much Consultation, they thought it best to advise with the wise *du Pleffis Mornay* hereupon; and *Richlieu* having writ to him for this End, he delivered his Opinion, according to his usual Way, with great Prudence and Integrity; for after some Preliminary Complaints, that they had not hearken'd to his former wholesome Counsels, he represented to him, That an absolute forbidding them to hold the Assembly would very unhappily expose the King's Authority, and, for ought he knew, might cause a general Insurrection of all the Reformed, who being already but too much exasperated by the Attempts of *Espernon*, and the little Care that had been taken to satisfy them, would, perhaps, assemble themselves, notwithstanding all Orders to the contrary; neither did he approve of the Assembly's being put off any farther than the 15th of *April*; for, said he, Our People will readily perceive, that the Design is only to amuse them, and to gain Time on Purpose to hinder them from providing for their own Security: And he concluded at last, That in the present Juncture they

Assembly  
of the Re-  
formed.

1617. they ought to dissemble a little, and patiently suffer the Assembly to be held, and moreover to endeavour that all Things might be there transacted in the most peaceable and advantageous Manner for the King's Service.

This Expedient being judged the best, the same was embraced. In the mean while *d'Ancre* was overjoy'd to hear of the Progress the King's Armies had made against the discontented Lords at *Soissons*, in *Champagne*, and elsewhere; but he was not at little disquieted with the Contrivances made to ruin him. *Luines* would not be satisfied that the Marechal and his Wife should pack up their Awls, and return into *Italy*, had they themselves been really so disposed; he wanted their Spoils, and many were the Intrigues on Foot to compass it. It would be very tedious to enter upon the various Particulars of the Contrivance; 'tis sufficient to observe, that a Resolution was at last taken, even with the King's Consent, to assassinate the Marechal, and the same was effected in this manner: *D'Ancre* being come in the Morning, on Monday, April 24. to the *Louvre*, he was attended both by his own Train of Gentlemen, and some others, that always follow Favour and Fortune. The great Gate was open'd to him, but they took care to shut it again immediately after his Entry. A Man that stood over the Gate gave Three Flourishes with his Hat in the Air, which was the Signal that *Vitri* had order'd to be given him that the Marechal was entred; whereupon the Captain of the Guard went coldly out of the *Swissers* Hall, with his Cloak upon his Shoulders, and his Staff in his Hand, while his Brother *du Hallier*, *Persan*, and some others, dispersed themselves in several Places, and joined *Vitri*, as if it had been by Accident, with whom they went to meet the Marechal, without shewing the least Affectation, or any premeditated Design. Now there being among these that waited on the Marechal some Gentlemen of *Vitri's* Acquaintance, they complimented, saluted and took him by the Hand. In the mean while *Conchini* going beyond the Captain of the Guards, who was stopp'd behind by some Civilities which he desired not, *Vitri*, who had lost the

Sight

*D'Ancre*  
assassinated.

Sight of the Mareſchal, ask'd the other where he was; and he anſwering, *There he is*, pointing at him, *reading a Letter*; the Captain of the Guard made up to him, and laying his Hand upon the Mareſchal's Right Arm, he ſaid with a haughty and reſolute Voice, *I arreſt you, Sir, by the King's Order. Who, me!* answered the Mareſchal in a very great Surprize: *Yes, you your ſelf*, replied *Vitri*, holding him by the Arm with all his Strength, and at the ſame time beckning to *du Hallier*, *Perſan*, and others that were appointed to be his Murtherers, who thereupon charging their Piſtols cloſe at him, the unfortunate *Conchini* fell to the Ground dead upon his Knees, half thrown back on the Parapet of the Bridge which was then at the *Louvre*, where they baſely ran him through with their Swords after he was dead, *Vitri* kick'd him with his Feet, and laid him at full Length on the Ground; after which, proud of their Exploits, the Captain of the Guards, and the reſt of the Murtherers, cried aloud, *God ſave the King*. This was the tragical End of *Conchino Conchini*, born of a noble and conſiderable Family in *Florence*, having been one of the Retinue of *Mary de Medicis*, when ſhe came into *France* to be married to *Henry IV.* where he inſinuated himſelf ſo dexterouſly into the Affections of *Leonora Galigai*, the Queen's Confident, that, notwithstanding his Debaucheries, exceſſive Love of Gaming, and fooliſh and extravagant Expences, ſhe married him. *Lewis XIII.* his Flatterers, and *Luines*, then High-Conſtable of *France*, publiſhed a Thouſand falſe and impertinent Reports to blaſt the Memory of a Man, that was barbarouſly murther'd, and a Woman unjuſtly condemn'd by the Parliament of *Paris* to die upon a Scaffold; but ſincere and judicious Hiſtorians will always do Juſtice to thoſe Two unfortunate Perſons. The Mareſchal was indeed a very vicious Man; his Pride, Arrogance and boundleſs Ambition raiſed up powerful Enemies againſt him: The Paſſions, which he was not able to conquer, nor ſo much as conceal, were the Cauſe, or rather Pretence of his Ruine: His Riches and extraordinary Elevation were envied by the Courtiers; but he never was ſo wicked a Man as his Enemies have repreſented him to be.

1617.

D'Ancre's  
Character

1617.



K. Lewis  
treats his  
Mother  
hardly.

As soon as the Marechal was slain, there was such Commotions in the *Louvre* and *Paris*, that put the young King into a Bodily Fright ; but being glad to see himself freed of a Man who was become so dreadful to him, thro' the Insinuations of his Favourite *Luines*, he said to *Vitri*, *I thank you, now I am a King*. On the other hand, the Queen-Mother being surpriz'd at the hearing of the Pistols discharged, and bidding one of the Maids of Honour look out of the Window to see what the Matter was, as soon as she opened the Casement, she saw the Captain of the Guards walking in the Court, and seem'd as if he was giving out his Orders ; whereupon asking him the Occasion of that Disorder, *Vitri* answer'd, without being any whit concern'd, *The Marechal d'Ancre is kill'd. Who was his Murtherer ?* said she, *My self*, answer'd *Vitri*, as seriously as before ; *The King commanded me to do it*. The Lady presently acquainting the Queen with this sad News, it was reported she should say, *I have reigned Seven Years, I must now think of no other Crown but Heaven*. Whether this were true or false, is not certain ; but 'tis affirm'd of her, that upon hearing the News, she should pull off all her Head-cloaths, and with her Hair disheveled, run about the Room wringing her Hands in a most desperate Manner ; but being in some time come to herself, after she had a little reflected upon Things, she sent to the King, to desire Leave to come and see him : He answer'd, *I am very busie now, it must be some other time*. Tell the Queen, my Mother, from me, *That I shall always honour her, and have for her all the Sentiments of a good Son ; but God has been pleased to make me a King by Birth, and I will govern hence forward. 'Tis fitting that the Queen my Mother should have no other Guards but my own : Do but make her apprehend my Intentions aright*. This last Order not having been executed soon enough, according to the King's or rather his Favourite's Desire, *Vitri* went and disarmed her Guards. On the other Hand, the Queen made Divers Attempts to be reconciled to her Son, who treated her still with much Haughtiness and Severity, and at the same Time received the Compliments of every Body upon his happy Deliverance, occasioned by the Death of the Marechal, that dreadful Enemy and wicked Man

(as



(as they termed him) who had resolved to destroy all the Royal Blood of *France*. The Parliament of *Paris* flattered the King on this occasion more than any, and when the Deputies went to wait upon him, they met with a new Council in the Cabinet, whither the King had sent them; for immediately after the Marechal's Death, he sent for the old Ministers in the time of his Father, and some other Counsellors of State, whom *Conchini* had removed. *Villeroy* and *Jeannin* came presently to Court, and were with a Thousand Carceffes from the King restored to their Employments. The Seals were taken from *Mangot*, who with *Richlieu* and *Barbin* went for the Present to hide themselves. *Richlieu* also lost his Secretary's Place; but for *Barbin*, his Person was seized, and an Inventory taken of his Papers and Moveables, and himself being for some time confined to his own House, was at last removed to the Prison *Font l'Eveque*. The Marechal d' *Ancre*'s Wife was seized, young *Conchini* his Son very illy treated; nay, *Luines* and the rest did not use any just Decorum towards the Queen-Mother her self. D' *Ancre*'s Employments were soon disposed of; *Vitri* was made a Marechal of *France*, and *du Hallier*, his Brother, Captain of the Guards in his Room; the Seals were restored to *du Vair*, while *Silleri* expected they should have fallen again to his Lot. It's an un-

D' *Ancre*'s  
Corps ill  
used.

grateful part to mention the Barbarities committed upon the dead Body of d' *Ancre*, which they hanged on a Gallows, plucked out his Eyes, cut off his Nose, Ears, Privities, Arms and Head. Then the Mob divided themselves into several Bands, and every one dragged in the Streets some part of his Corps: One of them ript his Belly open, and having thrust his Hand into it, drew it out again all besmeared with Blood, and licked it afterwards; but this was not all, for another took his Heart, broiled it upon Burning Coals, and eat it, dipping every Bit thereof in Vinegar. The Trunk of the Body was dragged to the *Greve*, the *Bastile*, the Prince of *Conde*'s House, and even before the House of the Marechal himself. The great Fury of the Rabble being over, they burnt at last one part of the Body at the *Greve*, and the other upon *Pont Neuf*; nay, some Wretches gathered the Ashes, and sold them by the Ounce.

The

1617.

Civil  
War  
ceases in  
France.

The News of the Marechal's Death was received in the Provinces with extraordinary Acclamations, where they made Bonfires, and hung up his Effigies; nay, the King sent Letters to his Governours to acquaint them with it. but with as good a Turn as he could to palliate the horrid Murther. Among others, *du Plessis Mornay* was presently made acquainted with it, and his Answer thereupon to the King was taken so well (tho' in truth he said never a Word concerning the Queen-Mother or *d'Ancre*) that the same was order'd to be made publick. Amongst other his Counsels to the King, he advised him to assist and protect the Allies of the Crown, and consult with his most faithful Servants about the Disorders and Grievances of the Kingdom, and what was the best Means to redress them. He also would have him forthwith recal the discontented Lords, which indeed had been resolved on before *du Plessis* made this Overture; and therefore an Express was dispatched to *Soissons*, with Orders to acquaint *Mayn* with the Death of *Conchini*, but to say nothing of it to *Angoulesme*, who was besieging that Town. *Mayn* immediately sent a Person with a Letter to the King, whereby he deliver'd *Soissons*, and all the Places in his Government, into his Majesty's Hands. Upon this, all Acts of Hostility forthwith ceased. *Mayn* and *Angoulesme* hereupon had some Interviews, and sent several Presents of Provision to one another. Much after the same manner it was with the Two Armies in *Champagne*: The Dutches of *Nevers* defended herself as well as she could in the *Nivernois* against *Montigni*; but as soon as she was informed of *Conchini's* Death, she sent to the Marechal to let him know, that she was ready to receive him with all the King's Troops into the City of *Nevers*, and all the Places belonging to her Husband: And *Tianges* soon after went to make his Submission to the King from the Dutches. The Lords who served in the King's Army repair'd forthwith to Court, and every Body now endeavoured to gain the Favour of *Luines*; all of them almost abandon'd the desolate *Mary de Medicis*. There are few of those generous Souls to be met with (said the Great Duke of *Rome*) who will follow in Adversity those whom they have honoured in Prosperity; but he was one of those generous

rous Souls; for he desired Leave openly to wait on her, since it appear'd to him, she had some Constancy in her Misfortune, at which *Luines* was much dissatisfied; but *Roan* resolved to quit the Court, rather than act unbecoming his great Courage.

In the mean time the unfortunate Queen, weary of her Confinement (as I may call it) obtained leave to go and reside at *Blois*, while the discontented Lords sent to Court, to desire leave to come and wait upon the King, without making any previous Conditions for themselves. *Villeroy* seemed to oppose it, but *Luines* being desirous to marry *Vendosme's* Sister, and the natural Daughter of the late King; he obtained a Pass that *Cesar* might return to Court, without making any publick Submission to the King, or waiting till *Lewis* should put forth his Declaration in favour of the discontented Lords and their Party; and this very much facilitated the Return of the other Lords, which happen'd soon after.

Discontented  
Lords re-  
turn to  
Court.

I do not care to say any more concerning the Marechal d'*Ancre*, for the impeaching of whose Memory there was now a Commission sent to the Parliament of *Paris*, as well as to try his deplorable Widow for a Witch, and other Crimes laid to her Charge, for which she was cruelly sentenced to Death, and in the Opinion of all the Historians I have met with, very unjustly suffered. I'll therefore proceed and observe, that the Assembly of the Reformed at *Rochel* thought themselves also under Obligations of congratulating the King upon his happy Deliverance; not without some unreasonable Touches of Flattery, tho' *Du Plessis Mornay* advis'd them to it in another Manner, he never being to be brought to so much meanness, as to congratulate his Prince upon the Death of a Man, so basely and unworthily murdered.

All this while the whole Kingdom expected the Prince of *Conde* would not be long before he should be set at Liberty, but the poor Gentleman received no other Advantage by the Death of the Marechal, and the Removal of the Queen-Mother, than a less severe Imprisonment, and the leave that was given his Princess to be shut up with him: Neither was this granted till a Month after the Revolution happen'd; the King promised the Princess, that as he loved the Prince and

*Conde*  
still con-  
fin'd.

1617.

and his whole Family, all imaginable Care should be taken of him, till he had put his Affairs in good Order; he said, he was sorry that they did not allow him as yet to grant him his Liberty, and she might assure the Prince from him, that he would endeavour to content him as soon as he could: But alas the Interest of *Luines* his Favourite would not allow of this; and therefore having expected the Performance of the Promise for the space of Four Months, he did at length after a whole Year's Imprisonment, to their great Astonishment, and as if he did him a favour, remove him from the *Bastile* to the Tower of *Vincennes*, where at present we must leave him. On the other Hand *Luines* now govern'd all Things, in as absolute a Manner as ever *d'Ancre* did, and there seem'd not to be any other Alteration in the Government, saving in the Favourite only; for after he had established his Friends and Creatures in the Council, and about the King's Person, instead of marrying *Mademoiselle de Vendosme*, as he once Designed, upon better Thoughts he laid that aside, and made choice of the Daughter of the Duke of *Montbazou*, a younger Branch of the Family of *Roan*, and the Widow of the Duke of *Chevreuse*. This done, the Favourite having managed all Things about the King, must needs plant his Creatures also about his only Brother *Gaston* Duke of *Orleans*; and therefore having got *Breves* his Governour removed from him, he substituted the Count of *Lude* in his place.

*Luines*  
marries.

Affairs of  
Religion.

I shall not dwell upon the base Designs of one *Gignier*, who endeavoured to make *Vendosme* guilty of attempting to poison the King, but was detected, and by a Sentence of the Parliament of *Paris* beheaded; neither will it much be worth while, to pursue the Project *Luines* and *Deageant* had formed, to make the King powerful in the Court of *Rome*. But it was not here only that *Luines* would signalize his Zeal for the *Romish* Church; he supported the Interest of the Clergy against the Reformed of *Bearn*, and protected those that made Attempts upon their Religion. While the Court was at *Fontainebleau*, *Arnoux* the Jesuit, the King's new Confessor, and the Favourite's Creature, in a Sermon of his before the King, boldly insisted that the Passages of Holy Scripture, cited in the Confession



sion of Faith made by the Reformed Churches of France, in respect to their Controversial Questions with the Church of Rome, were all false: Hereupon the Four Ministers of the Protestant Church at *Charonton* forthwith publish'd a Defence of the Confession of the Reformed in France, against the Accusations of *Arnoux* the Jesuit; and the same being excellently well perform'd, they dedicated it to the King himself, and painted the Jesuits, but with a becoming Decency, to their Prince in their true Colours. In the mean time, the King's Council were very busie at *Fontainbleau*, about the Request of the Clergy, to have the Roman Religion, and the Ecclesiastical Estates restored to them in the Principality of *Bearn*. The Bishop of *Mascon* had, in the Name of the Clergy, before the King left *Paris*, made some Complaints to him of I know not what Disorders committed by the Reformed at *Montpelier*; but the chief Designs of the Prelate were, to get the Popish Religion re-established, from whence the same had been outed by *Jane d'Albret*, Henry IV. his Mother. The Bishop of *Aire* seconded this Motion with a better Grace, and return'd Thanks to the King in very emphatical Terms for the Arrest given at *Fontainbleau*, June 25. about the entire Restoring of the *Romish* Religion in *Bearn*, and the Estates of the Clergy in that Province, which had been seiz'd by Queen *Jane*: Before the Decree was made, the Deputies General of the Reformed Churches of France presented a Petition, desiring, That they would put off the Decision of the Affair of *Bearn*, till the Return of *Lescun*, the particular Deputy of the Reformed for *Bearn*; but that would not do: Yet, for fear lest all the Reformed of France should too much exclaim against the said Decree, the King writ to those of *Bearn*, that they should depute some of their Number, to see that what of the Ecclesiastical Revenues was made in favour of them should be justly distributed. The Reformed immediately held an Assembly at *Orthes*, where they generously resolved, as a free People, to die rather than to give their Consent to the Infractions of their ancient Laws. and the Abolishing of the Religion established among them; but besides, that they were not potent enough to cope with the King's Forces, they had some self-interested

1617.

Men amongst them, who minded nothing but themselves, in Neglect both of their Religion and Country. *De la Force*, Governour of *Bearn*, was then at Court, where he vigorously opposed the Decree, shewed the Difficulty of putting it in Execution, and the dangerous Consequences of it; but at last flagging in his Resistance, and allured with the Hopes of being made a *Mareschal*, he promised to take upon him to put the Decree in Execution. On the other Hand, *Lescun*, who was sent to Court by the Assembly of *Orthes*, delivered himself to the King with much Resolution for the Defence of the Liberty of his Country; but all his Remonstrances signified nothing, for the Arrest was publish'd and confirm'd by another in *September*, and the better to appease the Spirits of the Protestants, who must be alarm'd upon this Occasion, the King would pretend to shew the *Bearnois* this Favour to indemnifie them for their Loss, by assigning them the like Sum upon the Domain of *Bearn*, and some other Neighbouring Lordships. The Estates of the Province appear'd with one Accord against this manifest Infraction of their Laws and Privileges: They resolv'd to renew their Opposition to the Execution of these unjust Decrees. They also confirmed the Resolution which they had already taken on the 2d of *February*, which was to oppose the Re-union of their Principality to the Crown of *France*, at least, that it should not be done with the Consent of the several Orders of the County. It was a noble Resolution in the *Bearnois*, had they been but able to have maintain'd it; for this Enterprize upon *Bearn* (as the Duke of *Roan* very well observes) was the Spring of all the Evils suffer'd by the Reformed of *France* in this King's Reign: But, alas, it would not do, and therefore the King, towards the End of the Year, put forth an Edict for this Re-union.

*Bearn re-  
united to  
France.*

The Duke of *Roan*, who had been for some time in *Italy*, and now return'd Home, found the Authority of *Luines* so well established, that he thought, like the rest, to make his Court to the Favourite: The Duke found him to be his Ally by Marriage, which gave him easie Access; and having no Kindness for the Prince of *Conde*, more especially since the Conference, he insinuated often to *Luines*, that he should accom-  
modate

Roan negotiates for the Queen-Mother.

moderate Things with the Queen-Mother, rather than with Conde, who did all he could to gain the Favourite, and made him very large Promises, provided he would procure him his Liberty. Luines was much perplex'd herewith, and which of the Two he should chuse. Roan used all his Rhetorick to perswade him to fall in with the Queen, and he began to relish the Reasons he gave for it; while the Duke on the other Hand found a Way to make known to Barbin, then in the Bastile, what Negotiation he carried on for the Queen-Mother; which Barbin no sooner understood, but he advis'd her to write to the King, Luines and the Duke of Montbazon; to the King, to justify herself in a tender and respectful Manner, and to the other Two, to engage them to serve her Interest with the King: The Minutes were drawn up, and Roan corrected some Expressions in them that might give any Colour of Dislike. A certain Bishop, in whom Barbin could confide, took upon him to carry the Minutes of these Letters to Blois, that the Queen might write the Letters themselves; but the Bishop proving treacherous, discover'd all to Deageant, who was not to be reconciled to the Queen; but yet so cunningly managed the Affair, that he procur'd a Token of Favour from her, which he shew'd the King, and they made him believe thereupon, that several Great Lords had conspired to seize the Louvre, to bring the Queen-Mother back without Delay: And still to render the young King the more susceptible of all those Impressions they had a Mind to make upon him against some Lords in his Court, Roan was one of the first named. Luines took him one Day into his Closet, and told him, *The King was very well inform'd of his Inclinations to serve the Queen-Mother, and of the Correspondence he held with Barbin, and that he should have felt the Effects of his Displeasure, if the Favourite had not interpos'd, in Consideration of the Alliance that was between his Family and that of Roan.* The Duke encountred this Discourse with all the noble Resolution and Briskness his Heart was capable of, and said, *My Lord, I am neither a Person of that Humour, nor of such a Quality as to follow the Trade of a Spy; I am very glad if the King is made acquainted with all my Conduct; 'tis wholly for his Service: I have a Respect and am under*

1617.

*Obligations to the Queen-Mother, I will not dissemble it, and all good French Men ought to be of the same Opinion.* At the same time, *Deageant* was using all the Artifice he could to destroy *Barbin*, and some other Servants of the Queen-Mother; and, amongst others, *Richlieu* was one of the first, who felt the Effect of the Hatred conceived against such Persons as were capable to serve *Mary de Medicis*, and procure her Return to Court; for, notwithstanding all the Protestations he had made to the King and his Favourite when he left *Paris*, that he would watch over the Actions of the Queen, and hinder her from undertaking any thing that should be displeasing to the King, the old Ministers and *Luines* himself were still distrustful of his cunning and subtle Nature. Two or Three Weeks after his Arrival at *Blois*, he had Notice given him to withdraw to his Priory of *Coussay* in *Anjou*; and being yet not satisfied that he was so near the Queen, they resolved to banish him to *Avignon*; and an Order was sent him accordingly at the Beginning of the following Year: *Richlieu* hereupon complain'd bitterly to the Pope of the Injustice done to the Bishop, he being thereby deprived of the Means to instruct his Flock; while *Paul V.* having no Inclination to have a Person in his Dominions, that was so intreaguing and suspicious to the Court of *France*, yet pretending to vindicate his Complaints, made known his Dissatisfaction to the Archbishop of *Lyons*, then Ambassador at *Rome*, who thereupon wrote several times to Court, That the Order upon the Pope's Representation might be recalled, at which the *French* Ministers wer not a little surprized.

*Richlieu*  
disgraced.

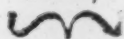
Affairs of  
*Italy.*

The Affairs of *Italy* were still strangely imbroil'd; it would be endless to insist upon every petty Action that happen'd between the Troops of Arch-Duke, or rather King *Ferdinand*, and those of the Republick of *Venice*, about *Gradisca*, and, notwithstanding the latter had considerable Succours from the States of *Holland*, under Count *Nassau*, all their Efforts could not carry the Place. The Vice-Roy of *Naples* was also somewhat troublesome to them at this time by Sea, while the Duke of *Savoy*, having received some Troops from *France*, under *Lesdeguieres*, took *St. Damiano*, *Alba*, and other smaller Places, while *Toledo*,



taking due time to reinforce his Army, lays close 1617.  
Siege to *Vercelli*: *Charles* makes divers Attempts to  
relieve it, but all in vain; so that at length, after a  
very vigorous Siege, it was necessitated to capitulate. *Spaniards*  
The Duke in Revenge falls into the *Milanesè*, and take *Ver-*  
cellis.  
ravaged the Country very much; and all the Solici-  
tations of the Pope, *French*, and other Princes, could  
not bring the Affairs of *Italy* to such a Composition,  
but that the Year ended with much Ambiguity of  
Minds and Thoughts, and the Treaty set on Foot  
rather disturbing than quieting the Country, scat-  
ter'd mischievous Seeds of new and greater Ca-  
lumnies.

From *Italy* let us once more visit *Turkey*, and see  
how Matters stand in that Empire. We have already  
given the Substance of the Truce between the  
Two Emperors in the preceding Year; so that no  
Warlike Actions were perform'd in these Parts;  
however, being still injured by the Spoils and Ra-  
pines of the *Uscocchi*, they made grievous Complaints  
of them to the *Venetians*, tho' at present with little  
Hopes of Redress; and a little before the End of the Sultan  
Year Death deprived them of their Grand Seignior *Achmet's*  
*Achmet*, at the Age of Thirty, after he had reign'd Death  
Fifteen Years. He was of a good Constitution, well and Cha-  
complexion'd, and somewhat enclined to be fat, racter.  
strong and active, which appear'd by his casting an  
Horseman's Mace of 9 or 10 Pound Weight, where-  
in he excell'd any in his Court: He was by Nature  
ambitious and proud, but not so cruel as many of his  
Predecessors: He was much given to Sensuality and  
Pleasure, for which he entertain'd 3000 Concubines  
and Virgins in his *Seraglio*, being the fairest Daugh-  
ters of the *Christians*: He took great Delight in  
Hawking and Hunting, and particularly for the first  
he kept 40000 Falconers in *Greece* and *Natolia*, which  
all of them had good Yearly Pensions; neither were  
his Huntsmen much fewer, or of much less Charge.  
As the *Turkish* Emperors by the Law of their Reli-  
gion are bound once a Day to practise some Handi-  
craft Trade, so *Mabomet*, his Father, gave himself to  
the making of Arrows, and *Achmet* to the working of  
Horn-Rings, such as the *Turks* wear when they draw  
their Bows: This is done by them in the Morning,

1617.  for after they are ready, and have said their Prayers, they call for their Exercise ; but it is only for Form's sake, for they scarce make an Arrow or a Ring in a whole Year.

*Germany* affords nothing, save the Crowning of *Ferdinand*, June 29. King of *Bohemia* (as before noted) and a great Tendency to a Civil War in those Parts ; of which more hereafter. Then for the *Northern Affairs*, the King of *Swedeland*, endeavoured to push on his Concerns with the *Muscovites*, and to determine them, if it was possible, by a Negotiation. With this View, he resolved upon another Journey to the Frontiers of *Muscovy* : But before he undertook that Journey, he sent *John Skitte* as Ambassador to King *Christian* of *Denmark*, to secure his Friendship. And forasmuch as King *Sigismund* scatter'd a great many Libels in *Sweden*, to sow Division between *Gustavus* and his Subjects, his Majesty not only prohibited them to hear such seditious Discourses, but likewise sent a Fleet to cruise upon the Coast of *Dantzick*, and, under the Pretence of building a Fort, march'd some Troops towards *Calmar*, in order to be ready on all Occasions to thwart the ill Designs of the *Poles*, whom he mistrusted very much. Add to all this, that he commanded his Land Militia to be in a Readiness to march upon the first Orders. After that, *Gustavus* embark'd at *Stockholm*, and arrived at *Nescon*, where he received Advice, that the *English* by their Mediation, had got the *Muscovites* to enter into a Negotiation : To make the Negotiation go on the better, he resolved to attack the City of *Pleskow*. Upon his Arrival before that Place, *Horn* was mortally wounded in the Head in a Sally that the *Muscovites* made : And tho' the King endeavour'd vigorously to storm the Town, yet he could not carry it ; for the Winter approaching, and the contrary Winds opposing the Transportation of the heavy Cannon, he was obliged to raise the Siege ; to which the *English* Ambassador contributed not a little by his repeated Solicitations for that End ; and the *Swedes* would have it, that our Minister was very partial to the *Muscovites*, by reason of the great Advantage he mean'd to draw from the Trade of that Country. The Pretence he went upon was, That the Great Duke would  
not

The Siege  
of *Pleskow*  
raised by  
the *Swede*.

not hear of any Accommodation, till a Truce was concluded upon. At the same time, the *Swedish* Deputies gave the same Advice to King *Gustavus*, for fear the running of the *Muscovites* to Despair should move them to make a Peace with the *Poles* at any Rate, after which they would certainly join together in attacking *Sweden*. The *Dutch* Ambassadors assisted at this Negotiation, which was then commenced with a great deal of Vigour and Application. The different Preliminaries were adjusted at *Glebor*; and, after many Disputes on both Sides, the whole Treaty was concluded at *Stelbera*, Feb. 12. 1618. and so that War ended, as we shall conclude the Affairs of this Year with remarking the Death of *Robert Abbot*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, born at *Guilford* in *Surrey*, bred in *Baliol* College, *Oxon.* whereof he became Principal, and *Regius Professor* in that University: He was an accomplished Divine, and so confuted one *Bishop*, a Roman Catholick, that he never gave him an Answer. He was promoted to the See of *Salisbury* in 1615. His Brother *George*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, was a more plausible Preacher, but not so great a Scholar.

1617.

A Peace between Sweden and Muscovy.  
Bishop Abbot's Death.

Now it was also that the incomparable *Jacobus Augustus Thuanus* departed this Life. He was the youngest Son of the President *de Thou*, born in 1553. and having finished his Studies and Travels, was made *President à Mortier*, and took Possession thereof in 1595. He was employ'd in several important Offices of State, and in reforming the University of *Paris*, which he discharged with so much Prudence, that he was esteem'd the *Cato* of his Age, and the Ornament of *France*. He also wrote the History of his Time in *Latin* from 1543. to 1608. in 138 Books, a Work, both for Subject and Stile, comparable to the Ancients, and left Memoirs of his own Life behind him.

Thuanus's Death.

Our own Affairs are the first that do again present themselves to our View, and having already mention'd the Lord *Hay's* Ambassade into *France* about a Match with Prince *Charles*, where the Duke of *Savoy* was beforehand with him, and had prevail'd for his Son, the Prince of *Piedmont*, tho' the *French* dissuaded

1618.

1618.  
 The Spaniard  
 makes an  
 Overture  
 of a  
 Match.

Gondamor  
 manages  
 the Treaty  
 for the  
 Spaniards.

Articles  
 of Religion.

bled it; we are to observe, that during this Negotiation, the Duke of *Lerma* intimated to Sir *John Digby*, Ambassador in *Spain*, his Master's Inclinations to match his Second Daughter to the Prince: But it being strongly reported, that the Match with *France* was concluded, the Business slept till Sir *John Digby's* Return to *England*; from whence he writ to the Duke, who had desired it of him, That there was no Cause of Despair, unless the Difficulty of the Conditions render'd it desperate. And at his Return into *Spain* it was agreed between him and the Duke, That the Matters in Difference should be digested into certain Heads (the Two King's not being as yet to appear in it:) And that of Religion being thought the only Difficulty of Moment, it was proposed to the Cardinal of *Toledo* and the King's Confessor, and Father *Frederick* a Jesuit. Sir *John Digby* advised the King That this Proposal (which might be a meer Device to stagger the *French* Treaty) should not retard his other Designs, and therefore desired no formal Commission to treat, but only Instructions for his Direction and Warrant. Such Overtures made Way for that slowpac'd Treaty of many Years. which rather than break, the King of *England* would grant all Things possible, being impatient of dissembling his own Eagerness. It was chiefly carried on by *Conde Gondamor*, who by applying himself to the King's Humour, was exquisitely fram'd for it.

But little Sincerity appear'd in the *Spaniards*; for, after a Consultation with their Divines, such unworthy Articles were proposed in Matters of Religion, that Sir *John Digby* rejected them. But being afterwards qualified, and debated between him and *Gondamor*, the King acquainted a select Number of his Council therewith, who giving their Opinion, That they found probable Ground for a publick Treaty, Sir *John Digby* was under the Great Seal authoriz'd to treat, and conclude the Marriage: The Articles were sign'd by the King, and imported, That the Pope's Dispensation was to be obtain'd by *Spain*; That the Children of that Marriage were not to be restrain'd in Matters of Religion; That the *Infanta's* Family, being Strangers, might be Catholicks, and should have a Place for Divine Service, and the Ecclesiasticks



sticks might wear their Habits; That the Marriage should be celebrated in *Spain*, according to the Council of *Trent*, and so solemnized in *England*, as to make it a lawful Marriage; That the *Infanta* should have Chaplains and a Confessor, all Strangers. The King in the mean time declared, He would admit nothing that might blemish his Conscience, or detract from the established Religion; the *English* abhorring Popery, generally opposed this Match; but if any spake louder than others, he was silenced and disgraced, while in *Spain* and *Flanders* Books and Pictures were painted to reproach the King and Government. The Papists desired the Match, in Hopes of a Toleration, if not of a total Restoration of their Religion. The *Spaniard* all this while was not sincere, but making use of the *Bohemian* Troubles for the Amusement of King *James*, yet pretended to prepare Two Millions of Money for the *Infanta's* Portion. In the mean time, the Ministers proceeded slowly, whereas 'twas observed, King *James* would gratifie the *Spaniards*, tho' he disgusted his own Subjects: But no Favour was granted to any Subject of his by the King of *Spain*, without designing to engage him in his own Service, as may be gather'd from the following Letter, writ by a great Minister of State to Mr. *Cottingham*, then Agent in *Spain*.

‘THAT *Gondamor* had proceeded very slowly in A Letter  
 ‘his Journey, and it's murmur'd here, that if he from a  
 ‘had thought his Master had desired the speedy ef- great Mi-  
 ‘fecting of the Match, he would have made more nister of  
 ‘Haste homewards; and that the Match was ne- State to  
 ‘ver sincerely intended, but promoted to amuse his Mr. *Cot-*  
 ‘Majesty, and gain Time: That for his own part, he tington.  
 ‘was well perswaded of their Intentions; for if there  
 ‘be either Honour, Religion, or moral Honesty in  
 ‘them, the Protestations and Professions they have  
 ‘made are enough to perswade a Man to expect sin-  
 ‘cere Dealings, unless they are worse than Infidels, and  
 ‘the most perfidious People in the World, and the ra-  
 ‘ther for that his Majesty hath given them so many  
 ‘Testimonies of his sincere Intentions, as of late, by  
 ‘cutting off Sir *Walter Raleigh*, chiefly for their Satis-  
 ‘faction. That he should shortly receive a Decla-  
 ‘ration.

1618.

'ration, shewing the Motives inducing his Majesty  
 'to recal his Mercy to Sir *Walter*: That he shall  
 'represent his Majesty's real Manner of proceeding  
 'with that King and State, and how he hath strain'd  
 'upon the Affections of his People, especially in that  
 'of Sir *Walter Raleigh*, who died with great Cou-  
 'rage and Constancy; the common People attribu-  
 'ting his Death to the desire his Majesty had to sa-  
 'tisfy *Spain*. That he should let them know how  
 'able a Man Sir *Walter Rawleigh* was to have done his  
 'Master Service, and yet to give them content he  
 'had not spar'd him, when by preserving him he  
 'might have given satisfaction to his Subjects; where-  
 'as the King of *Spain* will do nothing to lessen the  
 'Affections of his People: That the least they can do  
 'is to answer his Majesty with sincere and real pro-  
 'ceedings, which is all he expects: That he should  
 'intimate to them how impossible 'tis to have Peace  
 'long continued if they should deal indirectly: But  
 'herein he must be cautious and temperate; for altho  
 'that stile most prevails with them, yet Threats and  
 'Revenge are no wooing Language. That he should  
 'be earnest with *Gondomar* to negotiate the Liberty  
 'of Mr. *Mole*, Father *Baldwill*'s Liberty being granted  
 'him upon his Promise to use his utmost endeavours  
 'to procure Mr. *Mole*'s: That he should let them  
 'know, that altho' *Osulivare* had done them many  
 'Services during the Hostilities between *England* and  
 '*Spain*, yet those ceasing upon his Majesty's Accessi-  
 'on to the Crown, and there being now a perfect  
 'League and Amity between them, his Majesty can-  
 'not but dislike that they should bestow upon him a-  
 'ny Title or Dignity which only or properly belongs  
 'to him to give to his own Subjects, and would be  
 'glad they forbore to confer any such titular Hon-  
 'ours upon his Subjects without his Privity, and not  
 'endeavour to make the *Irish* have any dependance  
 'on that State.

The Match with *Spain* was not the only Thing  
 the King was concern'd about to interested himself  
 in an Affair of another Nature in *Holland*, for which  
 we must look a little back; for his Majesty about  
 1611. hearing that the States were det ermined to en-  
 tertain

certain one *Vorstius* to be Divinity Professor in *Leyden*, whose Opinions seemed contrary to those he had imbibed, he earnestly solicited the States, both by his own Letters, and by his Ambassador Sir *Ralph Winwood*, by no Means to admit the said *Vorstius* into that employment, lest his Doctrines should spread themselves into his Dominions. The Ambassador pressing the King's desires, the States answer in Justification of *Vorstius*, That he was chosen according to ancient Custom, by the Curators of *Leyden*, and whereas he was afterward charged by some Persons that had nothing to do in that Affair, to be unsound in Doctrine; the Curators thought fit, with *Vorstius's* consent, that both at *Leyden* and at the Hague, he should appear and answer his Accusers, which he did, and none came to charge him. But not long after Six Ministers undertook to prove that *Conradus Vorstius* had published False Doctrine, who being heard in a full Assembly of the States of *Holland* and *West-Friesland*, they could find no reason to displace him. And they do assuredly believe, that if his Majesty of Great-Britain were well informed of the true Circumstances of this Business, he would, according to his high Wisdom and Prudence, conceive favourably of them; they proceeding in this Affair with all Reverence, Care and Respect to his Majesty's Serious Admonition. Dated at the Hague, October 1. 1611.

1618.

Contest  
between  
the Re-  
mon-  
strants  
and Anti-  
remon-  
strants.

The King by this answer perceiving that the States had so good an Opinion of *Vorstius*, that they would not comply with his request, he caused his Books to be burnt in *St. Paul's Church-yard*, and in both the Universities, and writes to the States again, That if they did not Displace him, he would publickly protest against them. Dated at *Theobald's*, Octo. 6. 1611. Sir *Ralph Winwood* represented this to the States, and finding them cold and backward in proceeding any farther against *Vorstius*, he remonstrated very smartly against them, to which the King seeing them make only Dilatory Answers, he at last exhort'd them to call a National Council to put an end to those Controversies. The Arminians, now called Remonstrants, opposed the calling a Council, and 'twas said that *Barneveldt*, the chief of the Remonstrants, now *Arminius* was dead, had secretly levied Soldiers in *Utrecht* to defend themselves against *Maurice Prince of Orange*, who sided

*Vorstius's*  
Books  
burnt.

1618. sided with the contrary Party, on notice whereof the Prince with 500 Foot marches to *Utrecht*, which struck such a Terror into the new levied Companies, that at the first word of Command they laid down their Arms and Submitted. After this *Barneveldt*, *Hogenberts*, *Leydenberg* and *Grotius*, the Four Chiefs of the *Arminian* Party, were seiz'd and committed to several Prisons. *Leydenberg*, to prevent their Mercy, stab'd himself in Prison. *Hogenberts* and *Grotius* were Condemned to perpetual Imprisonment; but *Grotius*, after some time, made his escape in a Trunk, which his Wife pretended to the Soldiers of the Castle, was full of *Arminian* Books, which she would send away that they might not trouble her Husband's Head. *Barneveldt* was beheaded at the *Hague*, which they thought was the surest way to silence that Learned Mouth. He lived to see a National Synod at *Dort*, whither King *James* sent Dr. *Carlton*, Dr. *Hall*, Dr. *Davenant*, Dr. *Ward* and Mr. *Belcanquel*, a Scotch Man, Batchelor in Divinity, where they met with Divines from the *Palatinate*, *Hassia*, *Geneva*, *Bern*, *Embsen*, *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Utrecht*, *Friesland* and other Provinces, who generally agreed to condemn the Doctrines of *Arminius*, concerning Election and Reprobation, and the Universality of Christ's Death, and Man's Redemption by it: But herein the King lost his aim, for this censure made those deep points be more narrowly and diligently enquired into, and the Condemned Opinions sprouted and gathered strength by being topt by a Faction combined against them.

Conventi-  
tion of  
Notables  
in France.

Having nothing more at present to detain us in *England*, but that the Earl of *Northumberland*, after he had been confined in the *Tower* ever since the Powder-Plot, now obtain'd his Liberty; and that one *Williams*, a Lawyer, was hang'd at *Charing-Cross*, for libelling and writing Books against the King; if we pass into *France*, we shall now find *Lewis* call a Convention of Notables to meet at *Roan*, the Fruits of which the People waited for with Impatience; for they expected, that the King upon his Return to *Paris*, would presently put forth some good Edicts in favour of that Reformation of the Government, that was so much insisted on in the Assembly of the States General, and so solemnly promised now at *Roan*: But how



now strangely were they surpriz'd to find that all ended in these Arrests of Council, whereof the one alarmed the Lawyers, and the other was a sensible Mortification to the University of *Paris*, viz. That the *Paulette* or Annual Right should be revoked for ever, without being capable at any time or for any Cause whatsoever of being re-established: But this was no more at the same time, than to abolish the Hereditary Part of those Offices, whereas the Venality still remain'd. The other was a Permission given to the Jesuits, who were much in Favour with *Luines*, to teach publickly in *Paris*, in the College of *Clermont*, notwithstanding all Opposition made by the University to the contrary, and the Arrests of Parliament made upon this Account: Wherefore the University being not capable of preventing the Execution of the Decree made in the Jesuits Favour, had no other Way to defend themselves, than by establishing certain Regulations, to prevent those who study'd under them from taking any Degrees in the University; of which the Jesuits made loud Complaints, and said, *It was a manifest Illusion of their Decree*. The Favourite stickled hard on their Side, and procured them a Second Arrest to annul that of the University, which yet being a very potent Body, did not signifie much to the Jesuits.

Leaving therefore these Fathers to consider of this Affair, we find now the Pope making the Duke of *Lerma* and the Bishop of *Paris* Cardinals. The Duke of *Espernon*, who was return'd to Court since the Death of *d'Ancre*, had been then, as well as before, fed with Hopes he should have obtain'd a Cardinal's Cap for the Archbishop of *Tholouse*, his Third Son; but when he found himself eluded, and the Bishop of *Paris* preferr'd, he began to make loud Complaints of the Favourite (who had promoted him) and *Luines* being inform'd of it, made it his Business to quell his Fury; and as *Espernon* was Colonel-General of the *French* Infantry, he had divers Ways to mortifie him. The Queen-Mother's Partizans were for laying hold of the Opportunity to embroil them more and more, as hoping it might at last engage *Espernon* in her Party; but the Favourite prevail'd, and the Duke retired to his Government of *Metz*, where we will

1618. will leave him, and shew, that the Favourite and the other Ministers of State were much perplex'd about the Affairs of *Bearn*; for the *Bearnois*, jealous of their Liberty, were unwilling to receive the King's Edict about the Ecclesiastical Goods. The Duke of *Roan* and *du Plessis Mornay* were well enclined to assist them in so just a Design; but these Two great Politicians were for finding out some Way of Accommodation. *Bearn* alone was not capable to withstand the King's Pleasure, and to engage all the Reformed Churches of *France* to support the Rights of this Principality, would be to expose the Kingdom to the Misfortunes of a Civil War, the Consequences whereof might be fatal to the Reformation. *Lefdeguieres* being consulted by the Court upon this Affair, advised the King to use Gentleness and Moderation towards the *Bearnois*: He represented to him, as well as, *Roan* and *du Plessis*, that this Enterprize would make the whole Reformed Party very jealous, and that the People would think the Court had a Design afterwards to revoke the Edicts of Pacification: *Lefdeguieres* did not seem to be so sincere as the other: *La Force* was so embarrass'd between his Religion and the Promise of a Marechal's Staff, that he did not know what to do. But at length the *Bearnois* themselves being irritated that all their Remonstrances signified nothing, resolved to go to *Castel-jaloux* in *Guyenne*, there to confer with the Deputies of the Churches in the Three Neighbouring Provinces, about what they should do in such a Conjunction; but the Court being aware hereof, forbad the Assembly: Wherefore they went privately, and met at *Orthes* in *Bearn*, from thence they writ to Court, and prayed the King to have a Regard to the Remonstrances they had made him; but the King refused to hearken to any thing urged on the Part of the Assembly, whom he looked upon as unlawful and seditious. He sent *Renard*, the Master of Requests, thither, in Quality of his Commissioner, to put his Orders in execution: He was illy receiv'd at *Pau*, where he was insulted; and the Sovereign Council of the Province were so far from registering the King's Decree, that they declared it to have been procured by Surprise, and to be contrary to their Customs and Privileges.

*Bearn*  
stands up  
on its Pri-  
vileges.

Privileges, These Things caused a mighty Noise at Court; which made the King send to the Sovereign Council of *Pau*, his *Letters of Jussion*, that is an Order to proceed forthwith to the Publication and Execution of his Edict; to punish according to the utmost Severity of Law those who had insulted his Commissary, and to prosecute those who had assembled at *Pau* without his Leave. But the Sovereign Council of *Bearn* did not lose their Courage, they put forth an interlocutory Arrest in Opposition to the King's Letter of Jussion; and having all due Regard to their Prince's Order, they declared, That before they should proceed to the Execution of them, his Majesty should first be entreated to secure the Rights and Privileges of his Reformed Subjects in *Bearn*, according to his own, and the Edicts of the Kings his Predecessors. At the same time the Deputies of the particular Assembly at *Orthes* called a General one, there being no other way to put a stop to the violent Proceedings of the Court; and the *Bearnois* were no longer able to maintain their Privileges, but by engaging the whole Body of the Reformed on their side, which the King and his Ministers were much afraid of. *Orthes* was a Place too far and inconvenient for such an Assembly, and therefore it was transferred to *Rochel* towards the End of this Year. *Lescun*, who was always zealous for the Preservation of the Liberties of his Country, wrote in defence of the Rights of *Bearn* against the Clergy: His Book did not go unanswered; however the Court seemed resolved to go on, tho' much afraid of a Civil War; but the Intrigues of the Queen-Mother to be freed from her Exile and Confinement, gave the *Bearnois* some Respite; and the Matter remained undecided, till *Luines*, won over by the Council of *Spain*, perswaded the King rather to make War upon his own Subjects, than to succour those who disputed the Crown of *Bohemia* with the House of *Austria*. The Abbot *Rucellai* *Espernon* would now have engaged the Marechal de *Bouillon* engages in the Queen-Mother's Party; but he being much more intent upon the Affairs of *Germany* than those of *France*, proposed the Duke of *Espernon* as the fittest Person for it. They had agreed to have her conducted from *Blois* to *Loches*, of which Place the Duke was

Queen-Mother's Interest.

1618. Governour, and from thence to the Castle of *Angoulême*, where she might safely expect the Great Lords, who were discontented with *Luines*, might declare for her: But *Espernon* made some Alterations in his first Design; he had at first resolved that the Archbishop of *Tholouse*, his Son, should go and join the Queen when she came from *Blois*, and that it should be on the very same Day in which the Duke passed the *Loire*, in order to go to *Loches*; but beginning to reflect, that in such a difficult and perillous Enterprize, it would be more convenient to be near the Place, that so he might give certain Orders, and readily apply a Remedy to any unforeseen Accidents, he resolved to go himself to *Loches*, there to receive the Queen, and conduct her to *Angoulême*; but how he effected it will in part be the Subject of the next Year's History.

A Design  
against  
Venice.

Let us now traverse the *Alps* into *Italy*, where an Agreement is made between Arch-Duke *Ferdinand* and the *Venetians*, 133 Families of the *Uscocchi* being banished to *Carlisfoot*, and other Frontiers of the *Turks* farther from the Sea, which they had very much infested. A Treaty was still in Agitation between the Duke of *Savoy* and the *Spaniards*, wherein both Parties aim'd at Delays; but the Duke at length, on the 6th of *April*, having restored 74 Towns of the *Montferrat*, quitted *Annone*, *Massarano*, and all other Feudal Places, and deliver'd the Prisoners into the Hands of the *French* Ministers; it was reported, *Toledo*, Governour of *Milan*, should say in a great Fury, *It appeared the Peace must at last be executed, since Heaven and Earth had totally conspired to have it so*; and, with much ado, he at last consented to the Restoring of *Vercelli* to the Duke. In the mean time, *Ossuna*, Vice-Roy of *Naples*, projected a Design to surprize the City of *Venice* it self, by the means of one *James Pierre*, a *French* Man, and his Comrade, who deserting *Ossuna* upon a pretended Disgust, and having Skill in Fire-Works, managed their Design so well with the Republick, that they were admitted into the Arsenal, where having drawn divers others into the Conspiracy, one *Haillot*, an *English* Man, was to be sent by *Ossuna* with Barks and Brigantines into the Ports and Channels, which had beforehand been



been every where secured, and the same were to be seconded by larger Ships, that should anchor on the Side of *Friuli*, under the Countenance of which, and during the Confusion of the People, the Conspirators were to act their respective Parts. *Langlad* was to fire the Arsenal, others several Parts of the City; some were to petard the Mint, to seize the most considerable Posts, and to kill the most eminent Persons, whose Houses were privately mark'd out: But the Ships not being ready as soon as was expected, and afterwards encounter'd with Storms and Pirates, *Pierre* and *Langlad* could not avoid going out with the Fleet under Captain-General *Barbarigo*. The Matter, in the mean time, was discover'd by Two French Gentlemen, that had been let into the Secret, upon which *Pierre* and *Langlad* were drown'd in the Sea, and such of the rest as could not save themselves by Flight received condign Punishment.

From *Italy* let us make some Inspection into the Affairs of *Germany*. Since *Ferdinand* was declared King of *Bohemia*, the Protestants were so far from being better treated than before, that, to provoke yet more, the Archbishop of *Prague* had caused a Church of theirs to be pull'd down at a Place called *Clostergrab*: Which Proceeding obliged them to complain to the Council which the Emperor had left at *Prague*, who, nevertheless, gave them no very satisfactory Answer. Hereupon the Reform'd Lords and others perceiving what they were to trust to, determin'd to call together the States of the Kingdom for Redress; and, notwithstanding the Emperor's Prohibition, had that Assembly open'd on the 12th of *May* following. From hence Two Deputies were dispatched to the aforesaid Council; which having a little too hotly represented their Grievances, they were answered as warmly by Three of the Judges. This the Deputies being not able to bear, they suddenly flew upon the said Judges, and threw them out two Pair of Stairs into the Street. To support this violent Action, the Count *de la Tour*, one of the principal Actors, immediately caused the Citizens of *Prague* to take Oaths, established Thirty Governours in the Kingdom, and drove out thence all the Jesuits. This done, the Inhabitants took up Arms, and at the same time the

Affairs of  
*Bohemia*.

1618. Deputies published a Manifesto, to let the Emperor and the World know, that the Persons they had treated with that Violence were Disturbers of the publick Peace, and Enemies to the Commonwealth.

The Emperor being grievously nettled at the Indignity offer'd him in the Persons of his Judges, resolv'd to punish the Authors thereof, though he at present amus'd them only with a Manifesto. The Council of *Vienna* were for giving them Satisfaction, which the Emperor oppos'd, and determin'd nothing but War. For this Purpose he dispatch'd the Count of *Dampiere* towards the Frontiers of *Bohemia* with a considerable Number of Troops: He was follow'd by the Count of *Buquoy*, with great Force likewise. But the *Bohemians* having been not altogether unacquainted with the Designs against them, had us'd such Diligence, that they were soon in a Condition to receive the *Imperialists*, having got together an Army of 30000 Men, whereof they had given the Command to Count *Ernest of Mansfeldt*. This General having a great many veterane Officers, immediatly march'd and attack'd *Pilsen*, whereof, notwithstanding the Succours sent by Count *Dampiere*, he easily became Master. This caus'd *Buquoy* to enter that Kingdom likewise with his Troops, where he did irreparable Damage. As yet *Silesia* only assist'd the *Bohemians*; but the Protestant Union then assembled at *Rottemburg*, upon the *Taubet*, endeavour'd likewise to serve them by sending Deputies to the Emperor to expostulate their Affair with him. These Deputies having fully represented their Grievances, and having entreated his Imperial Majesty to recall his Arms, the Senate of *Austria* seconded their Petition, and those of *Moravia* join'd their Request with the foregoing, to bring about an Accommodation, but all to no Purpose; for, after the Taking of *Budweitz* by the Count of *Buquoy*, all the Measures that had been advanced for the procuring of Peace were thereby broken.

The Emperor also was not a little concern'd at the setting aside of this Treaty; for he began to be weary of War: Likewise much upon the same Account had he, ever since the Month of *July*, parted with

with his Crown of *Hungary*, in like manner as he had done the Year before with that of *Bobemia*; all which was in Favour of his Cousin *Ferdinand*, whom he accordingly had caused to be crown'd King of both those Kingdoms. These Discontents, join'd with the Affliction which he felt for the Death of Arch-Duke *Maximilian*, who died on the 2d of *November*, as likewise that for the Loss of his Empress, who also deceased on the 14th of *December* following, made his Health decline apace: But some Historians tell us, nothing stuck so much to him as the Baseness and Ingratitude of *Ferdinand* in kidnapping his Counsellor *Gieselius* from him, upon whose Advice and Integrity he rely'd above all others: His Council to his Master had been to endeavour by all Means possible to compose the Commotions in *Bobemia*; for if he should come to an open Rupture with them, and be compell'd to raise an Army, the Interest of *Ferdinand* was such, not only in the *Spanish* Councils, but the *Polish* ones in *Germany*, and the Hereditary Countries, that he would have the Command of it, and thereby be in a Condition to ravish the Empire from him, as he had done the Crown of *Bobemia*; and *Matthias* feeling yet this Flesh-Wound, fear'd that mortal one, if *Ferdinand* were once put at the Head of an Army. *Ferdinand* some how aware of this Advice, without any Regard to the Majesty and Authority of *Matthias*, arrested *Gieselius*, as he was called to Council, by the Hands of *d'Ampiere* and *Prainer*, put him into a close Coach, and, under the Guard of 100 Horse, hurry'd him away to *Innsprug*. *Matthias*, astonish'd at this bold Insolence, which struck at his Authority in the tenderest Part, and now without any Council left in the Hands of his Cousin, became so overwhelm'd with Melancholy, that both sleeping and waking, he could not forbear crying out with a loud Voice, *That Gieselius might be brought back again*; but all in vain, and in those Agonies the poor Prince ended his Days, which yet spun out to the 20th of *March* in the ensuing Year.

In the mean time, having already mention'd the Death of Sultan *Achmet*, and *Osman*, his eldest Son, being not above Twelve Years old, *Mustapha*, his Father's Brother, was proclaim'd Emperor; but quickly

*Mustapha*  
on the  
Throne.

1618. ly growing odious, by reason of his Tyranny, the Grand Viceroy returning out of *Persia* with an Army, forced him to return to his Cell again, and setting *Osman* at Liberty, placed him on the Imperial Throne: But it may not seem strange that *Mustapha*, contrary to the usual Practice of the *Turks*, should be kept alive during his Brother's Reign, we are to observe, that *Achmet* at his Accession to the Throne, being but Fifteen Years of Age, the great Officers of the Court concluded it was not fit *Mustapha* should be put to Death, as fearing if the Emperor died Childless, the Empire would fall into a Combustion, and ruin it self by Civil Wars; but when *Achmet* saw he had Children, he resolv'd to be rid of him; yet, they say, he was so frightned the Night before his intended Execution with Apparitions and fearful Dreams, that he forbore the Fact; as he was at another time tormented with a great Pain in his Arm and Shoulder, when he was about to shoot him with an Arrow, as he walk'd, by his Permission, in the Garden: But when *Achmet* in his last Sickness found Death approaching, he called for *Mustapha*, and declared him his Successor. The first Thing he did was to set the *Persian* Ambassador at Liberty; but, contrary to the Law of Nations, he ill used the Baron of *Mole* or *Samy*, the *French* Ambassador; the Occasion of which we must be a little particular in, before we come to the Particulars of *Osman's* Reign.

After the Overthrow of the Princes of *Moldavia*, as before noted, Prince *Coreski*, who would by no means renounce his Religion, was sent Prisoner to the Towers upon the *Black Sea*, not far from *Constantinople*, where there was also a *French* Captain, called *Rigant*. The little Chamber they were in, which was on the Top of one of the Towers, had a Window, through which a Man might go, without any Bars to it. Now the King of *Poland* being concern'd for the Prince's Liberty, sent to the *French* Ambassador to solicit his Ransom, and the Emperor's Ambassador did what he could to procure his Liberty. About the same time, a *Polish* Lady, with her fair Daughter and Maid, being taken by the *Tartars*, she was sold to the *Turks*, and brought to *Constantinople*, who hearing nothing of her Husband, went to the *French* Am-  
Am-

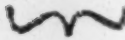


Ambassador's House at *Pera*, to crave his Assistance, where his Secretary *Martin* would engage, if she would promise to give him her Daughter in Marriage, to endeavour their Liberty, and the Lady agreeing to it, he paid 2500 Crowns for their Ransom, and sent them home. Hereupon the Lady acquainting her Husband and Friends with the Contract, the Father would not agree to it; upon which the Lady gave *Martin* Information of it, and that her Husband alone was the Cause of obstructing the Match; and as for the Money he had laid out, they would, if he pleased, send it to *Constantinople* with Interest. After divers Letters and Expostulations between them, *Martin*, full of Grief, happen'd to go and visit Prince *Coreski* in his Confinement, and to advise with him what he had best to do: The Prince bid him be of good Cheer, and said, *If he could possibly obtain his Liberty, he would stand by him, and obtain his Desires.* Hereupon *Martin* soon after sent the Prince a Bottom of Packthread in a little Pye, and advertised him, that such a Night he should put down the Packthread at his Chamber Window, whereunto a Ladder of Cords should be tied, whereby he might descend from the Tower, which was actually perform'd by a Greek Priest employ'd for that Purpose, who told the Prince and his Fellow when they came to the Foot of the Tower, That *Martin* had order'd him to conduct them to a certain Cave a League from thence, where they were to stay all Day, and in the Evening he would not fail to come to them, bring them disguising Habits, and so conduct them to his Lodging at *Constantinople*, till they had an Opportunity to get off. Their Escape out of the Prison was no sooner known, but strict Charge was made after them, and special Directions given to observe all that pass'd, and particularly one that had the little Finger of his Right Hand shrunk, as the Prince's was; and not long after the *Turks* seized and extreamly tortured the *French* Ambassador's Servants, and, not content herewith, *Chiaus* Bascha had Orders to seize upon the Person of the Ambassador himself, as supposing him privy to the Design, and carried him to the Grand Visier's House; but, notwithstanding all the just Remonstrances he could make, and that the *English* and *Dutch* Ambassadors began to resent this

1618.

P. Coreski makes his Escape.

The French Ambassador seized.

1618.  ill Usage, he could not obtain his own and his Servants Liberty without vast Presents to the *Musli, Chiaus*, and others, which amounted to a very large Sum of Money.

Peace of  
*Stelbora.*  
1617.

The  
States of  
*Finland*  
and *North*  
*land* as-  
sembled.

But to dwell no longer upon so ungrateful a Subject, as the Violation of the Laws of Nations, and having before mention'd the Peace between the *Muscovite* and the *Swede*, whereby the Town of *Kexbold*, and the Province of *Inggermania* were adjudg'd to *Sweden*. We should have noted before now, that after the Raising of the Siege of *Pleskow*, *Gustavus* having given the necessary Orders on that side, went to *Helsingfort*, where he had call'd an Assembly of the States of *Finland* and *Northland*: To that Assembly, he represented the true Causes of the War with *Denmark*, and *Muscovy*; for the Country People imagin'd he had engaged in it without any Necessity. This done, he perswaded them to enter into a firm and solid Union, in order to act in concert with him against *Poland*, and to promise him all possible Succours in case the Peace were not concluded with the *Muscovites*. Tho' the *Muscovites* came at last, as aforesaid, to an Accommodation, as being apprehensive that *Gustavus* would make a long Truce with the *Poles*, and so they would have more Enemies upon their Hands. Yet it was the Interest of *Sweden* to be always upon their Guard against the *Poles*, who would not declare their Mind openly, nor hear of a Truce between the Two Kings, but only of a Cessation of Arms between the States of *Lithuania* and *Livonia*, after the Expiration of the first Truce. 'Twas plain enough that the *Poles* had a watchful Eye upon the *Swedes*, and sought all Occasions of surprizing the Places which were weaken'd by their long Wars with *Muscovy*, in order to open a Way for themselves into *Finland*. And in effect, *Sigismund* declared his Intention openly, when he declared to the *Muscovites*, that he protested against the Cession of *Inggermania* to the *Swedes*, in the Treaty of *Stelbora*. He likewise caused a great many Letters and Libels to be dispersed in *Sweden*, in order to decry *Gustavus*, and irritate his Subjects against him. 'Twas for this Reason, that *Gustavus* not only put all his Places in *Muscovy*, and *Livonia*, in a Posture of Defence: But like-  
wise

wife sent Admiral *Gyldenstou* with a Fleet, and *Sternsbild* with a Body of Troops to *Windaw*, in *Courland*, where they made a Decent, and took the *Dunamunder* Fort without much Resistance, and put a *Swedish* Garrison into it. The Taking of this Place, put the People of *Riga* in such a Consternation, that if the *Swedes* had attack'd it at that time, it had surrendred immediately. Duke *William*, whom the *Poles* had deposed some time before, put himself under the Protection of *Sweden*, and gave *Falvenback* the Government of the Dutchy of *Courland*; the Duke contributed much to the Taking of *Dunamunder*, and allow'd the *Swedes* to put a Garrison into *Guldingen*, and afterwards he did them great Services, tho' they did not trust him much. At the same time *Sternsbild* took the Town of *Pernaw*, with the Loss of only Sixty Men; and after that, took *Salis*: But by the Treachery of *Falvensback*, *Dunamunder* fell again into the Hands of the Enemies. In the mean time, K. *Gustavus* was crown'd at *Upsal*, to the great Satisfaction of all the States of the Kingdom: For they observed, that from the Beginning of his Reign, he had much enlarged the Limits of *Sweden*. After that, the *Swedes* enjoy'd the Sweets of a Peace for some time; which his Majesty employ'd partly in making good Laws and Edicts, meaning thereby to encourage his Subjects to augment the Revenues, and partly in making Preparations for the War that was like to break out with *Poland*. He gave Orders to *La Gardie*, then Governour of *Esthonia*, to let *Codkowits*, the *Polish* General, know, that his Intention was to continue no longer under an Uncertainty, after the Expiration of the Two Years Truce; and that he absolutely demanded a Peace, or a longer Truce; upon the Failure of which he was to expect nothing but War from him.

The Remarkable of this Year, are the Deaths of these Eminent Persons.

1. *Thomas Bilson*, Bishop of *Winchester*, where he was born, and bred in his Youth, but at length, became Master of the School and Warden of the College. In 1596, he was preferred to the Bishoprick of *Worcester*, and from thence next Year translated to *Winchester*: He was a Man of great Learning, and

1618. King *James* entertain'd so good an Opinion of him, that he committed unto him the last Care of the present Translation of the Bible.

*Barnaveldt's*  
Death.

2. *John Olden van Barnaveldt*, a *Hollander*, was apprehended and beheaded this Year: He was a Person that had done great Services for the *United Provinces*; but his Zeal for the Liberty of his Country, occasioning some Disputes between him and Prince *Maurice*, that at length proved his Ruine. He was much esteem'd by *Henry IV.* of *France*, and Queen *Elizabeth*. The getting the *Brill*, *Ramekins* and *Flushing*, out of the Hands of the *English*, was effected by his Conduct. He was in 1609, a great Instrument in bringing about the Twelve Years Truce with the Arch-Duke: But becoming the Head of the *Armenian* Party; *Maurice*, who espoused the other, grew too hard for him; for getting the Synod of *Dort* to be conven'd, the *Armenians* were not only condemn'd, but *Barnaveldt* himself lost his Life soon after, in the 72d Year of his Age, being charged with a Design of delivering the Country up to the *Spaniards*, which he positively denied to the last.

*C. Perron's*  
Death.

3. On the 5th of *Septemb.* died *James Davy du Perron*, Cardinal of *St. Agnes*, in the 63d Year of his Age. He was born *Nov. 25. 1556.* His Father taught him *Latin* and the *Mathematicks*, and *Hebrew* he learnt without a Master; as for *Greek* and *Philosophy*, he got them elsewhere. He was known to King *Henry III.* of *France*, who very much valued him: He left the *Hugonots* and turn'd *Roman Catholick*; was much admired for his Eloquence and Learning, and the Strength of his Genius: He was promoted to be Grand Almoner of *France*, and Arch-bishop of *Sens*. He answer'd King *James I.* of *Great Britain*, at the Sollicitations of *Henry IV.* after which he retired into the Country, wrote his Treatise of the *Eucharist*, Letters, Harangues, &c.

A Comet. This Year appear'd a Comet in the Night over the City of *Constantinople*, like a crooked Sword or Scimeter, and so large, that it extended from the Meridian near to our Zenith, unto the Horizon; the Point began to shew it self an Hour after Midnight, and then appear'd small and somewhat whitish, and gave but a Glimpse: In an Hour it was of a deeper

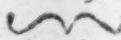
Co-



Colour, and the more it rose, the redder it grew like Blood; but at Break of Day it gradually vanished. It was so big when the Point approach'd near the Zenith, that the Hilt was under the hidden Horizon. The Mathematicians observed, it follow'd the Motions of the Heavens: It always rose in one Place, and the Bending of the said Sword towards *Candia*, was more Southerly than it: It appear'd directly in the East, a Quarter towards the South, pointing directly towards *Constantinople*, and the Blade extended it self to the said East, a Quarter to the South, which is just the Part where *Persia* is scituated; the Edge look'd directly towards *Constantinople*.

This Year looks but with a melancholy Prospect upon King *James's* Affairs, his Queen *Anne* dies of a Dropsie on the 1st of *March*, and the Troubles of his Son-in-Law and Daughter *Elizabeth* in *Germany* come on with winged Haste. We have already mention'd the Commotions in *Bohemia*; the Death of the Emperor *Matthias*, which happen'd on the 10th of *March*, no ways contributed to appease them. King *Ferdinand* propos'd a Cessation of Arms, but was rejected, and the *Bohemians* declared their Kingdom to be Elective; but their King always ought to be one of the Royal House of *Bohemia*. The Protestants in Upper *Austria* were for uniting with the *Bohemians*; they of *Moravia* banish'd the Jesuits, and follow'd the same Resolution of favouring the *Bohemians*, tho' that Province had a little before sent *Ferdinand* a Supply of 3000 Foot, and 2000 Horse, who on their March coming to know of the Resolution of the Province, mutiny'd and return'd; only *Albert* of *Wallerstein*, their Commander, went on to *Ferdinand*, and delivering him the Money he had for the Payment of his Soldiers; this Act of Fidelity gave Beginning to that great Fortune, which in a few Years carry'd him to the Height of Power and Command, and afterwards to a Precipice that proved his Ruin. King *James* interpos'd in those Differences, and sent the Viscount *Doncaster* into *Germany* to mediate a Reconciliation to no purpose. In the mean time, the Electors having chosen *Ferdinand* to be Emperor, the *Bohemians* dis-

1619.


 El. Palatine chosen K. of Bohemia.

disclaim'd the Election, and *Charles Emanuel*, Duke of *Savoy*, having refused the Tender they made him of their Crown, they chose *Frederick*, Elector Palatine of the *Rhine*, to be their King, who craving the Advice of his Father-in-Law King *James*, whether he should accept the Royal Dignity; Archbishop *Abbot* thereupon wrote his Mind to Secretary *Nanton*, 'That God had set up this Prince, his Majesty's Son-in-Law, to propagate the Gospel, and protect the Oppressed; That he durst not but advise to follow when God leads; That by Degrees the Kings of the Earth shall hate the Whore; That the *Bohemians* had just Cause to reject that proud and bloody Man, who had taken that Elective Kingdom by the Donation of another; That a noble Son should not be forsaken, but other Potentates stirr'd up by our Example; That the Parliament is the old and honourable Way of raising Money; and, perhaps, God provided the Jewels laid up in the Tower by the Mother for the Preservation of the Daughter; That if Countenance be given, many brave Spirits would offer themselves.

Such was then the Judgment of the *Anti-Spanish* Party in *England*, upon whom the Eyes of the whole Empire were now fix'd, by reason of the near Alliance between it and the Palatinate; but (as *Nani* says) *Decorum* and want of Power were commonly Opposites in King *James*, he being a *Scotch* Man born, and coming to the Crown by Inheritance, was the first that govern'd the Two Nations, that were Enemies by natural Antipathy and ancient Emulation, and designing to reclaim the Fierceness of those People with Ease and Idleness, and set up his Rest in Peace, and avoid all he could the Calling of Parliaments, without which having no Power to raise Taxes, he contented himself rather to struggle with many Difficulties, than to see them meet, with a Jealousie of them, or be obliged to separate them to the Dissatisfaction of the People, or a supposed Prejudice to the supreme Power. Indeed, the King was not pleas'd, that his Son should snatch a Crown out of the Fire, and was wont to say, *The Bohemians made use of him as the Fox did of the Cat's Foot.*

*Foot.* But before he could answer the Paltsgrave's Letter, he had accepted of the Crown; and the King disavow'd the Act, and would never grace his Son-in-Law with his new Title; but sent Sir *Richard Weston* and Sir *Edward Conway*, his Ambassadors, into *Bohemia* to close up the Breach. 1619.

The King, to remove all Suspicion from his Brother of *Spain*, that this Election had not been made by his Procurement, commanded his Agent *Cortington* to give that King a plenary Account of all Proceedings; and that when he sent his Ambassador to compose the Differences, he had no other Answer, but that the Matter was referr'd to Four of the Electors; so that there was no Room left for his Mediation, whereby the *Bohemians* finding nothing was to be hoped for from that Mediation, out of meer Despair elected the Count Palatine for their King. And to clear K. *James*, his Letters to the Princes of the Union, and to the Palatine himself, expressing his Dislike of the *Bohemians* engaging against their King, were presented to the King of *Spain's* View. The *Spaniard* reply'd, That, notwithstanding that Answer, the Viscount *Doncaster* might have proceeded in his Negotiation, and, by his Master's Authority, have removed any Difficulty on the Emperor's part: But he presently endeavour'd to suspend the Emperor's Election until the *Bohemian* Controversie were first compos'd, and when in *Liege*, would have made Bonfires for the Count Palatine's being elected King of *Bohemia*. Tho' little Support could be expected from *England*, as Things were managed; the Dye was now cast: *De la Tour* and *Mansfield* were very active for the *Bohemians*, and *Vienna* it self had like to have fallen into their Hands; but *Buquoy* having luckily defeated *Mansfield* in an Ambuscade, they drew off: However, the *Bohemians* having engaged *Bethlem Gabor*, Prince of *Transylvania*, to side with them, he quickly master'd *Cassovia* in Upper *Hungary*, and afterwards *Altenburg* and *Presburg*: Then joining the Confederate *Bohemians*, and entring *Austria*, fail'd but a little of possessing the Brigdes of *Vienna*, had not *d'Ampierre* and *Maradas* maintain'd them with a brave Resistance. On the other Hand, the King of *Poland* falling in with *Ferdinand's* Interest, and sending his Forces, under *Homanay* into Upper

*Han-*

1619. *Hungary*, there defeated *Ragotzi*, *Gabor's* General; and the Duke of *Saxony* disliking the Royalty of his fellow Elector, and his Joining with *Gabor*, who (he said) came in with the *Turks* Consent to make a Desolation in the Empire, fell in with *Ferdinand's* Interest; and *Gabor* yielding to a Cessation of Arms in *Hungary*, this gave *Homanay* an Opportunity to march into *Silesia* and *Moravia*, to *Buquoy* to go into Upper *Austria*, and to *d'Ampierre* to follow *la Tour* into *Bohemia*. Indeed, the Thoughts and Applications of most of the Princes of *Europe* were now turn'd towards this Kingdom, and it may be said to be like a great Lake, wherein several were fishing with various Designs: *Ferdinand* look'd upon it as his Patrimony, *Frederick* as a Gift conferr'd upon him, *Saxony* and *Bavaria* gaped after Spoils; and some there were, who watching Accidents, hoped, when others were tired out, to reap the Fruits of War for themselves. The House of *Austria* was truly at this time the Dye of *Europe's* Fortune; some were for exalting, others for depreting it, but the greatest Number designed the Preservation of the Ballance, and to keep it in a midling State of Fortune: However, all Parties made use of Pretensions of Piety and State Policy, tho' Princes of several Opinions associated together, and Religion in this unnatural Contest even made War upon it self. *Spain's* Preparations were great; the King of *England* almost seem'd the only Prince that would not take the Alarm in Favour of his Son-in-Law, but vainly hoping to compose all by the *Spanish* Treaty, Sir *Walter Aston* was sent Ambassador into *Spain*, and *Gondamor* return'd for *England*. The Articles for Liberty of Conscience to the *Infanta* and her Family were enlarged and allow'd by the King, who assured the *Spaniards*, That he had done as much for the Roman Catholicks as the Times would bear, promised that none of them should be condemned upon any Capital Law; and that he would do his utmost to oblige them to him.

*Spanish*  
Match  
pursued.

Things standing in this Posture, in respect to *Germany*, *England* and *Spain*, we'll step into *France*, which we left last with *Espernon's* Project, to free the Queen-Mother, and to conduct her from *Loches* to *Angoulême*. Order and Decency required that the Duke should



should have the King's Leave to quit *Metz*; wherefore for fear of an absolute Refusal, he went cunningly to work, and represented to the Court, that his Allowance being not well paid, he could not live splendidly enough there, and spend so much as became the Governour of a great City, that lay in the Road from *France* to *Germany*; and for that Reason, he pretended to give way to his evil Fortune, and to have a Desire to repose himself now in his advanced Age, upon his own Estate. They amused him at first with some Hopes, but at last the King wrote to him in the Beginning of this Year, That he thought it necessary for his Service, now the Troubles in *Germany* were increased, that he should continue for some time longer in his Government; but at the same time he made him hope for his Consent, to make a Journey to *Angoulmois* and *Santonge*, as the Duke pretended, when his Affairs were in such a Posture as to allow him to be far from the Frontiers. All this while *Luines* was strangely careless and insensible; for a Servant of *Rucellai* carrying Letters to the Queen, wherein she was acquainted with the Time when the Duke was to part from *Metz*, and the Measures taken to conduct her to *Angoulême*, and suspecting there might be something contained therein, which the Court would be glad to know, he went directly to *Paris*, and proposed to some of the Favourite's Servants to discover to him a great Secret, provided he was well rewarded; but *Luines* neglecting the Information, and in 2 or 3 Days time not admitting him into his Presence, *du Buisson*, a Counsellor in the Parliament of *Paris*, and a Servant of the Queen-Mother, very luckily came to understand that *Rucellai's* Servant was in Town, and being surprized he had not come to him, as he had always done before, he began to suspect some Treachery in the Matter; wherefore making strict Enquiry what was become of the Servant, and being assured he had been seen at *Luines* his Gate, he was more uneasy than before; but bethinking himself of the Matter, he procured a Man to go to the Servant, as from *Luines*, who gave him Five Hundred Crowns Reward, and took the Letters from, and so there was no more heard of the Ahbor's Man, it being supposed he was slain by the

1619. the same Hands that gave him the Money, for the Sake of it.

*Espernon*  
leaves  
*Metz*.

Before the Duke left *Metz*, he sent the Arch-bishop of *Toulouse* before, and wrote a Letter to the King the 27th of *January*, to desire him not to take it ill that he went to his Government of *Angoulmois* and *Santonge*, since Things were then in such a Posture, that he had nothing to fear on that Side from the Enemies; and that he had left his second Son the Marquess of *La Valette*, to command there in his Stead. Being arrived in *Angoulmois*, he was very uneasy that he could hear no News from the Queen-Mother; the Treachery of the Abbot *Rucellai's* Man was the Reason of it: For *du Buiffon* had not yet sent the Letters to her, which he had happily got out of the Rogue's Hands; whereupon the Duke in this Perplexity dispatch'd *du Plessis*, a Confident of his, to *Blois*, to know how it stood with the Queen: He had Orders to go by the Way of *Loches*, to put *la Ilie*, who commanded there, upon preparing all Things in good Order for her Reception. The Queen, who had communicated the Secret to some Lords, was much dissuaded from putting herself in the Power of so haughty a Man as *Espernon*, and particularly her Kinsman the Duke de *Bellegarde* was very averse to it; but the Matter being agreed, *du Plessis* disposed the Count of *Brienne*, her Master of the Horse, to contribute towards her Escape: He sent to the Archbishop of *Toulouse*, who was advanced as far as *Loches* with the Duke his Father, to desire him to come to *Montrichard*, that so her Passage might be secured, and the Road be free, and less dangerous. In the mean time, the Queen got out at her Closet Window by a Ladder on the 21st of *Feb.* in the dead of the Night, being accompanied by one Maid, the Count of *Brenne*, and 3 or 4 Persons more: She found so much Trouble to get down the first Ladder, that she would not venture the second, and therefore they wrapt her up in a Cloak, and gently carry'd her down. *Brenne* and *Plessis* held her under the Arms till she walk'd beyond the Bridge of *Blois*, where her Coach waited for her, and from whence she safely arrived at *Montrichard*. Here they had Re-

Queen-  
Mother  
makes her  
Escape.

Relays of Horſe, and they uſed all the Haſte they could to get betimes to *Loches*. *Eſpernon* went to meet her, with 500 Horſe: She ſtaid there Two Days, and then went to *Angoulefme*, being very uncertain what Answer the King her Son would make to the Letter ſhe wrote to him from *Loches*. It's impoſſible to expreſs the Concern of the Court at this Adventure. *Luines*'s beſt Friends adviſed him upon this Occaſion to reconcile himſelf to the Prince of *Conde*, the better to ſupport his Interſt; but this did not take, and all People's Tongues were now looſe to ſay what they pleaſed about the Government. *Luines* perſwaded the King to raiſe an Army, while the Queen, who was well advertiſed of it, wrote to all her Friends, and many of the Heads of the *Hugonot* Party, though without much Succeſs. She alſo at the ſame time writ to the Chancellor *Sillery, du Vair*, Keeper of the Seals, and to the Preſident *Jeannin*, requiring them to perform the Duties of their Offices in acquainting the King, That he would commit the greateſt Error in the World, if he marched at the Head of his Troops againſt an innocent and unfortunate Mother. Theſe Lettets, which were made publick on purpoſe, very much animated the People againſt *Luines*: Hereupon the Council, the Parliament, and others, were much divided in their Opinions about the juſt Meaſures the Court ſhould take in ſuch a Conjuncture; but at length the King, by the Advice of *Deageant*, order'd the Count of *Bethune* to carry his Answer to the Queen's firſt Letter to him, and to aſſure her the King deſired to give her Satisfaction; That he ſhould hearken to the good Advice of his Mother, and that ſhe ſhould have the Liberty of being in ſome other City beſides *Blois*. *Bethune* had Orders to preſs the Queen to ſeparate from *Eſpernon*, and to offer her more advantageous Conditions in caſe ſhe abandon'd him to the King's juſt Reſentments; but at the very firſt Conference with her, he ſaw it was in vain to propoſe it. She gave him immediately to underſtand, That her Heart was not capable of ſo horrid a Piece of Ingratitude; and therefore *Bethune* wrote to the King to adviſe him againſt making the new Levies, and ſuch Warlike Preparations, which would give the Queen too much Umbrage in a Time

1619.

Queen sol-  
licits the  
Prote-  
stants.

of Treaty. However, the King went on ; but, well knowing what a Deference her Majesty had for Ecclesiasticks, he resolv'd to send Father *Berulle*, Superior-General of the Oratory, to her, as being a Person she much esteem'd for the Sweetness of his Temper, Probity and Prudence: He had Orders to explain himself only on a certain Point to *Bethune*, and the Archbishop of *Sens*. In the mean time, the Queen, as great a Zealot as she was for the Church of *Rome*, would now in her Disgrace sue for the Assistance of the Protestants ; and *Espernon*, their declared Enemy, carried on some Intrigues at *Roche* to engage the General Assembly held there to stir in favour of the Queen, and against the great Authority of *Luines*, with whom the Reformed were much dissatisfied. The Conjunction was indeed favourable for her Majesty, and the Assembly had very near taken a Resolution in her Behalf, if *du Plessis Mornay* had not seasonably prevented it, and exhorted them to make use of that Opportunity to obtain at least of the Court part of their Demands. The main Thing was the Innovations made in the Province of *Bearn*. *Roan*, *Lesdeguieres* and *du Plessis Mornay* were very solicitous about finding out a Way of Accommodation, in such a Manner as that the King's Authority might be preserved, and the Reformed of *Bearn* receive Satisfaction as to the Church-Lands, and other Things taken from them. Tho' Things seem'd to have a fair Prospect, yet some Courtiers were for pushing it to Extremity, and represented to the King, that it was too great a Shock to his Authority to suffer the Convocating and Holding of that General Assembly without his Leave, and even contrary to his Will ; and so the Parliament of *Paris*, in the Beginning of the Year, put forth an Arrest, whereby they declared them Rebels, at well as those who had deputed them. *Du Plessis Mornay* was much disturbed hereat, and was terribly afraid lest the whole Body of the Reformed should rise upon the News of the Queen's Escape ; and therefore, as a very wise Man, making good use of the Conjunction in favour of his own Religion, he managed Things so efficaciously at Court, that the said Arrest against the Assembly was revoked ; the King declared, they had met together with his Approbation,



bation, allow'd them to hold another in September near Loudun, and there were Hopes left for an amicable Compofure of the Affairs of *Bearn*. 1619.

At the fame time Preparations of War went on Civil War both on the King and Queen's Side: The Count of *Schomberg*, the King's Lieutenant-General in *Limofin* under the Duke of *Efpernon*, who was Governour, declared againft him, and laid Siege to the Abby of *Uzesche*, into which the Duke had put a fmall Garri- fon. *Efpernon* haften'd to relieve it, but came too late: The Queen was fomewhat mortified hereat, but being really frightned with the March of the Duke of *Mayn*, fhe fent to defire *Efpernon* fpeedily to return to her Aififtance, who managed Things with that Prudence and Conduct, that he ftopp'd *Mayn's* Progreff, tho' his Troops were much inferior to the King's. On the other Hand, the Inhabitants of *Bologna* in *Picardy*, of which *Efpernon* was Governour, and who did not love him, readily open'd their Gates to the King's Troops; but their Design to furprize *Metz* mifcarrying, both Parties began to refume a peaceable Temper: *Richlieu* was privately allow'd to return to the Queen, the Pope's Nuncio became Mediator, and at laft the Cardinal *Rochefoucault* and the Count of *Bethune* agreed upon the Articles with the Queen, whereby fhe had the Liberty allow'd her for the future to go where fhe pleas'd, and even to the King's Prefence, The Duke of *Efpernon*, and others that had ferved her, were to be reftored to their Offices, and to the Kings Favour: The Queen was difcharged of the Debts fhe had contracted fince her Escape from *Blois*, and her Revenues confirmed to her. They fquabbled very much about allowing the Queen a convenient Bridge to pafs over the *Loire*, when fhe had a mind to it; but at laft they agreed, that befides the Government of *Anjou*, the City and Castle of *Angers*, and the Brigde of *Ce*, the King fhould gave his Mother alfo the Castle of *Chinon* in *Tourain*. Articles of Accommodation.

Things being thus concluded, the Duke of *Savoy* went to make a Vifit to the Queen-Mother at *Angoulefme*; and all the Management now was to get her to go to the King at *Tours*, who was advanced fo far to receive her: She made many Scruples and Excufes upon it; yet tho' *Luines* was in the mean time by a

1619. *Brevet* made Duke and Peer of *France*, she at last left *Angoulême* on the 29th of *August*, and being attended with Ten Coaches, of Six Horses each, and 500 Horse, was conducted by *Espernon* to the Frontiers of his Government of *Angoulmois*, where at parting she made him a Present of a rare Diamond, and desired him always to wear it, as a Testimony of the Acknowledgments of a Princess who was beholden to him for her Liberty. She went as far as *Poitiers*, accompanied by her Ladies of Honour, Duke of *Montbazou*, Bishop of *Luzon*, and others of Quality, where she was received by the King's Coaches; and the Cardinal *de Retz* and *Arnoux*, the King's Confessor, accompanied by a great Number of Gentlemen, were order'd to go and meet her; and *Luines* some time after going to wait upon her, she proceeded to the King at *Tours*, where they met with all the seeming Joy and Consolation in the World. I should have noted before, that *Conde* was promised his Liberty as soon as Matters should be accommodated with the Queen: This he expected now with Impatience, and it was the Design of *Luines*, since he thought he should not be able, without the Support of the first Prince of the Blood, to withstand the Queen and her Interest. There were, indeed, some of the Great Ones dispos'd to fall in with her against the Favourite; and some would have perswaded her to be the Instrument of the Prince's Liberty; but she declining that, *Luines* pursued his Design. Liberty was allow'd the Princess Dowager of *Conde* and *Rocheport*, for whom the Prince had a great Kindness, to go and see him when they pleas'd. At last *Luines* going to *Paris*, carried the Prince a very obliging Letter from the King, who invited him to go forthwith to *Chantilly*, where he should see him. The King received him very kindly, and afterwards sent a Declaration to the Parliament of *Paris* in his Favour, wherein he threw all the Blame of the Prince's Imprisonment upon the Audaciousness of some Persons, who had abused the Name and Authority of the King: But the Queen-Mother, who was neither pleas'd with the Prince's Liberty, nor this Declaration, began to be very chagreen upon that Matter, which *Lewis* and his Favourite were well aware of: They perceived *Espernon*,

Interview  
between  
the King  
and  
Queen-  
Mother.

non, and several other discontented Lords concerting new Obligations with the Queen, *Luines* was also apprehensive of the Reformed's being won by them. There was now a General Assembly of them held at *Loudun*, with the King's Leave, who thought fit to send Deputies to the Queen-Mother to felicitate her happy Arrival in the Neighbourhood, and to communicate to her their Demands to the King: She receiv'd them very well, but would not meddle with their Proposals, seeing (as she modestly said) they belong'd to the King and his Council. The Assembly consisted of several Persons of Quality and Merit, and one of their first Resolutions was to form a kind of a Pecuniary Cahier; wherein all the Reform'd Churches of *France* unanimously insisted upon the Revocation of the Edict about *Bearn*, the continuing to them their Cautionary Towns, and some other Articles. This was, indeed, a new Method, since formerly they were wont to present their Requests and Complaints in a general Cahier; but now, that they might avoid the Court Artifices, who usually eluded their just Demands, they made a Trial for once of presenting from time to time some separate Articles, and to wait for the King's Answer when he was pleas'd to give it: But they were mistaken in their Measures, for the Court looking upon this as an Innovation, rejected it with much Haughtiness. The wife *du Pleffis Moray* was aware of it, and did not only represent to the King's Council the Necessity of allaying the Heat like to be in the Assembly, but also exhorted the Deputies of *Loudun* seriously to reflect upon the Inconveniences of carrying Things to an Extremity, and exposing so many excellent Churches almost to inevitable Ruin.

1619.

Assembly  
of the Re-  
form'd at  
*Loudun*.

If we make a Step into *Spain*, there we find *Philip III.* *Philip III.* after having frequently fail'd in his Promises goes into of visiting the Realm of *Portugal*, now suddenly set *Portugal*. out in *April* for that Country, bringing with him Prince *Philip*, and the Princesses *Elizabeth* and *Mary*, and (as his Father had done) he made his publick Entry into *Lisbon* on *St. Peter's Day*. His Reception was His Re- the greatest that ever till then had been heard of; for ception. the *Portuguese*, ravished with Affection and Joy to see their Prince among them, erected such Fabricks

1619.

on the Land, and made such mighty Works on the River, as seem'd to fill up both those Elements of Land and Water, and scarce left Room for the admiring Multitude to behold him that all those Expences were made for. It is impossible (says my Author) to describe the Particulars of this most glorious Entry. The River *Tagus* was cover'd with an innumerable Multitude of Vessels, built in the Shape of several Fishes and Sea-Monsters. The King was brought in a Galley (attended by many others) built with such admirable Workmanship, that the like was hardly before seen, and it obliterated the Memory of the famous one made by *Ptolemy*, King of *Egypt*, which at that Time was the Wonder of the World. Whilst this Multitude of Vessels row'd down the River, the Thundring of the Cannon from the Vessels themselves, and from the Castle, shook the Earth, and rent the Air. Being come on Shore, the King proceeded to the Cathedral, and thence to the Palace, entertaining his Eyes with such prodigious Sights of Gold and Silver, that the Time falling short to view all, he return'd the next Day to behold the lofty Fabricks, which expressed the Greatness of their Affection who received him. Such was the Magnificence of the Piles erected, such the Cost bestow'd on them, and such the solid Strength of them, that they seem'd as if design'd for many Ages, not for the Use of one only Day, which was too short a Space even to demolish them.

He holds  
a Parlia-  
ment.

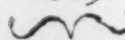
The Majesty of these Works was so amazing, that the King, tho' used to Regal Entertainments, said, *He never till that Day thought himself a great King*: Hereby seeming to call *Lisbon*, *Felicitas Philippica*, as once *Julius Caesar* gave it the Name of *Felicitas Julia*. In the Palace he perform'd the Two solemn Acts of Swearing the Prince, and holding the *Cortes*, or Parliament, which met with extraordinary Joy and Satisfaction to all Men, but in the End disappointed them of their Hopes. First, for that the King was scarce seen by his Subjects; and next, for the unsatisfactory Answer he gave to their Demands. The Reason of it was, that his Coming to the Kingdom and Calling this Parliament were Actions proceeding from his own Inclination; but the Disobliging of them seem'd

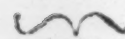


seem'd to be wholly the Product of the ill Advice of his Ministers. His Favourites, fearing he should take an Affection to the *Portuguese*, and, perhaps, continue among them, were uneasy at the Splendor of his Entertainment, and so much Influence had they over him, that he gave more Credit to their Words, than to those Marks of Respect and Loyalty he saw with his Eyes.

*Philip* having spent Seven Months in this Progress, we'll pass now into *Italy*, where there was a sort of a Calm for the present, and we find the *Venetians* make a very wise Step towards their future Security. *Suriانو* was now their Resident at the *Hague*, who being a Man of a ripe Judgment, and great Dexterity in the Management of Persons, became intimate with the Prince of *Orange* and the Chief of the States, and so easily penetrating into their Sense of Things from Discourses, he proceeded to a Treaty, and at length Articles were drawn of a League to be concluded between the Two Republicks for common Defence; but the same being proposed at *Venice* for the Approbation of the Senate, some of them were for deferring of it, particularly *Giovanni Nani*, as believing the Republick, tho' press'd with great and grievous Suspensions, ought not at that Time to embark her self in that Interest, which, presupposing a perpetual War, would expose her to so many and such great Dangers and Expences, that the Remedy would be found worse than the present Evil. But this Opinion hitting not the Genius, and meeting not with the Approbation of all, *Sebastian Veniero* particularly opposed it, and having in a smart Speech moved the Senate as well to be angry with, as to be jealous of the Proceedings of the *Spaniards*, a Defensive League was concluded for Fifteen Years, whereby, in case the *Dutch* were invaded, the Republick engaged to assist them with 50000 Florins a Month; and they on their part were to send an equivalent Succour of Men, Ships or Money, as the Senate should require: The *Spaniards* were much alarm'd with this new Alliance, especially the Duke of *Offuna*, Vice-Roy of *Naples*, a secret and inveterate Enemy of the *Venetians*; but having for some time past been projecting to make himself King, and the Court of *Spain* entertaining some Suspi-

1620. cions of it, he was about the Beginning of this Year, by a Stratagem, dispossest of his Government by Cardinal *Borgia*.

1619.  The *Turks* this Year being engaged in a War against the *Persians*, it comes not within our Province, much cannot be said of the Northern Crowns, only King *Gustavus* of *Sweden*, upon a Prospect of a War with *Poland*, thought it his wisest Way to make sure of the King of *Denmark*; and therefore having paid him a large Sum of Money that was due for the Redemption of the City of *Elfsbourg*; they had afterwards an Interview at *Holmstadt*, a Town upon the Frontiers, where they behaved themselves with much Frankness and Sincerity towards one another, and when they discoursed of their mutual Rights, were ready to hearken to what was reasonable.

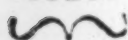
1620.  From hence let us hasten Home, and to begin with the Domestick Affairs of *Britain*: The Earl was now made Marquess of *Buckingham*, to his Mastership of the Horse was added Lord Admiral of *England*, and lying in the King's Bosom, every Man paid Tribute to his Smiles. His Mother was made Countess of *Buckingham*, her eldest Son made first a Knight, and afterwards Viscount *Purbeck*; her other Son was created Earl of *Anglesey*; and now happy is he that can get a Kinswoman, it is the next Way to get a thriving Office, or some new swelling Title. The King that never much cared for Women, had his Court swarm'd with the Marquess's Kindred, so that little Ones danced and frisk'd up and down the Privy Lodgings like Fairies in a Barn; and it was no small Stock of Sap that must maintain all these Suckers. Sir *Henry Mountague*, Lord Chief-Justice, who was reported to give 20000 *l.* for the Office of Lord-Treasurer, before the Year expired, had it taken from him, and it was conferred upon Sir *Lionel Cranfield*, who, by being bred up in the Custom-House, and knowing the secret Contrivances of those Offices, knew best how to supply by Projects, what a wanton and griping Court had consumed in Riot and Prodigality. But the great Step to this Office, was *Cranfield's* marrying one of the Marquess's Kindred, which soon raised him to be Earl of *Middlesex*; and the Lord Chief-Justice,

Justice, in Lieu of his Money, was made a President, 1620.  
I mean of the Privy-Council, Viscount Mandeville, Earl of Manchester, and after Worcester's Decease, Lord Privy-Seal. to lick himself whole again. The His Mo-  
Marquess of Buckingham, in appearance made all ther rules  
these Removes and Advancements; but, in Truth, all

the Affairs in Church and State were transacted privately by his Mother, for most Addresses were made first to her, and so conveyed to be finished by her Son, who minded his Pleasure more than his Profit; which made Gundomar, among his other witty Stories, write into Spain, *That there was never more hope of England's returning to Popery than now; for there were more Prayers and Offerings made here to the Mother than to the Son.* The Marquess was a general Lover, and treated all Womankind accordingly, only to gratifie his own unlawful Ends, and then dismiss them for the next celebrated Beauty. This Humour he thought to have practised upon the Earl of Rutland's only Daughter, who was Mistress of all her Father's great Fortunes. He tempts her, carries her to his Lodgings in White-Hall, keeps her there some time, and then returns her back to her Father; but the stout old Earl of Rutland sends him this threatening Message; *That he was too much a Gentleman to suffer such an Indignity; and therefore if he did not forthwith repair his Daughter's Honour by marrying her, no Greatness should protect him from Justice.* Buckingham, who, perhaps, made use of this Stratagem to get the Father's good Will, she being the greatest Match in the Kingdom, had no Reason to dislike the Proposal, and therefore quickly salved up the Wound by consummating the Marriage. This young Lady was bred a Papist by her Mother, but was converted by Dr. White to be a zealous Protestant; which thwarting the old Countess of Buckingham's Humour, who was a bigotted Romanist, she, with the Help of the Jesuits, caused her to apostatize.

In the mean time, little Care was taken about the Paltsgrave, whom the Emperor now proscribes, proclaims him guilty of High-Treason, and absolves all his Subjects from their Allegiance; tho' in Flanders Twenty Six Thousand Foot, and Four Thousand Horse

1620.



One Regiment  
only sent  
from Eng-  
land to  
the Pala-  
tinate.

A Bene-  
volence  
for the  
Defence  
of the Pa-  
latinate.

were raised under Marquess *Spinola*. Its true, the King of *England* sent to know the Cause of so great Preparations, and his Answer was, That his Commission was seal'd up, and not to be open'd till his Army was compleat, and brought to a Rendezvous. When his Commission was open'd, he was to make War with all those that were confederate with the *Bohemian* Rebels, which he communicated to the *English* Ambassador; and yet no more could be obtain'd from the King than one Regiment, under the Command of Sir *Horatio Vere*, consisting most of Gentlemen: The Earls of *Oxford* and *Essex*, and several Persons of Quality were the Commanders under him; and this handful of Men reached the *Palatinate* with some Difficulty.

The King was so lull'd asleep, that the Marquess of *Buckingham* writ to *Gondamar*, That the King would stand Neuter for Conscience, Honour, and Example sake; he being against all Wars for Religion, his Son having accepted the Crown while he was in Treaty for him, and the Translation of Crowns by the People's Authority being of dangerous Consequence; and yet he would not quietly see his Children dispossest, and the Emperor reject all Overtures of Peace. Indeed, our State-Ministers, even those of the *Spanish* Faction, discern'd the *Spaniards* trifling with us, yet still discover'd a Willingness to wait further, for the *English* Patience seem'd invincible. In the meantime, for the Support of the *Palatinate* the Privy-Council began to raise Monies by Letters directed to divers Earls, Viscounts, Bishops and Barons, importing, That the *Palatinate* being the ancient Inheritance of the Count *Palatine*, and to descend to his Majesty's Grand-Children, was invaded by a Foreign Enemy, and a great part of it in the Possession of Strangers; That his Majesty out of Consideration of Nature, Honour and State, had declared himself in the Course of an Auxilliary War for the Defence and Recovery thereof: That a Supply by other Means being not to be had timely enough to answer so pressing an Occasion, they had agreed to begin with themselves in the Offer of a voluntary Gift to his Majesty, not doubting but his Lordship, being a Peer of the Realm, would follow their Example. The like was sent to the Lord Mayor of *London*.

Fer-



*Ferdinand* on his part, you may be sure, was not idle, but having confirm'd *Bavaria* Head of the Catholick League, which he designed to oppose with all the Vigour imaginable to the Protestant Union; and having prepared all Matters for War, sent divers Troops to reinforce his General *Buquoy* in *Bohemia*; and about the same time Duke *Maximilian* likewise march'd with the Catholick Army towards that Country; where having join'd *Buquoy*, they gave Battle to the Protestants at *Weissenberg*, near *Prague*, on the 18th of *November*. At first the Elector Palatine had the better; but at length, the Fight having continued for a whole Day, the Victory inclin'd to the *Imperialists*, who absolutely defeated, and made such Slaughter of the *Bohemians*, that about 9000 of their best Soldiers remain'd dead upon the Place: The rest flying with great Precipitation, lost all their heavy Cannon, and about 100 of their Colours. Among the Dead was found the Count of *Pappenheim*, afterwards so famous in the *German War*, who being yet breathing, was taken up, and recover'd of his Wounds. The Count Palatine *Frederick* seeing all was lost, and fearing to be apprehended in *Prague*, retired thence with his Family to *Breslaw* in *Silesia*, to consider of the Means of re-establishing his Affairs.

The Consequence of this Defeat was an uninterrupted Series of Victories to the Emperor: The Duke of *Bavaria* reduced all *Bohemia*, the Elector of *Saxony* *Alsace*, and the Count of *Buquoy* subjected *Moravia* with an incredible Celerity. The Emperor's Success being so great, *Frederick* thought himself no longer safe in *Breslaw*, and therefore retired into the Marquisate of *Brandenburg*, always endeavouring to recover his almost ruin'd Condition, and to recruit his Losses. But, to frustrate entirely the Designs of the Party, the Emperor had ever since the 21st of *January*, proscribed not only the Palatine, as aforesaid, but also the Marquess of *Brandenburg*, the Prince of *Anhalt*, the Count of *Hohenloe*, and divers other Princes that had sided with that Faction, depriving them absolutely of their Dignities and Estates. The Execution of this he had given in Commission to the Duke

1620.

*Ferdinand*  
routs the  
Elector  
Palatine.

Emperor  
rewards  
and pu-  
nishes di-  
vers Per-  
sons.

1620. Duke of *Bavaria*, whom, in Consideration of his Services, he had at the same time invested in the Electorate *Palatine*. He also gave *Alsace* to the Elector of *Saxony*, as a Recompence for those Provinces he had received from him in *Silesia*. Whilst he thus gratified his Friends, he neglected not to punish some of his Enemies severely, to the Number of 43. Among these were Nine of the Directors of the Kingdom of *Bohemia*, who were all beheaded.

As soon as the ill News of the Battle near *Prague*, came into *England*, the King called a Council, where the Earls of *Oxford* and *Essex* (who were newly return'd from thence) and some Noblemen and Commanders were appointed to meet together, and advise with other experienced Persons upon what should be referr'd to them from the Board: The Particulars referr'd to them were, 1. What Proportion of Men, Munition, Victuals, Shipping and Treasure would be sufficient for that Enterprize. 2. By what time these Forces must be in readiness: Where the Arms, Munition and Victuals might be best provided; with other incident Circumstances: And Mr. Secretaries were to acquaint them with the Enemy's Strength in the *Palatinate*.

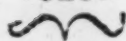
The Spaniards flatter K. James.

On the other hand, the *Spaniards* never flatter'd King *James* more than now: They told him, He should do what he pleas'd in the *Palgrave's* Restitution; That the *Infanta's* Portion was preparing, and the Pope must grant the Dispensation: And *Cottington* now cries up *Gondamar*, who had gain'd here the Access of a Favourite rather than of an Ambassador. Some *English* were suspected to be Pensioners to *Spain*, as may be gather'd by that King's Instructions to his Ambassador here, viz. That he hath endeavour'd to promote the Interest of the Catholics in *England*, as well in the late Queen's Reign as in this; yet by the ill Offices done by the Puritans and Protestants (of whom the greater Part of the King of *England's* Council consisted) their Calamity still continued: That herein to avoid Jealousies he hath proceeded with all fitting Wariness and Dissimulation: That *D. A.* shall inform him what hath pass'd herein, and how he (the Ambassador) shall now govern himself for the fu-

The King of Spain's Instructions to his Ambassador in England.

future : That although it may be believed that those Catholicks who have undertaken the Management for the Rest may be faithful, yet lest any Heretick should be secretly among them, he must tell them how much the King of *Spain* desired to ease them from the Pressures Queen *Elizabeth* put upon them, and that the King of *England* would reconcile himself to the Catholick Church : That he advised them to shew themselves loyal Subjects, and abstain from all ill Practices and Speeches against the King's State or Person ; which Manner of Dealing, if it came to the King's Knowledge (as possibly it might) it would oblige him, and make him more confident of his (the King of *Spain*'s) Amity : That he should do that dexterously, and inform himself from *A. D.* how far he might trust the Negotiants for the Catholicks ; and what Pensions were allotted to that King's Ministers and others, that he might serve himself thereof in all Matters of Consequence, they being given to that End : That he should tell every Man what his Pension was, to prevent being defrauded of any part : That it should be paid punctually, to oblige them to do their Service punctually : That he should be advertised how each Pensioner behaved himself ; and, above all, should inform himself of the King of *England*'s Affairs ; what Treasure he had, in what Esteem with his Subjects, how they stood affected to each other, and towards their Neighbours, particularly towards him (the King of *Spain* :) What Correspondence the King of *England* had with *France*, with the Neutrals of *Holland* and *Venice* ; what they treated of, and their Designs in hand : For the attaining whereunto *D. A.* would open several Things to him, which he must follow. *Buckingham*, and his Dependants, follow'd the King's Inclinations ; but *Lenox*, *Hamilton* and *Pembroke* intimated their Dissent. It's said, that *Gondamar* charged in his Accounts 1000*l.* to Sir *Robert Cotton*, a Person ever averse to the House of *Austria* ; and Reparation being demanded, it was obtain'd, but with a *Salvo* to the Ambassador's Honour, the Mistake being laid upon another. Thus Things stood in *England* towards the End of 1620.

1620.



As for *France*, the new Year was begun there with the Creation of above 55 Knights of the King's Order: The first was the Duke of *Anjou*, the King's only Brother; others of them were the Count of *Soissons*, Prince of the Blood, the Dukes of *Guise*, *Mayn*, *Chevreuse*, *Vendosme*, *Angoulesme*, *Elbeuf*, *Montmorency*, *Uzes*, *Retz* and *Luines*. But to return again to the Assembly of the Reformed at *Loudun*, and without recapitulating any thing already said concerning some particular Articles they sent to the Court, there were now Commissioners sent to them with positive Orders to separate by the 22d of *January* at farthest; upon which they resolved to send new Deputies to the King, to desire him to let them stay there, till his Majesty had return'd an Answer to the *Cahiers* they they had presented him with. *La Haie*, who was one of them, made very proper Excuses to the King, upon his presenting the Assembly's Letter to him, and intimated as if he had something more to say by way of Remonstrance, when the King, by the Usher of his Closet, gave him to understand, That they should withdraw, as being People he was not pleased to hearken to: The Chancellor *Silleri* was the only Person that endeavoured to prevent the ill Effects which such a haughty Conduct would produce, by telling the Deputies, who lay prostrate before the King, That if the Assembly would send Persons to treat with the King's Council, they would find out a Way to accommodate Matters.

Affairs of  
the Assembly of  
*Loudun*.

The Court was also much perplex'd about the Parliament of *Paris* refusing to verifie a Pecuniary Edict for the King, and their Vigour was a kind of Curb upon *Luines*: He was afraid lest this powerful Body should declare for the Queen-Mother and the discontented Lords; and therefore, that he might not have so many Persons to do with at once, he laboured to find out Ways to appease the Protestant Party. The *Mareschal de Lesdeguieres*, who was now come to *Paris* to be acknowledged as Duke and Peer of *France*, and the Marquess of *Chastillon* offered their Services to accommodate the Affair of the Assembly, and labour'd conjointly with the Prince of *Conde* and *Luines* for this purpose; but *Lesdeguieres* and *Chastillon*'s Aims being chiefly to obtain some Favours for them-



themselves from the Court, agreed upon certain Articles with *Conde* and *Luines* to the Disadvantage of the Assembly, more particularly by continuing their Cautionary Towns to them for Four Years, and by receiving of Two Counsellors in the Parliament of *Paris*, upon which Conditions the Deputies ought to separate. As for the other Demands, the King promised to have a Regard to them in Six Months time, and in Seven at farthest to hear the Remonstrance made by the Reformed against the Restitution of the Church-Lands in *Bearn*; and because all those Things would be construed as Delays by the Assembly, *Conde* and *Luines* engaged to obtain a Brevet, whereby the Deputies should be allow'd to meet again, in case the King's Promises were not made good. *Lesdeguieres* had sent one of his Confidants to *Loudun*, to perswade the Assembly to accept of these Terms, and *Du Plessis Mornay*, who was always a Lover of Peace, join'd his Instances to those of the Marechal for accommodating the Matter; but how much was he surprized, when he understood in the very Juncture of Time, that *Conde* had carried a Declaration to the Parliament of *Paris*, whereby the King order'd the Assembly to separate in Three Weeks time, and in case of Refusal, that they should be persecuted as Rebels, and guilty of Treason. Upon this all Things seem'd to be disposed for a Religious War; the Protestants, tho' frightned with the Declaration, yet spoke resolutely, as if they would not suffer themselves to be oppress'd without making Resistance: They began to exclaim against *Lesdeguieres*, whom they suspected more than ever; they did the same also against *Conde*. The Popish Preachers now every where let their Tongues loose against the Hereticks, and *du Plessis Mornay* began to penetrate into the Matter, and to discern that there was almost a general Conspiracy on Foot to destroy the Reformed by open Force; wherefore he wrote vigorously to *Montbazon*, *Luines's* Father-in-Law, and represented to him, That Things were going to the same Pass now as in the Reign of *Henry III.* and that *France* was like to be set on a Flame; That the Way the Duke of *Luines* had to establish his Fortune, was to prevent all sorts of Civil Wars.

1620.

On the other Hand, *Lefdeguieres* finding, that neither the King nor his Favourite said any thing to him concerning the Constable's Sword, of which *Deageant* had made an Offer to him from them, began to reflect, that it would not be his Interest to have the Protestants entirely ruined; wherefore he and *Luines* agreed, tho, from Motives of different Interests, to cure the Reformed of their Suspensions, and to come to some Accommodation with them: A Servant of the Mareschal was sent to *Loudun*, to obtain the Consent of the Assembly to the second Project, the Terms whereof were almost the same as before; tho' *Luines* had used all his Skill to make them appear more favourable. *Du Pleffis Mornay* and others were for the Assembly's accepting of them; and *Luines*, who grew more and more impatient to have them separated, got the King to go as far as *Orleans*, where they received the News of their Breaking up, after they had nominated Six of their Number to reside at Court, in Quality of Deputies-General of the Reformed Church, that so the King, according to Custom, might chuse Two of them that were most agreeable to him.

Assembly  
broke up.

But though the Court gain'd this Point, and that the King seemed very well pleased with the Compliance of the Assembly, yet Factions still Reigned; *Luines* made it his Business to keep *Conde* his Friend, and to gain the Duke of *Guise* to his Interest was his Grand Design: Endeavours were also used by the Means of his Brother the Duke of *Luxemburg*, to get the Queen-Mother to Court; but this was so far from taking effect, that the Queen seemed to be as averse to it as ever, especially now the Duke of *Mayenne* was retired from Court to his Government of *Guyenne*, without taking leave of the King. *Luines* was much embarrassed herewith, and well knowing that *Mayenne* and *Esperson* were the Two Lords of the Kingdom that were most capable to make the Queen-Mother's Pretensions good, he endeavoured to bring them over. To which end *Bellebat* was sent to *Mayenne*, with very kind Letters from the King to invite him to Court; the Duke excused himself by saying, *I am more useful to the King in my Government, than at Court*; and at the same Time in his Letter made a Thousand Protestations of his inviolable Duty and Obedience to

to his Majesty : But the Court was not content with these General Terms, that availed little, they understood very well he kept great Correspondence with *Montmorancy* and *Espernon*, and that the Parliament of *Bordeaux* was at his Devotion, that the Duke went to *Blaie* to gain over *Aubertre* the Governour. As for *Espernon*, *Luines* sent *Toiras* a Person of good Parts and penetrating Judgment to him ; who at last drew these Words from him, *I have Reason to complain, that Luines has not kept his Word with me ; but God forbid that I should ever engage in a Civil War upon my own Account ; I shall be Luines his Friend and Servant, as long as the Queen-Mother shall be pleased with it.* *Luines* was much much perplext herewith, and still more when he heard *Vendosme* who had retired to his House at *Anet*, was gone to *Angiers*, where the Duke of *Nemours* arrived at the same Time. Lastly when *Bassompierre* went to tell the Duke, that the Countess of *Soissons* was preparing to go away with her Son, and that the Grand Prior of *France* was to accompany them ; it was at first proposed to seize them, and several Councils being held thereupon, the Opinion of *Jean-nin* prevailed, that they should let them and all others that had a Mind to it, quietly depart unmolested.

Since the famous League made in the Reign of Lewis XI. by the Name of the League for the Publick Good, Queen-Mother's League. *France* never saw a more powerful Party than that formed by the Queen-Mother this Year, under the same specious pretence of obtaining the Ease of the People and Reformation of the State. There were no less than the Second Prince of the Blood, Seventeen Great Lords, Officers of the Crown and Governours of the Provinces, that took her part ; *Longueville*, the Grand Prior, and the Count of *Torigni* held all *Normandy* ; *Soissons* took care of *Perche*, and part of *Mayenne* ; *Vendosme* was Master of all the Cities upon the *Loire*, *Beis-Dauphin* held the others between the *Sartre* and the *Mayenne* : The Queen Mother had *Angers* and *Pont d. Ce* ; the Dukes of *Tremoville* and *Retz* were in possession of all the Places in *Poitou* and *Bretagne* ; *Roan* commanded in *St. John d'Angeli* ; *Espernon* disposed of *Angoulmois* and *Saintogne* ; *Aubertre* Governor of *Blaie* declared for them ; the City and Parliament of *Bordeaux*, and all *Guyenne* were at the  
De-

1620. Devotion of the Duke of *Mayenne*. In short, the Queen-Mother had Two 200 Leagues of the Maritime Provinces of *France*, from *Diep* to the Mouth of the *Garonne*, in her Interest, besides a great Number of considerable Places throughout the Kingdom, divers brave experienced Officers, able Generals, and Lords very expert in all Affairs Military and Civil; they did not pretend to Sieges, their Design was to form a puissant Army to march towards *Paris*, and to engage the People on their side, by demanding a Redress of Grievances and reforming the Abuses of the Government; the Project was excellently well laid, but very ill executed.

In the mean time they were much alarmed at Court, and various were their Opinions concerning this Affair. for which several Expedients were proposed; but what was most acceptable, was the sending of *Montbazon*, *Bellegarde*, the Archbishop of *Sens*, and the President *Jeannin* to the Queen at *Angers* with Proposals of Peace. *Bentivoglio* the Pope's Nuncio had several Times offered the good Offices of his Master for reconciling the King and his Mother, and proposed to go himself to her; but the Prince of *Conde* and the Favourite not liking that, only allowed him to write to her by the Archbishop of *Sens*. But when she came to understand, the King was resolved upon an Expedition into *Normandy*, there was no more talked of the Negotiation: And the Duke of *Roan's* Advice to her upon this Occasion, was to withdraw to *Bordeaux* to the Duke of *Mayenne*, who had with him an Army of 18000 Men, which was indeed the best Thing she could have done; but *Richlieu* craftily opposed this, his whole aim being to betray the Queen without her perceiving it, and to bring all the Lords of her Party to be at the Mercy of the King, or rather of his Favourite. He knew well enough in case she went thither, she must be influenced by *Mayenne* and *Espernon*, and not be capable of treating with the King without their concurrence, whereas the Prelate pretended to force her to a Peace, since *Luines* had promised him a share of his Authority at Court, and to demand a Cardinal's Cap for him; he flattered himself if he were once a Cardinal, the Queen, desirous to have her own Creatures in the Councils, would assist him



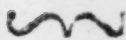
e  
e  
f  
s  
s  
l  
e  
f  
-  
7  
  
,  
t  
.  
c  
.  
-  
r  
-  
e  
n  
n  
n  
-  
-  
o  
n  
t  
-  
n  
s  
r  
e  
d  
e  
e  
d  
d  
a-  
o  
ft  
m



him to supplant the Cardinal *de Retz*, and that the Favourite, who was easily to be surprized, would consent to it, upon *Richlieu's* joining Interest with him. 1620.

While the King, pursuant to the good Advice of the Prince of *Conde*, was preparing for his Expedition to *Normandy*, he dispatched Orders to the Duke of *Chevreuse* and the Marechal *de Themines*, to oppose *Esperson* in *Limosin*, and *Mayenne* in *Guyenne*. *Rocheffoucault*, Governour of *Poitiers*, was to make Head against the Duke of *Roan* in *Poitou*: *Courtevaux* went to *Lorain* to observe the Motions of the Queen-Mother: *Nevers* and *Vitri* were entrusted to act against *la Valette* in *Metz*, and to hinder the Troops raised by the Queen-Mother in *Liege*, from entering *Champagne*: *Guise* was sent into *Provence*, with Orders to join with the Marechal *Lesdeguieres*, in case *Montmorency* should declare himself in *Languedoc* in favour of the Queen-Mother: Lastly, *Bassompierre*, Colonel-General of the *Swiss*, received Orders to draw together all the Troops dispersed in the Towns of *Champagne*, and forthwith to join the Army commanded by the Prince of *Conde*, in Quality of Lieutenant-General. This done, the King sent for all the Magistrates of *Paris*, and, after having told them of his Intentions to go to *Normandy*, he recommended to them the Preservation of the Peace of his Capital City, where the Queen his Wife, with the Chancellor and part of the Council, should continue for the Dispatch of Publick Affairs. The King was received at *Roan* with extraordinary Acclamations of Joy, and went next Day to the Parliament, where *du Vair*, the Keeper of the Seals, made a long Narration of all that was past since the Retreat of the Queen-Mother to *Angoulesme*, of the Care that had been taken to content her, and the tender Sentiments still retain'd of her; after which he declared, That the King having sent his Orders to *Longueville*, to come to him at his Entry into the Province, he had refused it, which prepared the Parliament to receive the Orders given, whereby the Duke was suspended from acting as Governour of *Normandy*, and these Orders were seconded by an Interdiction of some Officers who had taken the Duke's Part.

1620.



The Duke was, indeed, so well entrench'd at *Diep*, that the King did not think fit to go thither to attack him, but rather chose to march to the Relief of the Inhabitants of *Caen*, who had much ado to defend themselves against an Officer named *Prudent*, who commanded in the Castle for the Grand-Prior of *France*. *Praslin* laid Siege to it, and prevented the Succours of the Grand-Prior; at length the King himself arriving before the Place, threatened to hang all the Garrison, if they did not surrender; this had so much Effect upon the Soldiery, that *Prudent* thought fit to capitulate, and had honourable Terms allow'd him. The King, before his Arrival at *Caen*, had refused a Letter brought by *Sardini* to him from the Queen-Mother; but he forthwith sent a Gentleman away to *Angers* to acquaint *Bellegarde*, and Two other of the King's Commissioners, with the Reasons why he would not receive the Letter, and to require them to assure the Queen, That his Affections should never fail towards her. In the mean time, all *Normandy* submitted to the King, after the Surrendry of the Castle of *Caen*; several Persons of Note came and waited upon him; nay, *Longueville* himself seem'd as if he would come to Terms; he writ a very submissive and respectful Letter to the King, where, after some Excuses, he promised to do nothing against his Service. On the other Hand, the Queen-Mother, frightned with the Progress of her Son's Arms, resolv'd to seize *Mans*, and the other Cities that lay in the King's Way to *Angers*; wherefore she took the Field with 6000 Foot and 1200 Horse, seiz'd the Town of *La Fleche*, and advanced towards *Mans*; but her Acquisitions did no ways compensate the Loss of *Alençon*, *Vernueil* and *Dreux*, for which Reason she quickly retired to *Angers*. The King at the same time having received a Reinforcement of 8000 Foot, and about 700 Horse, which were brought him by *Bassompierre*, *Luines* began now to be much elated, and perswaded the King, who was then at *Montagne* in *Perche*, to publish a Declaration upon the Account of the Queen-Mother's taking up Arms against him; the Expressions were very wary and tender in respect to the Queen herself, and all Mismanagements laid upon ill Counsel; but for the Count and Countess of *Soissons*,

King's  
Declara-  
tion.



*sons, Vendosme, his Brother, Mayenne, Nemours, Longueville, Roan, Tremoville, Espernon, Retz, Roannes, Bois-Dauphin, Candale, la Valette, the Archbishop of Thoulouze, and all others engaged on her Side, they were declared Rebels, and guilty of Treason, especially if they laid not down their Arms in a Month's time, and quitted all Leagues and Associations both within and without the Kingdom.*

The Queen and her Party must needs be alarm'd at this Pace, but was in a perfect Astonishment to see her Son march directly, and with so much Resolution, towards her; wherefore, having advised with her Council, whether she had best wait his Coming with the 8000 Foot and 1500 Horse she had with her, till she were reinforced by *Soissons* and *Roan*, or that she should leave some Troops for the Defence of *Angers* and *Pont de Ce*, and so go and join *Mayenne* and *Espernon*, who had as many Men as could make up an Army of 30000; the base *Richlieu* diverted her from this last and good Proposal, and now as it were governing all that belong'd to her, he took care that there should be neither Powder nor Ball in *Pont de Ce*, and that his Relations, Friends and Creatures should command her Troops. In short, he had it in his Power to deliver the Queen up, if he pleas'd. The Queen, now sensible of her Weakness, sent *Bellegarde*, the Archbishop of *Sens*, and *Berulle*, to acquaint the King, that she was willing to treat with him, but one preliminary Article put a Stop to the whole; he was willing to give her good Conditions, and to pardon the Count and Countess of *Soissons*, but required that all the rest should be left to his Mercy; whereas the Queen insisted to treat conjointly for herself and her Party without Restriction; but the King's Troops having by this time taken *Pont de Ce*, through a secret Correspondence held between *Richlieu* and *Luines*, the Queen resolv'd to pass the *Loire*, and go to *Ancensis*, and then to throw herself into the Arms of *Mayenne* and *Espernon*. *Richlieu* giving immediate Notice of it to *Luines*, the King dispatched a Body of Horse to hinder the Project from being executed, which would at once have broke all the Measures of the Favourite and of *Richlieu*; so that the Queen finding her Passage thus stop't,

1620.

Articles  
between  
the King  
and Q.  
Mother.

she was wholly bent upon treating; and therefore *Bellegarde*, the Cardinal of *Sourdis*, Archbishop of *Sens*, President *Jeannin*, *Richlieu* and *Berulle* attending the King from his Mother, they soon agreed upon the Articles, whereby the Treaty of *Angoulême* was confirmed; *Lewis* promised to testify his Mother's Innocence, by a Declaration put forth according to Law, and to grant a general Pardon to all that took her Part, provided they returned to their Duty in Eight Days time after the Accommodation was signed; those whose Places and Employments the King had bestow'd upon others, were excepted, which struck more particularly at the Grand-Prior; *Richlieu* by a secret Article was promised a Cardinal's Cap. As soon as the Articles were signed, the King and his Mother had an Interview, and *Espernon*, according to the Terms of the Treaty, was the first that laid down his Arms.

There was nothing now more talk'd of, than the King's Progress into *Guyenne*; the Pretence was to confer with the Dukes of *Mayenne* and *Espernon*, tho' the real Design was to despoil *Bearn* of all its Privileges: But that the Protestants, who had very peaceable Dispositions, might not be too much heated, a Secretary of State writ to *Du Plessis Mornay*, that the King had no other Intention than to content his Reformed Subjects, by making a Governour of that Religion in *Leitoure*, as he had promised, and Registering in the Sovereign Council of *Pau* the Edict made for the Restitution of the Church-Lands in *Bearn*. *Du Plessis* answer'd very judiciously, That the King had given his Word to the Assembly at *Loudun*, to grant some Things first to the Reformed, and afterwards to hearken to the Remonstrances made him about the Edict concerning the Church-Lands in *Bearn*. It was not only to make a Protestant Governour in *Leitoure*, but to admit Two Counsellors of the same Religion into the Parliament of *Paris*, and leave to the Reformed all the Cautionary Places the late King had given them. This was wise and useful Advice, had the King, who was by this time come to *Bordeaux*, been susceptible of it; whereas the *Bearnoïs* (as the Duke of *Roan* has very well observed) on their part, knowing not how to obey,

or to keep themselves from being imposed upon by Courtiers, they deputed *de la Force*, their Governour, and the first President of *Pau*, to wait upon the King, without the Verification of the Edict, which the King stily insisted upon, who ordered them to go forthwith to *Pau*, and to return without Delay with the Edict registred. The Sovereign Council sent other Deputies to him, in order to make a Representation of the Hardship put upon them, wherein the King was so far from relenting that he proposed to his Council to go to *Bearn* himself to have it done. *Mayenne* did all he could to dissuade him from it, but the opposite Party's Arguments prevailing, he set out for *Pau*, which presently open'd her Gates to him, from whence he went to *Navarrois*, a strong Place in *Bearn*, put out the Protestant Governour, and put one *Payenne*, a zealous Catholick, in his Stead: Thence returning to *Pau*, he gave the great Church to the Papists, restored the Bishops and Abbots, allow'd them the Stations they were wont to have in the States of the Country before the Reformation, and restored the Church-Lands. Lastly, In Consequence of a Reunion of *Bearn* and the Lower *Navarre* to the Crown, he erected a new Parliament at *Pau*, like the other Parliaments of *France*.

King goes to *Bearn*.

*Bearn* loses its Privileges.

*Italy*, that had enjoy'd some small Respite, tho' perpetually rack'd with Fears and Jealousies, began now to be disturbed with the Affair of the *Valtolina*, a Streak of Land between *Tyrol*, the *Milanese*, *Rhetia* and the Territories of *Venice*, called *Brescia* and *Bergamo*, and subject to the *Grisons*, who having banished divers Persons out of it for ill Practices, these and others pretending Innovations had been made there against the Popish Religion, and that the People groan'd under the Yoak of a base Government, solicited the *Spaniards* to seize the whole Country. The first Stone that had been laid for this Conquest, was, *Fuentes*, the Governour of *Milan*, his Building a Fort at the Entrance into the Valley which he called according to his own Name, and has even in this present War *Europe* is engaged in been serviceable to the *Spaniards*. *Feria*, the now Governour, in Concert with 300 Men out of *Tyrol*, and the Advantage of a sudden and general Insurrection in the Country,

The Affairs of the *Valtolina*.

1620. like a Flash of Lightning, over-run it in a Moment, at which the *Venetians* took the Alarm, and having by their Money and Interest engaged the *Grifons*, and the Cities of *Zurich* and *Bearn* to attempt the Recovering of it, divers Actions happen'd between them and the *Spaniards*; they were repuls'd at *Morbegno*, but had their Revenge in taking *Sandrio*; but a fresh Reinforcement of 4000 Foot and 400 Horse coming out of the *Milaneze*, the other were driven from the Bridge of *Gauda*, and lost *Traona*, *Sandrio*, *Riva* and *Nova*: The *Spaniards* sustained some Loss at *Bormio*, but having fortunately prevail'd at *Tirano*, their Enemies thought of nothing now but retiring Home, and left the *Spaniards* Masters of the *Valtoline*, from whence, upon a Pretence that there was not any sufficient Caution offer'd for the Security of the Catholick Religion, they refused to withdraw their Forces: But the Matter not ending with the Year, we shall, perhaps, have Occasion to say somewhat more of this Imbroilment in another Place.

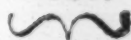
The  
Cause of  
the *Turks*  
War a-  
gainst *Pol-  
land*.

Tho' there was no War yet commenced between the *Turks* and the *Poles*, the same breaking out the following Year; yet the Cause of it having happen'd in this, we shall assign it briefly here. The *Crim Tartar* having made divers Incurfions into the *Polish* Territories, and done great Mischief, and *John Beagli Gluery Han*, Prince of the *Tartars*, being wholly dependant upon the *Ottoman* Empire, the *Polish* Ambassador made Complaint hereof at the *Port*; but being answered, *The Tartars were absolute Lords of themselves, and had Claim to an annual Tribute of 40000 Ducats upon Poland, which was not paid them*; the *Tartars* hereupon grew more insolent, and committed much greater Spoils than before; for Satisfaction whereof, the *Poles* and *Cossacks* living about the Banks of the *Boristhenes*, having prepared a great Number of Barks, fell down that River, and robb'd divers Towns and Villages upon the *Black-Sea*. Prevailing still against the Power sent against them by the *Turks*, and the Grand Seignior being also answer'd by the *Poles*, *That the Cossacks were a free People of themselves, and when the Tartars would cease their Hostilities, the Cossacks might be intreated to do the same*; he, by the Advice of his Grand Visier *Alialon*, resolv'd up-



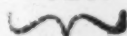
on a War against *Poland*, which commenced with the Beginning of another Year.

1620.



The Affairs of *England* are the first Thing, as usual, which present themselves to our View. The last Refuge, and such as King *James* had no great Inclination to, but only out of pure Necessity, was the Convening of a Parliament on the 30th of *January*, to whom the King said, 'That he had made long Discourses to the last Parliament, but all that he had said had turn'd to him again without Success; That the Parliament was composed of a Head and a Body, the Monarch and the Two Estates, who were to treat of difficult Things, and give their King their best Advice about making Laws; That the Lower House were to acquaint him with their Grievances, but not to meddle with his Prerogative; That they were to offer him Supplies for his Necessity, and he in Recompence to distribute Justice and Mercy; That Religion stood in Two Points, Perswasion and Compulsion: Jesuits, Priests, Puritans and Sectaries perswade, so should the Bishops by their Example and Preaching: But Compulsion was to bind the Conscience; and if the Match with *Spain* proved not a Furtherance to Religion, he was unworthy to be their King; That he had received less Supply than any King since the Conquest. The late Queen had, one Year with another, above 100000 *l. per Annum* in Subsidies; but he had had in all no more than Four Subsidies, and Six Fifteenths, having been sparing to trouble them; but had abated in Household Expences, Navies and Munition, and chose for his Admiral a \* young Man of Honesty and Integrity, who had lessen'd his Charges. As to the miserable Dissentions in *Christendom*, that for appeasing them he had sent the Lord of *Doncaster*, whose Journey cost him 3500 *l.* His Son-in-Law sent to him for Advice, but within Three Days after accepted the Crown, which he never approved of; 1. For Religion's sake, not holding with the Jesuits the Disposing of Kingdoms lawful. 2. He was no Judge between them. 3. He had treated a Peace, and therefore would not be a Party; That he had sought to preserve his Children

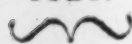
1621.



Parliament first, and the King's Speech.

\* *Buckingham*.

1621.



‘dren’s Patrimony : He had a Contribution, which  
 ‘amounted to no great Sum ; That he had sent his  
 ‘Son 10000 *l.* and to the Princes of the Union 30000 *l.*  
 ‘Had they done their Parts, that handful of Men he  
 ‘had sent had done theirs ; That he intended to  
 ‘have an Army next Summer, and desired them to  
 ‘consider of his Necessities. He recommended Trade  
 ‘to their Consideration, and would know the Reason  
 ‘why his Mint hath not gone these 8 or 9 Years ;  
 ‘Promised he would redress Grievances, but said, He  
 ‘that seeks after Grievances hath the Spirit of Satan ;  
 ‘That in his first Parliament he was Novice, and in  
 ‘his last there were a kind of Beasts, called *Underta-*  
 ‘*kers*, a Dozen of whom undertook to govern the  
 ‘Parliament, and they led them.

Grievances  
 complain-  
 ed of in  
 Parlia-  
 ment.

Being willing to make as little Interruption as may  
 be in the Proceedings of the Parliament, after ha-  
 ving but just mention’d that the King, about this  
 time, sent the Lord *Digby* to the Arch-Duke in *Flan-*  
*ders* to gain a Cessation of Arms in the *Palatinate*,  
 and then to the Emperor ; and to make Way for a  
 Treaty of Peace ; that *Gage* went to *Rome* to nego-  
 tiate the Pope’s Dispensation for the Match with  
*Spain*, and that the Ambassie of *Weston* and *Conway*  
 prevail’d little with the Emperor ; we are to take No-  
 tice, that Sir *Thomas Richardson* being chosen Speaker,  
 and approved of by the King, one of the first Things  
 the Parliament did, was to petition him against Jesuits,  
 Seminary Priests, and Popish Recusants ; and fall up-  
 on illegal Patents and Projects, for which there was a  
 great Fine and Annual Revenue throughout the King-  
 dom, especially those of Inns and Ale-houses ; and  
 the Monopoly of Gold and Silver Thread, whereby  
 the People were abused with base and counterfeit  
 Wares, and gave the King Two Subsidies. Sir *Giles*  
*Mompesson* was committed for heinous Offences of that  
 kind, but escaped beyond Sea, and was pursued by  
 the King’s Proclamation. The Commons at a Con-  
 ference with the Lords offer’d to prove, that those  
 Patents, and several others then enumerated, were  
 all illegal ; but they touched not the tender Point of  
 Prerogative. Hereupon the King thus spake to the  
 Lords, *viz.*

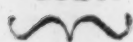
‘THAT

' **T**HAT he was ready to put in Execution what  
 ' they should sentence, for which Office God  
 ' had appointed him. A Proof whereof he had gi-  
 ' ven, by issuing out his Proclamation against *Mom-*  
 ' *peffon*, who was fled : That Two Reasons had mo-  
 ' ved him to be earnest for such Execution : 1. His  
 ' Duty to God, who made him a King : For had these  
 ' Things been complain'd of to him out of Parliament,  
 ' he would have punished them as severely, if not  
 ' more, than is now intended. And now they are dis-  
 ' cover'd to him in Parliament, he should be as ready  
 ' in that Way as in the other : For he was asham'd it  
 ' was not his good Fortune to have been the first Au-  
 ' thor of their Punishment in some ordinary Court of  
 ' Justice : For no Person (how dear soever to him)  
 ' should be respected by him before the publick  
 ' Good. 2. He intended not to derogate from the  
 ' Privileges of the House. For whatsoever he deliver'd  
 ' to them as his own Thoughts, yet he wholly left the  
 ' Judgment to them, knowing, they would do no-  
 ' thing but where the like had been done before :  
 ' For wheresoever good Precedents could warrant, he  
 ' would allow, acknowledging them to be the Su-  
 ' preme Court of Justice. Nor could he give them  
 ' a greater Assurance, than that he had done them the  
 ' Honour to set his only Son among them : That the  
 ' House of Commons at this time had shew'd him  
 ' more Love and Respect, than ever any House of  
 ' Commons did to himself, or (he thought) to any  
 ' of his Predecessors. As for that House, he had  
 ' always found it respectful ; and hoped that his Son,  
 ' when he came to be in his Place, would remember,  
 ' that he was once a Member of that House, and  
 ' would maintain their lawful Privileges : That he  
 ' fear'd that House had brib'd him, he did so good  
 ' Offices for them on all Occasions : The like he might  
 ' say of *Buckingham* : That both Houses having so  
 ' freely given him Two Subsidies, seeing he could not  
 ' at present make Retribution by a general Pardon,  
 ' which was reserved to the End of the Parlinment;  
 ' the least he could do was to do somewhat for the  
 ' Ease of his People. Three Patents were com-  
 ' plain'd of; that of Inns, that of Ale-houses, and  
 ' that

1621.

The  
 King's  
 Speech  
 to the  
 Lords.

1621.



‘ that of Gold and Silver Thread : That he would  
 ‘ strike them all dead presentiy, leaving Ale-houses to  
 ‘ the Justices of Peace as before ; and for that of Gold  
 ‘ and Silver Thread, it was vilely abused, and he  
 ‘ had already freed the Persons in Prison . That he  
 ‘ would recal all Three Patents by Proclamation :  
 ‘ That he heard they had a Bill before them against  
 ‘ Informers, he desired them, as they tender’d his Ho-  
 ‘ nour and his People’s Good, to give a speedy Dis-  
 ‘ patch, which would be a great Ease to himself,  
 ‘ and those about him : That *Buckingham* had com-  
 ‘ plain’d to him, how miserably he was wont, out of  
 ‘ Parliament, to be vex’d with Projectors and In-  
 ‘ formers : That the external Government of this  
 ‘ Kingdom was like the Out-side of a Coppice, which  
 ‘ when one rides about, it appear’d thick and well  
 ‘ grown, but within it was full of Plains and bare  
 ‘ Spots. Justice, Peace and Plenty surround us, and  
 ‘ yet the People are poll’d and left bare by the vile  
 ‘ Execution of Projects, Patents, and such like : That  
 ‘ now they were ready to give Judgment, they would  
 ‘ be careful to do Two Things : 1. To do *Bonum*.  
 ‘ 2. To do it *bene*. *Bonum* is, when all is well proved,  
 ‘ whereupon they judge : *Bene*, when they proceed  
 ‘ formally and legally, wherein the Judges are to be  
 ‘ consulted : That in Judging they are, 1. To recol-  
 ‘ lect what is worthy of Censure. 2. To proceed as  
 ‘ hath been usual in the like Cases ; the moral Rea-  
 ‘ son of Punishment being the Breach of the Laws in  
 ‘ Force, for none could be punish’d by Predestination  
 ‘ before a Law be made : That Sir *Henry Yelverton* (a  
 ‘ Prisoner in the *Tower* upon Sentence in the Star-  
 ‘ Chamber) being accused about a Warrant Dormant,  
 ‘ made by him when Attorney-General, he freely put  
 ‘ him into their Hands to proceed against him : That  
 ‘ he would have them proceed according to the Or-  
 ‘ ders of their House, wishing, that what he had said  
 ‘ might be entred in the Records thereof.

But to come again to *Mompesson* and his Co-partner  
 Sir *Francis Mitchel*, the chief Promoters of the Grie-  
 vances, complain’d of *Mompesson* had Fortune enough  
 to have maintained him genteely in the Country, but  
 at Court wanted this Novelty for his better Support.

but



but *Mitchel* was a Poor little sneaking Suburb Justice, that liv'd by the Sins of his neighbouring Females, who was brought to Court and Knighted, and corroborated by these Letters to grate the Bones and suck the Marrow of the needy Commoners; this last was censured: First to be degraded with all the Debasing Ceremonies that Justice could invent, and after was made to ride through the City with his Face to the Horses Tail, with a Paper on his Breast and Back declaring his heinous Crime, and suffering the scorn and contempt of the Rabble in his passage; besides, being squeezed by Fine and Imprisonment, to make him incapable of doing further Mischief. The same punishment fell upon *Mompesson's* Purse, tho' he obscured his Person, and upon other lesser Confederates, which put an End to this Grievance.

1621.

Patentees  
punish'd.

Not long after comes the great Lord Chancellor *Bacon* to a Censure for the most extravagant and ridiculous Follies that ever Wise Man was guilty of. His Crimes were Bribery and Extortion, which were proved and aggravated against him by so many Circumstances, that he that in some Things was thought a Man of the greatest Parts in *England*, and mounted above Pity, now fell miserably below it, and his Eloquent Tongue that used to Charm his Auditors with excellent Harangues, was now forced to stoop to humble Supplications, and throwing himself and his Cause at his Judges Feet, before his Sentence pass'd: He humbly begg'd the Lords in Parliament, that his penitent Submission might be his Sentence, the loss of the Great Seal his Punishment, and that their Lordships would recommend him to the King's Grace and Pardon for all that was past. Thus his great Spirit was lower'd, and Humiliation might have raised him up again, if the Weight of his Offences had not kept him down. He lost his Peerage and Seal, and the Beam was wavering whether he could carry the Title of Viscount *St. Albans* to his Grave, and that was all he had, for his Honour died before him. To heighten his Misery, many were crushed to Pieces by his Fall, by the Debts he had Contracted, and tho' he had a Pension from the King, he wanted to his last; living obscurely in his Lodgings at *Grays-Inn*, where the remembrance of his former Plenty and Greatness lay

The Lord  
Chancel-  
lor *Bacon*  
censured.

1621.  
His Cha-  
racter.

lay so hard upon his Ingenious and therefore melancholy temper, that he Pined and consumed away. He was of middle Stature, his Presence Grave and Comely; of a quick and high flying Wit, striving in some Things rather to be admired than understood, and yet when he pleased to condescend, none more intelligible. In short, he was a great Master in all Kinds of Learning, and the World is so much obliged to his Discoveries in Natural Philosophy, that his Name will be celebrated with Honour to perpetuity. His Wit was lively to the last; for *Gondamar* meeting him the *Lent* before his Censure, and hearing of his Miscarriages, thought to upbraid him with his *Spanish* Sarcasms and Scoffs, saying, *My Lord I wish you a good Easter*; And you, my Lord, reply'd the Chancellor, *a good Passover*; for he could neither endure his *English* Buffoonry, nor his *Spanish* Treaty, tho' he was too wise to oppose them publicly.

Sir Henry  
Yelverton  
accused by  
the Com-  
mons.

Sir Henry Yelverton come next upon the Stage; he was charged by the Commons with committing several (when Attorney-General) for not giving Bond for restraining their own Trades; for signing dormant Warrants: That he advis'd the Patent of Gold and Silver Thread to be resum'd into the King's Hands, granted 4000 *Quo Warranto's* upon the Patent of Inns, and tried but Two of them, and commenced divers Suits touching the Gold and Silver Thread, but prosecuted none of them. Which Charge being read upon him, he said, *He thought himself happy that his Majesty was pleased to send him to that Honourable House: But he desir'd time to answer, adding, That the chief Complaint against him was about those Two Patents of Gold and Silver Thread, and Inns; that the King and his Subjects were abus'd by that Patent of Inns, and that he at that Day suffered for opposing it.*

The King being inform'd of that Passage, came to the House of Peers, and told them, it seem'd strange that Sir Henry Yelverton should be questioned about any thing but the Patent of Gold and Silver Thread: For *Mompesson* complaining that he refus'd to issue out any *Quo Warranto's* against the Inn-keepers, Yelverton told the King he disliked those Proceedings against his Subjects, which modest Answer the King accepted: But since now he taxes his Majesty  
that

that he suffer'd for his good Service done, he requir'd the Lords to punish *Yelverton* for his Slander.

Sir *Henry Yelverton* being brought before the Lords answer'd every Particular of his Charge: And moreover said, 'That he came there with much Fear, but more Grief; that it was *Buckingham's* Displeasure that wounded him; but he who never fear'd that great Man, never fear'd Sir *Edward Villiers* and Sir *Giles Mompeffon*, who were but his Shadow; confess'd, that *Buckingham* being ever at his Majesty's Hand to hew him down, he out of fear to offend his Majesty committed the Silk-men: And speaking of the Patent of Inns, he bemoan'd his Unhappiness, that endeavouring in the one Cause to advance his Majesty's Profit, and in the other to preserve his Honour, he should be question'd for both: That when Sir *Giles* saw he would observe his Majesty's Direction, he, first by Mr. *Emerson*, and then by himself, as from my Lord of *Buckingham*, threatned him, that he should not hold his Place a Month, if he withstood the Patent of Inns; and that my Lord had obtain'd it by his Favour, and would maintain it by his Power. So it was come to this, whether he would obey his Majesty, or my Lord; but he resolv'd to be as stubborn as *Mordecai*: That soon after the Profits of his Place were diverted to one of my Lord's Worthies, and it was almost the Loss of a Suit to apply to him: That if my Lord of *Buckingham* had read the Articles against *Hugh Spencer*, and known the Danger of Placing and Displacing Officers about the King, he would not have been so bitter: That his opposing my Lord in the Patent of Ale-houses, in the *Irish Customs*, and in Sir *Robert Nanton's* Deputation of his Place in the Court of Wards, had been his Overthrow, he having suffer'd in his Fortune above 20000*l*.

His  
Speech.

Hereupon the King, extreemly tender of his Favourite, by the Lord-Treasurer acquainted the Lords, He understood; *Yelverton* had accused the Marquess of *Buckingham*, saying, He suffer'd for the Patent of Inns, which had aggravated, not extenuated his Offence the last Day there: That he would be Judge of what concern'd himself, and for what concern'd *Buckingham*, he left him to that House. But the Lords pray'd,

1621. pray'd, That since the King had already made them Judges of what touch'd his own Honour, he would not resume it out of their Hands, which being granted, they sentenced *Yelverton*, That for his Speeches, which touch'd the King's Honour, he should be fined to the King in 10000 Marks, be imprison'd during his Pleasure, and make Submission to his Majesty; and for scandalizing the Marquess of *Buckingham*, that he should pay him 5000 Marks, and make his Submission. The Marquess immediately stood up, and remitted him the 50000 Marks; and the House mov'd the King to mitigate the Fine: So that *Sir Henry* was set at Liberty, the Marquess reconciled to him, and he afterwards made a Judge.

The King intends to adjourn the Parliament.

Adjournment.

The Commons Declaration touching the Palatine.

The Parliament having sat Four Months, the King declar'd to them, He thought fit to adjourn them, which Adjournment kept them in being, and therefore was better than Proroguing: That he had redress'd Corruptions in Courts of Justice, and call'd in the Patents of Inns, and Gold and Silver Thread, and cherish'd the Bill against Informers and Monopolies. The Commons, troubled at this Message, desired the Lords to join in a Petition against the Adjournment. The Lord-Treasurer told the Lords, That that would derogate from the King's Prerogative, who alone had Power to call, adjourn and determine Parliaments: Whereupon the King coming to the House of Lords, thank'd them, for acknowledging his Power, and refusing to join in the Petition; told them, That if they desired it, he would give them 8 or 10 Days longer, but not at the Request of the Commons. The Lords moved for Fourteen Days, which was granted, and the Commons were satisfied with the Adjournment, which the King on *June 4.* declar'd to be till *November*; and that in the mean time he would of his own Authority redress Grievances.

The Commons, before their Recess, drew up a Declaration to this Effect, *viz. That if his Majesty could not by Treaty procure the Peace and Safety of his Children abroad, and of the true Professors (in Foreign Parts) of the same Religion professed by the Church of England, they would, to their utmost Power, with their Lives and Fortunes assist him so, as that he might be able to do that*



that with his Sword, which by a peaceable Course could not be effected.

1621.

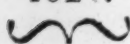
The King  
by Procla-  
mation re-  
forms se-  
veral  
Grievan-  
ces, &c.

After the Recess, the King by Proclamation declared an immediate Redress of the Grievances following: Those of Informers, Miscarriages of Ministers in Chancery, the Patents of Gold and Silver Thread, for licensing Pedlars, sole Dressing of Arms, Exportation of Lints and Threads, sole making Tobacco-Pipes, Cords, and the like; and that his own and his Privy-Council's Ears should be open to his People's modest and just Complaints. A Second Proclamation was issued against licentious Speeches touching State-Affairs, threatening the Concealers, as well as the Utterers thereof: And on July 10. Dr. John Williams, Dean of Westminster, was sworn Lord-Keeper. Indeed, there seem'd to be need enough of such a restraining Order as here mention'd; for the People, instead of talking, would in a manner proceed to acting: and Gondamor, by his Intrigues in advancing the Designs of Spain, was reviled and assaulted in the Streets of London, for which one Fellow was severely whipt from Aldgate to Temple-Bar; however, he still retain'd his Interest, and about this time got Sir Robert Mansell to be sent into the Streights against the Algerines, in which Expedition he acted gallantly, and burnt the Enemies Ships in their own Harbour; yet this diverted our Strength, and exhausted our Treasure, secured the Spaniards, and left them at Liberty to subdue the Palatinate.

We have already mention'd the Lord Digby's Ambassie to Vienna about the Restoring of the Elector Palatine (now with his Family retired into Holland) and the Emperor's Answer was. He could not grant it, because the Palatine still persisted to oppose him; and at the same time when the Emperor, at the King's Desire, had agreed to a Cessation of Arms in the Lower Palatinate, the Elector had given Mansfield and Jagerndorf Commissions to raise Forces, and do Acts of Hostility: That he would make known to the intended Dyet at Ratishon, the Desires of his Master, who should know what Resolution was there taken concerning the Palatinate.

Arch-

1621.



Arch-Duke *Albert*, and after his Death the Arch-Dutchess, interceded for the *Palgrave*: And now the Lord *Digby* further propos'd, That *Mansfield* and *Fa-gerndorf* should observe the Agreement which should be made, or the *Palgrave* would declare them Enemies: But the Emperor answer'd the Arch-Dutchess, That as to a Treaty and Cessation of Arms, he would consult the Electors and Princes of the Empire.

*Bavaria's*  
deriding  
Answer to  
the Eng-  
lish Am-  
bassador.

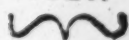
The Ambassador succeeding no better here, departed from *Vienna* to the Duke of *Bavaria*, who had invaded the Upper *Palatinate*, and committed great Spoils there, without whom the Emperor could make no Truce, he having agreed to make neither War nor Peace without the Consent of the said Duke, who had a great part of *Austria* in Pledge. But the Duke upon Receipt of the Emperor's Letter touching the Truce, sent the Lord *Digby* a deriding Letter, That there was no need of a Truce, for the War was at an End, he not doubting to keep both the *Palatinates* in Peace till the Emperor and *Palgrave* were agreed: So slender a Return did the King receive of the Lord *Digby's* Ambassie for restoring the *Palatinate*. But the Emperor's Meaning herein may be found in his Letter to *Don Balthazar de Zuniga*, a prime Counsellor of State in *Spain*, to this Effect:

The Em-  
peror's  
Letter to  
*Don Bal-  
thazar de  
Zuniga*.

**T**HAT he is bound to use his Victory to the Extirpation of Sedition and Faction, which are chiefly nourished by the Calvinists: That the *Palatine* was in *Holland*, exil'd from the Kingdom he attempted, and despoil'd almost of all his own Territories, whom if by any impious Commiseration he should restore and nourish, as a trodden half-living Snake, what can he expect but a deadly Sting from him, who can never be faithful? The Genius of his Sect making him an Enemy, or an unsound Friend to the House of *Austria*, and all other Catholick Princes: That being firmly resolved the *Palatine* could not be restored, he had freely offer'd the Electorate to the Duke of *Bavaria*, a most zealous Defender of the Catholick Cause: By that he should take away all Hopes from the *Palatine*, and the Lutheran Princes would hardly take up Arms for him, especially the Duke of *Saxony*, seeing *Charles V.* upon a far lighter Cause, deprived *John Frederick*, Duke of *Saxony*,

Saxony of the Electorate; besides, the Lutherans hate the Calvinists as much as they did the Catholics.

1621.



The Parliament re-assembled the 20th of November, and the King being indisposed, sent them a Message by the Lord-Keeper, Lord Digby, now returned home, and Lord-Treasurer: And the Lord-Keeper told them, 'what the King had done for the Nation

The Parliament re-assembled.

'since the last Recess, in answering several Petitions concerning Trade, Importation of Bullion, Conservation of Coin in the Land, and prohibiting the

The Lord Keeper's Speech.

'Transportation of Iron Ordnance; That he had by his Proclamation reform'd 36 or 37 other publick Grievances, without the least Trucking with his People; That he had called a Parliament principally upon the Declaration of the Representative Commonalty of the Kingdom, to assist his Majesty in the War for the Recovery of the Palatinate; That he had sent the Lord Digby to treat of Peace, but without Success; That he had advanced 40000*l.* to keep the Army together in the Lower Palatinate, which yet without a further Supply would be dissolved.

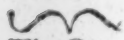
The Lord Digby also acquainted them with his Negotiation with the Arch-Duke about a Treaty of Peace, who writ to the Emperor and King of Spain, and also writ to Spinola for a Cessation of Arms; but the Duke of Bavaria would not consent, by whose Carriage he discover'd, that from the Beginning he design'd the Palatinate and Electorate for himself; That Count Mansfield must be speedily supply'd; That by the Bravery of Sir Horatio Vere, and the other English Commanders there, Heidelberg, Mannheim and Frankendal were still preserved: And concluded with the Necessity of a Supply of Money and Men. Then the Lord-Treasurer told them, That the King's Coffers were empty; That he had assisted the Palatinate with great Sums, and was much in Debt.

Lord Digby's Speech.

However, the King still pursued Peace, hoping by the Spanish Alliance to heal the Breach; wherefore the House of Commons, before they granted Subsidies, resolved to try the King's Temper by this Petition and Remonstrance, viz.

X

THEY

1621.  THEY represented to him, 1. The Ambition of the Pope and his dearest Son, the one aiming at as large a Temporal Monarchy, as the other at a Spiritual Supremacy. 2. The devilish Doctrines whereupon Popery is found. 3. The distressed Estate of the Protestants abroad. 4. The disastrous Accidents to his Majesty's Children abroad, expressed with rejoicing, and even contempt of their Persons. 5. The Confederacy of the Popish Princes to advance their, and subvert our Religion. 6. The many Armies raised by the King of *Spain*, the Chief of that League. 7. The Expectations of the Papists upon the *Spanish* Match. 8. The Interposing of Foreign Princes on their behalf. 9. Their resort to the Houses and Chappels of Foreign Ambassadors. 10. Their unusual concourse to the City. 11. The Education of their Children in Seminaries in Foreign Parts. 12. Their Forfeitures compounded for by the Grantees at mean Rates, amounting in effect to a Toleration. 13. The licentious printing of Popish Books. 14. The swarms of Priests and Jesuits in the Kingdom.

That from these Causes would follow very dangerous Effects: For, 1. The Popish Religion is incompatible with ours. 2. It draweth a Dependency on Foreign Princes. 3. It opens too wide a Gap for Popularity. 4. It hath a restless Spirit, and will press from Connivance to Toleration, then to an Equality, then to a Superiority and Subversion of the true Religion.

The Remedies offered were: 1. The King to take his Sword into his Hand. 2. More publicly to avow the Aiding of the Protestants in Foreign Parts. 3. To manage the War by way of Division, and not in those Parts only. 4. The Bent of the War to be against that Prince, whose Arms and Treasure have maintain'd the War in the *Palatinate*. 5. The Laws against Popish Recusants to be, by Commissioners especially appointed, put in Execution. 6. The Prince to be marry'd to one of our own Religion. 7. The Children of the ill-affected Nobility and Gentry, then beyond the Seas, to be called Home. 8. The Children of Popish Recusants



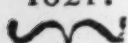
‘fants to have Protestant School-masters and Teachers. 9. Licenses for such Children to travel to be revoked. 10. No Grants to be made of recusants Lands, and if already made to be avoided, if by Law they can. These Things they submit to his Consideration (not intending to press upon his Prerogative) the Glory of God, Zeal for Religion, the Safety of the King’s Person, the Happiness of his Posterity, and the Good of Church and State being their Aim therein. And they intend, before *Christmas* next, to give one entire Subsidy for the Relief of the *Palatinate* only. They pray him then, to assent to such Bills for the People’s Good as shall be offer’d: With his Pardon, not only for Criminals, but whereby his good Subjects may receive some Ease. And that it may extend to Debts due to the Crown before the first Year of his Reign; Alienations without License, and misusing of Liveries, and *Ouster le Main*, before the first Summons of this Parliament; conceal’d Wardships, and no suing of Liveries and *Ouster le Main*, before the Twelfth Year of his Reign.

The King having a Copy of this Remonstrance before the House had time to send their Members with it, something so very highly displeased him, that he wrote the following Letter to the Speaker of the House of Commons.

*Mr. Speaker,*

‘WE have heard by divers Reports, to our great The Grief, that some fiery and popular Spirits in King’s the House of Commons have publicly argued and Letter debated Matters far beyond their Reach and Capacity, tending highly to our Dishonour, and Breach to the Speaker of the Royal Prerogative. These are therefore to command you, in our Name, to make known to the House, That none therein shall presume henceforth to meddle with any thing concerning our Government, or deep Matters of State, nor with our Son’s Match with the Daughter of *Spain*, nor to touch the Honour of that King, or any other our Friends or Confederates. And whereas we hear, they have sent a Message to Sir *Edwin Sands*, to know

1621.



‘ know the Cause of his Restraint, you shall resolve  
 ‘ them, in our Name, That it was not for any Mis-  
 ‘ demeanor in Parliament; but to put them out of  
 ‘ doubt of any Question of that Nature, that may a-  
 ‘ rise among them hereafter, you shall resolve them in  
 ‘ our Name, That we think our selves very free and  
 ‘ able to punish any Man’s Misdemeanor in Parlia-  
 ‘ ment, as well during their Sitting as afterward;  
 ‘ which we mean not to spare hereafter, upon Occa-  
 ‘ sion of any Man’s insolent Behaviour there, that  
 ‘ shall be ministred unto us. And if they have al-  
 ‘ ready touched any of these Points, which we have  
 ‘ here forbidden, in any Petition of theirs, which is  
 ‘ to be sent unto us, it is our Pleasure that you tell  
 ‘ them, That except they reform it before it come  
 ‘ to our Hands, we will not degn the Hearing  
 ‘ of it.

*Dated at New-Market, Decemb. 3. 1621.*

The Par-  
 liament’s  
 Reply.

When the House had duly consider’d the Reasons they had to draw up their Remonstrance, which in Effect was to preserve the Kingdom from Ruin, they sent their Petition to the King, and their Remonstrance with it, wherein they declare, *That the Honour and Safety of the King and his Posterity, the Welfare of Religion and State of the Kingdom, are at no time unfit for a Parliamentary Consideration; not that they took upon themselves the Power of Determining, but, as loyal Subjects, to demonstrate such Things to his Majesty, which they were not assured would otherwise come so clearly and fully to his Knowledge. And whereas his Majesty seems to restrain them from intermeddling with Matters of Government that have their Motion in the Courts of Justice, and seems to abridge them of the ancient Liberty of Parliament, of Freedom of Speech, they are now forced to pray his Majesty to allow it, and to take away the Doubts and Scruples, which his Letter to the Speaker had brought upon them.* After this, the House finding it a great Discouragement to Business, while there was so great a Difference between the King and them, *That the King thought their Actions an Inroad upon his Prerogative, and they thought the King’s Expressions an Infringement of their Liberties,* they resolved to give over all Business till they had an Answer to their  
 Pe-

Petitions; which the King hearing of, was grievously vex'd, and entertain'd the Twelve Members that were sent to him wery roughly. Some say, he call'd for Twelve Chairs, saying, *Here are Twelve Kings come to me*; but after he had consider'd their Desires in their last Petition he returns them Answer:

'THAT he must begin with Queen Elizabeth's King's Answer to an insolent Proposal made by a Polish Ambassador, *Legatum expectabamus, Heraldum accepimus*; That he expected their first Message should have been their Thanks for his Acts of Grace since their last Recess, by his Proclamation containing 37 Articles, for the Pains he took in the Three Articles recommended to him by both Houses, and his good Government of *Ireland* he was then in hand with. Instead whereof, here are Complaints, of the Danger of Religion, tacitly implying his ill Government to the Distasting of his Subjects.

'That whereas they tax him with trusting uncertain Reports; he is an old and experienced King, and needs no such Lessons.

'That the Copy of their Petition, which was sent him before-hand, is the same now brought to him by their own Messengers, only the Conclusion was added since he received the first Copy: Which Conclusion is *Protestatio contraria facto*; for in the Body of their Petition they usurp on his Prerogative Royal, and meddle with Things far above their Reach, giving their Advice for the Matching of his Son with some Protestant (he cannot say Princess, knowing none fit for him) dissuading him from a Match with *Spain*, and urging him to a War with that King; and yet in the Conclusion they protest not to press upon his Prerogative; as if a Thief should take a Man's Purse, and then protest he meant not to rob him.

'That they pretend to be invited to this Course by the Speeches of Three honourable Lords; where, as by so much as they themselves repeat of their Speeches, nothing can be concluded, but that he resolved by War to re-gain the *Palatinate*, if otherwise it cannot be had: And they were invited to advise about a Supply for that Purpose. But what

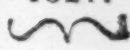
1621.

‘ Inference can be made thence, that he must present-  
 ‘ ly denounce War against *Spain*, break his Son’s  
 ‘ Match, and marry him to a Protestant? That their  
 ‘ Assertion, That the Honour and Safety of him and  
 ‘ his Posterity, the Patrimony of his Children invaded  
 ‘ and possess’d by their Enemies, Religion, and the  
 ‘ State of the Kingdom, are Matters not unfit for the  
 ‘ Consideration of a Parliament, is so general, that it  
 ‘ includes every thing, and gives them a Plenitude  
 ‘ of Power, like the Puritan Ministers in *Scotland*,  
 ‘ who affirm it’s the Church’s Office to judge of Slan-  
 ‘ der; whereby they hook’d in the Cognizance of  
 ‘ all Causes, there being no Crime or Fault but hath  
 ‘ Slander in it against God, the King, or our Neigh-  
 ‘ bour.

‘ As for War, for which they are so earnest, he  
 ‘ rather expected they would have thank’d him for  
 ‘ the Peace they enjoy: That he will endeavour, ei-  
 ‘ ther by Treaty or by Force to restore his Children  
 ‘ to their Inheritance; nor shall the Match of his Son  
 ‘ be preferr’d before it: That by his Credit with the  
 ‘ King of *Spain*, Arch-Duke and Arch Dutcheffs, he  
 ‘ had preserved the Lower *Palatinate* for one Year:  
 ‘ And it hath been now lately again succour’d by the  
 ‘ Lord *Digby*’s Means. But as to a War for Religion;  
 ‘ the Beginning of this miserable War was not for  
 ‘ Religion, but caused by his Son-in-law’s rash Ac-  
 ‘ ceptance of the Crown of *Bohemia*. And his said  
 ‘ Son hath acknowledged to the *French* King, and  
 ‘ State of *Venice*, that it had no reference to the Cause  
 ‘ of Religion. That he would be sorry we should,  
 ‘ with the Jesuits, make Religion a Pretext for deth-  
 ‘ roning Kings, and usurping their Crowns: Nor had  
 ‘ he, if his Son-in-law’s Quarrel had been just, denied  
 ‘ him the Title, and his Assistance. That he wonders  
 ‘ they should affirm, that what they say of the King  
 ‘ of *Spain* is without touching his Honour, when in  
 ‘ their former Petition they affirm he affects an Univer-  
 ‘ sal Monarchy, than which nothing can be more  
 ‘ malicious.

‘ As for their Excuse, that they determine nothing  
 ‘ concerning his Son’s Match: How could they have  
 ‘ determined in that Point, without incurring the  
 ‘ Guilt of High-Treason? But their very talking of it  
 ‘ after





‘after that Manner is a direct Breach of his Com-  
 ‘mand at their first Sitting. And he assures them  
 ‘now, as he did then, that Religion should receive no  
 ‘Prejudice by that Match. As to their Request,  
 ‘That he would receive their former Petition; he  
 ‘wonders they could expect it, there being nothing  
 ‘left unattempted therein in the highest Points of  
 ‘Sovereignty, except the Striking of Coin; and there-  
 ‘for he had rejected it, they being unfit Things to  
 ‘be handled in Parliament, unless their King require  
 ‘it: And therefore *ne sutor ultra crepidam*: That the  
 ‘intermeddling in Parliament with Matters of Peace  
 ‘and War, and his Son’s Marriage, would make any  
 ‘Foreign Prince refuse to treat of either Peace or  
 ‘Marriage without their Assent. As it happen’d to a  
 ‘King of *France*, who broke some Treaty he had  
 ‘made, on Pretence his Estates would not assent to  
 ‘it, and was afterwards refused treating with other  
 ‘Princes without his Estates Consent. And Queen  
 ‘*Elizabeth*, when a Parliament petition’d her to mar-  
 ‘ry, told them, *That if they had limited her to Place or*  
 ‘*Person, she would have thought it a high Presumption in*  
 ‘*them*. As to Religion, he will do all he can for the  
 ‘promoting it, and depressing Popery: But the Man-  
 ‘ner must be left to him, not by undertaking a pub-  
 ‘lick War of Religion through the World at once,  
 ‘nor by a hot Persecution of our Recusants, which  
 ‘may irritate Foreign Princes to plague their Prote-  
 ‘stant Subjects; and yet he will spare no Papist that  
 ‘grows insolent, and will take care for the Education  
 ‘of Youth at Home, and the preserving those Abroad  
 ‘from being bred in Popish Seminaries, whereof (as  
 ‘to the Youth at Home) he hath given some Proof  
 ‘already here in *England*.

‘That it shall be their Fault if he make not this a  
 ‘Session before *Christmas*: But for the Pardon they  
 ‘desire, he must be well advised, lest he give them  
 ‘double or treble of what he shall receive by their  
 ‘Subsidy without Fifteenths: That he wonders they  
 ‘should make such a Construction of his Letter, as if  
 ‘he meant to restrain them of their ancient Privi-  
 ‘leges and Liberties in Parliament, he forbidding  
 ‘them only to meddle with Matters of Government,  
 ‘and Mysteries of State; namely, War or Peace.

1621.

‘and the Match with *Spain*, or with such Things as  
 ‘have their ordinary Course in Courts of Justice, by  
 ‘which he meant Sir *Edward Cook*’s foolish Business,  
 ‘whom it had well become, as his Servant, to have  
 ‘made his Complaint to him: That although he  
 ‘cannot allow their Privileges the Stile of their an-  
 ‘cient and undoubted Right and Inheritance, they be-  
 ‘ing derived from the Grace and Permission of him  
 ‘and his Ancestors, and most of them growing from  
 ‘Precedents, which shews rather a Toleration than  
 ‘Inheritance; yet he will be as careful to preserve  
 ‘their lawful Liberties and Privileges, as any of his  
 ‘Predecessors were; nay, as to preserve his own  
 ‘Royal Prerogative, they containing themselves with-  
 ‘in the Limits of their Duty, and not intrenching on  
 ‘his Prerogative. Dated Decemb. 11. 1621.

Lord-  
 Keeper’s  
 Judg-  
 ment on it

The Lord-Keeper *Williams* advised the King to qua-  
 lifie the Harshness of this Answer with a Letter to  
 the Speaker; for ’twas true, that their Privileges,  
 which they claim’d as their Birth-Rights, were but  
 the Favours of former Kings; but the King’s Affir-  
 mation and their Claim might be easily reconciled. He  
 also advised him to add, *That if they would not prepare  
 Bills for a Session, the King would either break them up,  
 and acquaint the Kingdom with their Undutifulness and  
 Obstinacy, and supply his Wants some other Way; or  
 else adjourn them to the 8th of February following: But  
 they shall never meet more.* In this fluctuating State  
 of Things, the Commons, not to be wanting to them-  
 selves, and to leave some Footsteps of their Parliamen-  
 tary Rights and Privileges to Posterity, as their An-  
 cestors had done to them, on the 19th of Decemb.  
 they register’d the following Protestation in their  
 Journal-Book; *That the Liberties, Franchises, Privileges*

The Com-  
 mons Pro-  
 testation.

*and Jurisdictions of Parliament are the ancient and un-  
 doubted Birth-right and Inheritance of the Subject: That  
 the arduous and urgent Affairs concerning the King, State,  
 and Defence of the Realm and Church of England, the  
 Maintenance and Making of Laws, and Redress of Grie-  
 vances, are proper Subjects of Debate in Parliament: In  
 the Handling whereof every Member ought to have Free-  
 dom of Speech, and the Commons may treat thereof in such  
 Order as they think fit: And that every Member hath  
 Freedom from all Impeachment, Imprisonment and Mo-  
 lestation*

lestation (otherwise than by Censure of the House it self) 1621.  
for speaking of any Parliament Business: And that if  
any Member be complain'd of for any thing done or said in  
Parliament, the same is to be shew'd to the King by the  
Advice and Consent of the Commons, before he give Cre-  
dence to any private Information.

The King being offended with this Protestation,  
caused the Clerk of the House to produce in full  
Council (where all the Judges then in London were  
present) his Journal-Book, wherein the said Protesta-  
tion was enter'd, and declared he never meant to de-  
ny the Commons any Privileges or Liberties they  
had by any Law or Statute, or by Custom, or  
uncontroul'd and lawful Precedent; but that he  
thought fit that this Protestation should be razed  
out of all Memorials, and be annihilated, it be-  
ing made on the very Day that their Messengers  
were with the King, and he had graciously accepted  
of their Excuse for not making this Meeting a Ses-  
sion, and at Six at Night by Candlelight brought in-  
to the House, and not one Third part of them then  
present, and some stood up to have spoken to it, but  
could not be heard in that Darkness and Confusion:  
That the said Protestation was penn'd in such am-  
biguous Terms, as might be a Precedent for future  
Times to invade the Rights and Prerogatives of the  
Crown, cunningly mentioning some Words in the  
Writ for assembling them, viz. *Arduis Regni*, but  
leaving out *quibusdam*, which restrain'd the other  
Words: And the King declaring the said Protesta-  
tion to be null and void, with his own Hand took the  
same out of the Journal-Book, and commanded an  
Act of Council to be made thereupon, Dec. 30. 1621.

The Affairs of England terminating in this Disor-  
derly Manner, France is our next Stage, where we are  
to take Notice, that in the Spring of this Year, the  
*Bearnois*, being not able to endure the Oppressions  
they lay under, made an Insurrection for the Defence  
of their Privileges, against whom *Espernon* was to  
command as General, who with a good Body of Men  
having entred the Country, instead of meeting any  
Opposition, he found they had abandon'd all their  
Towns and Villages, and fled to the Mountains. Or-  
*thes* immediately open'd her Gates to him, *Oleron* did  
the same, and *la Force* was forced to quit the Pro-

The King  
takes the  
Protesta-  
tion out  
of the  
Journal-  
Book with  
his own  
Hand.

Insur-  
rection in  
*Bearn*.

vince.

1621. vince. The *Hugonots* beginning about this time in general to be alarmed, as if the Court had formed a Design to divest them of all their Privileges, thought it best to hold a General Assembly on the 20th of *November* last Year, to consult about their common Security, which the King condemned ; but they not thinking fit to obey the Royal Mandate, and not failing in some Places to revenge themselves for the many Injuries that were done them, this was sufficient to put the Court upon a Resolution to imploy open Force, and therefore the King now at *Saumur*, understanding *Roan* was fortifying *St. John d'Angeli*, he forbad it, and commanded the Duke and his Brother *Soubize* to attend him ; but the Duke declining it, the King on the 18th of *May* laid Siege to it, the Army being commanded under him by *Lefdeguieres* and *Espernon*, the Place held out till the 16th of *June*, and then capitulated, That the King should pardon all that were in it, leaving them at Liberty, and in possession of their Estates and Privileges granted to the *Hugonots* by the Edict of *Nantes*. After this they reduced *St. Foi* and *Clerac*, with divers other Places too long to be mentioned ; but the most memorable Siege was that of *Montauban*, which was invested by the King in Person on the 17th of *August* ; the Constable *Luines* commanded the Army, and under him as Lieutenant-Generals, acted his Brother, with *Mayenne*, *Chevreuse*, and *Lefdeguieres* ; *Schomberg* acted as Master of the Ordinance. There were Three Attacks made, the first was that of the King, commanded by the Constable and his Brother ; the Second that of *Mayn*, and the Third that of *Chevreuse* and *Lefdeguieres* ; and all the Attacks were made with the greatest Vigour imaginable, but it was as bravely defended by *la Force*, *Orvale*, and the Burghers. In short, after the greatest part of the Outworks were taken, and a considerable Breach made in a Bastion, which was the weakest Place, a General Assault was resolved on ; but the Besiegers having judged it convenient, that an Officer should first take a View of it, and he accordingly mounting the Breach, saw on the other side a very large Retrenchment, wherein were 2000 Men posted, ready to receive the Besiegers: This News put a stop in their Design. *Roan* who kept the Field with

*St. John  
de Angeli*  
taken.

Siege of  
*Montau-  
ban*.



with a small Body of Men, put some Relief into the Place: This, together with the frequent Sallies of the Besieged, made the King, on the 1st of November, raise the Siege, after the Loss of a great many Soldiers and Persons of Quality, among whom was the Duke of Mayn, who was slain with a Musket-Ball received in his Eye. It's not certain to what the ill Success of this Siege is to be attributed; most People ascribed it to *Luines*, who was no Soldier, insomuch, that the Reproaches wherewith he was justly charged on this Occasion, and the Concern he was under for the Raising of it, threw him into a Purple-Fever, of which he died Decemb. 13. after the King's Army had taken a small Town in Guyenne, called *Monhurbt*.

1621.

Siege raised.

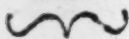
*Luines's* Death.

In Italy, *Paul V.* departing this Life about the Beginning of the Year, was succeeded in the Papal-Chair by *Alexander Luvisius*, Cardinal of *Bolonia*, by the Name of *Gregory XV.* The Business of the *Valtoline* and *Rhetia* was still in a fluctuating State, and no Body so solicitous as the *Venetians* to compose it; and, among others, they solicited the King of England to interpose therein; to which King *James* (as *Nani* says) with wonted Magnificence of Words, answer'd, That he took to Heart the Security and Safety of Europe; That the Interests of Italy were always before him; That he had a more particular Confidence in, and constant Friendship for the Republick; and therefore declared, If his Son-in-Law were dispossest of his Hereditary Countries, he would send a potent Army into Germany to support him; if the Dutch should be invaded, he would not spare his Assistance; and if the *Venetians* should any way be molested, he would succour them with all his Force, and as an Earnest thereof, offer'd them a present Levy of 10000 Men. King *James*, to appear sincere in the Business of the *Valtoline*, press'd hard at *Madrid* for the Restitution of it; so did *Bassompierre* from France, the Pope's Nuncio and the *Venetian* Ambassador; but the Death of *Philip III.* which hap-

*Philip III.* his Death and Character.

pen'd on the 31st of March, left all Business at present in Suspence, the Cardinal of *Lerma*, his prime Minister, who had governed all for some Years, having now fallen into Disgrace, it was a Question, whether in an Age, proclaim'd by Divine Vengeance, to be the Mockery of Favourites, the King would not have taken

1621.



Treaty about the  
Valtoline.

ken the Government upon himself, when Death in the 43d Year of his Age, took him away from the Toils which Empire carries along with it: His Reign would certainly have been more memorable, if he had been born a private Man, rather than a Prince, that being better endued with the Ornaments of Life than Dexterity in Command, as Goodness, Piety and Continuance placed him in a higher Degree than ordinary Subjects, so his Disapplication to Government rendred him lower than was fit or necessary; for private Vertues being corrupted by publick Defects, and this Prince in particular giving up his Mind to Idleness, it was thought he had reserved nothing for himself to do, but to consent to what the Favourite had a mind to. He was succeeded by his Son *Philip IV.* at the Age of Sixteen, to whom the Count *d'Olivares* presently became the chief Favourite, and of whom we shall hear more in the Series of this History. But now to make an End of the Affairs relating to *Italy*, *Bassompierre* solicited the Affair of the *Valtoline* in such sort, that on the 25th of *Apr.* it was agreed the *Spanish* Troops should be withdrawn out of the Valley and adjacent Countries, and Religion, and every thing else, left in the same State as in 1617. *France*, the Catholick *Switzers* and *Valetians* obliging themselves to the Performance of it. To settle the Particulars, the Ministers of the Pope, of *France*, and of Arch-Duke *Albert*, in the Name of King *Philip*, were to meet at *Lucern*, and the ancient Treaties of *Rhetia* with the House of *Austria* and *Tyrol* were to remain inviolable: But, notwithstanding this Treaty, *Feria*, Governour of *Milan*, acting in Concert with *Leopold*, Arch-Duke of *Austria*, made a Thousand Excuses and Delays for not withdrawing his Troops, and the Year ended in these Parts with Minds sufficiently perplex'd, and as such at present we shall leave them.

We'll now pass into the *Turkish* Dominions. We have already given the Reason of their Breach with *Poland*, in Pursuance of which, Sultan *Osman* setting forward *April* the 29th, in Person with 300000 Men, his first Attempt was to attack the Fort of *Cotyn* in *Moldavia*, lately given by *Gaspar* to the *Poles*; but failing in this Design, he pass'd the *Boristhenes*, and

as it were besieged the Chancellor of *Poland*, with 40000 *Poles* and *Cossacks*, and 8000 *Germans* in their Camp for 34 Days together; at length, after all the Attempts he made, and could do no Good against the Bravery of the *Poles*, who resisted them with great Slaughter, by the Mediation of *Radula*, Prince of *Wallachia*, they came to this Agreement, That the Emperor's Army should retire from the Confines of *Poland*, and that the *Tartars* should send a *Mura* to reside as an Hostage in *Poland*, there should be no future Incurfions, and the *Poles* to keep another in *Tartary*, and pay them yearly 40000 Florins, as also to have a Resident at the *Port*; That the *Cossacks* were to forbear all manner of Hostilities; That the Traffick for the *Poles* should be free; That their Merchants were to make a Present of 100000 Chequins: But all this not binding till the Sultan sent a *Chiaus* to *Poland* with these Overtures, that so the King might call a Dyet, and send an Ambaffador with ample Instruction to conclude the final Peace at the *Port*. This Agreement was very well made on both Sides; for the *Turks*, by Cold, Famine, and the like, were computed to have lost 80000 Men, and 10000 Horses, and the *Poles* 20000: But the Grand Seignior, enraged against the Emperor for sending Succour to the *Poles*, upon leaving of *Poland*, did, contrary to the Advice of his Council, proclaim War against him for the next Spring, and conformable to this Resolution, he gave to the *Basha* of *Silistria*, a *Tartar*, Orders to Winter with 70000 Men in that Country, and presently *Gallo*, the Imperial Ambaffador, was stopp'd at *Buda*, under Pretence he had promised upon his Life the Emperor should not assist the *Poles*; but the King informing the *Chiaus* at his Court, if his Master should proceed to make a War upon the Emperor on that Account, he would conclude no Peace with him, but must take his Confederate's Part, the Sultan alter'd his Mind for Peace, tho' there was secret Orders at the same time given to some of the Frontier Officers to join with *Bethlem Gabor* against the Emperor; but the same was too late, *Bethlem* having already made a Peace with that Prince.

1621.

Sultan besieges the *Polish* Camps.

an Accommodation between them.

While

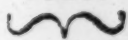
1621.

Articles  
proposed  
by the  
*English*  
Ambassa-  
dor to the  
Grand  
Seignior.

While a Peace between the *Turks* and *Poles* was in Agitation, as before mention'd, Sir *Thomas Ree*, Ambassador from King *James I.* of *England*, arrived at the *Port*, where he propos'd first to renew the ancient Capitulations and Privileges, and to move for an Enlargement of them in favour of the *English*, and and to get divers Inconveniences from the *Turkish* Customs redress'd. 2<sup>dly</sup>, He offer'd his Master's Mediation for the Concluding a Peace between the Sultan and the *Poles*. 3<sup>dly</sup>, He mov'd for the Liberty of divers of the *Polish* Nobility, and one *Scotch* Man. 4<sup>thly</sup>, To desire a Redress for the Piracies committed by the *Tunisenes* and *Algerines*: And, 5<sup>thly</sup>, Restitution of a great Sum of Money taken from *Arthur Garraway* in the Reign of *Achmet*, which had been complain'd of before. To these the Visier answer'd, That his Master had given Orders for renewing the Capitulations, and to make such Additions as should be thought requisite thereunto. As for the *Poles*, their *Cossacks* did their Empire great Mischiefs; and the *Poles*, tho' his Master had broke up his Camp, having no sincere Intention in them towards a real Peace, the Sultan could not hearken unto any Conditions, and that his Majesty of *Great Britain* did not value the Grand Seignior's Honour in that Motion. As for the *Third*, he said, The Motion for the Prisoners was unreasonable, because it should follow the Peace, and when that was done, all of them, for the King's sake, should be released, except Prince *Coreski*. As for the Pirates, he made a Protestation against them in the Grand Seignior's Name; and that the Ambassador should have what Commands, what Messages he pleas'd in Company of any *English* Man. As for the last Proposal for *Garraway*, the Ambassador did him an Injury to press him, when in the Time of Three former Visiers, his Predecessors could find no Relief, therefore he could not look back into the Actions of other Men, nor rake up the Bones of the Dead, and therefore he desired the Ambassador to be satisfied, that while he had the Honour to govern, there would be no Wrong done to his Nation, and that he would hear all Complaints, so as that no Man should need to look back upon his Actions.

Ha-





Having done with *Turkey*, we shall a little inspect into the State of Affairs in *Germany*. We have already mention'd *Mansfield's* fortunate Retreat, which encouraged divers Princes to join with the Protestant Interest, particularly the Marquess of *Fagendorf*, of the House of *Brandenburg*, and *Christian*, surnam'd, *The Furious*, Duke of *Brunswick*, who harra's'd *Westphalia*: But upon *Spinola's* approaching near the *Rhine* with a well disciplin'd Army, the Protestant Princes of the Union were frighted to condescend to a Treaty at *Mentz*, whereby the Union was in a manner dissolved: However it were, *Spinola* consented to a Truce for some Months, which being soon broken, War in and the *Spaniards* having taken *Stein*, the Siege of *Germany*. *Frankendal* soon follow'd. In the mean time, the Duke of *Bavaria* makes himself Master of the Upper *Palatinate*, after which sending *Tilly* to the *Rhine*, order'd him to seize all that part of the Lower *Palatinate* betwixt the *Rhine* and the *Neckar*: However, *Mansfield* by cunning and unexpected Marches arriving in the *Palatinate*, frightned *Cordua* from the Siege of *Frankendal*. The Twelve Years Truce between the *Spaniards* and the *Dutch* being also now expired, it might easily have been prolong'd, if the Councils of these Nations had been continued, who first settled it; so that the War breaking out afresh in these Parts again, the first Exploit that the *Spaniards* perform'd was to take *Juliers*, which all the Power and Art of Prince *Maurice* could not save. *Spaniards take Juliers.*

We shall but just mention the Marriage of *Gustavus Adolphus* with the Daughter of *John Sigismund*, Elector of *Brandenburg*, but observe, that in respect to the War between him and the *Poles*, the latter were not much dispos'd to a Negotiation, and that the Truce being almost expired, he made Preparations to attack *Riga*, and therefore crossing the *Baltick* with 20000 Men unexpectedly, he attack'd the Place with great Vigour: The Burghers made a brave Defence for Six Weeks, after which, being reduced to the last Extremity, they made an honourable Capitulation, whereby the King not only confirm'd all their Privileges and Immunities, but promised to enlarge them, if the Town continued as true to him as they had done to the

the

1621. the King of *Poland*; however, he expell'd the Jesuits, who had form'd several Conspiracies against him: This done, he march'd into *Courland*, and made himself Master of *Britau*.

Arch-  
Duke  
Albert's  
Death.

Having proceeded thus far, let us now come to the *Remarkables* of the Year, which, on the 13th of *July*, proved fatal to Arch-Duke *Albert*, Prince of the *Low-Countries*; a Prince that, besides History, delighted much in Mathematicks, and especially Geometry; he also loved Painting, and expended vast Sums in buying the best Originals. As to his Character otherwise, he spake but little, tho' much to the Purpose, was not apt to admire any thing, kept his Court very regular, and was of an equal Temper in Prosperity and Adversity; he administred Justice exactly, and his Recreations were chaste and moderate. This Prince having no Issue by the *Infanta Isabella*, his Wife, the *Low-Countries*, after her Decease, which happen'd in 1633. return'd again to *Spain*, according to the Deed of Gift, *Philip II.* her Father, had made her in 1598.

C. Bel-  
larmine's  
Death.

On the 17th of *September* died the learned Cardinal *Robert Bellarmine*, at the Age of 72. He was a Native of *Montepulciano* in *Tuscany*, and Sister's Son of Pope *Marcellus II.* At Eighteen, 1560. he became a Jesuit, and he was thought fit to preach before he had Orders, and many Protestants went out of *England* and *Holland* to *Lovain* to hear him preach in *Latin*. He also taught Divinity in *Hebrew*, and employ'd much of his Time in reading the Fathers, Ecclesiastical History, Councils and Canon-Laws. *Gregory XIII.* appointed him to teach the Controversies against Protestants in the new College he had founded, where it was he wrote his Treatises on that Subject. In 1599. *Gregory* made him a Cardinal, and then Archbishop of *Capua*; but being afterwards obliged by *Paul V.* to reside at *Rome*, to assist him with his Councils, he quitted his Archbishoprick out of Conscience, that he could not watch over the Conduct of his Flock. Of his Treatises we have 3 or 4 Volumes in *Folio*: *Explanatio in Psalmos. Opuscula. Conciones Sacrae. De Scriptoribus Ecclesiasticis*; and his Answer to King *James's* Book, *Triplex Nodus, Triplex Cuneus, &c.*

John

from 1600. to the Treaty of Nimeguen. 321

*John Barclay* also departed this Life this Year. He was born in *France*, whom whence, after his Father's Death, who was a *Scotch* Man, he came into *England*, and had considerable Employments under *K. James*: He got a great Name by his *Satyricon*, wherein he imitated *Petronius* his Stile. Returning into *France*, he went from thence to *Rome*, where he was much favour'd. publish'd a Piece against the Protestants and his *Argenis*: He writ also *Icon Animerum*, and Three Books of Poetry. *Barclay's Death.*

On the 2d of *July* died that accomplish'd Mathematician *Thomas Harriot*, who was born at *Oxford* 1560. where he had his Education in *St. Mary's-Hall*. The great *Des Cartes*, in those of his Works which have made him most celebrated, shines with the Light borrow'd from this illustrious Person, as will easily appear to those who shall compare their Books, and consult the Learned *Dr. Wallis* in his Treatise of Algebra in *English*, where he compares the Improvement, with what *Des Cartes* advanced as his own, and gives it clearly on *Harriot's* Side. He was in 1579. taken into *Sir Walter Raleigh's* Family, to instruct him at his Leisure in the Mathematicks, and accompanied him to *Virginia*, of which Country he wrote a Description. After his Return, the Earl of *Northumberland* entertain'd him in his Family, and allow'd him 120 *l. per Annum*, which, I think, he continued to his Death. *Harriot's Death.*

The Learned *Sir Henry Savil* now paid his last Debt to Nature. He was born at *Bradley* near *Halifax*, in *Yorkshire*, Anno 1549. bred in *Oxford*, and in time became Provost of *Eaton*. He collected the best Copies of *St. Chrysostom*, and publish'd them with learned Annotations: He also writ Lectures upon *Euclid*. *Sir Henry Savil's Death.*

The first Thing that occurs to us in *England* is the Dissolution of the Parliament on the 6th of *Jan.* by Proclamation, wherein the King declared, That the Calling, Continuing and Dissolving of Parliaments particularly belong'd to him. He complain'd of the Liberty some of the Members took to treat of his high Prerogatives, and to speak disrespectfully of Foreign Princes; and that they spent their Time in disputing upon his Letters and Messages; That they *Parliament dissolved.*

Y had

1622. had necessitated him to disturb them ; but that he would call another in convenient time. The House was no sooner broke up, but Sir *Edward Coke*, Sir *Robert Philips*, Mr. *Selden*, Mr. *Pym* and Mr. *Mattery* were committed to several Prisons, and Sir *Edward Coke's* Papers seized ; Sir *Dugley Diggs*, Sir *Tho. Crew*, Sir *Nath. Rich* and Sir *James Perrot*, were by way of Punishment sent into *Ireland*, upon a Commission directed to *Moor* and others, for Enquiry into several Matters concerning his Majesty's Service ; and Letters were sent from the Council to the Judges of Assize, to give in Charge the several Proclamations prohibiting licentious and undutiful Speeches touching the Government, and to punish the Offenders.

Terms  
proposed  
by King  
*James* to  
the Em-  
peror in  
Behalf of  
the *Palis-*  
*grave*.

The Em-  
peror's  
Answer.

The King still walked in his beaten Path of Treaties, and wrote to the Emperor, declaring his Zeal for Peace, and offering that his Son should renounce all Claim to the Crown of *Bohemia*, yield all due Obedience to his Imperial Majesty, and crave Pardon of him, and no way for the future Misdemean himself towards him, nor disturb his Kingdoms and Countries, and should reconcile himself to the other Princes and States, requesting him to accept of these Conditions otherwise he was resolved to exert his utmost Power for his Childrens Relief. The Emperor reply'd, and acknowledged the King's Moderation and Justice in the Matter : But the Person whom it most concern'd had not shew'd the least Sign of Repentance, he still combining with *Fagerndorf*, *Mansfield*, and others to disturb the Publick Peace : Howbeit he would consent to a Treaty at *Bruxels*, and devolve his Power upon the *Infanta Isabella Clara Eugenia*. This was accepted by King *James*, and Sir *Richard Weston* sent Ambassador thither : But without regard thereunto the Enemy proceeded to subdue the lower *Palatinate*, which was the more easily effected by the Treaty of Peace between the Emperor and *Bethlem Gabor* ; to accelerate which Treaty, the Emperor had made use of the *Palisgrave's* Submission and Resignation of the Crown of *Bohemia*.

K. *James*  
despised

Indeed our King by this time was grown very contemptible both at home and abroad, his People said, That *Great-Britain* was grown less than *Little England*, which had lost strength by changing Sexes ; and the



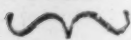
the story of *David Riccio*, written by *Buchanan*, had died in every *English* Opinion, if it had not had a Resurrection by his Controversies with his Parliament. Abroad, they now began to undervalue his Power, as much as before they did his Courage, and in their Comedies represented Messengers bringing News in great haste that the *Palatinate* was now like to be lost, for the *Danes*, the *French*, the *Dutch* and *English*, would each of them send 40000 to make up a Formidable Army in *Germany*: And one being appointed to ask of what each 40000 must consist, the Messenger answered, the *Danes* would send 40000 Pickled Herrings, the *Dutch* 40000 Butter-Boxes, the *French* 40000 Compliments, and the *English* 40000 Ambassadors. In one Place they Pictured him with a Scabbard and never a Sword in it, in another Place with a Sword that no Body could draw out, tho' several Men stood pulling at it. At *Brussels* they Pictur'd him with his Pockets hanging out, and not a Penny in them, nor in his Purse, which they turn'd upside down; every one of these Pictures had several Motto's expressing their Malice. Such Scorns and Contempts were put upon the King, and in him upon the whole Nation.

Scandalous Representations.

But to return, *Philip III.* King of *Spain* departing this Life the preceding Year, the Lord *Digby* was sent Ambassador Extraordinary to that Country, to condole his Death, and to advance the Match, with Letters from the King and Prince to the new King *Philip the Fourth*, and a private Letter to *Don Balazar de Zuniga*. Sir *Walter Ashton* had before *Digby's* Arrival manag'd that Treaty: The *Spaniards* proceeded therein very formally; and when the Emperor's Ambassador in *Spain* discoursed of a Marriage between his Master's Son and the *Infanta*, he was answer'd, That the King's Hands were tied by a Treaty on Foot with the King of *Great Britain*.

The Privy-Council issue out Orders for raising Money.

In the mean time, the Privy-Council consulted about raising of Monies to defend the *Palatinate*, and order'd the Records in the *Tower* to be searched, what Levies of Men had been made at the publick Charge of the Country since *Edward III.* They likewise directed Letters to the Judges, purporting, 'That all fair Ways to recover the Patrimony of his Majesty's

1622.  Children proving ineffectual, his Majesty had now resolved to recover the same by the Sword; That he expected the Parliament would have supply'd him, but that unfortunately failing, he was constrained to propound a voluntary Contribution, in which he required their Assistance, as well as in their Circuits, as by presently calling before them all the Officers and Attorneys belonging to the Courts of Justice, and such of their Societies, or which had Dependence on the Law, as were fit to be treated with, and to move them to contribute according to their Abilities, and to certifie the Names of the Refusers, and of the Contributors, and Sums offer'd by them. And Letters to the same Effect were directed to the High Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, Mayors and Bayliffs throughout the Kingdoms, and for making Choice of Collectors, &c.

Archbishop  
shop Abbot in  
Disgrace.

About this Time, the Enemies of *Abbot*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, took Advantage of a sad Misfortune which befel him; for shooting at a Deer with a Cross-Bow in *Bramzil* Park, he casually kill'd the Keeper: This was aggravated to the King, who already was disgusted at him for opposing the *Spanish* Match. The Bishop of *Lincoln*, then Lord-Keeper, inform'd the Marquess of *Buckingham*, That by the Common Law his whole Estate was forfeited, and by the Canon Law he was irregular *ipso facto*, and suspended from all Ecclesiastical Functions, until restored by the King his Superior; That to leave a Man of Blood, Primate and Patriarch, founded very harsh, and the Papists would not spare to censure it. Hereupon the King appointed the Lord-Keeper, and several other Bishops, with others, to inform him of the Nature of the Cause, and the Scandal that might arise thereupon: But however, as it was managed, the Archbishop was not depriv'd.

Favours  
shew'd to  
Recusants  
by the  
King's  
Order.

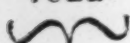
*Arminianism* began now to grow rise in *England*, tho' against the King's Inclination, who seem'd more to favour Popery than it by his present Conduct; for he released Multitudes of Priests and Popish Recusants then imprison'd, and order'd the Lord-Keeper to issue out Writs to the Justices of Assize for the Enlarging such Recusants as they should find in the several Goals, upon such Conditions and Securities

as were required by the Judges of the King's-Bench, with which Writs the Lord-Keeper sent the Judges a Letter to this Effect, *That the King, upon deep Reasons of State, and in Expectation of the like from Foreign Princes to those of our Religion, had resolved to shew some Grace to the imprison'd Papists; and that they should make no Difficulty to extend the same to all such as they should find Prisoners for Church Recusancy, refusing the Oath of Supremacy, dispersing of Popish Books, or any other Point of Recusancy that should concern Religion only, and not Matters of State.* 1622.

On the other Hand, taking Notice of the Abuses and Extravagances of Preachers in the Pulpits, where divers unsound, seditious and dangerous Doctrines were broached, he sent these Directions to the Archbishop about it: 1. That no Preacher under a Bishop or Dean (and they upon the King's Days and Festivals) do fall into any set Discourse or common Place not comprehended or warranted by, or within the Articles of Religion in 1562. or the Book of Homilies. 2. That none preach on *Sundays* or Holy-days in the Afternoon, but upon some Part of the Catechism, or some Text out of the Creed, Ten Commandments, or Lord's Prayer (Funeral Sermons only excepted;) and that those Preachers be most encouraged, who spend the Afternoon in Catechising Children. 3. That none under a Bishop or Dean preach in any popular Auditory the deep Points of Predestination, Election, Reprobation, or of the Universality, Efficacy, Resistibility or Irresistibility of God's Grace. 4. That no Preacher whatsoever shall declare or limit the Power, Prerogative, Jurisdiction, Authority or Duty of Sovereign Princes, or meddle with Matters of State, or the Differences between Princes and People, otherwise than as they are instructed in the Homilies and Articles of Religion, 5. Nor shall carelessly, or without Invitation from the Text, fall into bitter Invectives and undecent railing Speeches against the Persons of Papists or Puritans, but modestly and gravely (on Occasion) vindicate the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of *England* from the Aspersions of either Adversary. 6. That the Archbishops and Bishops be more wary in their licensing of Preachers, and revoke all Grants to any

King's  
Directi-  
ons con-  
cerning  
Preachers

1622.



King's  
Answer  
to the  
Pope's  
Demands  
about the  
Spanish  
Match.

Chancellor, Official or Commissary for passing Licences of that kind; and that all Lecturers (a new Body sever'd from the ancient Clergy) be licensed in the Court of Faculties from the Bishop of the Diocess, with a *Fiat* from the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and a Confirmation under the Great Seal, under Pain of Suspension *ab officio & beneficio* for a Year and a Day for Breach of any of these Directions.

The *Spanish* Match was still on Foot, and the *Palatinate* hardly minded: but tho' both the Kings of *England* and *Spain* solicited the Pope for a Dispensation, Mr. *Gage* return'd now from *Rome*, where it could not pass without abundance of new Conditions, which were never dream'd of. A Piece of Jugling being observed in this Negotiation, for the Ministers of *Spain* had concealed from the Pope some larger Point of Indulgence, whereunto King *James* had yielded: And it being generally expected that *Gage* should have brought the Dispensation with him, the Court here put a good Face upon it, and gave out, that he had sent it from *Rome* to *Spain*, while the King gave this Answer to the Pope's Demands: 1. As to a publick Church for the *Infanta* in *London*, besides a Domestick Chappel, that it was more than he or his Son had; and that the Chappel appointed was no private Oratory, but in effect a Church. 2. As to her superior Priests being *in ordine Episcopali*, that he left that to the King of *Spain*. 3. As to the Ecclesiasticks being subject only to the Laws of their own Ecclesiastical Superiors; that this was not allow'd in some Countries of the *Roman* Religion. 4. As to the Education of the Children under the Mother's Government, let the King of *Spain* judge whether it were fit for him to declare to the World, That his Grand-Children should be brought up until their Years of Marriage in a Religion which he profess'd not, nor was publickly profess'd in his Kingdom: And that further than he already assented, that they should be under the Mother's Tuition for a longer or a shorter time, according to their Constitution or Health, he could not condescend, unless a Time were limited in Certainty. 5. As to the Pope's Expectation of larger Offers for the Good of the *Roman* Church, that in the Judgment of the learnedst and greatest of the Clergy



Clergy of *Spain*, the Articles of Religion already agreed upon were so satisfactory, that they declared the Pope ought not to withhold the Dispensation: And the Pope well knew, that the King could not of his own Authority grant a general Toleration. This Resolution the King sent into *Spain* to the Lord Digby, then made Earl of *Bristol*, with a Letter to this Effect, viz. 'That he should represent his sincere King's Proceedings to the King of *Spain*; and that the Letter to Emperor's amusing him with a Treaty of Cessation the Earl of Arms, was in the mean time seizing upon the of *Bristol*. whole *Palatinate*; That as he had promised, that if his Son-in-Law would not be govern'd by him, he would forsake him, and join his Forces with the Emperor's against him; so he expected the same Measure from the King of *Spain*: That upon the Emperor's Averseness to an Accommodation, he would actually assist the King for the Recovery of the *Palatinate* and Electoral Dignity; That he could not be well pleased, that after so long an Expectance of the Dispensation, there was nothing yet return'd but Queries and Objections; That he had sent him his Resolution concerning those Points demanded by the Pope, and expected the King of *Spain* would bring it instantly to an Issue: But if Time were demanded until an Answer came from *Rome*, that he gave them Two Months after his Audience.

At the same Time another Letter was sent to *Gondamor*, then in *Spain*, to this effect, 'That to the King, A Letter Prince, *Buckingham*, and other Friends in *England*, to *Gondamor*. every Day seemed a Year till the Match was accomplished. That Priests and Recusants were at liberty, the Prisons filled with zealous Ministers, and the Universities and Pulpits forbid to be meddling. That His Majesty regarded not his Son-in-Law, but kept strictly to Honour and Justice. That *Gondamor* promised he should be prest to nothing but what might stand with Conscience, Honour, and his Peoples Love. And that if the Match broke off, the King would be necessitated to execute the Laws against the Catholics.

*Bristol* putting a Memorial to the Court of *Spain*, according to the Directions given, received an Answer to this Purpose, 'That for the accomplishing the

1622.  
 The Answer to  
 the E. of  
 Bristol's  
 Memorial

‘ Match not one Day should be lost. That for the  
 ‘ *Palatinate*, he would seek the King’s intire Satisfac-  
 ‘ tion. That the Belieging of *Heidelberg* was  
 ‘ without their consent, and disapproved by them.  
 ‘ That if *Heidelberg* should be taken, and the Em-  
 ‘ peror refuse to restore it, or to condescend to an Ac-  
 ‘ commodation, the King should be assisted with the  
 ‘ Arms of *Spain* for restoring the *Palatine*. And for  
 the Match *Bristol* was so confident, that he declared  
 to the King, that if they intended it not, they  
 were falser than all the Devils in Hell.

A new  
 Dispatch  
 to *Spain*.

In the mean Time *Heidelberg* being taken, the  
*English* put to the Sword, Sir *Edward Herbert*, the Go-  
 vernour, slain, *Manheim* besieged, *Frenkental* block’d  
 up, the King commanded *Bristol* to let *Philip* know  
 how sensible he was of it, and of the *Infanta*’s delay-  
 ing the Conclusion of the Treaty at *Bruxels*, and re-  
 fusing to command the Emperor’s Generals to forbear  
 the Attacking the Garrisons in the *Palatinate*, upon  
 a Pretence of want of Authority, altho’ she had an  
 absolute Commission from the Emperor to conclude  
 a Cessation of Arms. That therefore he had recalled  
 his Ambassador from *Bruxels*, and also the Lord  
*Chichester* who was designed for *Ratisbon*. That he  
 should demand of that King a Promise under his  
 Hand and Seal, that within Seven Days *Heidelberg*  
 should be redelivered to the *Palatine*, with *Manheim*  
 and *Frankental*, if taken: That a Suspension of Arms  
 should be granted, and a general Treaty again set on  
 Foot, upon such Terms as had been already offer’d  
 to the Emperor; or that in case of refusal he should  
 join with the *English*, or allow them passage through  
 his Territories. That if he receiv’d not a direct Af-  
 surance of these Things, he should take his leave; but  
 yet give him Intelligence before he came away.

But, alas, these Demands were now too late and  
 the *Spaniards* so unsincere, that King *Philip*, in the  
 Height of his Professions touching the Marriage,  
 wrote *Novemb. 5.* to the *Conde Olivares*, That the King  
 his Father declared at his Death, That he never in-  
 tended to marry the *Infanta* to the Prince of *Wales*;  
 which Don *Balthazar* understood, and ever treated  
 with intention to delay it; and that it was time to  
 break off the Treaty by some Means or other, which  
 he

he must find out. To which *Olivares*, Novemb. 8. return'd in answer, That the Ministers who treated the Match in the Time of *Philip III.* never meaning to have it take effect, but only to make use of the King of *Great-Britain's* Friendship in the Business of *Germany* and *Flanders*; and his Majesty being of the same Opinion, and the *Infanta* resolving to put her self into a Monastery, if she was pressed to this Marriage: Hethought fit to represent to his Majesty, That the King of *Great-Britain* was equally engaged in Two Designs; the one was the Marriage, whereby he would assure himself of his Majesty's Friendship, and of the Catholicks in his own Kingdom, and marry his Son to the best born Lady in the World; and the other was the Restitution of the *Palatinate*: Which Two Engagements were inseparable; and yet if the Marriage were made, they must fail in the Restitution of the *Palatinate*, which would involve his Majesty, with the King of *Great-Britain*, in a War against the Emperor, and the Catholick League; or his Majesty declaring for the Emperor, and the Catholicks League, (as he would certainly do) it would involve him in a War against the King of *England*, to whose Son his Sister was to be married: And if his Majesty shew'd himself Neutral, that first would cause very great scandal, since in less Differences than between Catholicks and Hereticks, the Arms of that Crown had always taken the Godly part, and it would occasion those of the League to make use of the King of *France*, and other Catholick Princes ill affected to *Spain*. And it would enrage the King of *England*, when he saw no Benefit by his Alliance with this Crown, and yet his Daughter and Grand-Children ruin'd for respect of that Alliance: Nor did it lie in the Power of the Emperor (if he would do any thing upon the account of this Marriage) to dispose of the Dominions which were already in the Possession of the Duke of *Bavaria*, to whom the *Electorate* was ready to be translated, and who had no intention to accommodate Matters. That the Emperor had expressed his desire to marry his Daughter to the King of *England's* Son, and he supposed would be likewise glad to marry his Second Daughter to the *Palatine's* Son. He propounded that these Two Marriages might

1622. might be set on Foot presently ; this would accommodate the Matters of the *Palatinate*, and the Succession of the King of *England's* Grand-Children ; and yet the Emperor needed not sever himself from the Engagements of *Bavaria*, and the *Palatine's* Sons might be bred in the Emperor's Court with Catholic Doctrine.

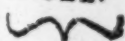
*K. James*  
deluded.

Such Consultations had the *Spaniard* in his Cabinet Council, while he pretended so fair to *England*, and King *James* look'd on *Bristol's* Dispatches as full and satisfactory ; and offer'd to stand privately obliged by a Letter, that the Children should be kept under the Mother's Wing till Nine Years Old ; but desired for Honour's sake that no more than Seven might be expressed in the publick Articles. But he was brought at length to wave his Honour, and come up to Ten Years, and to insure it by a publick Ratification. And for the Exemption of Ecclesiasticks he yielded, That the Ecclesiastical Superior should either degrade the Offender, and deliver him up to the Secular Power, nor banish him the Kingdom. Indeed *Bristol's* Imporunity had procured from the King of *Spain* this Answer, That he had sent a Dispatch to *Rome* for the Dispensation, and others into *Flanders* touching the *Palatinate*, and till it were known what Effect they had, no further Answer could be given to the Ambassador's Memorial. And the Pope's Demands, to which King *James* took Exception, being now accommodated, were signed by the King and Prince : And *Gage* being returned to *Rome*, was appointed to present Letters from the King to the Pope, wherein he stiled him most holy Father.

The  
Pope's  
Demands  
sign'd by  
*K. James*  
and the  
Prince.

If *England* was so bad at this time, *France* had no Reason to boast of the good State of her Affairs ; the Queen-Mother was now readmitted into the Council, but *Richlieu* would not be allowed to bear her Company thither. At the same time Proposals of Peace were made, and all that the *Hugonor* Party demanded was inviolably to observe the Edict of *Nantes*, and to leave all Things in the same Posture as they were at the Death of *Henry IV.* The Ministers and Ecclesiasticks were entirely against the King's hearkening to them, and it was unhappy for the Reformed, that some of the Nobility of their Religion, fearing to be  
over-





overwhelmed under the Ruins of the Party, abandoned them at a Time when they had the greatest Occasion for them; nor was this all, for their Generals could not endure, that not only the Assemblies of their Nobles, but, what was more unpalatable, that their very Synods should pretend to concern themselves with the Management of the War. These and other Considerations of particular Advantages, brought off the Dukes of *Sully*, *Bouillon* and *Lesdeguieres*, with *Chastillon* and divers others of Quality, from the Party; some of whom afterwards turned Roman Catholics. The King on the other Hand having obtained some Edicts to be verified for the raising of Money, resolved to go into *Bretagne*, to put a Stop to the Progress of *Soubize*, who had already mastered several Posts in the Lower *Poitou*, and began to threaten that Province; he parted on the 20th of *March*, and that Army rendezvoused at *Nants*, in *April*, of which *Conde* was Lieutenant-General, and the same consisted of about 10000 Foot and 2000 Horse. *Soubize* who was not half so strong, retired to the Isle of *Rhee*, but was forced to quit that also without coming to Blows. After this the King took *Royan* in *Santonge*, and about the End of *May*, *la Force* left the Reformed, and made his Peace with the King, who created him a Marechal of *France*, and gave him a Sum of Money at *St. Foi*, whose Gates the other caused to be opened to his Majesty, after he had concluded a very advantageous Capitulation for them. *Negrepeliste* in *Guyenne* was taken by Storm, and most of the People put to the Sword. *St. Antonin* upon the *Averion* was forced to surrender upon Discretion on the 22d. from whence the Army marched into *Languedoc*, with a Design to attack *Montpelier*, but e'er they come before it, reduced several small Towns there, and particularly *Lunel* wherethe Capitulation was basely violated. In the mean time *Lesdeguieres* apostatizing from his Religion, was made Constable; and *Chastillon* having given up *Aigues Mortes* to the King, was rewarded with a good Sum of Money and a Marechal's Staff: So that the Reformed finding now their ill State, they offered by the Intervention of *Lesdeguieres* to lay down their Arms in all Places, upon condition of an Amnesty for what was past, and Liberty of Conscience for

Fr. King's  
Progress  
against  
the Hug-  
uenots.

the

1622.

A Peace  
made in  
France.

the future ; and at last after Six Weeks Siege at *Montpelier*, *Roan* perswaded the Inhabitants to receive the King into the Place, upon condition of the Peace, and that he should leave no Garrison behind him at his Departure ; which he did not perform in that particular. The King's Naval Forces commanded by *Guise*, had likewise this Year great Advantages over the *Rochellers*, whom they blocked up by Land by Fort *Louis*, and several others, which were the Beginning of their Ruin, as we shall see hereafter. But here not to pass over the Death of the Cardinal of *Retz*, while the King was in *Languedoc*, whereby Two Places were become vacant in the Sacred College ; *Richlieu* did so bestir himself now, that he obtained a Cardinal's Cap before the End of this Year, and acted all the while for the Queen Mother, on all Occasions she was pleased to imploy him.

Spanish  
Treaty  
with the  
Grisons.

As to the Business of the *Grisons*, the same was disturbed by new Projects ; for the French Ambassador at *Madrid* consented to a certain Writing to deposite the Forts in the Hands of the Great Duke of *Tuscany*, while *Feria* precipitating Matters with some Ambassadors of the *Grisons*, brought them basely to agree ; That the Ten Dictatorships should be subject to Arch-Duke *Leopold* ; That they should be the perpetual Confederates of *Milan* ; That the Passages should be open to the *Spaniards*, their old Alliance with the Crown of France reserved, the *Valtoline* to be no longer subject to the *Grisons*, in Consideration of which they should have 25000 Crowns. But this undiscreeit and violent Procedure gave another Turn to Affairs than was expected ; for the common People being no longer able to sustain the Misery they laboured under, took up Arms, cut the *Germans* in divers Places in Pieces, and recover'd them : However, a Suspension of Arms being agreed on, and a Treaty set on Foot at *Lindo*, *Sultz*, *Leopold's* General, basely violated the Truce, and suddenly invaded *Rhetia*, quickly recover'd what was lost, and reduced the Country to its former Miseries, under which at present we must leave them groaning.

Affairs of  
Turkey.

Things did not go well neither in the *Ottoman* Empire, and *Osman's* Fate comes on there apace : The Soldiery had been dissatisfied with his Conduct for some

some time, and he on his part being discontented since his Disgrace in *Poland*, meditated Revenge upon the Soldiery, and finding also that his Pretence of a Pilgrimage to *Meccha* did not relish, he was very uneasy upon the Matter, but did, however, at last resolve to undertake it, and therefore seem'd now content with any Conditions of Peace, tho' disadvantageous and dishonourable, with the *Poles*: He reinforced his Frontiers in *Hungary*, and, tho' much troubled with the League between the Emperor and *Gabor*, yet he dissembled the Matter with the *Transylvanian* to an high Degree, and secured the *Black Sea* as well as he could with his Gallies; but the Journey stuck so in the Minds of the People and his Great Officers, that they set themselves vigorously to oppose it: The Church-men and Lawyers did the same, and the Soldiery went so far, as to protest they would not follow him, but set up another Prince in his Room; but for all this, he began on *Wednesday*, the 7th of *May*, to pass over his Tents and Pavilions, with a great Quantity of Treasure, into *Asia*: But the *Fanizaries* and *Spahi's*, who had also some secret Intelligence that the Sultan, by carrying away so much Treasure, defacing his Palace and Churches of what was valuable in them, betray'd some farther Project than a Pilgrimage, they suddenly met at the *Hippodrome*, and and tumultuously running to the *Seraglio*, cry'd for the King, who asking them what they meant by that Insolency, answer'd, He should not go for *Meccha* nor *Asia*, but stay in the City, and they required the Heads of the Prime Visier *Delavir* and others, as Enemies to the Government. To the first, he promised not only to give his Journey over, but they had it in Writing from under his Hand; and for the other Demand, he would have perswaded them to stay till the next *Divan*, on *Saturday*, tho' with ill Success, and therefore that Night he fortified and defended the *Seraglio*: But tho' it had always about 3000 Household Servants in it, no Man would arm himself in his Cause; for next Morning the Mutineers assembled again, and forcing the *Mufti* to go along with them to the Court, they made a new Demand of Persons Heads: But, notwithstanding the Danger the Sultan was in, and the Importunity of the Visier, yet he

1622. he could not perswade him to go over in his own Boats into *Asia*; so that the brave Visier failing in this to make his own Escape, resolved at length, with good Assurance, to go out to the Mutineers, and ask'd what they sought of him, and wherein he had offend- ed? They were amaz'd at first, but some insolent Vil- lains, breaking through the general Modesty, an- swer'd him with their Swords, and cut him in Pieces. Hereupon the Sultan, tho' too late attempting, and failing to escape into *Asia*, hid himself in a private Place, while the Mutineers enquired for him, and for more Sacrifices: They at last entred the Palace, and taking *Mustapha* out of a Vault, with Two Negro Women, where *Osman* had put him in the Beginning of the Tumult, they then proclaim'd him Emperor once more, and carry'd him to the old *Seraglio*. *Os- man* in the Night consulting with *Semi* Bascha and the *Aga* of the *Fanizaries* what he should do, he early next Morning, according to their Advice, went to the *Fanizaries* College, and in a Speech full of Ac- knowledgment of his Error, and accompanied with abundance of Tears, was like to have brought them to relent in his Favour; but the *Aga* using some harsh Words of Upbraidure, moved their Fury anew, and so crying out, *Treason*, they cut *Hascin* to Pieces, and sending the *Mufti* Prisoner to the *Seven Towers*, *Mustapha*, by the Perswasion of the new Visier *Dalent*, sent Persons to put *Osman* to Death, who upon their Entry crying, *What News?* and pretending to resist, he was quickly strangled by them. Some time be- fore his Death, he dreamt, that he rode upon a Ca- mel, and being mounted he could not force him by fair Means nor Stripes to go, and that then alighting in a Rage, the Body of the Beast vanished, and left the Bridle and Head in the Emperor's Hand, who next Day being troubled at the Fancy, sent to a Learned Man, familiar with him, for the Interpre- tation; but he excusing it, and referring him to the *Mufti*, and the *Mufti* to *Mustapha*, his Uncle, who was esteem'd an holy Man, that had Visions and Angeli- cal Precautions (in Reality between a mad Man and a Fool) the Emperor went to him, who answer'd, The Camel signified his Empire; his Riding, Abuse in Government; his Descention, his Deposition; the

Sultan *Of-*  
*man* de-  
posed and  
strangled.

His  
Dream  
before his  
Death.



Vanishing of the Body, the Revolt of his Subjects; the Head remaining in his Hand, only a bare Title; That he should die within a few Months, and lose his Kingdom, but the empty Name of Emperor should accompany him to his Grave. And as this Story is very remarkable of the Grand Seignior, there is another not very far short of it concerning the Prime Visier *Delavir*, lately executed, as aforesaid, who, when the *English* Ambassador would have dissuaded the Emperor from his intended Pilgrimage by him, and that if he went along with him, that he would leave him a particular Recommendation to the *Chimacam*, he suddenly replied, *Trouble not your self, nor fear; I'll never remove so far, but that I will leave one of my Legs in this City to serve you; which the poor Man fulfill'd; for within a few Days after his Murther, one of his Legs whole and entire was hang'd in the Hippodrome, the most publick Place in the City.*

Now, during these Tumults and Alterations at the Port, the *Polish* Ambassador, the Duke of *Skaraski*, came near the *Turkish* Borders, and knowing not what had happen'd, writes a Letter to the dead Visier, to notifie his being sent to conclude a Peace upon such Conditions as were agreed on by the Visier and *Polish* Commissioners, which had been kept so secret, that the new Visier knew nothing of the Matter, and could find no Copy of them; but tho', by the Intercession of Sir *Thomas Roe*, the Peace went on, yet *June 17.* the brave Prince *Coreski*, taken Prisoner in the late War, and who had formerly made his Escape out of *Turkey*, after Two Years, was basely strangled in his Prison, tho' the Visier, who was the Cause of it, upon some Spight to the *Aga* of the *Fanizaries*, took the Opportunity to lay the same upon him, and cashier'd and sent him to the Islands to be strangled; but the *Fanizaries* rescued their Commander, and demanded the Visier's Head, and others; they also sack'd his House; but were quiet for 2 or 3 Days, upon making *Mustapha*, a Man of a mild Nature, new Visier, though all Things quickly return'd to Confusion again, some being for *Mustapha's* continuing Sultan, while others practis'd for the Advancement of *Morat*, *Osman's* Brother, the Captain of the *Fani-*

1622. *Fanizaries* slew the *Basha* at *Bagdat*, burnt the *Musti*, and all his Kin, and married his Daughter to *Ashkan Begli*, a Pretender to the ancient Inheritance of a bordering Prince. But, to digress a little from these Broils, *Bethlem Gabor's* Ambassador, on the 22d of *August*, arriving at the *Port*, amongst his other Instructions, had Orders to excuse his Master for making Peace with the Emperor, and to give the Reasons which induced him to it, which was chiefly to gain Time; but yet he assured the *Port*, he did not intend to keep it long, and would have perswaded them, upon a Suggestion that the Emperor designed to invade the *Ottoman* Empire, to grant the Frontier *Basha's* Commissions to fall into the Empire and *Poland*, from which last Kingdom the Ambassador was now arrived in *Constantinople* to solícite a Peace; of which more hereafter.

Divers  
Warlike  
Adven-  
tures in  
*Germany*.

The War continued as outrageous in *Germany* as the Tumults did in *Turkey*; for Count *Tilly*, General of the *Imperial* and *Bavarian* Troops, being much superior in Strength, began to pursue Count *Mansfeldt*, and did it with that Vigour, that he beat him back to the Village of *Mingelsheim*, where the latter, perceiving himself in extream Danger, by reason the Roads were too narrow to flie with any Expedition, had Recourse to a Stratagem to procure his Safety, which was this: He set Fire to the said Village, during which he had Time to rally his Troops; when, thro' the midst of the Smoak he suddenly set upon his Enemies, who were a little in Confusion, and easily routed them. The Marquess of *Baden Dourlach* hearing of this Defeat, determined to go immediately and join *Mansfeldt*. However, by the Elector *Frederick's* Advice, who was now return'd from *Holland*, he march'd directly against *Tilly*, thinking to take him Unprovided for a Second Battle. Herein nevertheless he was mistaken; for that General having receiv'd Recruits from *Gonzales* of *Cordua*, did not refuse to fight him, but on the contrary engaging him on the 7th of *May*, absolutely routed him, taking all his Cannon, 1500 Waggon's of Baggage, 120 Colours, and above 2000 Prisoners, not reckoning several Officers of note. The Marquess had much ado to save himself and a few Horse, wherewith he went, tho'

tho' too late, to join *Mansfield*, who, however, continued his Exploits successfully enough; for having pass'd the *Rhine* with the Elector Palatine, he obliged Arch-Duke *Leopold* to raise the Siege of *Haguenau*, which he had just before laid. He afterwards ravaged the Bishoprick of *Spire*, and repassing the same River, beat and took Prisoner the Landgrave *Lewis* of *Hesse Darmstadt*. *Tilly* hearing of this, and foreseeing the Danger the Country of that Prince was in, march'd speedily thither, and setting upon *Mansfield*, when he least expected him, entirely defeated him, and got most part of his Baggage.

While these Movements were in the *Palatinate*, Duke *Christian* of *Brunswick* having recruited his Army, and fitted them out with the Plunder of the Two Catholick Bishopricks of *Munster* and *Paterborn*, marched directly to join *Mansfield*, with Design to revenge the Loss of the Marquess of *Dourlach*. *Tilly* being soon inform'd of this, march'd likewise to hinder their Junction, which he effected; for meeting with the Duke at *Hoechst*, upon the *Mayn*, before he could come up with *Mansfield*, he charged him so warmly, that he soon routed him. The Duke lost most of his Foot by the Breaking of a Bridge, over which they endeavour'd to pass, but saved some of his Cavalry by means of a Ford which they found to get over at. Being thus fairly escaped, he went to the Elector *Frederick* and Count *Mansfield* at *Darmstadt*, to see if they could furnish him with Recruits.

This was almost the last Effort which the Elector The E. Palatine made to vindicate his Pretensions; for soon after, being discouraged by so many repeated Misfortunes, he began to give ear to the Advice of the Peace.

Kings of *England* and *Denmark*, which was, to lay down his Arms, that he might the easier bring about the Accommodation, which was then negotiating on his Account at *Brussels*. Pursuant to this Advice, he disbanded his Army near *Saverne*, and after having dismiss'd the Duke of *Brunswick* and *Mansfield* with a great many Acknowledgments of their Services, retired into *Holland*. *Brunswick* and *Mansfield* hereupon offer'd their Services to the States, but in crossing the Country of *Luxemburg*, in order to join Prince *Maurice*, and relieve *Bergen-op-Zoom*, then besieged by

1622. *Spinola*, they were suddenly attack'd near *Floriac* by *Cordua*, and chiefly by reason of a Mutiny in the Army, part of which would not engage, lost 3000 Men, and *Brunswick* had his Right Arm shot off; however, *Mansfield* continued his March, and leaving his Baggage by the Way for the greater Expedition, happily join'd *Maurice*, who feigning to relieve the Place by Land, in the mean while sent so many Succours into it by Sea, as made the Garrison 10000 strong, and *Spinola* to quit the Siege, with which we conclude the Campaigns of this Year.

*Spinola*  
fails to  
take *Ber-*  
*gen-op-*  
*Zoom*.

*Napier's*  
Death.

The Remarkables are: 1. The Death of that Scotch Gentleman *Archibald Napier*, who was a profound Scholar, and his *Logarithms* have rendred him famous throughout the whole World. He wrote also an Exposition upon the *Revelations*.

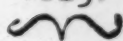
*Paræus's*  
Death.

2. That of the famous Divine *David Paræus*, in the 74th Year of his Age. He was born at *Frankenstein* in *Silesia*, An. 1518. and continued Professor of Divinity at *Heidelberg* 36 Years, where Three Years before his Death he had a Vision in his Sleep, of the City and Castle's being all in a Flame, and a little after his Decease they were accordingly sack'd by the *Spaniards*. He was famous for his Commentaries upon the Scripture; but that on the *Romans* was burnt at *London*, for his expressing himself, as they would have it, seditiously concerning Government.

1623.  
The  
Prince's  
Voyage  
into *Spain*.

In *England* the *Spanish Match* was still on Foot, and tho' the Illusions of the *Spaniards* about it were so great and numerous, yet King *James* was so eager in the Pursuit, that he would needs now send the Prince himself into *Spain* to finish it. Accordingly he and the Marquess of *Buckingham* went privately from Court to *Dover*, attended only by Sir *Robert Graham*, Master of the Marquess's Horse, where they were to meet Sir *Francis Cottington*, who was thought fit to be the Prince's Secretary, and *Endymion Porter*, who was then taken from the Marquess's Bed-Chamber, to wait upon the Prince, because he understood that Language, and had been brought up in *Spain* from his Youth. The Prince and *Buckingham* had false Beards for Disguises, and went by the Names of *Jack* and *Tom Smith*. From *Dover* they went





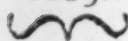
went to *Paris*, where the Prince spent one Day to view the City and Court, hiding himself as much as he could under a great Peruke. After Dinner they saw the King in the Gallery, and towards the Evening had a full View of the Queen and the Princess *Henrietta Maria*, whose Eyes inflam'd his Heart, and left an Impression upon his Mind, which could not be removed by the fairest Objects in *Spain*. In *March* they arrived at *Madrid*. The Marquess and Prince came thither one Day before *Cottingham*, to make less Noise in Appearances. They lighted at *Bristol's* House in the Evening, the Marquess carried in the Portmanteau, but his Master staid without, till he had prepared a Way for Privacy. In the Evening *Buckingham* and *Bristol* went to Court, and had private Audience of the King, who sent his grand Favourite *Olivarez* back with them, to congratulate the Prince's Coming; who let the Prince know how happy his Master was in the Enjoyment of him there, and that the Obligation was so great, that he deserved to have the *Infanta* thrown into his Arms; all this while kneeling, kissing his Hands and embracing his Thigh. From him he went to *Buckingham*, telling him, *That now the Prince of England was in Spain, his Master and he would divide the World betwixt them.* After he was gone about Ten at Night, the King of *Spain* came in a close Coach to visit the Prince, who having notice of his coming, met him in the Way, and there they spent some time in *Caresses* and *Embraces*, that are incidents in the Interviews of Great Princes.

His Arrival at *Madrid*.

The next Day after Dinner, the King came in Person, with his Favourite *Olivarez* and divers others of the *Grandees*, to conduct the Prince from the Town to the Court, having Horses and an Equipage fit for such a Grandeur. Thus mounted, they rode through the Streets in as much State as at a Coronation, the Prince riding on the King's right Hand. The Queen and the *Infanta* from a Window in the Court saw them, and when they dismounted the *Infanta* retired, and the Queen went to her Chamber, in Expectation of a Visit. When the King and Prince entered the Chamber, she rose to meet them, making an Obeisance to the Prince, which he return'd with a profound reverential Bow. After some Compliments, they sat down

His Entertainment.

1623.



on Three Royal Seats, the Queen in the Middle, the Prince on her Right Hand, and the King on the other, and in this State discoursed away about Half an Hour, and then retired. The Queen brought the Prince to the utmost Extent of her Chamber, and the King to a Chamber provided for him, where he left him to his own Attendants, and some great *Spanish* Grandees, as principal Officers of the Household. *Gondamor* being always one about him. All the *Spanish* Court could do, was heightened into Gallantry and Civilities to the Prince, yet he had not the Sight of the *Infanta*, but at an undiscerning Distance, and *in transitu* as she came from Church: But when all these splendid Ceremonies were a little over, the Prince began to mind what he came about, and desired a more intimate Access to his Mistress, which *Olivarez* promised from Day to Day, but still delay'd; but at length when unperform'd Promises were heightened into Shame, he plainly confess'd, that it was agreed by the King and Council, that he might not see her as a Lover, till the Dispensation came from *Rome*; but he had sometimes Access to her as a Prince in a publick Way, the King of *Spain* being always present, and the Earl of *Bristol* Interpreter. Now the *English* Nobility flock into *Spain*, and the Marquess of *Buckingham*'s new Title of Duke came to him also, that he might be in the highest Rank among the *Spanish* Grandees, and the Prince was so encircled with a splendid Retinue of his own People, that it might be said, *There was an English Court in the King of Spain's Palace*. Among other Honours they pretended to do the Prince, few omitted the grand Civility of tempting him to forsake the Protestant Religion, and to turn Papist, to which they added Promises of Assistance, if his own Subjects should rebel upon that Consideration. The Pope also wrote a sweetning Letter to the Prince to that Purpose, wherein he set forth the early Conversion of *Britain*, and the Piety of many of her Kings; that he desired the Gates of the Kingdom of Heaven might be opened to him and his Noble Father. And that as *Gregory* the Great taught the *English* Kings the Law of the Gospel, and the Respect of Apostolical Authority, so 'twas reasonable that he should tread in his blessed Footsteps, and

The *English* flock into *Spain*.

The Pope's Letter to the Pr. of *Wales*.

endeavour the Salvation of those Provinces. That the Prince desiring to ally himself to the House of *Austria*, it was hoped that the antient Seed of Piety might revive in his Soul; For twas not to be believ'd that he should love such an Alliance that hated the Catholick Religion, and should take delight to oppress the Holy Chair. He exhorted him to follow the Examples of the most Holy Kings of *England*, who came from thence to *Rome*, to do Honour and Homage to the Lord of Lords, and to the Prince of the Apostles. Nor could he bring a greater Comfort to the Christian World, than to put the Prince of the Apostles in Possession of that most noble Island; and that the writing of these Letters would never grieve him, if they stirr'd up but the least Spark of the Catholick Faith in the Heart of so great a Prince.

He also wrote another to the Duke, and took Notice of the Authority the Duke had in the Court of *England*, and told him what an Access of Glory it would be to him, if he should become the Safeguard of the Catholick Religion, and if by his Perswasion the King of *England* should receive the Heavenly Inheritance, and propagate the Pope's Authority: And that his Mother, who brought him forth, desired to bring him forth again to the Church of *Rome*, whom she acknowledged for her Mother.

The Prince in his Answer declared how acceptable it was to him, that the renown'd Examples of his Ancestors were propos'd to him by his Holiness for his Imitation; That he would endeavour to the utmost that Peace and Union might be again reduced into the Christian World, and his Lord and Father ardently desired to lend his helping Hand to so pious a Work; That his Holiness his Conjecture of his Desire to contract an Alliance with a Catholick Family and Princess, was agreeable to his (the Pope's) Wisdom and Charity; for he would never so vehemently desire to be join'd in a strict and indissoluble Bond with any Mortal whatsoeyer, whose Religion he hated; and that he was and always would be of that Moderation, as might abstain from such Actions as might testify his Hatred against the Roman Catholick Religion; That he esteem'd his Holiness's Letter as a

The  
Prince's  
Answer  
to the  
Pope.

1623. singular Present, &c. Indeed, in *Spain* all Endeavours were used to allure the Prince to Popery, by Popish Books, Popish Pictures, and carrying him to Religious Houses, and to Persons famous for pretended Miracles: They told him what a large Entrance he would gain by his Conversion into the *Infanta's* Affections; and if a Rebellion in *England* should follow, as before hinted, they offer'd an Army to subdue the Rebels. But the Prince remain'd stedfast, and express'd no Shew of Change; and, notwithstanding his splendid Entertainment, was but meanly dealt with, and in his Addresses to the *Infanta* unworthily restrain'd and undervalued. At length the Dispensation came from *Rome* to *Spain*, but with a Clog in it, That the King of *England* should give Caution for the Performance of his Concessions in Favour of the Roman Catholicks: To which he answer'd, He could give no other than his own and the Prince's Oath exemplified under the Great Seal. But this would not satisfy, unless some Sovereign Catholick Prince would stand engaged for them; and *Olivarez* proposed Three Ways for an Accommodation, either that, 1. Prince *Charles* should become a Catholick: Or, 2. That the *Infanta* should be deliver'd to him upon the former Security: Or, 3. That they should bind him fast, and not trust him with any thing. At length the King of *Spain* offer'd to bind himself by Oath on the Behalf of the King and Prince for Performance of the Articles, but he would first consult with his Ghostly Fathers. This was a fair Contrivance for a Pretence of War against *England*, if the Roman Catholicks enjoy'd not the Freedom promised: The Divines went very gravely and tediously to Work, but at last concluded affirmatively; and if the King of *England* fail'd in Performance, the King of *Spain* was to vindicate his Oath, and right himself by the Sword. Then was the Match declared publicly, and the Prince had frequent Access to the *Infanta*, but in a publick manner, and in the King's Presence.

The Archbishop's Letter to K. James. About this time the Archbishop of *Canterbury* wrote a Letter to the King, beseeching him to consider, that by a Toleration of Religion he endeavour'd to set up the most damnable and Heretical Doctrine of the Church



Church of *Rome*, the Whore of *Babylon*: And how hateful it would be to God, and grievous to his good Subjects, that he who had learnedly written against those Heresies, and declared to the World. that they were superstitious, idolatrous and detestable, should now shew himself a Patron of them. He added, that he had sent the Prince into *Spain* without Consent of his Council, or Approbation of his People; That this Toleration, which he would set up by Proclamation, could not be effected without an Act of Parliament, unless he would take upon him to overthrow the Laws at his Pleasure; and pray'd him to beware, lest by such a Toleration he drew upon himself and the Kingdom God's heavy Wrath and Indignation.

But the King would not admit any Motion of drawing back, and the Difficulties in *Rome* and *Spain* being surmounted, the following Articles (stiled by the Cardinals, *Propositions for the right Augmentation and Weal of the Roman Catholick Religion*) were sworn unto by the King, Prince and Privy-Council: 1. The Marriage to be by Dispensation of the Pope, to be procured by the King of *Spain*. 2. To be once only celebrated in *Spain*, and thus ratified in *England*: The *Infanta* and Prince shall meet in the King's Chappel, or other Place where the Procurations shall be read, and the Prince and *Infanta* shall ratifie the said Marriage celebrated in *Spain* with all necessary Solemnity, so as no Ceremony intervene contrary to the *Roman* Religion. 3. The Catholick King shall name all her Servants and Family, but no Subjects of the King of *Great Britain* without his Consent. 4. She, her Servants and Family, to have the publick Exercise of the *Roman* Religion. 5. She shall have an Oratory and Chappel in her Palace, where Masses may be celebrated, and a publick and capacious Church in *London*, or other Place of Abode, for Preaching, Sacraments, Burial, Baptism, and other Duties; to be adorn'd as pleaseth her. 6. That her Men-Servants and Maid-Servants, and their Servants and Children and all their Families may be publickly Catholicks. 7. Her Oratory and Chappel to be spacious enough for her Family, and to have a publick Door, and another inward Door for the

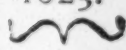
Articles  
sworn to  
by the  
King and  
Prince a-  
bout the  
*Spanish*  
Match.

1623. *Infanta's* Passage into the Chappel 8. The Chapel and Church to have Altars and other Things necessary, according to the Rites of the *Roman* Church; and the said Servants and others to go thither at all Hours. 9. The *Infanta* to appoint Keepers thereof. 10. To have 24 Priests and Assistants to be chosen by her and the Catholick King; but none of the King of *Great Britain's* Subjects, unless with his Consent. 11. To have one superior Minister or Bishop, or his Vicar. 12. That he may correct all *Roman* Catholicks, and the *Infanta* may put them out of her Service. 13. That she and her Servants may procure from *Rome* Dispensations, Indulgences, Jubilees, &c. and use Catholick Books. 14. Her Servants and Family to take the Oath of Allegiance, provided there be no Clause therein contrary to their Consciences, and the *Roman* Religion: And if any of them be Subjects of *Great Britain*, they to take the same Oath as the *Spaniards*. 15. The Laws in *England* against Religion not to extend to such Servants, and only the said Ecclesiastical Superior to proceed against Ecclesiasticks according to the Canon Law. 16. The Laws against Catholicks not to extend to the Children of this Marriage, nor shall they, tho' Catholicks, lose their right of Succession to the Crown. 17. The Nurses who shall give the Children Suck, to be chosen by the *Infanta*, and to enjoy the Privileges of her Family. 18. The Ecclesiasticks to wear their Habits. 19. The King and Prince to promise to perform any fitting thing propounded by the Catholick King for Confirmation of the Marriage. 20. That the Children shall be educated by the *Infanta* until Ten Years of Age. 21. The Vacancies of her Servants to be supplied from time to time by the Catholick King. 22. The King and Prince by Oath, and the Privy-Council under their Hands, shall confirm this Treaty; and the King and Prince shall promise to endeavour to have it confirm'd by Parliament. 23. All these Things to be approv'd by the Pope.

Private  
Articles  
sworn to  
by the  
King.

Besides these, the King did swear to certain private Articles here following. 1. That none of the Laws against Papists shall at any time hereafter be commanded to be put in Execution: And that his Council shall take the same Oath as far as it concerns them.

2. That

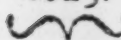


2. That no new Law shall be made against *Roman* Catholicks, but that there should be a perpetual Toleration of that Religion within private Houses, and that as well in *Scotland* and *Ireland* as in *England*. 3. That he would neither by himself or any other, directly or indirectly, treat or attempt any thing with the *Infanta*, which should be repugnant to the *Roman* Religion; nor would persuade her to renounce or relinquish the same, or to do any thing contrary to the Treaty of Marriage. 4. That he and the Prince would interpose their Authority, and would endeavour that the Parliament should confirm and ratify the Articles between the Two Kings in favour of the *Roman* Catholicks, and should revoke and abrogate the Laws against them, and that he would not consent to any new Laws to be made against them for the future. As for the Prince he engaged himself (and undertook likewise for the King his Father) that all in the foregoing Articles which concern'd the Suspension or Abrogation of the Laws against *Roman* Catholicks, should infallibly take effect within Three Years, and sooner if possible: And that he would intercede with his Father, that the Ten Years of the Education of the Children with the *Infanta* their Mother might (according to the Pope's Desire) be lengthen'd to the Term of Twelve Years. And he promised and swore, That if the entire disposing thereof devolved to him, he would grant the said Term: And did oblige himself, that he would willingly, and laying aside all Excuse, hearken to Divines, or others whom the *Infanta* should employ in the Matter of the *Roman* Catholick Religion, as often as she required it: And that the Things above promised and treated should take Effect in *Scotland* and *Ireland* as well as in *England*. Lastly, For the Privy-Counsellors, they were to observe as much as belonged to them, all the Articles in the Treaty of Marriage, and would neither execute, nor cause to be executed, any Laws against *R. Catholicks*, nor any Punishment thereby inflicted.

The  
Prince's  
Engage-  
ment.

The Pri-  
vy-Coun-  
sellors  
Oath.

These Things done, 'tis said, the King was now so confident of the Match, that he openly said, *That now all the Devils in Hell could not break it.* The *Infanta* was stiled, *Princess of England*. A Chappel was building for her at *St. James's*. A Fleet was prepared

1623.  pared for her Passage. And the greatest Enemies to this Alliance submitted to the King's Will; but in all these Capitulations, not a Word of the Restitution of the *Palatinate*. But how confident soever the King might be of the Match, the *Spaniards* after all, contrived new Delays, and the Pope would have the Marriage protracted till the Conditions were perform'd in *England*. And the Divines advised the Catholick King, That the Promises of Marriage should be made presently, but the Consummation thereof, and the Delivery of the *Infanta* deferred till *May* the Year following. And Pope *Gregory* dying, it was pretended that there being no Contract, the Dispensation was suspended till ratified by the new Pope.

The *Spaniards*  
protract  
the Mar-  
riage.

The Pro-  
hibition  
to the  
Judges  
and Bi-  
shops sus-  
pended.

Now, Cardinal *Barberini* being chosen Pope, and taking the Name of *Urban* the Eighth, he wrote Letters to King *James* and Prince *Charles*, exhorting the Father to be favourable to the Roman Catholicks, and the Son to return to the Embraces of that Church: As to the First; it was more certainly out of regard to the *Spanish* Ambassadors Sollicitations, than the Pope's Exhortations, that the King now directed a Pardon to be drawn up to all Roman Catholicks, for all Offences of Recusancy, and a Dispensation for the Time to come: And likewise Two general Commands under the Great-Seal, the one to the Judges and Justices of Peace, the other to Bishops, Chancellors and Commissaries, not to execute any Law against them: Which Pardon passed as full as the Papists could desire: But to that vast Prohibition some Stop was made by the Lord Keeper's Advice; for that the Publishing such a general Indulgence at one Push, might beget a general Discontent, if not a Mutiny; whereas his Majesty might instil the same into the Peoples Minds by little and little, by the Favours done to some particular Catholicks, and by degrees enlarge his Kindness. Besides, to forbid the Judges and Justices of Peace against their Oaths, whereby they are bound to execute the Laws, would be without Precedent, and of hard Digestion without some Preparative. To this the Two *Spanish* Ambassadors consented, and that the Matter should rest till the End of Six Months, or the *Infanta's* Arrival, but did it with a Shew of Discontent. But the more King  
*James*



James complied, the worse the Spaniards used him: New Delays were still started, and many of them coming upon the Neck of one another, *Buckingham*, who by some means or other, had taken Disgust in Spain at *Olivarez*, Philip's Favourite, laid hold of the Opportunity to transmit a dreadful Account of the Spanish Procrastinations into England. This made the King presently write to him to bring back his Son with all Speed; and if his youthful Follies should oblige him to a longer Expectation, he charged him upon his Allegiance to come away and leave him there. The Duke shew'd the Letter to the Prince, and it wrought so effectually upon him, that he took up a sudden Resolution to return Home. The Grandees of Spain had no sooner Notice of it, but they were much concern'd, their Design being to detain him there all Winter, not for the Advantage of England you may be sure. The Prince before his Departure made a Procuration to the King of Spain, and Don Carlos his Brother, to make the Espousals in his Name, and left it with the Earl of Bristol: But withal left private Instructions in another Hand for Bristol to stay the Delivery of the Proxies till further Order, on Pretence the Infanta might retire to a Cloister and defraud him of a Wife. *Olivarez* and the Duke had a harsh parting, the Duke telling the other, *He had disobligh'd him, and that he could not make the least Profession of Friendship to him.* The Conde reply'd short, *That he accepted of what he had spoken.* Indeed, the Prince had gain'd an universal Love, his grave Deportment suiting with the very Genius of that Nation, and at his Farewel he shew'd unparallell'd Bounty, and left Gems of inestimable Value to the Infanta and Grandees. At his Departure from Madrid, Sept. 12. the Queen and Infanta, in great Magnificence, received his Farewel. The King brought him on his Way to the *Escorial*, and there feasted him, and declared the Obligation the Prince had put upon him, by putting himself into his Hands. The Prince magnified the high Favours he had received, and requested him to continue him in the good Opinion of his most fair and most dear Mistress. A Train of Spanish Courtiers attended him to the English Navy, where he feasted them aboard his own Ship; and

His Departure.

He feasts the Dons aboard his Ship.

1623.



in bringing them back to Shore met with a furious Tempest, from which he escaped with much Difficulty; and the first Words he spoke when reimbarc'd were, *That it was a great Weakness in the Spaniards to let him go, after they had used him so ill.*

The Prince arriving in *England* on the 5th of *Octob.* the King was then at *Roxton*, to whom the Prince and Duke went post, and made a fair and plausible Narrative of their Proceedings, laying the Burthen on the *Spanish* Delays and *Bristol's* Miscarriages, which with the King passed for current Coin. Now the first Thing the Prince did, was to procure an absolute Command from the King, that *Bristol* should suspend the Delivery of the Proxy till *Christmas*, tho' the Dispensation from *Rome* should come sooner; and being resolved to affront the King of *Spain* for his Delays, in *Bristol's* Letter he had Instructions to demand the Restoration of the *Palatinate* (now wholly lost) and Electoral Dignity; for said the King's Letter, *It would be very strange in me to receive one Daughter in Joy, and leave another in Sighs and Tears*; and the Earl was farther to insist upon what Course the Catholick King was resolved to take for the Restitution of both, and what Assurance he should have if the Emperor or *Bavaria* opposed it; and the King express'd his Desire that the Espousals should be made in one of the *Christmas* Holy-days.

*Bristol* and  
*Aston* de-  
mur upon  
the new  
Instruc-  
tions.

*Bristol* and Sir *Walter Aston*, joyned in Commission with him, demur upon these new Instructions, and represent to the King, That the Powers expired at *Christmas*, and to suspend the Execution of them till then was to revoke them. That the Pretexes of this Delay were old Matters often debated, but never insisted on so as to retard the main Business, or to hazard the Match, for so were his Majesty's Instructions. That it was the Care of the *Spanish* Ministers to accommodate the *Palatine's* Affairs before the *Infanta* went for *England*, lest a War should follow: Besides, it must be done by Treaty with several Princes, which would take up time, and so the Prince might be long enough unmarried. That the Dispensation was hourly expected, and upon what pretence could the Powers be then detained? That were to put a Scorn upon the *Infanta*, and the King of *Spain*, and did

did not stand with that exact and honourable Dealing his Majesty had hitherto used. They prayed therefore that a Day might be set for the delivery of the Proxies. To facilitate the Matter, Sir *Walter Aston* endeavoured to reconcile the Duke to *Spain*. He acknowledged his Grace was infinitely provoked to be an Enemy to the Match, but could not believe the Error of one Man could really make him an Enemy to that which carried with it so much Contentment to the King and Prince; that he might bring himself thereby into a dangerous Labyrinth, if a War should ensue; whereas if the Match took effect he would have the Honour thereof, and would be the Person to whom the *Infanta* would be most obliged.

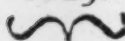
But the Prince and Duke beginning now to take a popular Way, and to close with those that were opposite to *Spain*, and best liked of by the Puritan Party; seem'd to carry all before them, and *Bristol* was commanded to follow the new Instructions, viz. Before he delivered the Powers, to procure from the King of *Spain* a direct Engagement for the Restitution of the *Palatinate*, and Electoral Dignity, either by Mediation or by Assistance of Arms, and the rather for that the *Beistrot* in the *Palatinate* was taken by the Arms of *Spain*, and a *Spanish* Garrison put into it; and the Country upon an old Pretence delivered up to the Bishop of *Mentz*. And as to the Marriage Portion, the King rejected both Jewels and Yearly Revenue, as contrary to the first Agreements, and would have all in *Specie*, at reasonable Times of payment. He likewise commanded the Suspension of the Powers left, and sent new ones from the Prince for a larger Time. Here *Bristol* had a Difficult part to act, the Duke setting all his Strength to crush him; and the surrender of the *Palatinate* was not propable, it being alienated and shared out as a common Booty; of which by and by.

However the King still hoped to compose all by a Treaty, and propos'd to the *Palatine* these Terms, viz. That he make a due Submission to the Emperor, with assurance of his safe going and return. This done, all the *Palatine* should presently be restored to the *Palatine's* Son (whose Administrator he should be during Life) and after *Bavaria's* Death the Electoral

The Prince and Duke take a popular Way. *Bristol* commanded to follow the new Instructions.

K. James proposes Terms to the *Palatine*.

ral

1623.  ral Dignity likewise. But if a Marriage between his Son and the Emperor's Daughter took effect, the Electoral Dignity after *Bavaria's* Death should return to himself. And to obviate the great Difficulty in case of such Marriage, his Son should be bred neither at the *Hague*, nor the Emperor's Court. But with the Prince of *Wales*, in the Presence of the *Infanta*.

The Palatine's Answer.

To this it was answered by the *Palatine*, That it was most natural for the Restitution, that the material Part preceded the Submission; which was but a Ceremony, otherwise a Submission might be yielded, and the Restitution never follow. That such Submission might be made by a Deputy, lest some such Advantage should be taken as was of the Landgrave of *Hesse* by *Charles* the Fifth, under the subtle distinction of a Syllable in the safe Conduct. That the yielding of the *Electorate* to the Duke of *Bavaria*, would prejudice his Cause for ever with the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburgh*, who had always protested against the Translation, and with other Princes. That the Emperor would serve himself of his Consent to these Conditions, as he did of his conditional Resignation of the Crown of *Bohemia* in 1621. whereby he accelerated the Treaty with *Bethlem Gabor*, and of his Ratification of the Suspension of Arms the last Summer, which Served to intimidate those Two Electors. That care ought to be taken that his undue Proscription were not approved, and thereby a Mark of Infamy set upon him and his Posterity. That Shame and Disgrace would be the End of this Submission, no better usage being to be expected, than the deposed House of *Saxony* had from *Charles* the Fifth. That *Spain* had always given Hopes, and the Earl of *Bristol* great Assurance that they would assist his Majesty, and compel the Emperor to an intire Restitution. But now there were no Hopes of Restitution from the Match with *Spain*, the *Spaniards* and *Imperialists* having both conspired the Ruin of the *Palatine*, the *Electorate* being given to the Duke of *Bavaria*, the Upper *Palatinate* in his possession, a Portion allowed the Duke of *Newburgh*; a principal Part of the Lower *Palatinate* given to the Elector of *Mentz*, and the rest promised to others. That for a surer Way to regain a happy Settlement, the Electors of

*Saxony*



Saxony and *Brandenburgh*, and all the Princes, save those of the Catholick League, had declared, That the Peace of *Germany* depended upon the Restitution of the *Palatinate*. They that had united their Interest for the Recovery of the Liberty of *Germany*, were numerout and powerful ; all that was wanting, was some great Prince to support them against the House of *Austria*. That the King of *Denmark* had declared, That as all others have their Eyes on him, so he had his on the King of *Great Britain*. That what had been done formerly by one of his Majesty's Kingdoms, when counterballanced by the other Two, demonstrated what might be done by the joint Forces of all Three together.

On the other hand, *Spain* seem'd now to be as intent upon consummating the Match, as *England* was grown cool and indifferent upon it ; for, in *December* the Ratification coming from the new Pope, there was great Joy in *Spain*: That King, to keep his Oath, prepared for the Espousals, and a Day was prefix'd ; the *Infanta's* Family was settled, and *March* following appointed for her Voyage into *England*: The *English* Ambassadors carried themselves towards her as their Master's Spouse ; Rich Presents she had prepared for the Prince, and the Earl of *Bristol* had provided costly Liveries for the Solemnity : But all was discomposed on a sudden by the new Commands from *England* to the Earl not to move one Step further, till an entire Surrender was procured of the *Palatinate* and Electorate, as aforesaid. In the Court of *Spain* this Delay was highly resent'd, the *Infanta* was no more stiled the Princess of *England* : But to the Demands from *England* the King of *Spain* reply'd, That if upon a Treaty, the Emperor and Duke of *Bavaria* would not come to reasonable Terms, he would join his Forces with *England*, to recover the *Palatinate* : And the Spaniards gave out, That the *Desponsorios* once past, the *Infanta* should on her Knees have begg'd the King to restore the *Palatinate*. But this did not satisfie ; *Bristol* was called Home, and all was dash'd in pieces to the Amazement of the Christian World ; the whole Business being a dark Riddle and Mystery.

*Bristol*

1623.

*Bristol's  
Apology  
to King  
James.*

*Bristol* having demurr'd upon the new Instructions, made this Apology to the King his Master, That he understood both the King and the Prince infinitely desired the Match: That the Proxies were deposited with him in trust, with a publick Declaration how and when to deliver them: He appeal'd which was the more prudent and honest Course, whether to put a Disgrace upon so great a Princess, and a Scorn upon the King of *Spain*, by naming a Day for the Marriage, when the Proxies would be expired, and not to insult on the Trust reposed in him by Two great Monarchs; or to represent to his Majesty the true State of Things, and the Hazard the whole Treaty was in by the Detention of the Proxies. But the Earl being recalled, and acquainting *Olivares* with it; that Minister told him, in the Presence of *Aston* and *Gondamor*, That the King his Master understood the Malice and Power of his Enemies in *England*, and the Fault being laid to his Charge about the Delivering of the Proxies; the King thought his Honour concern'd, and offered to write to the King of *England*, or send an Ambassador to mediate for him, he having served his Master with Exactness and Fidelity; That for an Incouragement of others to do the like, the King of *Spain* had sent him a Blank to set down his own Terms, both in Point of Title and Fortune: The Earl bravely answered, The King of *Spain* was not beholding to him; That what he did, he thought best for his Master, and had rather go Home and cast himself at his Feet, tho' it should cost him his Head, than be Duke or *Infandado* of *Spain*: However, when he came away they offer'd him 10000 Crowns to supply his Wants, and was told no Body should know it, *Yes*, said the Earl, *one would know it, who would certainly reveal it to his Majesty, viz. the Earl of Bristol himself*: And so this grand Affair of the *Spanish Match*, after the End of Seven Years Treaty, terminated; so that all Thoughts now seem'd enclin'd for War.

But what infatuated King *James* in such a Juncture to go on as he did by way of Treaty about the *Palatine* no Mortal can account for; he had frequent Warnings of the Disappointment and Dishonour that would ensue. The *United-Provinces* appear'd willing

to

to renew their Union with *England*, which had been somewhat interrupted by *Barneveldt*, and the *Aminian* Faction, and the Prince of *Orange* express'd an entire Friendship for us; and they concluded that *Spain* would never match with *England*, but with Hopes of reducing those Provinces by such an Alliance, or for fear that if the Match succeeded not, the King would join with those Provinces in Opposition to *Spain*; they being so far from hearkning to any Overtures, that they had prepared a strong Fleet ready to sail for the *West-Indies*, at least to interrupt the coming Home of the Plate Fleet: And it was represented to the King, that he might absolutely dispose of them, and that by uniting his Forces with theirs, he might be able to give Law to *Europe*; but if the *Spaniards* should break in upon them next Year, as they were like to do the last, the Opportunity would be lost, and those Provinces become a broken Reed to *England*. But our Court-Councils being not propense to this Conjunction, however, advis'd the Calling of a Parliament, which not meeting till *Febr. 19. 1624.* we shall for the present defer our entering upon their Proceedings, and inspect the State of other Parts of *Europe*.

*France* affords us at this time but very little Matter for History. After the Death of *Ancre*, for which we have already accounted, King *Louis* understanding he had Money in the Bank of *Florence*, employ'd all his Interest to call it out from thence; but the G. Duke to whom the Crown of *France* was indebted, kept back 200000 Crowns of it upon some Pretence or another; but that Prince dying in 1621. 'twas demand'd of his Successor; the Q. Mother designing it should be restored to *D'Ancre's* Son: *Richlieu* had upon this Occasion several Conferences with the *Florentine* Ministers; between whom it was agreed, That the Grand Duke should immediately give the Queen 100000 Crowns, and that the King should pay the Rest to discharge what he owed to the House of *Medici*. The Agent, while this Negotiation was carried on, offer'd 50000 Crowns to *D'Ancre's* Son, but the Cardinal alledged, th Queen would never have it publish'd, that she had given the King 200000 Crowns, which she design'd to restore to *Conchini*, but that she

1623. would have it owned, that this Money belonged to her self.

Pope Gregory's  
Death  
and Character.

As for *Italy*, the Affairs of the *Valtoline* were still in Agitation; the *French*, *Venetians*, and Duke of *Savoy*, agreed in a League for procuring the Reitution of the Places taken by the *Spaniards* and *Leopold*, and in case of Refusal, to have an Army of about 40000 Men to procure it by Force: They also agreed to give *Mansfield* Money, that with his Troops he might give the *Austrians* a Diversion: The *Switzers* were invited to enter into the League, but so many Difficulties and Delays were raised by the Pope's Nuncio and *Spanish* Ambassador, that they let the Proposal fall: And the best Artifice the *Spaniards* could now use, was to offer to deposite the Forts in the *Valtoline* in the Pope's Hands; but *Gregory XV.* departing this Life on the 8th of *July*, put a Suspence for the present to this Affair, after he had for a little more than Two Years exercised the Name and Authority of the Apostolate. *Nani* says, As to Matters of Religion, he left the Reputation of much Zeal behind him; employ'd with great Applause in the Wars of *Germany*, and spread abroad by the Congregation founded by him *de propaganda fide* among the *Barbarians*; but for publick Business, that he was of a mean Spirit, and totally subjected to the Will of his Nephews, among whom the Cardinal *Lodovico* directed Affairs in so absolute a manner, that during the short Space of his Uncle's Pontificate, he acquired a vast Estate, and minded little else but heaping up Riches and Honours upon himself and Family. Cardinal *Barberino* succeeding *Gregory* by the Name of *Urban VIII.* we shall leave the Court of *Rome*, and pass into *Turkey* again: And having already mention'd the Treaty on foot between *Poland* and the Sultan, the Peace was concluded upon the following Terms.

## I.

Articles  
between  
the *Poles*  
and the  
*Turks*.

That there should be sincere Friendship and Amity between them.

## II.

That the *Tartars* and *Moldavians* should not injure the Republick of *Poland*, and Care taken, that all the Passes leading to *Poland* for the Frontier People should be secured by the *Turkish* Officers.

3. That



III.

That the *Vayvod* of *Moldavia* should not grant Passage to any of the said Nations, and if he did, to be punish'd for it.

1623.

IV.

That if any of the *Tartars* should injure any Part of *Poland* any way, Reparation should be made for the Injury.

V.

That the *Crim Tartar* and others should be punish'd for any Default committed in respect to *Poland*.

VI.

In case the *Crim Tartar*, or others of that Nation, should by chance pass by the Confines of *Poland*, they were not to do any Injury to the Territories thereof.

VII.

The *Crim Tartar* to assist the *Poles* in their Wars, and to receive the Yearly Stipend from *Poland*; and, in case of Failure, first to certify the *Port* of it, who was to pronounce him his Right.

VIII.

The *Cossacks* were not to come to the *Turkish* Empire by the *Osne*, nor commit any Spoil, and Restitution made if they did.

IX.

Other Differences that might happen to be amicably composed.

X.

The *Vayvods* of *Moldavia* to shew the King of *Poland* all due Respect.

XI.

All Ambassadors from *Poland* to the *Port* to be safe and secure.

XII.

Traffick to be free, &c.

But tho' some of the Articles were alter'd by the *Turks*, after the Ambassador's Departure, to whom they were to be sent on his Journey; yet the ill State of Affairs made them promise better Faith, and some Reparations of Injuries committed by the *Tartars*, for which they deposed *Ichian Beg*, and sent *Mechmet Ghe-ray*, his Cousin-German, and late Prisoner in *Rhodes*, to take Possession of his Dominions; where we leave him,

1623.  
Disorders  
in the  
Turkish  
Empire.

and return to the Tumults and Disorders of the *Ottoman* Empire, which quickly put a Period to *Mustapha's* second Reign. The Soldiers still persisted in their mutinous Disposition, even in *Constantinople* it self, went in Troops to Court, and demanded all profitable Employments for themselves; they drank Wine in the Streets, contrary to their Law, and extorted Money from the *Christians* to pay for it; and if refused, murther'd them, and all this without Redress to the Aggrieved.

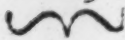
Great Disorders there were also in *Asia*, which we shall not particularize, but observe, that the Grand Visier *Georgi*, envying the Authority of *Daout* Bascha, the Queen-Mother's beloved Son, and Brother-in-Law to the Emperor *Mustapha*, who had been the Instrument of Sultan *Osman's* Murther: He stirr'd up the *Spahi's* to demand Justice upon him for that Fact; and being taken and brought into the *Divan*, he was, without any Trial, brought before the Soldiers, strip'd, his Turbant taken off, and on his Knees ready to receive the fatal Stroak, when the *Jani-zaries* suddenly came to his Rescue, and carried him away to their Chambers. But the *Spahi's* insisting upon his Death, and being ready to come to Blows with the other, he was, for all his Bribes, and to prevent a worse Consequence, deliver'd up, and secretly put into the same Coach wherein he had sent Sultan *Osman* to his Execution, and, being dry with Sorrow, drank at the same Fountain where his last Mother begg'd Drink; then being convey'd into the same Chamber where he had murther'd him, and having shew'd the Executioner the very Corner where he had committed that foul Fact, and desiring to expiate it in the same Place, he was there miserably strangled.

*Daout*  
Bascha  
strangled.

But the great Disorders of the Empire, proceeding from the weak Capacity of *Mustapha*, not ending here, but rather spreading themselves gradually into most of the Provinces, there seem'd to be an universal Concurrence, both in Ministers and People, to the Dethroning of *Mustapha* a Second time; but there were Three Difficulties herein; the first was, *Chassem* Bascha, then Prime Visier, who governing all under the weak *Mustapha*, would not be willing to divest him-

himself of that Power: Another was, the Humour of the Soldiery, who having exalted *Mustapha*, were like to stand by their Choice; and the last was the Lowness of the Exchequer; so as that they could not bestow the customary Donative upon the Soldiers at the Inauguration of a new Emperor: However, to forward and hasten the Change, the News of the Rebellion of *Abassa* did much contribute, he calling himself the Avenger of Sultan *Osman's* Murther, and Enemy of the *Fanizaries*, all which he not only slew that fell into his Hands, but did the same by all that belonged to them: Hereupon the *Fanizaries* at *Constantinople* being enraged, and applying themselves to their *Aga*, proposed a speedy Union with the *Spahis*, for the timely suppressing the Rebellion, and the rather because *Cicala* Bashha, who was sent into *Asia* to put a Stop to it, sent Letters to Court, That upon his Approach near the Enemy most of his Men had deserted. Now this Intelligence served happily as an Occasion for the *Mufti*, *Vizier* and *Aga* to give a Help to the desired Change, and furnish'd them with an Answer for the *Fanizaries*, That they were ready to comply with their Requests, but that the Incapacity of their Sovereign obstructed their Proceeding; and that the Defect in the principal Wheel obstructed all the Motions of good Government. At which the *Fanizaries* meeting in a tumultuous Manner at Sultan *Solyman's* Mosque, and there making an *Avack Divan*, it was enacted, by the Consent of the Civil and Military Powers, That young *Morat*, or *Amurath*, *Osman's* Brother, should be advanced to the Throne, Sultan and *Mustapha* deposed; and because the Exchequer was low, the Soldiers were content to dispence with their Donative, but still reserved their Claim and Title to it at Times of more happy Inaugurations: With this News the *Vizier* immediately mounted on Horse-back, to signify the universal Decree to *Mustapha*; but he found him so stupid, as if he had been insensible of the Message. As soon as *Morat* (who with some seeming Unwillingness accepted of the Dignity) was inaugurated Emperor, tho' he was then but Fourteen Years of Age, yet he immediately, with a becoming Grace, charged the *Mufti* to take Care that Law and Justice were executed; and having per-

1623.



form'd his *Corban*, next Day he entred on Horseback, with a magnificent Train, in at the Gate of *Adrianople*. He was observ'd to have a very promising Aspect, tho' his internal Parts did not appear afterwards to correspond thereunto. The first Act of this Sultan's Reign was the Deposing of the Grand Visier *Chasacin* for male Administration, the Taking of him at last and strangling him; *Halil Basha*, whom he had unjustly prosecuted, being advanced into his Place.

Bavaria  
made E-  
lector.

We have little at present to say concerning the Affairs of the Northern Crowns, and therefore we come again into *Germany*. I should have told you before, that *Tilly* took and pillaged the Castle of *Heldelburg*, carrying thence that famous Library, which was the most numerous and curious in all *Germany*, and since convey'd to *Rome*; so that nothing now remain'd to that Prince, but *Frankendal*, which at the Request of the Arch-Duchess *Isabella*, Governess of the *Netherlands* was spar'd: And the Beginning of this Year was also that of the Grandeur which the House of *Bavaria* has since enjoy'd. It was in favour of Duke *Maximilian* that a Diet at *Ratisbon* was call'd, to promote him to the El. Palatine, wherein he was soon after invest'd by the Emperor in the Room of *Frederick*. He had also the Upper *Palatinate* given him, except some few Bailiwicks, which were reserv'd for the Duke of *Neubourg*. The Emperor further gave to *Maximilian* the Lower *Palatinate*, on the other side of the *Rhine*, in exchange for Upper *Austria*, which had been mortgag'd to him for 150000 *Rixdollars*. He likewise abandon'd to the King of *Spain* the Rest of the Lower *Palatinate*, except the Bailwick of *Germensheim* only, which he gave to his Son Arch-Duke *Leopold William*, Bishop of *Strasbourg*. He moreover made a Present of Two Bailiwicks to the Landgrave of *Darmstadt*; and other Princes claim'd and obtained divers others. Some time after this, Duke *Christian* of *Brunswick*, returned into *Germany* with a great Army, doing great Damage, and absolutely refusing to accept of the Emperor's Pardon offer'd him. Hereupon General *Tilly* was sent against him; who, overtaking him in the Bishoprick of *Munster*, near *Stadlo*, entirely defeated him, either kil-



killing, or taking Prisoners all his Foot; tho' he and great Part of his Horse escap'd into *Holland*, whither *Mansfield* was come before, who had been likewise routed by *Tilly*, in *East Friseland*, with the Loss of 2000 of his Men. 1623.

Having now travers'd *Europe* so far as there was any thing material for our Design, the *Remarkables* are:

1. The Death of *Sarpi*, or Father *Paul*, which hap- pen'd *Jan. 14.* in the 71st Year of his Age. He was born at *Venice* in 1552. and in time became a Divine and Councillor to that famous Republick: He was a Person of excellent Wit, great Judgment and Memory, and so made himself Master of *Latin*, *Greek* and *Hebrew* in a very short time, and became of the Order of the *Servite*. His Fame was soon spread thro' *Italy*, where Pope *Sixtus V.* had a singular Esteem for him: He was also well skill'd in History, Law, Physick, and chiefly in Anatomy, Simples and Minerals, and withal was extraordinary modest and pious: But the Difference between the Republick and *Paul V.* proved ill to Father *Paul*, who having refused to go to *Rome*, was excommunicated, yet continued to assert the Rights of the Commonwealth, and upon that Occasion it was that he writ his famous History of the Council of *Trent*: Of the *Inquisition*, and a Continuance of the History of the *Uscoques*. F. Paul's Death.

2. That of the famous Geographer *Philip Cluverius*. He was born at *Dantzick* in 1580. from whence his Father sent him to *Poland*, *Germany*, and the *Low Countries*, to study at *Leyden*; and *Scaliger* advised him to the Study of Geography, which he did, after he had spent Two Years in the Wars of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*. Having travell'd over *England*, *France*, *Germany* and *Spain*, he settl'd to teach at *Leyden*. He spoke *Greek*, *Latin*, *High Dutch*, *French*, *English*, *Flemish*, *Italian*, the *Hungarian*, *Polish* and *Bohemian* Dialects, and all very readily. Cluverius his Death.

3. That of one of the wisest and best Men of his Time; I mean, of the famous *Philip de Mornay*, Lord of *Plessis Mornay*, in the 74th Year of his Age. He, though a Protestant, was the *French King's* Privy-Councillor, Governour of *Saumur*, &c. He did what he could to perswade *Henry IV.* not to change his Religion; but that being done in 1592. he left the Court by degrees, Du Plessis Mornay's Death.

1623. and applied himself to write about the *Eucharist*, whereby he got a great Name, and indeed he was so Considerable among the Protestants, that he was by many called the Protestant's Pope: He wrote also a Treatise of the Truth of the Christian Religion; Of the Mystery of Iniquity, &c.

Owen's  
Death.

4. Of the famous Epigrammatist *John Owen*: He was a Native of *Carnarvonshire*, bred in *Wickham College*, and admitted perpetual Fellow of *New College* in *Oxford*; after which he became School-Master at *Trylegh* and *Warwick*, and was endow'd with a Vein of Poetry. His Book of Epigrams is famous; but his Uncle struck him out of his Will by reason of these Two Verses.

*An Petrus fuerit Romæ sub Iudice lis est,  
Simonem Romæ nemo fuisse negat.*

Cambden's  
Death.

5. Of the famous Antiquary *William Cambden*, which happen'd on the 9th of Novemb. He was born in *London*, An. 1553. At Fifteen he was sent to *Magdalen College, Oxon.* where he was Servitor, and at last second Master at *Westminster*. He took a Journey in 1582 thro' *Suffolk* into *Yorkshire*, and came back thro' *Lancashire*, in order to the Perfecting of his *Britannia*, which he publish'd the same Year. He was in 1588. made Prebendary of *Westminster*; and in 92, chief Master of *Westminster School*. He printed his *Greek Grammar* in 97. and was made Herald and *Clarenceux*, King of Arms. In 1613 he began the History of *Queen Elizabeth*, and Three Years after he founded the History Lecture of the University, gave it the Mannor of *Boxley*, and did not live long after.

1624.

The Affairs of *England* looked but with an indifferent Face last Year, upon which we told you the King was resolv'd to call a Parliament, wherefore upon that Occasion he was informed, that Three Things troubled the People: That for the Subsidies in the Two last Parliaments they received no Retributions by Acts of Grace; That some Members were proceeded against after the Parliament was dissolved; and that after they had satisfied the King's Demands, he would yet proceed to the Conclusion of the *Spanish Match*. Accordingly the Parliament meeting Feb. 1. The King told them, That he crav'd their Ad-

Advice in a Matter of great importance (as the Parliament Writ imported that the King would advise with them in Matters concerning his Estate and Dignity :) That he believed never any King was more belov'd of his People, and he would have them represent to him his People's Love in a true Glass, and give him their Counsel about the Match of his Son, wherein he had spent much Time with great Cost in long Treaties: That at the instance of his Son he sent him into Spain with *Buckingham*, whom he commanded never to leave him till he returned in safety; which he performed, but not with that effect he expected, but it had taught him. *qui versatur in generalibus*, is easily deceiv'd: He referred to *Charles*, *Buckingham*, and the Secretaries Reports, as to what passed in the Treaty, desired them again to advise him what was best to be done for the Good of his Son, and of his Grand Children; assured them it was *res integra* before them, he being engag'd neither Way. He bid them root out all Jealousies; for he durst avow his Actions before God, and never King govern'd with a purer, sincerer, and more uncorrupt Heart; that as God should judge him, he never thought nor meant, nor ever in word expressed any thing that might favour of a Toleration in Religion: That he had conniv'd at some Things which might have hinder'd more weighty Affairs, but never in all his Treaties agreed to any thing to the overthrow and disagreeing of those Laws; but only like a good Horseman, sometimes suffer'd the Reins to be more remis: And as for those their Privileges, that former Times warranted, he never did nor would infringe them: Bid them avoid Genealogies and curious Questions, and nice Querks and Jerks of Law, and compose themselves speedily and quietly, to that great Affair: For God was his Judge, never did any Man in the Deserts of *Arabia* more desire Water to quench his Thirst, than he thirsted for a good Issue of that Parliament.

King's  
Speech to  
the Par-  
liament.

The King having referr'd the whole Business of the Spanish Match to the Advice of Parliament, the Duke of *Buckingham* made to both Houses a long Narration of all the Transactions, accompanied with the Prince's Attestation; and divided his Narration into Six several Parts, viz.

The  
Duke's  
Narra-  
tive.

1624.

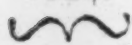
1. The Motives of the Prince's Journey to *Spain*; That the Negotiation of the Chancellor of the *Exchequer* with the Arch-Dutchess gave to his Majesty the first Jealousie of the *Spaniards* indirect dealing: Then was read the King's Letter of the 3d of *Octob.* 1623. to the Earl of *Bristol*, that he should demand of the King of *Spain* a Promise under Hand and Seal that *Heidelbergh* should be delivered within Seventy Days, with *Minheim* and *Frankendal* if taken, or to have leave to March through his Territories, and to assist us with his Forces. The Duke said, this was not put home by *Bristol*, nor the King's Second Letter, wherein he was commanded to press for a positive Answer, or if delay'd, to take his leave and come away. *Porter* who carried these Letters seeing nothing towards a dispatch, went to *Olivares* to speed it; but when he mention'd the King of *Spain's* assisting us with his Forces, or giving us leave to march through his Country, *Olivares* reply'd, That to assist with Arms against the King's Uncle, and the Catholick League, was a preposterous Demand; and speaking of the Marriage, *Olivares* told him he understood not a Word of it. *Porter* acquainting *Bristol* therewith, *Bristol* threatned to call the *Conde* to account for it, but next Morning grew calmer, and said the *Conde* was reserv'd to *Porter*, because no publick Minister; And *Porter* returning with a Dispatch fraught with Generalities only, the Prince resolv'd to go into *Spain*; for that he saw his Father deluded, Matters of Religion extorted, and his Sister's Cause desperate; and a desperate Disease must have a desperate Remedy. Thereupon the King commanded the Duke to accompany him.

2. The Treaty of Marriage severed, and by it self. When the Prince arriv'd at *Madrid*, the *Conde* gave him a Visit, magnified the Journey, and said, Now it must be a Match, and we must divide the whole World between us. The next Day the *Conde* proposed to the Duke, that if the Prince would be converted (which he conceiv'd he Design'd before he came thither) they would strike up a Match without the Pope. The Duke answer'd, That they came not thither to make new Bargains, and that the Prince was settled in his Religion: Then said the *Conde*, we must send to *Rome* for the Dispensation; and wrote



a Letter to Cardinal *Ludovisio*, the Pope's Nephew, which seeming to the Duke to be very heavy, the Duke would have had a Postscript, That the Prince must not be sent back without a Wife, and that clogging Conditions would amount to a Denial and absolute breach: But the *Conde* in Choler said it could not be done: However the Messenger was sent to *Rome*. Four or Five Days after this the Prince was plac'd to see his Mistress in her Passage through the Streets, and at length obtain'd access to her, but was not suffer'd to speak to her but in Words set down in Writing: They resolving to admit him as a Prince, not as a Suitor. But to salve this, the *Conde* told him, That when the Dispensation came he should lie with her that very Night, if not as a Wife, yet as a Mistress. In the mean time Endeavours were us'd for the Prince's Conversion, and a Conference with Divines was press'd upon him, which he refus'd, as a Means to disgust them if they prevail'd not. Six Weeks after the Prince's arrival, the Dispensation came, but very much clogg'd, especially with this new Condition, that the King of *Spain* was to swear to see all the Articles perform'd, or in case of failure, to make War upon *England*. But the Prince signified his Resolution, not to add to, or alter the first Articles which were all gone through and settled save that of the Church, the Nurse, and Education of Children; and *Olivares* declar'd it must now be a Match. But the next Day *Gondamor* spake to the Prince of the Match as of a new Thing, and told him, that unless he came up to all the Conditions of the Dispensation, nothing would be done; for they had no Power to expunge or alter any thing therein: Whereupon the Prince offering to break, they pray'd him to stay Twenty Days, until they could have an Answer from *England*: but the Twenty Days were expired before the Articles were ready, and then they were sent to *England*, but with new Additions. And altho' the Juncto of Divines had given their Opinions, that the *Infanta* could not be sent over before the Spring, the *Conde* Nevertheless promised she should go with the Prince when the Articles were assented unto by King *James*, and put in Execution. The Bishop of *Segovia* was pleas'd to tell the Duke, that he had credibly heard that our King could not grant a Toleration without a Rebellion; and

1624.



and therefore it was unsafe to send a Lady thither at that time, we having in effect granted a Toleration. The Duke reply'd, That it seem'd his Lordship and others who advis'd that Article, tho' they pretended Religion, intended Rebellion: But what was agreed unto was but a Temporary Suspension of Penal Laws, not a Toleration. *Gondamor* hereupon declar'd, that he did not hold it fit to send the *Infanta* thither before the Articles were fully put in Execution. About this time it being reported the Prince intended to steal away, the Duke was sent to tell them, That altho' they had stolen thither out of Love, they should never steal thence out of Fear: And the Prince sent to his Father, that if he should be detain'd a Prisoner, he should think no more of him.

3. *The Treaty of the Match and Restitution reciprocally subordinated*: Here the Duke said, That the Prince had never staid in *Spain*, left any Proxy, or took any Oath there, but upon the *Conde's* promise for the Restitution of the *Palatinate*. The Duke represented to the *Conde*, that his Master was in Years, and the Prince his only Son, whose absence he regretted; but that it would not stand with his Honour to return without his Wife. The *Conde* consented, and desir'd the Prince to name a Day for his departure; and upon Sir *Francis Cottington's* return to *Spain* with all Things perfected by the King, the *Conde* began to treat about the *Palatinate*, and the Project was, that the *Palatine's* Country should be restor'd to the *Palatine's* eldest Son, upon a Condition of Marriage with the Emperor's Daughter, and his being bred in that Court. But the Prince demanding of the *Conde*, whether if the Emperor prov'd refractory, the King his Master would assist with his Forces against him, the *Conde* answer'd negatively, for they had a Maxim, That the King of *Spain* must never Fight against the Emperor: Whereupon the Prince protested, that without that they might not rely upon either Marriage or Friendship. By this time the Prince was grown cheap in the Court of *Spain*, scarce a Visit bestowed on him. And the Duke occasionally saying, it must Needs be a firm and strong Match, that had been Seven Years in soadering, the *Conde* deny'd it, and said it had not been really intended Seven Months, and to prove it, produced

Two

Two Letters, one from the King of *Spain*, and the other from *Conde Olivares*.

4. *The Prince's return from Spain* : The Prince deposited his Proxy in the Earl of *Bristol's* Hands, to use it as he should receive his Highness's Direction from time to time ; and his Words for the present were, That if the Ratification came from *Rome* clear and intire (which it did not) then within so many Days he should deliver it to the King of *Spain* : But in a Letter before he came to the Sea-side directed the Earl, that he should stay the Delivery of the Proxy till some Doubts were clear'd, and until further Directions. Here the Prince vowed openly before both Houses, that he never by Oath or Honour engaged himself not to revoke the Powers, otherwise than by the Clause, *de non revocando Procuratore*, inserted in the Instrument it self, which was only matter of Form and neither by the Civil or Common Law binding.

5. *The subsequent Proceedings* : After the Prince had at *Royston* acquainted the King what had passed, his Majesty commanded the stay of the Proxy in the Earl of *Bristol's* Hands, till he was better assur'd of the Restitution of the *Palatinate* ; then was read the King's Letter to Earl of *Bristol* to that purpose, notwithstanding which *Bristol*, 1. When the Ratification came from *Rome* clog'd and mangled, laboured all he could to hide and palliate it : 2. The Portion was alter'd from 600000*l.* in ready Cash to 80000*l.* in Money, a few Jewels, and a Pension of 2000*l.* per annum. This *Bristol* approved of. 3. He left the Restitution of the *Palatinate* to be mediated by the *Infanta* after the Marriage. 4. Instead of putting off the Contract, he prefixed a precise Day for the Desponsorio's, which being controuled again by an Express, an unnecessary Discourtesie was put upon that King and the *Infanta* ; and a greater Affront upon the Prince, by taking away the Title of *La Princeſa*, and debarring our Ambassadors from access to her. The King of *Spain's* Answer to the Ambassador's Memorial, implying a Refusal to assist us by Arms, was likewise produced.

6. *The stating of the Question, supper totam materiam*. The Duke stated it thus ; Whether what he had opened were sufficient for his Majesty to rely upon, for the

1624. the Marriage of his Son, and relief of his Daughter,  
 or that these Treaties be set aside.

The Duke  
 justified  
 by both  
 Houses.

The Prince having assisted the Duke in this Narration, and attested several of the Particulars thereof; The Lords, by a general Vote, justified the Duke, and joined with the Commons in an Address to the King, wherein they took notice of the Complaint of the *Spanish* Ambassador, who had demanded Satisfaction, and represent to him that they did, with an unanimous Vote of both Houses, acquit and clear the Duke from speaking any thing Derogatory to the King of *Spain's* Honour. That if the Duke had omitted any thing he said, he had failed of his Duty and Fidelity: And that they did much honour the Duke for that Narration, and render him Thanks for the same, and believed he had deserved well of his Majesty and the Commonwealth.

King's  
 Answer  
 thereunto

Hereupon the King made Answer, That if he should be silent, he should not wrong that Nobleman of whom they spake, he being well known to stand in no need of a *Fidejussor*; that he should not have trusted him. That he was a happy Master that enjoyed a Faithful Servant; and his greatest Fault was, his desiring this Justification from them, he being his (the King's) Disciple and Scholar, and having made the same Relation to himself, as he did afterwards to both Houses: And was ill thought of for going with the Prince, and now he had as little Thanks for his Relation. That he had noted Three Things in the Duke's Negotiation, Faith, Diligence, and Discretion; altho' he had given an ill Example to Ambassadors to spend 40 or 50000*l.* in the Journey, which he never demanded, nor ever would. That he was glad the Duke had so well satisfied them, and thanked them heartily that they took it in so good part.

Both Houses now concur that the King could not with Honour or Safety proceed in the Treaties with *Spain*. And to fortify the same, the Commons gave their Reasons, and presented them to the King, *viz.* That at first no more was proposed than Liberty of Conscience for the *Infanta* and her Family: But afterwards the *Spaniards* taking advantage of the Prince's being in *Spain*, importuned a general Connivance, to the Diminution of the King's Sovereignty, against the

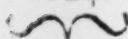
Usage



Usage of other Catholick Princes in the like Cases, and to the Discouragement of his own Subjects. That this was concerted with the Pope, whereby the Popish Faction was increased, and the Secular Priests and the Jesuits were become united, and could not be suppressed as long as the Treaty held. That during this Treaty they had devoured the Protestant Party in *Germany*, and elsewhere, despoiled his Majesty's Son-in-Law of his Lands and Honours, notwithstanding Promises of Restitution; deluded the King, and importuned the Prince to a Conversion, contrary to the Laws of Hospitality, and the Privileges of Princes. That in a former Overture of Marriage for Prince *Henry*, they disavowed their own Ambassador, and proposed the Prince's altering his Religion. And at *Bruxels* the Lord *Weston* found nothing but Delays and Deceit, which ended in the taking of *Heidelberg*. To this add the Translation of the *Electorate*, Two Letters aforesaid, which shew'd the Match was never intended, and their devising a Shift by a *Functio* of Divines, to let the Prince come home without the Lady.

Hereupon the King came to Parliament, and spoke King's to this effect, *viz.* He thanked God that his former Speech in Speech had taken so good effect; and thanked them *Parliament* for their Advice, and particularly the Gentlemen of the Lower House; who when some would have cast in Jealousies and Doubts, presently quelled them. That he would now, as an old King, propound his Doubts. That he who had been all his Life-time *Rex Pacificus*, was unwilling to enter into a War but upon Necessity. That he had, since the sitting of this Parliament, Hopes of obtaining better Conditions for the Restitution of the *Palatinate*; but would not reject their Advice, only must first consider how this Course might agree with his Conscience and Honour, and then how he should raise Forces for that purpose. That it should be a great Comfort to him to live to see his Children restor'd, or to be assured it would be; for he desired not to enjoy a Furrow of Land himself, without the Restitution of the *Palatinate*. But before they engaged him in a War, he would have them consider the Difficulties. And what was requisite thereunto. That his own Disabilities were increased, by

1624.



by the Charge of his Son's Journey into *Spain*, by sending Ambassadors, maintaining his Children, and assisting the *Palatinate*; and he had contracted a great Debt to the King of *Denmark*. That the *Low-Countries* were at a low Ebb; the Princes of *Germany* who should assist, were poor, weak, and disheartned: *Ireland* was a Back-Door must be secured. The Navy, tho' in a better case than ever, yet more must be done: That the Children eat no Bread but by his Means. His Customs were farmed out, upon Condition, of any War, the Bargain to be void; and Subsidies would take a great time to bring them in. He bid them shew him the Means how he might do what they would have him, and the Money should be disposed of by their own Deputies. And he promised, that tho' War and Peace were the peculiar Prerogatives of Kings, he would not treat, or accept of Peace, without first consulting with them. That it comforted him, there was not a contrary Voice amongst them, like the Seventy Interpreters who were led by the Breath of God. That he was desirous to forget all Rents in former Parliaments, and it should not be his Fault if he were not in love with Parliaments, and called them often. He bid 'em advise of the Points, and his Resolution should then be declared.

The Par-  
liaments  
Answer to  
the King's  
Speech.

The Commons forthwith taking the Matter of the Supply into Consideration, the Parliament solved the King's Doubts by a Committee of both Houses in the Declaration following, deliver'd by the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*; That they thanked God he had sent them a King who was pleased to speak, and to be spoken to in Parliament, which was a Bond that tied the Hearts of the Sovereign and Subject reciprocally to each other; and rejoiced that his Majesty had shewed himself sensible of the Insincerity of the King of *Spain*, and of the Indignities offered to his Son the Prince, and to his Daughters; and that his Heart was filled with desire to restore her noble Comfort and her self to the *Palatinate*, their Patrimonial Possession, For the effecting whereof, both Houses had offered their Assistance in the following Address, which was read, and was to this effect. They gave his Majesty Thanks for expressing himself so well satisfied with their late Declaration to assist him: That they had resolved,

by  
nd  
eat  
ies  
ho  
tre-  
zy.  
ne:  
ns.  
f a-  
uld  
em  
ney  
fed  
hat  
s of  
th-  
ort-  
gst  
by  
all  
his  
cal-  
and

the  
the  
the  
hop  
sent  
be  
ried  
ally  
had  
King  
the  
heart  
and  
tion,  
ered  
was  
city  
with  
d re-  
ved,

by  
d  
at  
es  
o  
e-  
y.  
e:  
s.  
a-  
ld  
m  
ey  
ed  
at  
of  
n-  
rt-  
ft  
by  
all  
his  
al-  
nd  
he  
he  
he  
op  
ent  
be  
ed  
ly  
ad  
ng  
he  
art  
nd  
on,  
red  
was  
sty  
ich  
re-  
ed,

fol  
for  
ria  
vic  
pa  
ing  
an  
wo  
tec  
Pa  
fai  
ne  
Se  
th  
aff  
ply  
fid  
W  
up  
Yo  
fai  
H  
Pa  
of  
jes  
an  
he  
ce  
lo  
an  
cle  
de  
sta  
th  
H  
th  
H  
a  
ra  
T  
an  
ha



solved, that upon his Majesty's publick Declaration for the Dissolution of both the Treaties of the Marriage, and the *Palatinate*, in pursuance of their Advice, and towards the War likely to ensue; and more particularly for the Defence of this Realm, the securing of *Ireland*, the Assistance of the *United Provinces*, and other Allies, and the setting forth the Navy, they would give Three intire Subsidies, and Three Fifteenths, being the greatest Aid which ever was given in Parliament: All to be paid within one Year after the said Declaration, to such Committees or Commissioners as hereafter should be agreed upon at this present Session, and by their Direction to be expended; and that they would never fail in a Parliamentary way to assist his Majesty in so Royal a Design.

The King after some other Things by way of Reply, proposing that they would give him Five Subsidies, and Two Fifteens to every Subsidy for the War; and for his own Debts (which lay so heavy upon his Conscience) one Subsidy and Two Fifteens Yearly till they were paid. The Prince hereupon said, That he having told the Committee of both Houses, that the King would ask nothing for his own Particular till the Wars were provided for; the Duke of *Buckingham* having moved it to the King, his Majesty declared, That if they would add one Subsidy and Two Fifteens for the War, he would quit what he had asked for his own Necessities. The King proceeded, and said, If this might be done he would follow their Advice: But in the levying the Subsidies, and Fifteens, he would have them to consider how to clear Two Difficulties; If they levied them too suddenly, it might be heavy for the People: If they stay'd too long, it would not serve the Turn; that in this great Business he must look to his Conscience and Honour, as well as to the Means.

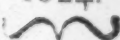
Here the Prince and *Buckingham* both said, That the King had declar'd to them he was satisfied in Honour and Conscience he might in this case undertake a War; but for the Manner of declaring it, he would take the Parliament's Advice. And the Duke added, That the King having formerly spoken of his Honour and Conscience, it might have been thought (if he had now omitted it) that the Money had drawn him

1624.

The King  
resolves to  
annul the  
Treaties.

to it. The King told them, this was the Way to make him in love with Parliaments : That he would make this a Session, and have another about *Michaelmas* ; bid them to go down and acquaint themselves with his People's Grievances, and protested he would never enter into any Agreement or Treaty without their Advice. So he declared his Resolution to dissolve the Treaties : Whereupon Bonfires were made in *London*, and the Bells rung for Joy. The Parliament hastned the Act for Three Subsidies, and Three Fifteens : And by the same Act Treasurers were appointed to receive and disburse the Moneys and a Council of War to manage the Design.

This done the King made the ensuing Declaration to both Houses *viz.* That as far as they have declared themselves, was sufficient for the present entrance into that great Business, tho' a great deal short of what he told them it would require. That he never stuck for Money, only desired to see a good Beginning of the War ; for what the End would be, God knew. He thanked them for their general Offer, to engage their Lives and Estates ; and for the present Supply they had given him, to be paid within a Year, which was as much as could be levied in so short a Time. That he would not have craved their Advice to reject it ; and as he was willing to follow it in annulling the Two Treaties of the Match, and the *Palatinate*, so he assured himself they would assist him with their Counsel and Forces : Desired their charitable Opinion, for his Forbearance so long was for sparing the effusion of Christian Blood. And he could have resolved himself, but he thought it a Strength and Honour to him to have the Advice of his People. He formerly told them he would have the *Palatinate* one Way or other ; and the very Enemies of his Son-in-Law confessed he hath reason for it, and if he recovered it not, he wished he had never been born : He hoped they would think of him in the next Place ; for by the War his Customs would fall, and his Charges increase ; but he would go through with it, tho' he sold his jewels and all. That tho' he broke the Neck of Three Parliaments, yet he hoped this should be a happy Parliament, and make him greater and happier than any King of *England* ever was. That he must have



a Faithful and secret Council of War, that must not be ordered by a Multitude; for whether he should send 20000 or 10000, whether by Sea or by Land, East or West, by Diversion, Invasion, or otherwise, that must be left to their King; he hoped that God would so bless their Advice, that he should clear his Reputation from Obloquy, and shew he had ever an honest Heart; for whosoever did Wrong, he deserved better at their Hands.

The Dissolution of the Treaties with the Emperor and Spain, gave such an Alarm to the Marquess of *Incarnosa*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, that he sent to the King to let him know, 'That the Duke of *Buckingham* intended to destroy him, or at least to confine him to a 'Country House in some Park, during his Life; the 'Prince being now of Age to take the Government upon him. This sudden Concussion, was enough to have shaken an old tottering and timorous building into Ruin, without thinking of his Mother's or Prince *Henry's* Fate, but the Violence of it did not operate, but was check'd by the Duke's protesting his Innocency: For the King at the next Interview saying to him, *Ab! Stenny, Stenny*, (which was the Familiar name he called him by) *wilt thou kill me*: The Duke being under a great surprize, at length recovering himself, with many asseverations asserted his Loyalty and Integrity, and the King being willing to believe him, the Noise was quickly over; and *Bristol* that came over to justify himself and charge the Duke, as soon as he landed, was committed to the *Tower*, where finding himself unable to grapple with the Duke, he gained his liberty by a Submission, and retired for the present to a Country Privacy.

The Lords being now at leisure, began to consider how necessary it was they should join with the Commons, in Petitioning the King, to curb the growth of Popery, and take down the pride of the Papists; but both Houses being ready to deliver it, they were prevented by the King's Speech, wherein he *promised to grant more than they desired*; yet the Parliament followed the Chace, and put out divers of the Nobility and Gentry that were Popishly affected, and had Earthed themselves in Places of great Trust and Power in the Kingdom, as if they designed to undermine the Nation.

1624.

These Proceedings crush'd them for the Present, yet they immediately got Heart again, and spread as much as ever, by another Project that was now in Agitation: For the King after the Breach with Spain, sent the Lord Kensington, newly made Earl of Holland, privately to France, to feel that King's Pulse, in relation to a Marriage between the Prince and the Lady Henrietta Maria, younger Daughter to Henry the Great. He continued there a Month, before he mov'd a Word in that Matter, and as soon as he propos'd it to the French King he was so fond of the Match, that he told Holland, *He had rather have the Prince of England, to be his Brother, than any other Man in the World*, and was so ready to comply, that he seem'd very indifferent in making terms for the Papists in England, but when he saw King James was as fond of the Marriage as himself, and the Jesuits had tamper'd with him, he got several Immunities for the Papists here, by seeming to stand off; but of this Match more by and by.

The Lord  
Treasurer  
censured.

The Duke of Buckingham being now swell'd to the highest Pitch of Grandeur, took up a Resolution to crush his Kinsman the Earl of Middlesex, Lord Treasurer, and to throw him out of the Place he had put him into, which he might easily do; for as Middlesex wanted Innocency to justify himself, so he wanted humility that others might have done it for him, which made him fall unpitied. His case being examined in Parliament, he was found Guilty of such high Misdemeanors, that they had Thoughts (but for the Precedent sake) to have degraded him, and tho' they went not so far as to take away the Titles of Honour from his Posterity, who had not offended, yet they made him utterly incapable of sitting in the House of Lords, and his Fine was so great that 'twas reported the Duke of Buckingham had Chelsey House from him for his Share on't.

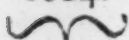
The Duke  
accused  
again.

The Duke of Buckingham had hitherto subdued all that had the ill Luck or Courage to contend with him; but Padre Macestria, a Spanish Jesuit, boldly attack'd him a 2d time; tells him, *He would prove him a Traitor, and being better born than himself, would justify it with his Sword*; and immediately sends King James Notice, that under Confession he had found, that he was to be killed by Buckingham, but whether by



by Poyson, Pistol or Dagger, he could not tell: Hereupon the King grew melancholy. But this was nothing to the Effect a Paper had upon him, which *Inniosa* put into his Hand at *White-Hall*, with a Wink, that he should put it into his Pocket; wherein, 1. He terrified him, that he was not, or could not be acquainted with the Passages of his own Court, or of the Parliament; for he was kept from all faithful Servants that would inform him, by the Ministers of the Prince and Duke; and that he was a Prisoner as much as King *John* of *France*, in *England*, or King *Francis* at *Madrid*, and could not be spoken with but before such as watched him. 2. That there was a strong and violent Machination in hand, which had turn'd the Prince, a most obedient Son, to a quite contrary Course to his Majesty's Intentions. 3. That the Council began last Summer at *Madrid*, but was lately resolved on in *England*, to restrain his Majesty from the Exercise of the Government of his Kingdoms, and that the Prince and Duke had design'd such Commissioners under themselves, as should intend great Affairs and the publick Good. 4. That this should be effected by beginning a War, and keeping some Companies of Foot in this Land, whereby to constrain his Majesty to yield to any thing, chiefly being brought into Streights for want of Money to pay the Soldiers. 5. That the Prince and Duke's inclosing his Majesty from the said Ambassador, and other of his own Loyal People, that they might not come near in private, did argue in them a Fear and Distrust of a good Conscience. 6. That the Embassaries of the Duke had brought his Majesty into Contempt with the potent Men of the Realm, traducing him for being slothful and unactive, for Addiction to an inglorious Peace, while the Inheritance of his Daughter and her Children was in the Hands of his Foes; and this appear'd by a Letter the Duke had writ into *Holland*, and they had intercepted. 7. That his Majesty's Honour, nay his Crown and Safety depended upon a sudden Dissolution of the Parliament. 8. They loaded the Duke with sundry Misdemeanors in *Spain*, and his violent Opposition to the Match. 9. That the Duke had divulged the King's Secrets and close Designs, between his Majesty and their Ma-

1624.



ster King *Philip*, about the States of *Holland* and their Provinces, and labour'd to put his Majesty out of the good Opinion of the *Hollanders*. 10. That the Duke was guilty of most corrupt dealing with the Ambassadors of divers Princes. 11. That all these Things were carried on in the Parliament with an headstrong Violence, and that the Duke was the Cause of it, who courted them only that were of turbulent Spirits. 12. That such Bitterness and Ignominies were vented in Parliament against the King of *Spain*, as were against all good Manners, and the Honour of the *English* Nation. 13. That the Puritans, of whom the Duke was Head, did wish they could bring it about, that the Succession of the Kingdom might come to the Prince *Palatine* and his Children, in Right of the Lady *Elizabeth*.

These being back'd and aggravated by *Carondelet*, *Inniosa's* Secretary, who was privately introduced to the King by the Earl of *Kelly*, he grew more sullen and thoughtful than ever, and would entertain the Prince and Duke with no Discourse but Riddles and broken Sentences, that like Flashes of Lightning from a black Cloud, shewed a Storm was gathering within. Immediately the Prince and the Duke concluded all was not right, and upon enquiry found that the *Spanish* Secretary, and *Maestro* the Jesuit, had been with the King and that some of the Ambassadors Family had made their Brags, *That they had nettled the Duke and that a Train would take Fire speedily to blow up the Parliament.* The King amidst these great Anxieties prepared to go to *Windsor*, thinking perhaps to leave his Cares and Fears behind him. In the End of *April*, being *Saturday* in the Afternoon, he takes Coach and his Son along with him. but makes some slight pretence to leave *Buckingham* behind as he was putting his Foot into the Coach: At which Tears burst from him, and he humbly requested his Majesty To tell him his offence, that he might Confess it, or clear himself: To which the King replied only (with a sigh) *That he was the unhappiest Wretch living, to be forsaken of those that were dearest to him:* Which Expressions drew Tears on both Sides, but the King drove away for *Windsor* and left the disconsolate Duke behind him.

Now

Now the Lord-Keeper *Williams*, who had done the Duke many considerable Services, and was made Lord-Keeper by his Interest, hearing the Duke was in Disfavour, goes to him then all in sorrow at *Wallingford House*, and with much ado gains admittance to him. After solemn Protestation of the great concern he had for him, and his earnest desires to serve him, he beg'd his Grace to make haste to *Windsor*, and shew himself to his Majesty before Supper was over; to carry himself with all the Winning Address imaginable, and to keep Night and Day close to his Person. For the Danger was, lest any one should get the King's Ear, and perswade him to dissolve the Parliament, and upon the Dissolution of it, get his Grace thrown into the Tower, and then God knows what might follow. Then acquainting him with a dark knowledge of the Contrivance against him, Bids the Duke lose no time and lock up the Secret in his Breast. The Duke returning him hearty Thanks, Posts away to *Windsor*, and comes there unexpected. To be sure he acquainted the Prince with the Occasion of his coming: So that his Highness was early next Morning at the Lords House, before they sate, to speak with the Keeper. And taking him aside into a Lobby, he Thanks him for the Advice he had given *Buckingham*: And, says he, *you that have gone so far, may receive greater Thanks of us both, if you will lay open this black Contrivance, which has lost him the good Opinion of my Father, and I my self am in little better Circumstances.* Sir, says the Keeper, let my Soul suffer for falsehood if I know any more than that some in the Spanish Ambassador's House have been preparing Mischief, and about Four Days since have infused it into his Majesty. Well, my Lord, said the Prince, if that be the Shop where the Plot is forging, no Councillor in the Kingdom knows better how to discover the whole. I might have been, said the Lord-Keeper, but your Highness and my Lord Duke have made it a Crime to send to that House, detects and 'tis now about a Month since I have forbidden the Servants of that House to come at me. But, says the Prince, I will make that Passage open to you again without Offence, and enterprize any way to bring us out of this Wood wherein we are lost. Only before we part, tell me how you came to know or imagine, that the Spanish Agents

The Lord-

Keeper

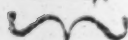
detests

the Scan-

dal.

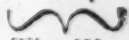
have

1624.



have charged Buckingham to my Father, with high Misdemeanors, that I may compare it with other Parts of my Intelligence? The Keeper having acquainted the Prince with that Intrigue, resolved to go thro' with it, and sift the Matter to the Bottom, which he knew he could never do, unless he had an Opportunity of pumping Don Francisco Carondelet, the Spanish Ambassador's Secretary, who, by the Duke's Order, had been forbid the Keeper's House above a Month before. If he should send for him, he thought it would look a little suspicious, and then the Secretary would be much upon the Reserve, and not open himself so freely. As the Keeper was musing upon this Difficulty, he chapt upon this lucky Thought: He orders his Pursuivant, Capt. Teatby, to seize an English Priest, that lodged in Drury Lane, whom Francisco loved entirely. The poor Secretary, as soon as he heard of his Friend's Misfortunes, tho' he had been banish'd the Keeper's House long since, saw it was no time in a Matter of such Consequence to be over modest, or stand upon Punctilio's; so he sent an humble Request to the Lord-Keeper to be admitted to him that Day, tho' he should never see his Face again. With a seeming Unwillingness it was granted, and when the Time appointed came, at first Sight of his Lordship, he breaks out abruptly, *That nothing but a Matter as dear to him as his Life should have forced him to break a Rule to offend his Lordship with his Presence*: And then, in a very passionate manner, begs his Friend's Enlargement. *And would you have me, said the Keeper, run such a Hazard, to set a Priest at Liberty, a dead Man by our Statutes, when the Eye of the Parliament is so vigilant upon the Breach of Justice, especially in this kind.* My Lord, says Francisco, *Let not the dread of this Parliament trouble you, for I can tell you, if you have not heard it, that it is upon expiring.* By this means the Keeper got into the outworks of the Project, and plaid so artificially with the Secretary, that he soon took the main Fortress, which when he had done, he put it down into Writing, and the next Morning presented it to the Prince at St. James's, who immediately Posts to Windsor, and shews the Paper to Buckingham; upon which they both desire immediate admittance to his Majesty, which being granted



granted, they present the Writing to him. The King 1624.  
read it all deliberately, and often stopping, would   
say, 'Tis well, Very well. Then he embraced his Son The King  
and the Duke, protesting, *That he was very sorry that a* is recon-  
*Parcel of Traytors should ever make him jealous of them,* ciled.  
*but now that all was right again. And that you may know,*  
said his Majesty, *how little you shall pay me for a Recon-*  
*ciliation; I ask no more, but tell me, who was your* Argus  
*that made this Discovery?* The Prince was silent, and  
the Duke vow'd he knew not. Well, said the King,  
*I have a good Nostril, and will answer my two Questions:*  
*My Keeper had the main Finger in it. Sir,* said the  
Prince, *I was precluded by my Promise not to reveal him:*  
*But I never promised to tell a Lye for him: Your Majesty*  
*has hit the Man. And God do him Good for it,* said the  
King, *I need not tell you both what you owe him for this*  
*Service.* So by this Discovery the Keeper did not on-  
ly do a signal Service to the Prince and Duke, but  
likewise to his Majesty; who, 'tis Ten to One, had  
quarrell'd out-right with his Parliament, had not he  
been thus convinced of his groundless Fears.

In the mean time, to make some Preparations for Prepara-  
War, Four Regiments of Foot were now raised for tions of  
the *United-Provinces* against the Emperor, under the War.  
Command of the Earls of Oxford, Essex and Southamp-  
ton, and the Lord Willoughby and Mansfield arriving C. Mans-  
now in England, a Press went thro' the Kingdom for field ar-  
raising 12000 Foot, and Two Troops of Horse under rives in  
his Command, for the Recovery of the Palatinate; England.  
the French having promised them a free Passage thro'  
France into Germany, and an Addition of Strength. The  
Count's Commission from the King, bearing Date  
the 7th of Novemb. was to this Effect: That, at the His Com-  
Request of the Palatine and his Wife, he had im-mission  
power'd Mansfield to raise an Army for the Recover-from K.  
ing the Estate and Dignity of the Palatine; but intend-James.  
ed not that he should commit any Spoil upon his Al-  
lies, particularly not upon the Dominions and lawful  
Possessions of the King of Spain, or the Infanta Isha-  
bella: And all Commissions granted by Mansfield to  
that Purpose should be void, wishing him good Suc-  
cess against the Duke of Bavaria: And the King took  
an Oath from the Count to conform thereunto. This  
Army, consisting of Twelve Regiments, put over to  
Ca-

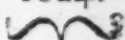
1624.

*Calice*, in Hopes to land there, and, after a tedious Stay, were forced to set Sail for *Zealand*; but coming so unexpectedly upon the States, were not suffer'd to land there: Thus being penn'd up in the Ships, a Pestilence came among them, and scarce a Third part ever landed, the Design coming to little or nothing.

French  
Match.

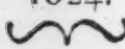
Having brought the Affairs of *England* thus far, let us resume those of *France*; and Cardinal *Richlieu* being now, at the Sollicitations of the Queen-Mother, admitted into the Council of State, began to manage all Things, and more particularly the Business of the Match with *England*; and the Earls of *Holland* and *Carlisle* having represented to the Cardinal, That the Proposition they made of a Marriage being no new Thing, since it had been discourf'd of many Years to marry the Prince of *Wales* with *Madam Christina*, who was afterwards married to the Prince of *Piedmont*; they had nothing now to do, but to reassume the Articles already made, and to continue on the same Foot: But the *French* answer'd, That the Face of Affairs were changed since that Time, and that they had other Thoughts at present; That it was the King of *England's* Interest to keep the Reputation of the *French* King in this Marriage; That they could not be contented now with what they had been formerly offer'd about Religion, after what had happen'd in *Spain*, when there was a Treaty of Marriage between the Prince of *Wales* and the *Infanta*; and urged, That it was necessary to begin the Negotiation by laying the Eleven Articles upon the Table, which the King of *Great Britain* had agreed with *Spain* upon that Occasion. But the Ambassadors rejecting this, *de la Ville aux Clers* answer'd, He was surpriz'd that they were not come with Power to make the same Concessions to the most Christian King, as their King had granted to his Catholick Majesty, since they might easily know *France* would suffer no Inequality in this Affair.

Hereupon a Courier was dispatched to the *French* Ambassador in *England*, that he should remonstrate to the Prince and Duke of *Buckingham*, that the King could do no less, and how much it imported the Crown of *England* that this Negotiation should not be



be broke off; That they knew for certain, that the Prince still hearken'd to those Propositions which the *Spaniards* had made him, and which, in all Appearance, would turn greatly to his Disadvantage: But the King having discover'd that the *English* Ambassadors had not written to their Master, another Courier was sent to the *French* Ambassador to order him to take no Notice of it. In effect, the Ambassadors of *England* soon consented to agree to all the Articles with *Spain*, except Three, of which one was concerning Liberty of Conscience for the *English* Catholics, another for a publick Church for the Retinue of Madam, and the last related to the Education of those Children who should be born of this Marriage, who were to be, till they came to be Twelve Years old, in the Hands of the Queen, to bring them up in her own Religion. The *French* represented it would do great Service to the King of *England*, by uniting to his Party all the *English* Catholics, who would oppose themselves to the Puritans and Presbyterians, by whom the King was not beloved: But the Ambassadors would never consent to grant a Church to the Papists, which would endanger a Mutiny in *London*, tho' they agreed to the Article concerning the Education of the Children; but yet rejected to have a Bishop sent with the Queen as a Matter that was of no use. As for the Dowry, the King of *England* insisted upon 800000 Crowns, of which the one Half was to be paid in *London* the Evening before the Marriage, 200000 Crowns a Year after, and the rest in Six Months more. There was also a Proviso made, That if Madam should happen to die before the Prince without Children, he should be obliged only to restore the Moety. The Negotiation being thus far carry'd on, the main Thing now wanting was a Dispensation from *Rome*, which being obtain'd after various Difficulties and Delays, *Richieu*, to prevent all Contests which might arise by reason of the Alliance, obliged Madam to renounce all Successions, both direct and collateral, which might accrue to her; and farther procured that her Household should be numerous and splendid; that her Dowry should be 60000 Crowns *per Annum*, which should be assigned her upon Lands; that if she became a Widow, she

*French* Match concluded  
Madam renounces her Pretensions to the Succession  
should

1624.  should have her Choice to live in *England* or *France*, whether she had Children or no, and that in case she should return to *France*, the King of *England* should be obliged to cause her to be conducted at his Charge, with Honours agreeable to her Quality, as far as *Calais*. The private Articles agreed on were, That the Catholics imprison'd since the last Proclamation on the Breach with *Spain* should be set at Liberty: That they should be no more molested for their Religion, and their Goods seized on since the said Proclamation should be restored.

*France* having gain'd her Point not only by the Conclusion of this Match, but also by a Treaty with the States of *Holland*, whereby she engaged to pay 3,000,000 Livres *Tournois* to the States in Three Years, upon Condition they made neither Peace nor Truce with *Spain* without her Knowledge: She was moreover intent upon the Affairs of *Italy*, the League between her, the *Venetians*, the Duke of *Savoy* and the *Swiss*, about recovering of the *Valtoline*, we have already mention'd, pursuant to which they resolved now to make War, tho' under the Name of the *Swiss* and *Grisons*, wherein they had different Views; for *France* abhorr'd an open Breach with *Spain*; the *Venetians* desired no more than to have the Affairs of the *Grisons* restored, and so have the Peace confirm'd; but the Duke was for a declared War against *Spain*, and urged many subtle Reasons for it, tho' without Success: However, having brought the *French* to concur with him in subjugating the Republick of *Genoua*, the *Venetians*, whom they thought mindful of ancient Emulations, and consequently would have comply'd with the Project, absolutely refused it. And as to the *Valtoline*, the Exiles before the End of this Year, with the Encouragement of the Regiment of *Salice*, suddenly attack'd the Posts in the Hands of *Leopold's* Soldiers, and possess'd themselves of *Stein*, the Bridge of the *Rhine*, *Majanfelt*, the Sluice of *Partentz* and *Flex*, thereby excluding Succours out of *Germany*, and this wrought such a Revolution in the Country, that the Ten Dictatorships shook off the Yoak of *Leopold*, and so the Confederates preparing to invade the *Valtoline* (now they had got *Rhetia*) by the Way of *Paschiavano*, made themselves Masters of

Confederates recover the *Valtoline*.

*Pian-*



*Piantamala, Triano, Sondrio and Morbegno*; so that in a few Days they were in Possession of all the *Valto-line*, wherein for the present we shall leave them.

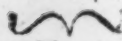
1623.

Affairs of  
Turkey.

We have already taken Notice of the Revolutions in *Turkey*, where the Difficulties which the young Sultan was to encounter with were many, the greatest whereof were the Jealousie of the *Fanizaries*, and his Want of Money to satisfy their greedy Demands; and therefore, besides all Military Officers that were obliged to pay a Tax for this Use, there was a shameful Loan demanded of 30000 *Zechins*, from the Four Christian Ambassadors at the *Port*; wherefore many of the Officers being out of Conceit with this usurping Humour, began to countenance secretly the Cause of *Abassa*, *Basha* of *Erzurum*, who declared himself the Enemy of the *Fanizaries*, and of the *Basha* of *Babylon*, who was join'd with him; the *Visier* also himself and the *Beglerbeg* of *Natolia*, were no Favourers of the *Fanizaries*; who, when they would have pressed him to fight *Abassa*, answer'd, They might, if they would, but he would not engage in a Quarrel, where he knew the Blood of *Mussulmen* must be spilt on either side. The *Port* was also distracted at this time, with the *Tartars* refusing *Cheremy*, whom the Grand Seignior had appointed to be their King, and declaring for his Brother *Mehemet*; so that the Captain *Basha* landing about 8000 Men to support the Former's Cause, they fell into an Ambush of 30000 *Tartarian* Horse, and were so hemm'd in, that they might have cut them all off, but out of Regard to the Sameness of their Religion, and in Hopes of Reconciliation: There was but a small Number comparatively slain, and the Prisoners were freed for a small Ransom; whereas the *Tartars*, if they had prosecuted their Advantage, might besides this have master'd the Fleet, and done other very great Damages to the *Turks*; neither was the *Turks* Compliance afterwards with *Mehemet*, being *Cham*, any ways pleasing to the People, who greatly murmured at that pusillanimous Condescension in the Government.

We'll now take *Poland* in our way homewards, who having in some tolerable measure appeased their Civil Commotions, resolv'd to attempt something against the *Swedes* in *Prussia*; but *Gustavus* receiving

time.

1624.  
  
 A Truce  
 between  
 Sweden  
 and Po-  
 land.

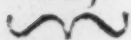
timely Advice of it, sailed with his Fleet before *Dantzick*, where *Sigismund* then was; and so frustrating his Design, a Truce thereupon was prolonged for Two Years, upon Condition, that in that time, a firm and solid Peace should be concerted, or in case they came to no Accommodation, that either of the Two Parties, who refused to prolong the Truce, should be obliged to declare War before the First of *June*, which was the Term at which the Truce was to expire.

*Bethlem*  
 defeats  
 the Impe-  
 rialists.

As for the Imperial Arms in Germany, the great Success that attended them last Year, gave *Ferdinand* Leisure to oppose *Bethlem Gabor*, Prince of *Transylvania*, who had again invaded *Hungary*, and defeated General *Caraffa*, and the Marquess *de Montenegro*, near *Tyrna*, with which *Bethlem* was so elevated, that he would needs prescribe Conditions of Peace to the Emperor; whereupon the Imperial General *Tilly* marching with great Fury against him, met, fought, and entirely defeated him near *Neutra*, which gave such a Turn to the Scales, that *Gabor* was now willing to accept of such a Treaty of Peace as the Emperor should think fit to afford him.

Arch-  
 bishop  
*Whitgift's*  
 Death.

On the 29th of *Febr.* died *John Whitgift*, Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, at the Age of 74. He was born at great *Grimby* in *Yorkshire*, An. 1530. bred at *Pembroke-Hall* in *Cambridge*. He commenced Doctor of Divinity in 1569, and having a great Reputation for Preaching, Queen *Elizabeth* was pleased to hear him, and with that Satisfaction, that she made him her Chaplain. About this time *Cartwright* writ against the Government of the Church, to which *Whitgift* publish'd a learned Answer. Afterwards the Queen advanced him to the Arch-bishoprick of *Canterbury*, after *Grindal's* Death. *Whitgift* was a great Encourager of Learning and Vertue, and treated those that dissented from the Church with great Moderation.

1625.  


The Spring of this Year proved fatal to *James I.* King of *England*, who falling sick of a Tertian Ague, and his Indisposition still increasing, he retired to *Theobald's*, and the Lord-Keeper *Williams* having Notice, that they feared his Sickness was mortal, he went to *Theobald's*, and presenting himself before the King,

King, he endeavoured to divert him, and bring him to a chearful Discourse, but all in vain. So he continued by his Bed-side till Midnight, but the King found no Comfort. Next Morning, after a Consultation of Physicians, he saw no Hopes of his Life, and therefore ask'd Leave of the Prince to acquaint his Father with his weak Condition, and put him in Mind of his Mortality. And having the Prince's Consent, he went into his Majesty's Chamber, and kneeling down, told him, *He knew he should neither displease him, nor discourage him, if he brought Isaiah's Message to Hezekiah, to set his House in order*; for he thought his Days to come would be but few in this World. *I am satisfy'd*, replies the King, *and I pray you to assist me in preparing to go hence, and be with Christ, whose Mercies I pray for, and hope to find them.* From this time the Keeper watched with his Majesty continually, and never so much as put off his Clothes to go to Bed, till after his Royal Master's Death; which was visible enough in his looks on Sunday Night. His whose Business was Night and Day (except when the Physicians compos'd his Majesty to rest) to Pray, Read, and Discourse about Repentance, Faith, Remission of Sins, Resurrection and Eternal Life. This was the Preparation on Wednesday for the Blessed Sacrament on Thursday. Upon Friday his Majesty grew sensibly weaker; so that now the Keeper stirr'd very little out of the Chamber, and that not only to comfort the departing King, but likewise to keep off some of the *Romish* Church that were kanker-ing about the Chamber Door, whom, as a Privy-Councillor, he commanded to keep at greater Distance. Being rid of these, he was now continually in Prayer, while the King linger'd on; and at last his Soul departing March 27. the Keeper closed his Eyes with his own Hands, in the 58th Year of his Age, after he had reign'd 22 Years compleatly.

James, King of Scotland, only Son and Heir of His De-  
Henry Stewart, late King of Scotland, and of Queen *scot.*  
Mary, his Wife, Dowager of France, and Daughter  
and Heir of James V. King of Scotland, was born at  
Edinburgh Castle the 19th of June, 1566. and was pro-  
claim'd King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland  
at London the 24th of March, 1602. being then 36 Years  
of

1625. of Age; and on the 25th of July following 1603. was Crown'd, with Queen *Ann* his Wife, at *Westminster*, by *John Whitgift*, Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury*. He marry'd *Ann*, Daughter of *Frederick II.* King of *Denmark* and *Norway*, and Sister to *Christian IV.* then King of *Denmark*. She was born at *Scanderburgh* the 12th of *December*, 1590. He had Issue by her, *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earl of *Chester*, born on *February* 19, 1593. who died without Issue at *St. James's*, and was bury'd at *Westminster*, Decemb. 1612. *Robert Stewart*, his Second Son, died very young. *Charles*, Duke of *Albany*, Marquess of *Ormond*, Earl of *Ross*, and Lord of *Adamnouch*, born the 27th of *February*, 1600. and was created Duke of *York* the 6th of *January*, 1604. and Prince of *Wales* and Earl of *Chester* the 4th of Nov. 1616. Lady *Elizabeth*, born the 19th of *August*, 1596. was married to *Frederick*, Elector Palatine of the *Rhine*, and had many Children. *Margaret*, born the 24th of *December* in *Scotland*, 1598. and died young. *Mary*, born in *England*, died an Infant, and was bury'd at *Westminster*. *Sophia*, born at *Greenwich*, died the next Day after she was born, and was bury'd at *Westminster*. And here I think it will be no impertinent Digression to observe how the Surname of the Kings of *England* have been changed. From *William I.* to *Henry II.* it was very uncertain whether they had any Surname or no: But that King brought in the *French* Surname of *Platagenet*, which continued to all the succeeding Kings till *Henry VII.* who brought in the *Welsh* Name of *Tudor*, and that lasted till King *James VI.* of *Scotland* brought in the *Scottish* Name of *Stewart*, still surviving in the excellent Queen *Ann* among us.

His Personage and Character.

King *James* was of a middle Stature, a well compacted Body, of an Auburn Hair, and if he had any predominate Humour to temper his Choler, it was Sanguine. His Beard grew scattering on his Chin, and very thin; and tho' his Cloathes were seldom fashion'd in the common Mode, yet in the whole he was not uncomely. Of bodily Exercises he took most Delight in Hunting, and yet some thought he used it rather as a Retirement from the Importunity of State Affairs, than for any great Pleasure he took in it. Its said,



he had such an odd Fashion in Riding, that it could not be so properly said he Rid, as that his Horse carried him; for he made but little use of his Bridle, and would say, *A Horse never Stumbled but when he was Reined.* He was of an admirable pregnancy of Wit, and that improved by continual Study from his Childhood; by which he acquired such a Promptness and Elegancy in expressing his Mind, that his Extemporary Speeches were little inferior to his Premeditated Writings. Many, no doubt, might have read as much or more than he, but never any better digested it into a profound Judgment, which made his Conjectures little less than Oracles. He was excellently skilled in all the Liberal Arts, but excell'd in Divinity, as appeared at the Conference at *Hampton-Court*, and the Learned Writings he left to Posterity. In that part of Politicks which relates to Monarchy, *Regere imperio populos*, which he used to call *King Craft*, he was a great Master. He knew how to catch the Inclinations of his People at the first Rebound, and would never suffer them to mount higher than he could reach them, nor grow so strong but he could either Alter or Divert them. He was so wise, and had so great a Command of his Passions, that he could dissemble without being known to be a Dissembler, be free and open hearted in Discourse, and yet not disclose his Secrets. In a Calm he would provide for a Storm, and was never found to commit the Fault (*Non Putaram*) of not thinking; and had he been *Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, as much a Soldier as a Wise Man and a Scholar, he had not given the Antimonarchists so much Advantage to traduce him. Of all the moral Vertues he was eminent for his Chastity: For in his whole Reign, tho' many of his Courtiers were extravagantly vicious in that kind, yet we meet not with one single Whore of his Enriching, nor Bastard of his Begetting. 'Tis true, there were some Heats between him and his Parliament about the *Prerogative*, and it happened then as it does in all Feuds, Things were carried to the utmost Extremity; the King peradventure *Ask'd to much*, where others seemed to refuse him *Every thing*: For considering, says Naunton, *The great Debt left on the King, and into what Incumbrances the House it self had then drawn him, his Majesty was not*

1625. *well used: Tho', says he, I lay not the Blame on the whole Suffrage of the House, wherein he had many Friends; for I dare avouch had the House been freed of half a Dozen popular and discontented Persons, who with the Fellow that burnt the Temple at Ephesus, would be talked of, tho' but for doing Mischief I am confident the King had obtained that which in Reason, and at his first Accession he ought to have received freely, and without any Condition. In short, King James was a Loyal Husband to his Wife, an Indulgent Father to his Children, a Bountiful Master to his Servants, and a Just Prince to his Subjects. He died of a Quartan Ague, and tho' some write that he was poisoned, yet there was no Reason to believe it, for being dead and his Body opened, no sign at all appeared that he was ill treated. His inward Parts were all sound and his Spleen only affected, which might be cause enough to cast him into an Ague, the high way especially in Ancient Bodies to a Natural Death.*

*If King James could go off the Stage with this Character, few Princes have, or will ever hardly come up with him: But other Authors rather take it for a Piece of Flattery than otherwise; and say, He was the first Prince that endeavour'd to introduce Arbitrary Power into England, being throughout the Course of his Reign more influenced by Favourites and Flatterers, than by the Advice of his Parliament, or a wise Council: That the Compellation of Solomon of the Age, wherewith the Court-Sycophants frequently accosted him, no ways belong'd to him; since Solomon was the Richest, James the Poorest of Kings; Solomon was inspired with Wisdom above all Princes, whereas James's Learning, which was little more than Pedantry, was a Scandal to his Crown: That this Prince was only Great in making himself Little, and not beloved at Home: That he squander'd away the Sacred Patrimony of the Crown, and neglected the Repair and Increase of the Royal Navy: That his prophane Conversation and dissolute Life, debauch'd and effeminated the Genius of the English Nation, whereby it became more scandalous for Swearing and Drinking, than in any Age before: That he neglected to preserve the Ballance of Europe: That he was fearful of his Enemies Abroad, while*

while he was Great in taking upon him to exercise a Tyrannical Power over his Subjects at Home : Nay, some for his Dissimulation have not stuck to compare him with *Tiberius*, tho' Peace was maintain'd by him as in the Days of *Augustus* ; with which I shall conclude his Reign, only adding, that his Corps was buried on the 7th of *May*, at *Westminster*, with great Solemnity.

King *James I.* dying as aforesaid, the same Day in the Afternoon *Charles*, Prince of *Wales*, his only surviving Son, was proclaim'd King of *Great Britain*, *France* and *Ireland*, with the general Acclamation of all sorts of People. In the Evening, the same Day, King *Charles* came from *Theobald's* to *St. James's*, where he continued all the Privy-Councillors that had served his Father in their respective Places ; for which especial Favour, the next Day in Council the Lord-Keeper, in the Name of all the Rest, gave his Majesty their humble Thanks for his good Opinion of them. One of the first Things resolved on, was the Calling of a Parliament, which by several Prorogations, was put off to the 18th of *June*. In the mean time Warrants were issued for a Levy of Soldiers for the Service of the *Palatinate*, where 8000 were to rendezvous at *Plimouth*, the Coat and Con- duct-Money to be disbursed by the Country, to be repaid out of the *Exchequer*, and 2000 more to be transported to the *Netherlands*, for the Service of the States ; and the like Number to be return'd hither.

And to prevent the like Violences as were committed by Count *Mansfield's* Army in their Passage to *Dover*, a Proclamation was issued, charging the Officers and Conductors to see their Companies duly paid and provided for : And a Commission was sent to *Plimouth* for executing Martial Law upon the Soldiers, or any others join'd with them, for any Offence punishable with Death by that Law.

The Duke of *Buckingham* was sent into *France*, accompanied with several *English* Lords, to convoy the Queen. During his Seven Days stay at *Paris*, the Feastings were renew'd, Bonfires shining, and Cannons playing. The *French* King sent to the Towns in her Way, to render her all due Honours. King *Charles* sent a Royal Navy to *Boloign* to transport her.

1625.



She embark'd there the 12th of *June*, and within 24 Hours arriv'd at *Dover*, whither the King came the next Morning, with the Nobility, and conducted her to *Canterbury*, where the Marriage was consummated the same Evening.

At length the Day for the Opening of the Parliament being come, the King spake to both Houses, in Substance as follows.

The  
King's  
Speech in  
Parliament.

He thanked God, that the Business to be treated of needed no Eloquence. That it is no new Affair, but was begun by his Father, and hopes they will go on to maintain it as freely as they advis'd his Father to it. Which just and glorious Work it was his Wisdom not to begin until he found Means to maintain it: But when he saw himself abus'd, he took their Advice; for the Assistance of those in *Germany*, the Fleet ready for Action, and the other Preparations, do sufficiently prove that his Father entred into this Action. Hopes they remember that they employ'd him to break off the Two Treaties then on foot. That it's true, he came into this Business rashly like a young Man: And it being begun by their Advice, it would be a Dishonour to him and them if it should fail for want of their Assistance: Bids them consider the Season, that he must hazard their Lives if he continue them long, and they will endanger the Business if they be slow in their Resolutions: Hopes therefore they will expedite what they have in hand to do. And whereas some give out that he is not so true a Maintainer of the Religion he professes; he assures them he hath been train'd up at *Gamaliel's* Feet; and that none hath been or shall be more desirous to maintain the Religion he professes than himself: That he is unfit for much speaking, and therefore will bring up the Custom of his Predecessors, to have my Lord-Keeper speak for him in most Things.

Lord-  
Keeper's  
Speech.

Then the Lord-Keeper *Coventry* (for *Williams* was now laid aside) declared, That the King's main Reason of calling them, was to mind them of his great Engagements for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*: That all the Treaties, Alliances, and Preparations did meet in one Center, the *Palatinate*; and the Subsidies granted last Parliament were spent therein. He

re-



recommended Three Things to them: 1. The Timing of it; his Majesty therefore desired them to bestow this Meeting upon him, the next should be theirs. 2. Supply. 3. The Issue of that Action: Which being the first, highly concern'd his Reputation.

The Commons presented Sir Thomas Crew for their Speaker, of whom the King approv'd.

Sir Thomas Crew  
Speaker.

As for the State of the Court at this time, *Buckingham* having a great Ascendant on his new Master, with this Excess of Favour and Fortune, and laden with Plenty of Crown-Revenue, and Offices of the best Value and of highest and most publick Concern; it is no wonder that the ancient Nobility of both Kingdoms, who were at Court, as the Duke of *Richmond* and *Lenox*, and Marquess *Hamilton*, (who drew with them the *Scotch* Party) and the Earl of *Pembroke*, and his Brother *Montgomery*, *Salisbury*, and others, (who were follow'd by the *English*) brought a great Distemper of Humours in Court, and that distill'd it self soon into the Veins of the Country: And thus a Displeasure to the Favourite soon lessen'd the Duty and Reverence, which was due to the Prince. Thus the Factions of a Court always feed the peccant Humours of the City and Country; so as commonly the Throne is most endanger'd by those, whose Obligation it is to uphold it, and who most commonly suffer with it.

But to the House of Commons, and their Proceedings, whereby their Temper also may be sound; some insisted upon the Grievances not redress'd by King *James*; others for an Account of the last Subsidies; others for putting the Laws in Execution against Priests and Jesuits, and such as resorted to Ambassadors Houses; and questioning Mr. *Richard Montague's* Book, entituled, *An Appeal to Caesar*; but others advis'd to preserve a right Understanding between the King and his People, and to express their Duty to him by giving a Supply, and therewith to offer nothing but a Petition for Religion: To which when it was presented to the King; his Majesty answer'd, He was glad they were so forward in Religion, and that they should find him as forward; but the Commons calling *Montague* to the Bar about the foremention'd

1625.

Two Sub-  
sidies gi-  
ven the  
King.

The Par-  
liament  
adjourn'd  
to Oxford.

The Van-  
guard and  
7 other  
Ships em-  
ploy'd a-  
gainst Ro-  
chel.

Book, and the King intimating to the House, That he being his Chaplain, he had taken that Matter into his own Hands, the House was not well pleased with it; however, they presented the King with Two Subsidies, upon which the Lord *Conway* told them, The King accepted them, but the present Affairs required their further Counsels; That the late King was provoked beyond his Nature to undertake a War; That the Charges thereof amounted to 700000*l.* a Year to support the *Netherlands*; and to prevent the Emperor's Designs in *Germany*, he levied an Army under Count *Mansfield*; the King of *Denmark* another; and to uphold the *Netherlands*, the Charge of *Mansfield's* and *Denmark's* Armies must continue. The Plague encreasing, the King adjourn'd the Parliament to *Oxford*, to re-assemble the 1st of *August* following. The Receipt of the *Exchequer* was remov'd to *Richmond*, and all Fairs within Fifty Miles of *London* prohibited.

In the mean time, to look back a little, King *James* during the Marriage-Treaty with *France*, had promised to lend some Ships to the *French* King to be employ'd only against *Genoa*; but the Protestants of *France* intimating their suspicion, that the Design was to fall upon the *Rochellers*, and others of their Religion, King *James* directed that the greater Part of those that serv'd in the Ships should be *English*: Accordingly the *Vanguard*, a principal Ship of the Royal Navy, and Seven Merchant Ships of great Burden and Strength, were commanded to the Coasts of *France*. *Pennington*, Admiral of this Fleet, presented to *Buckingham*, Lord High Admiral, his Exceptions to the Contract between his Majesty and the *French* King chiefly for that they were to Fight at the *French* King's Command against any Nation except his own, and the *French* might put aboard them as many *French* Men as they pleased. The *Vanguard* arrived at *Diep*, but the rest lingred behind; and *Pennington* receiv'd Letters from the Duke, and a Warrant from Secetary *Conway* to deliver up the Ships to whom the *French* King should appoint, with a Letter from the *French* King, willing him to receive his Admiral the Duke of *Montmorancy*. and join with his Fleet against his Rebellious Subjects. But *Pennington* refused without a more clear  
and

and exprefs Warrant ; and the Souldiers and Mariners grew into fuch a Fury, that they got up their Anchors and fet fail for *England*, refufing to Fight againft their own Religion. When they came to an Anchor in the *Downs*, he advertifed the Duke of what had hapned, and crav'd further Directions. All this while the Body of the Council knew of no other Design than that of *Genoa* : But the King fent ftrict Orders to *Pennington* to deliver up the *Vanguard* to the Marquels *d'Effiat*, and to require the Seven Merchant Ships to put themfelves into the Service of the *French* King, or in cafe of refufal to compel them thereunto, or to fink them ; whereupon *Pennington* returned to *Diep*, put the *Vanguard* into the abfolute Power of the *French* King, and commanded the Reft of the Fleet to furrender : At firft they refufed and were making away ; but when *Pennington* fhoot, they all came in, except Sir *Ferdinando Gorge*, who came away with the *Neptune* : But all the Companies of of the Ships unanimoſly declin'd the Service except one Gunner.

The Parliament meeting the Firſt of *Auguſt* at *Oxford*, both Houſes attended the King, on the 4th, in *Chriſt-Church-Hall*, who told them, That by their Advice his Father broke off the Two Treaties with *Spain* ; that they then well foreſaw a War was likely to enſue ; and as they had led his Father into it, ſo their Aſſiſtance ſhould not now be wanting : That the Aid they gave being Three Subſidies and Three Fifteenths, was receiv'd by the Treafurers, and diſburſed by the Council of War appointed by themſelves : That upon his Father's Death he aſſembled them, to be enabled by their Advice and Aid to proceed in what by their Counſels his Father was engaged in : That the Two Subſidies they gave him were yet ungather'd, though the Money taken up beforehand, and already diſburſed, and far ſhort to ſet forth the Navy then preparing ; the Account of the Charges whereof ſhould be laid before them.

Then the Lord *Conway* and Sir *John Cook*, by the King's Command, declared to them, That *K. James* at the Suit of both Houſes, and by the powerful Operation of his preſent Maſteſty, conſented to break off the Two Treaties with *Spain*, and to vindicate the State of

The King's Speech to the Parliament.

*L. Conway* and *Secr. Cook* declare the preſent State of Wrongs Affairs.

1625. Wrongs and Scorns done to him and his Children: That he consider'd how unapt his own People were for War after so long a Peace, the Difficulty of uniting with other States: That the Duke of *Bavaria* was possess'd of the *Palatinate*, most of the Electors and Princes had join'd with him, the Estates of the rest were seiz'd: That the Emperor had call'd a Dyct to extinguish all Hopes of the *Palatine's* being restored. In *France* the King was sheathing his Sword in the Bowels of his own Subjects. In the *Low Countries* the *Arminians* prevail'd, who inclin'd to the Papists; and his Majesty was forced to send 6000 Men thither, and sought an Alliance with *France*: That *Denmark*, *Sweden* and the *German* Princes refus'd to join, till they saw his Majesty first in the Field: That the Charge of an Army appear'd in Parliament to be 700000 *l. per Annum*, besides the Fortifications here and in *Ireland*, and the Navy: That hereupon an Army was committed to Count *Mansfield* (whereof the Charge was 70000 *l. per Month*) and his Majesty commanded the Preparing of this great Fleet; which Army (tho' unfortunate) produced these Effects: 1. It prevented the Diet intended by the Emperor. 2. The *German* Princes gain'd new Courage. 3. The King of *Denmark* hath rais'd an Army, with which he was march'd in Person. Moreover the Confederates of *France* and *Italy* had prosecuted a War in *Milan*, and the *French* King had made Peace with his Subjects: That the last Subsidy-Money was already disburs'd: A Fleet now at Sea; and the King advis'd of Designs to infect *Ireland*, and our Coasts; the present Charge of all which amounted to 400000 *l.* and the King left the Whole to their Considerations. Then the Lord-Treasurer proceeds. That the late King was indebted to the City of *London* 120000 *l.* besides Interest, for *Denmark* and the *Palatinate* 150000 *l.* and for his Wardrobe 40000 *l.* That his present Majesty was indebted to *London* 70000 *l.* had laid out for his Navy 20000 *l.* and 20000 *l.* for Count *Mansfield*; for Mourning and his Father's Funeral 42000 *l.* for Expences concerning the Queen 40000 *l.* And to set forth the Navy and pay them for the Time intended for this Expedition, cost 300000 *l.*



Upon this the Commons fell into high Debates touching the Misimployment of the Treasury, and the King's being guided by ill Counsels; alledged that this Parliament was not bound by another to be carried blindfold, where sound Counsels were wanting; and Subsidies upon Subsidies were unusual. They reflected upon the Duke as to the Match with Spain, and that with France, and other Particulars; reassumed the Business of *Montague*; resolv'd that Religion should first be debated, next the Kingdom's Safety, and then Supplies: That the King be desir'd to give his Answer in full Parliament to the Petition for Religion, and concerning the Imposition on Wines: That they inquire whither the new Fleet and Army were intended, of 140000 *l.* at least given for Places; and if the Money design'd for the *Palatinate*, did not maintain the Ships lent against *Rochel*: That the King ought to contribute with his own Estate to help the *Palatinate*.

1625.  
High Debates in the House of Commons.

Soon after the Commons at a Conference desired the Lords to join with them in representing to the King, the great Favour shewn to Papists, in their Petition concerning Religion; and the Substance of it, is as follows:

Complaints of Papists being favoured.

That nothing could more establish the Throne, or the Peace and Prosperity of the People, than the Unity and Sincerity of Religion: That they hold themselves bound to represent to his Majesty the dangerous Consequences of the Increase of Popery, what were the principal Causes, and what the Remedies.

The Petition concerning Religion, with the King's Answer.

The Dangers:

1. Their desperate Ends, the Subversion of Church and State.
2. Their Dependance upon Foreign Princes.
3. The Opening a Way of Popularity to any Head of their Party.

The principal Causes of the Increase of Papists:

1. The Want of the due Execution of the Laws against them.
2. The Interposing of Foreign Princes in their Favour.
3. Their great Concourse to the City.
4. Their Resort to Ambassadors Houses and Chappels.
5. The Education of their Children in Foreign Parts.
6. The Peoples Want (in some Places) of being instructed in the True Religion.
7. The

Printing

1624. Printing and Dispersing of Popish Books. 8. The Putting of Men ill-affected to Religion in Places of Government.

Then for the Remedies :

1. That the Youth be educated by Able and Religious School-Masters, who should catechize and instruct them in the Principles of true Religion. That Care be taken in the Choice and Admission of School-Masters, and the Ordinary to remove the Faulty, or Justly suspected.

His Majesty's Answer was to this Effect :

This is well allow'd of ; and Letters shall be written to the Two Arch-bishops, and by them to the Ordinaries, to see this done.

2. That the Discipline of the Universities be restored.

*Ans.* Approved ; and the Chancellors there shall be required to cause due Execution of it.

3. That his Majesty advise his Bishops, by Fatherly Treatment, and tender Usage, to reduce to the Service of the Church such able Ministers as have been formerly silenced ; and that Non-Residences, Pluralities and Commendams may be moderated ; thanking his Majesty for diminishing the Number of his Chaplains, the Universities being full of Ministers unfurnished of Livings.

*Ans.* This his Majesty likes well, so as it be applied to Ministers conformable to the Church-Government : For Pluralities there are no Dispensations now granted, and none is allow'd above Two Benefices, and those not above Thirty Miles Distance : For Non-Residence the Canon shall be put in Execution ; Commendams shall be sparingly granted. And he recommends to the Parliament, that every Parish allow their Minister a competent Maintenance, and Impropiators allow a sufficient Stipend for Preaching Ministers.

4. That Provision be made against transporting *English* Children to the Seminaries beyond the Seas ; for recalling those already there, and for punishing the Maintainers of such Seminaries and Scholars.

*Ans.*

*Ans.* The Law shall be put in Execution. The Ports shall be strictly watch'd, and Searches made.

1625.

A Proclamation shall be issued to recall such Children by a Day, and such Maintainers shall be punish'd according to Law.

5. That no Popish Recusant come within the Court, unless called by his Majesty upon special Occasion, agreeable to 3 Jac. And that his Majesty's Order, that no such, being his natural Subjects, should be admitted into the Queen's Service, may be observ'd.

*Ans.* If there be any Concourse of Recusants to the Court, the Laws shall be pursued. And none of his Subjects who are Popish Recusants shall be admitted into the Service of him or his Queen.

6. That the Laws against Jesuits and Popish Priests be put in Execution, and a Day prefixed by Proclamation for their Departure, and against entertaining or concealing them. That Papists imprison'd be restrain'd from Conference with others; and no Papist to be Keeper of a Prison.

*Ans.* Granted.

7. That none by Authority from Rome confer Ecclesiastical Orders upon his natural Subjects.

*Ans.* It shall be so order'd by Proclamation.

8. That his Majesty's Learned Counsel may consider of former Grants of Recusants Lands, that where the Recusant receives any Benefit, they may be avoided.

*Ans.* The King will give such Order to his Learned Counsel.

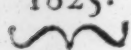
9. That he command the Judges, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, to cause the Laws against Popish Recusants to be duly executed, and the Censure of Excommunication declared and certified against them, and no Absolution without Conformity.

*Ans.* His Majesty leaves the Laws to their Course, and will do in the Point of Excommunication as desired.

10. That his Majesty will remove from Places of Authority Popish Recusants, and those justly suspected.

*Ans.* Granted.

1625.



11. That Popish Recusants convicted, or justly suspected, be disarm'd.

*Ans.* The Laws shall be put in execution.

12. That such Recusants retire from *London* to their several Countries, to remain confin'd within Five Miles.

*Ans.* For this the Laws shall be executed.

13. That his Majesty's Order prohibiting his natural Subjects to repair to the hearing of Masses, or other superstitious Service, may be continued and observed and the Offenders punish'd.

*Ans.* Granted.

14. That all Insolencies, that any Popishly affected have lately committed, or shall commit to the Dishonour of our Religion, may be exemplarily punish'd.

*Ans.* Granted.

15. That the Statute of 1 *Eliz.* for Payment of Twelve-pence every *Sunday*, by such as shall be absent from Church, may be put in Execution, the Penalty being not to be dispensed with, because given to the Poor.

*Ans.* This Statute shall be executed, and not dispensed with.

16. That the like Course for Religion extend to *Ireland*.

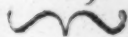
*Ans.* Granted.

They added, That the Answer of his Father upon the like Petition did give them Hopes; but his Majesty's Promises in that kind do give them assurance of Reformation.

And it was intimated to the Commons, That the King would have done the same Things tho' they had not petition'd him; That what he had done was out of Conscience and Duty to his Father, who recommended to him the Queen's Person, not her Religion.

This done and *Buckingham* having by the King's Command, given both Houses an Account, of the Fleet and some other Matters, his Majesty next Day sent a Message to the Commons, desiring them to lay aside all other Considerations, and give him a present Answer about a Supply, his Affairs requiring dispatch, and the Time of the Year far spent. That if the Plague should





should happen among them, or in the Navy, the Action would be lost. If he could have no Supply, he would shift for himself; he offered they should meet again in Winter. Hereupon some pressing the giving Two Subsidies, and Two Fifteens, and urging the Necessity of it, others said, Necessity was an Evil Counsellor; that they that have brought such a Necessity upon them, ought to answer it. And at length a Declaration was unanimously agreed unto by the House, they would continue Loyal Subjects, and would be ready in convenient time, and in a Parliamentary way, to discover and reform Grievances, and to afford all necessary Supply to his Majesty; beseeching him to rest assured of their true and hearty Affections, and to esteem the same to be (as it was) the greatest Reputation and Security a just King could have, and to account all such Slanderers and Enemies of the Commonwealth, that should dare to say the contrary. But the King, perceiving the House resolved against Supply without redress of Grievances, and in their Debates to reflect upon some Persons near him, on the 12th of *August* dissolved the Parliament, in order to which having sent down the Black-Rod, to call up the Commons unto the Lords-House, they being then resolved into a grand Committee, and having some inkling of what was determined, when the Black-Rod knockt at the Door with his staff, (which is the usual Manner and Voice of Authority to be presently admitted) the Men of the Tribunitial Spirit, as Sir P. W. calls them, would not let the Speaker, Sir Thomas Crew, take the Chair to admit the King's Messenger, until one Mr. Glanvill, an eminent Lawyer, and of a warm Temper, had framed a Protestation, that his Majesty might have Thanks for his gracious answer to their Petition for Religion; and for his care of their Healths, in giving them leave to depart that Dangerous Sicknes-Time; professing their Loyalty and their readiness to supply his Majesty in a Parliamentary way, in a fitting and convenient time; which was look'd upon a wild and tumultuous Essay, to be made at a Committee, which had no Authority to treat of any such thing.

The Parliament dissolved.

The

1625.

King fol-  
lows his  
Design  
of War.

The Parliament thus sent home, the King pursued his Design of War, resolving the Fleet should suddenly put to Sea, and entred into a League with the *United-Provinces* against the Emperor and the King of *Spain*, for restoring the Liberties of *Germany*; and the Duke of *Buckingham* and Earl of *Holland* were sent to the *Hague* to conclude the same. The Children of Recusants he recall'd by Proclamation out of Seminaries and Popish Schools, so he did his Subjects from Foreign Service; and to get Supplies, he writ Letters to each of the Lords-Lieutenants of the Counties, importing, That it had been usual for the Princes of this Realm to borrow Money of their Subjects to supply the publick Occasions: Desired they would make Collections of as many Persons Names within each County, as were able to furnish him, and to return in a Book their Names, Dwellings, and the Sums he thought they could spare; that Privy-Seals might be directed to them; and that he should advise with his Deputy-Lieutenants therein; but not to deal with any Nobleman or Clergy-man. The Collectors of this Loan were appointed to pay it into the *Exchequer*, and to return the Names of the Refusers.

*Cadiz* Ex-  
pedition.

Amidst these Preparations for War, the Privy-Council issued out Orders for disarming Popish Recusants, declaring their Boldness and Impudence in being offended with the Satisfaction his Majesty gave both Houses of Parliament in the Letters under the Privy-Seal to particular Persons for a Loan, promising Repayment within 18 Months. We shall not repeat them, and but just to mention the Orders now given for disarming of Recusants, we come to the *Cadiz* Expedition, in Viscount *Wimbleton* was general of the Land Forces, and the Earl of *Essex* was Vice Admiral of Navy. The Fleet, with the Addition of some *Dutch* Vessels, consisted of 80 Sail of stout Ships, which being dispersed by a Storm, met again at the Southward Cape, where they entred into Consultation what they should attempt. The Earl of *Essex*, out of a great Desire to equal the Glory which his Father gain'd at *Cadiz*, propos'd attacking the *Spanish* Fleet which lay in that Harbour; but there was so many Difficulties in the Enter-



terprize, and so long a Time spent in the Debate, that Spain was alarmed, and had prepared for their Defence, so that when it was concluded they should sail to *Cadix*, they landed their Men there with great Danger and Opposition. The first Place they attempted was *Puntal* Castle, under the Protection of which the Spanish Ships rode. Twenty English and Five Dutch Ships were ordered to assault it, but after they had spent 2000 Shot against it to little or no Purpose, they were forced to give it over. This not succeeding, *Wimbleton* sent Sir *John Burroughs* with a choice Regiment of Foot to attack the Fort on the Land side, who worsting a great Party of the Spaniards in Sight of the Castle, the Governour resigned it with Fifteen Barrels of Powder, and Eight Pieces of Ordnance. While this was doing, the Spaniards haul'd most of their best Ships under *Port Royal*; so that Sir *Samuel Argale*, who was sent to burn their Ships, was disappointed of his Purpose. From thence they sail'd to the Southward Cape, where they waited Twenty Days in Expectation of the Plate Fleet; but by the Inclemency of the Air, and the Intemperance of the Soldiers and Seamen, so great a Contagion happened in the Fleet, that they had scarce Men enough to Hand their Sails, which forced the Admiral to return Four Days before the Plate Fleet came in. This ill success displeased the King, but though many were blamed, none were punished for their Male Conduct.

*Puntal*  
Castle taken.

The Design thus miscarrying, tho' no Body was punished for it: However a Commission was issued out in *Michaelmas* Term for executing the Laws against Recusants, this with the Pricking Sir *Edward Coke*; and other Gentlemen, Sheriffs, who had appeared in Parliament against the Duke, and could not be chosen when Sheriffs, gave hopes of a new Parliament: But Sir *Edward* having taken Exceptions to Four Articles of the Oath usually taken by Sheriffs, and the Judges having reported that they found no cause to Alter the said Oath, save only in one of the said Articles hereafter mentioned: Their Lordships ordered, according to the unanimous Advice of all the Judges, and his Majesty's Pleasure signified therein, That the Article for destroying and

Sir *Edw.*  
*Coke's* Ex-  
ceptions  
to the  
Sheriff's  
Oath.

ma-

1625. making no cease all Heresies and Errors, called *Lollards*, and for assisting, helping, favouring, and maintaining all Ordinaries, and Commissioners of Holy Church, be left out of the Oath to be given to Sir *Edward Coke*, or any High-Sheriff thereafter ; but the said Three other Articles to stand.

Pursuant to the Resolutions already taken, we'll leave the King to call a Parliament to meet *Febr.* the next Year, and observe, that in *France*, after the Conclusion of the Peace with the *Hugonots*, there was no care taken for the Razing of *Fort Lewis*, which stood a Thousand Paces from *Rochel*, tho' they were indeed engaged to do it by one of the Articles of the Treaty of *Montpelier* ; wherefore the *Rochellers* having several Times represented the same to the King, and receiving no other Satisfaction than fair Words, instead of staying till the King was engaged in a War with *Spain*, as in all appearance he would suddenly be about the Affairs of the *Valtoline*, the *Spaniards* Designing to have a Passage to and Communication with *Germany* by that way, which was not the Interest either of the *Venetians*, *French* or any other Neighbouring Princes or States : And also instead of pressing him in that conjuncture, when Necessity would have obliged him to keep his Word with them, they would needs do themselves Justice ; and therefore they gave some Ships to *Soubize*, who went to Surprize Seven of the King's Ships in *Blavet*: He carried away Six of them; after which the *Rochellers* attempted to Besiege the Fort, which incommoded them ; but not having been able to take it readily, they gave over that Enterprize. Soon after *Soubize* seized the Isle of *Oleron*, where he built Three Forts to keep it for his Party : From thence he pretended to keep all the Neighbouring Forts in Awe, while those of *Rochel* over-ran all the Neighbourhood, in spite of *Thoiras* and the other Commanders in those Parts. *Soubize*, on the other hand, proving unsuccessful in his Descent on the Coast of *Olonne*, was more fortunate on the Banks of the *Garonne*, where he over-ran all about *Bordeaux*, and by the means of his Fleet hindred all Things from coming thither by Sea: He master'd the Castle of *Chastillon*, but was forced to quit it by *Thoiras* ; and a little after a furious Storm having much damnified his





his Fleet, he was forced to go and refit. In the Higher and Lower *Languedoc*, *Roan* had made a great many take up Arms to defend themselves against the daily Encroachments on their Privileges, notwithstanding the reiterated Promises of the King, and his Declaration of the 25th of *January*, whereby he declar'd *Roan* and *Soubize* Rebels, with their Adherents; but took into his Protection those that continued quiet at home under the Benefit of his Edicts. *Roan* having withdrawn himself to *Castres*, from whence he sent his Orders into all Parts, the Parliament of *Toulouse* enacted, That all the Jurisdiction Secular and Ecclesiastical, Sub-treasuries, and all Receipts should be transferr'd from thence to *Lantrec*. *Themines* and *Espernon* commanded Two little Armies against *Roan*: The second of them attempted to block up *Montauban* with Four Forts, often beat the Garrison and the Inhabitants, and took their Movables from them; while the other took *Bonail*, *St. Paul*, *Laurac*, and divers other Places. Besides, he beat *Roan*, block'd him up in *Vienne* with the Troops he had brought from *Severnes*, and constrain'd him to retire by Night. The same Duke also failing to take the Castle of *Sommiers*, these and other Disadvantages obliged him and his Brother to send Deputies to Court to make their Peace.

But tho' the *French* were embarrass'd at this time with the Affairs of *Italy*, and more particularly of *Genova*, on which the Duke of *Savoy*, assisted by a Body of their Troops, under the Constable, had form'd a Design, wherein they were oppos'd by the *Spaniards* at last with good Success; yet so violent was the Cardinal against the Reformed, that he represented to the King, he could not undertake any thing considerable abroad, till he had first ruined that Party at home: But there being a Necessity of treating with them at this Conjunction, the principal Articles agreed on were, That Articles Fort *Louis* should remain entire Six Months after the of Peace Treaty, and then be demolish'd; That the *Hugonots* in *France* should yet for Three Years enjoy the Places of Security remaining to them; That the Building of some Forts begun about *Montauban* should cease; That a Sum of Money should be given to *Roan* and *Soubize*, for all their Pretensions, on Condition that this last

1625. should restore the Six Vessels taken from the King at the Beginning of the Year. They so much desired the Conclusion of this Treaty, that they would not retard it farther, tho' they had an Account but Two Days before the Signing of it, that the *Rochellers* had set Fire to some of the King's Ships, burnt the Vice-Admiral of *Holland*, and sunk Three of their Vessels. And here we are to observe, that there being a Kind of a Truce while the Treaty was on Foot, this Action of the *Rochellers*, especially against the *Dutch* Ships, was generally disapproved. It was wonder'd the States, who were of the same Religion with the *Rochellers*, and whose true Interest it was to preserve that City, should send a Squadron to the King to reduce it; but mercenary Ends prevail'd with them, which was, to keep their Alliance with *France*, for which they were to have 600000 Crowns Yearly, as long as they carried on the War with the *Spaniards*. Indeed it has been alleged that their Admiral *Houtstein*, tho' he had Orders to assist the King's Army to reduce *Soubize* to Obedience, did underhand make an Agreement with the *Rochellers* to observe a kind of Neutrality between them, in reciprocally doing each others as little hurt as they could; but the *Rochellers* believing they could burn all the King's Fleet and hinder them from making use of the *Dutch* Ships against them, broke their Word, and did the Damage just spoken of.

If the *Dutch* were to be blamed for giving assistance to the *French* King upon such an Occasion, what shall we say of the *English*, who under the Ministry of *Buckingham* lent them the Seven great Ships aforementioned? And with the *French* and *Dutch* making in all Sixty Sail, the *Rochellers* were no way able to resist them. *Montmerancy* Admiral of *France* had the chief Command; but before they put to Sea, *Thoiras*, Governor of *Fort Louis*, had formed a Design to attack the Isle of *Rbee*, and having obtained about 1700 Men, Six Barks, and about 50 Horse, he purpos'd to follow the Fleet, and make his Descent, while the *Rochellers* should be busie in their own Defence against the grand Fleet, which set Sail from the Road of *Olonne* on the 15th of *September* towards the Road of *St. Martins* in the Isle of *Rbee*, where the *Rochellers* Fleet

Fleet lay, consisting only of 28 Ships, who having no Appearance of being able to engage 60, retired presently to the *Fosse de l'Oze*. On the same Day *St. Luc*, who had the general Command of the Land-Troops, and *Thoiras*, made their Descent upon the Island under the Favour of some Vollies of Cannon by some Gallcons; to oppose whom, *Soubize* having 1200 Foot, 100 Horse, and 24 Pieces of Cannon, he discharged them several times; but for all that they march'd on, and he was soon routed, with the Loss of all his Cannon. However, next Morning as they advanced towards *St. Martins*, he came again to meet them with about 3500 Men, and Four Pieces of Cannon; but the Militia of *Rochel*, disheartned with their Defeat the Day before, and, perhaps, ill conducted, could not stand before the King's Forces: Wherefore *Soubize* seeing them routed, fled in a Challop to the Isle of *St. Mary*, then to *Oleron*, and afterwards to *England*; so that *St. Martins* surrendering next Day upon Articles, they became Masters thereby of the whole Island with inconsiderable Loss.

*Rochellers*  
defeated.

While *St. Luc* and *Thoiras* did this, *Montmorency* beat the *Rochellers* Fleet several times, being forced to attend the Wind and Tide to come at them: He took Nine of their Ships, and very much damnified the rest, who retired to *Oleron*; but Three of the King's Ships having grappled one of theirs, she rather chose to blow up both herself and them, than be taken: Soon after which *Oleron* also submitted; so that the *Rochellers* now thought of nothing more than how to make their Peace with the Court. The Pope's Legate was at *Paris* when the News of this Victory came thither; and tho' it did not trouble him to see the Hereticks brought down, yet he perceived with Regret, that now the Court was out of that Trouble, it would every Day grow more firm in the Affair of the *Valtoline*, about which the Pope, French and Spaniards could not agree. But as soon as ever the Legate was gone, who departed in Discontent, an Assembly of Notables was summon'd at *Fontainbleau*, in Assembly Presence of the King, Queen-Mother and Duke of *Orleans*: The same consisted of Four Cardinals, the tables, Archbishops, Bishops and Deputies of the Clergy;

1625.



the Dukes of *Nemours*, *Longueville* and *Chevreuse* of the Privy-Council; the Secretaries of State, Superintendants and Intendants of the Finances; the Presidents and Officers of the Parliament of *Paris*; the *Mareschals de Bassompierre*, *de Schomberg*, *Aubeterre*, and other Officers of the Crown, convoked by the King's express Orders. *Richlieu* had contrived this Assembly to discharge upon those that composed it the Hatred which his Envyers had endeavoured to draw upon him, under Pretence, that he had advised the King to unite himself with divers Protestant Princes against the House of *Austria*. They particularly accused him with giving Peace to the *Hugonots*, and protecting the *Calvinist Grisons* against the Catholick Inhabitants of the *Valtoline*, with which the Pope himself was offended: But what was that in Competition with the Good of the State? The King being set, told the Assembly, That the Chancellor should tell them the Reason why he had call'd them thgether; who thereupon taking the Word, began with the Alliances and Treaties the Crown had made with the *Grisons*, and afterwards inform'd them of what had pass'd in respect to the *Valtoline*, and the Propositions the Pope's Legate had made, referring the more particular Circumstances to what the *Mareschal Schomberg* should say: He then fell upon the Departure of the Legate, who had given several Marks of his Discontent, tho' so well us'd by the Government. In fine, he enlarged to demonstrate the Falsity of that Proposition which some *Italian* Divines had maintain'd, That it was not lawful for Catholicks to restore Lands to Hereticks, by drawing from thence pernicious Consequences which might arise in respect to Temporal Princes. *Schomberg* then took up the Matter, and proceeded more to declare his own Opinion, than to expound the Affairs then in Agitation: He complain'd of the Negotiations of the Legate, and other Ministers of the Church of *Rome*, who had only spoken of the Restitution of the Forts of the *Valtoline*, and at last had yet left it undetermined. He added also, That they would not at all declare whether they had Power from the *Spaniards* to treat in their Name, or not: That being press'd thereunto, they said, they had in their Hands wherewith to sa-

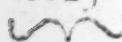
tisfie



tishe the King; and in the Sum of the Account they said, That they had not any Power in Behalf of the *Spaniards*: That at other Times they said *Bormio* might be surrendred by the *Grisons*, and that at present they would not leave them any Marks of Sovereignty. In short, his Opinion was, That the Proposals of the Church of *Rome* were to be rejected. The Queen-Mother thereupon said some Things in Praise of the Legate, as being well inclin'd to *France*. After which there was so long a Silence, that the Chancellor was obliged to say, That if there were any one in the Assembly who had any good Counsel to give about the Matters in Debate, the King permitted him to do it. The Cardinal of *Sourdis* said, He saw no better Expedient to accommodate the Difference between the Two Crowns, than a Suspension of Arms; That an honourable Peace was best for them; but in case that could not be had, they were to obtain their Right by Arms. In fine, his Opinion was for Peace, such as the Pope desired, by remitting the *Valtoline* to him. *Richlieu* being disturb'd herewith, tho' he had no Thoughts of saying any thing that Day, yet he drew near, and by his Gestures shew'd he disapproved of his Opinion, and particularly of the Suspension of Arms; and as soon as *Sourdis* had done speaking, he took the Word, and said, That tho' his Profession rendred him partial, since the Transaction was, whether War or Peace; yet the King's Reputation obliged him to speak his Mind freely: Then he praised Peace, and one would have thought by his Beginning, that his Intentions were the same as the other Cardinal's; but his Conclusion was quite the contrary, That he saw not how the King could honourably make a Peace in the present Conjunction: That the Duty of a King, and the Title of Most Christian were not incompatible, and ought not to be separated; That as by his Quality of Most Christian, the King ought to have a care of the Catholick Religion, and those who made Profession of it in the *Valtoline*; so in his Quality of King he ought not to neglect his Reputation, the Interest of his Dominions and his Allies, nor regard it as a Thing indifferent, to be considered as a Prince without Honour, Power and Faith; That to get off with Honour, he must resolve on a long War,

Debates  
of the As-  
sembly.

1625.



and that way preserve to *France* the Passage by the *Valtoline*, and to the *Grisons* their Sovereignty; That if *France* abandon'd her Allies, she'd not find in the Sequel any Support from her Neighbours, who would be sure to unite themselves with *Spain*; but so long as the Neighbouring Potentates should behold the King full of Constancy and Courage, they would presently be for him, and never forsake him; That Honour was the true Patrimony of Kings, and that his Majesty ought to hazard all for the preserving of it; That the Treasury was in a good Condition; That the Affairs of *Spain* began to grow worse in *Italy*, and that their Army was extremely diminish'd; That the Victory the King had obtain'd over the *Rebellers* assured the Tranquility of the Kingdom; and at last he concluded, That if every Body was of his Mind, and the Majority of Votes conformable to his, that a Courier should be dispatch'd to the Legate, to let him know, the Assembly was of the same Sentiments with the Cabinet Council. Cardinal *de la Vallette* seem'd to be of *Richlieu's* Side, and no Body else opposing, Couriers were sent not only to the Pope and Legate, but also to the Ambassadors of the Crown, to inform them of what had pass'd.

Affairs of  
the *Valto-*  
*line*.

For the better understanding of these Speeches, it should have been told before, that some of the Forts in the *Valtoline* were deposited in the Pope's Hands, which he seem'd to be loth to part with, and made Sollicitations in *France* and elsewhere accordingly, by proposing a general Cessation of Arms, &c. However, the War still went on, and *Papenheim*, who was at *Riva* with a German Regiment, attacking some French Troops, which *de Ceuvores* had put into *Verceil* and *Campo*, little Places about the Lake of *Como*, beat them, and took from them Twelve Pieces of Cannon, and also Eleven Barks which were upon the Lake. This News being come to Court, they believed the *Valtoline* to be lost; but *Papenheim* not having push'd on his Point, the *Venetians* sent Forces enough to *Ceuvores* to oppose him, with which Succour and some Troops that came from *France*, *Ceuvores* attack'd the *Spaniards* in some Posts, where they were re-trenched and barricadoed Two Days before, and paid them in the same Coin: So that the Affairs of

the

the *Valtoline* being in as good a Condition as before, the Negotiations were still pursued, tho' with but little Success, and *Bassompierre* was sent into *Switzerland*, to endeavour to keep the Cantons in the French Interest, which they began now to decline.

About the same time, the *Rochellers* sent their Deputies to Court to endeavour a Peace, but had much ado to get Audience of the King; and when they obtain'd Leave to prostrate themselves before him, he told them, *They had behaved themselves very ill and insolently towards him, but he would pardon them, and grant them the Conditions his Chancellor should tell them*, which were these that follow: 1. That the Council and Government of *Rochel* should be put into the Hands of those of the Body of the City, as it was in 1610. 2. That it should receive a Superintendant of Justice, to prevent the Differences and Partialities that might happen in the City, to administer Justice there, and settle Trade. 3. That all the Fortifications should be demolished, and the City reduced to its ancient Circuit, as it was in 1560. 4. That the King should be received there with the Respect due to him, whenever he should please to give them the Honour of a Visit. 5. That they should not keep in their Port any Men of War, and that all others appointed for Privateers or Merchandize should have the Admiral's Leave, as was practised in other Places of the Kingdom, and should not depart out of the Port before Eight Days Notice given to the Intendants of Justice. 6. That all Goods belonging to Ecclesiasticks should be restor'd, as well as the Carts, Horses and Merchandize of some Merchants of *Orleans*. 7. As for the Rest, it was the King's Pleasure, That the *Rochellers* should fully and peaceably enjoy all their Privileges of Freedom of Trade, and of the Edict of *Nantes*. The Deputies having received these Articles, carried them to *Recebel*, to advise what Answer should be returned thereto. In the mean time that City was kept block'd up as before, and *Themines* was named General of the Army; which oppos'd the Incursions of the *Rochellers*, who made divers vigorous Sallies and many Rencounters, wherein sometimes they, and sometimes the King's

Conditions proposed to the *Rochellers*.

1625.  
 Jars be-  
 tween  
 England  
 and France

People had the Better. But to leave the *Rochellers* for the Present, we are here to observe, that *Blainville* was about this time sent Ambassador extraordinary into *England*, to complain of the Breaches which King *Charles I.* had made in the Matrimonial Contract concluded in *France*, more particularly in favour of the *Papists*, which the *English* Protestants would by no means endure. *Soubize* who was now in *England*, was indeed not received at Court, yet the King durst not command him to depart the Kingdom for fear of disobliging his Protestants Subjects; but now upon the Remonstrances made, the King answered, That he thought he might receive Thanks from the French King, that he had not received him at Court, but only suffered his Ships not to be driven out of the Ports of *England*; That in Truth he thought not fit they should go out and make Courses on the French; but the Most Christian King would also do well to grant Peace to his Subjects, that he might be better enabled to act against his Enemies: That *Henry IV.* had given Refuge in France to the Earl of *Bothwel*, that had made an Attempt on the Person of his Father King *James*, and made this Excuse, That all the Kings of the World had a Right to give Sanctuary to whom they pleased. This *Blainville* owned in the Rigour of it; yet said, He ought to think also that France might one Day give him the same Vexation, and perhaps on more important Occasions; but if he would live amicably with the King his Brother-in-law, he would have many Things to say in contradiction to this Proceeding; yet if he took so much part as to the Person of *Soubize*, he would say no more of it, but he would not have the same in respect to the Ships, which for the most part belonged to the King or his Subjects, from whom *Soubize* had taken them, and therefore demanded a Restitution of them, or the King his Master would cause them to be taken wherever he found them. You must know that when *Buckingham* was in France to fetch the Queen over, he not only appeared with very great Splendor, but carried himself so at the French Court, that he could by no means accord with *Richlieu*, who gave him so many Mortifications, that he was resolved to resent it; and to his Advice some Authors attribute the Violation of the Marriage Articles already mentioned, and the Naval War with France in



Defence of the *Rochellers* : However it were, King *Charles* instead of giving Ear to the *French* Ambassador's Complaints, and Threats, remanded his Ships of the *French* King ; and they not restoring of them, he caused several of their Ships that were in the *English* Ports to be seized. In the mean time the *Rochellers* perceiving by the Conditions the Court offered them, that they intended to deprive them of their Privileges, and to put them out of Condition to resent it, sent Deputies to *London* to demand Succours, in case the War should break out, where they were kindly received, and in effect Orders were given to put part of the Fleet in a Readiness to sail.

I had rather pass over in Silence the concerted Design (already mention'd) of the *French* and *Savoyards* for the Overthrow of the Republick of *Genoua*, which the *Venetians* declined as an unjust and an inglorious Enterprize ; but all the Power and Artifice of the D. of *Savoy* and the Constable *Lesdeguieres* being not able to carry their Point, we shall quit these Parts, and pass through *Germany* into *Poland*. There, notwithstanding the Truce made last Year, King *Sigismund* would not listen to any Proposals of Peace, tho' he was advised by several to come to an Accommodation with King *Gustavus*. 'Twas propos'd, That the *Swedes* should give up *Livonia* to *Poland*, and that the *Poles* should quit *Esthonia* and the Province of *Finland*, to which King *Gustavus* had a particular Pretension, it being a Principality that fell to his Father ; That in case King *Gustavus* died without Male Issue (his Brother *Charles Philip* died the preceding Year) one of King *Sigismund's* Sons should succeed to the Crown of *Sweden* ; That in the mean time King *Sigismund* might use the Title of King of *Sweden*, but King *Gustavus* should have the real Title, and a peaceable Possession of the Kingdom. Notwithstanding this advantageous Proposal, King *Sigismund* would not comply ; but on the contrary, was much displeased with *Christopher Ladzevil*, General of the *Lithuanians*, who wish'd for an End of the War. King *Gustavus* observing, that King *Sigismund* sought all Occasions of surprizing the *Swedes*, and only mean'd to gain Time by short Truces, in order to compass his Ends, insisted upon having a perpetual Peace, or, at least,

1625.

An advantageous Proposal made to K. Sigismund.

1625. a longer Truce. In this he was more pressing, that he was inform'd, the States of *Poland* would not contribute any longer towards a War with *Sweden*. King *Sigismund* persisting in his Resolution, contrary to the Remonstrances of the States of *Poland*, and the Truce being almost expired, King *Gustavus* took the Field, in order to make himself Master of what the *Poles* still possess'd in *Livonia*. *Stanislaus Sapieha*, who had the Boldness to appear at the Head of 3000 Men to oppose the *Swedish* Army, was presently routed. Soon after, *Kahenbuisen*, *Derpt*, and several other Places of Importance in *Livonia*, surrender'd to his Majesty without making any great Opposition; for they expected no Succours from *Poland*. Afterwards *Gustavus* entering *Lithuania*, took *Birsen*, where he found Sixty Brass-Guns, which he caused to be transported to *Riga*. Upon which the *Lithuanians* exchanged *Landau* for that Place. In fine, the *Poles* kept nothing in *Livonia*, but *Dunburg*. Notwithstanding this great Progress, King *Gustavus* still solicited for a Peace, tho' in vain; and so at present we must leave him, and proceed to the King of *Denmark*, who being now brought into the War against the Emperor, he advanced with his Army towards the *Weſer*, and took *Minden* and *Hamelen*, from the Ramparts of the latter of which he fell, Horse and all, into the Ditch, which was 39 Foot deep, whereof he recover'd, after he had lain Speechless for Four Hours, but the Horse died. A few Days after he abandon'd these Two Places to Count *Tilly*, and retired towards *Ferdin*, to wait the Coming of the 12000 Men, which the States-General were to send him, under the Command of Count *Mansfield*. *Tilly*, nevertheless, following him close, at last attack'd him in the Rear, and kill'd above 300 of his Men, with several Great Officers, before he could be made to retreat. This Loss the King extreamly regretted, which, together with the ill Omen instill'd into the People upon his Majesty's late Fall, gave the *Germans* many Advantages over him, which *Tilly* endeavour'd to improve to the utmost, especially after that General *Wallenstein* had join'd him in the Dutchy of *Brunswick*.

The *Lithuanian*  
Army  
routed by  
the *Swedes*

Both these being thus join'd, so employ'd the *Dane*, and the other Confederate Princes, that they had not time to look towards the Emperor, who had thereby an Opportunity put into his Hands, to execute his Design, which he had long thought on, to procure his eldest Son the Crown of *Hungary*. For this Purpose, *Ferdinand* having already made sure of the chief Men in that Kingdom, set out from *Vienna* for *Edenbourg*, where the States of *Hungary* were at that time assembled; to whom he had no sooner propos'd his said Son, but he was elected and crown'd by the Name of *Ferdinand III.* The News of which not a little surpriz'd *Barthlem Gaber*, who for a long time had aspir'd to that Crown, he was so extremely enraged thereat, that he immediately resolv'd to revenge himself on all such as had hitherto flatter'd his Ambition in this particular. Hereupon having not long before engag'd in an Alliance with the King of *Denmark*, who was to furnish him with a considerable Number of Troops under the Command of Count *Mansfelt*, he prepared for a Third Invasion of *Hungary*, being to join the aforesaid Count in *Silesia*.

Hence let us make a Tour into the *Low-Countries*; *Spinola* thinking the Honour of his Army, and the Reputation of his Fame somewhat blemish'd by his Retreat from before *Bergen-op-Zoom*, from whence *Maurice* and *Mansfield* had forced him, even without Blows, to retrieve it, resolv'd on the Siege of *Breda*; but considering the Strength of the Place, Number of the Garrison, and the Resolution of *Justin* of *Nassau*, Prince *Maurice's* natural Brother, who was Governor, he chose rather to reduce it by Famine, and having so fortified his Camp, and secured his Convoys, that there was in a manner no disturbing of him in the Enterprize; *Maurice*, who seldom was reproach'd for neglecting Opportunities, having Notice *Antwerp* was at that time but slenderly garrison'd, attempted to surprize it; and having in a dark Night with Bridges prepared on Purpose, pass'd the Ditch and fixed his Ladders, his Men got up to the Ramparts, when unhappily one of the Ladders falling back upon its Bridge, gave the Alarm to the Castle, and made the Prince retire: However, *Breda* held out still, and some Measures were concerted still for the

1625.  
Prince  
Maurice's  
Death and  
Character

the Relief the Place; but the Death of the brave *Maurice*, which now happen'd, retarded and compos'd any farther Attempt. *Nani* says, Prince *Maurice* was a Person of the highest Renown, who, after the Death of his Father, being yet but a Strippling, was entrusted with the Command of the Armies of the States, in Opposition to those of *Spain*, under *Alexander Farnese*, Prince of *Parma*, the most excellent Captain of *Europe*, and became in the Art both of Offending and Defending with equal Valour and Wisdom the most famous Commander of his Age: He was succeeded in all his Charges by his Brother *Frederick Henry*, a Prince who for his Skill in Military Affairs (continues the same Author) held an eminent Place, and was perhaps, if you consider the Quality of his Undertakings, superior to his Brother, but certainly inferior in Merit; since he came to be at the Head of Affairs in the prosperous Times of the Republick, and when its Fortune was in its prime: However it were, the Change was certainly prejudicial in this Juncture; wherein *Breda*, after the Languishments of a Nine Months Siege, and no Succours appearing, was on the Ninth of *June* surrender'd upon honourable Terms.

*Spinola*  
takes  
*Breda*.

1626.

Lord-  
Keeper's  
Speech to  
the Par-  
liament.

Having thus shewn you how it went with the States, our Confederates, we'll now return to our Domestick Affairs again; the King finding himself under a Necessity of convening another Parliament, and the same meeting on the 6th of *Febr.* the King referr'd them to the Lord-Keeper, who told them; 'That if they rightly consider'd that incomparable Distance between the supream Height and Majesty of a mighty Monarch, and the submissive Awe and Lowliness of a loyal Subject, they could not but receive exceeding Contentment in the Constitution of this highest Court, wherein not only the Prelates, Nobles, and Grandees, but the Commons had their part, and that high Majesty did descend to admit the humblest of his Subjects to Conference and Council with him: That they ought to bless God, who had put the Power of assembling Parliaments in the Hands of him, whose Vertue strived with his Descent, whether he should be a greater King, or a better



'better Man : That before his Access to the Crown  
'he shewed his Love to Parliaments, and interceded  
'with his Father with happy success : That after he  
'was King, the first Thing he did was to call a Par-  
'liament ; and no sooner did the destroying Angel  
'forbear his deadly Strokes, but he resolv'd to recal  
'it ; and his Love had caus'd him so to do : That  
'considering the late spreading Mortality, and his  
'Majesty's pressing Occasions, wherein the Safety of  
'this Kingdom was so much concerned, the same  
'Affection that mov'd him to call this Parliament,  
'did forbid him to prolong the sitting of it : And as  
'his Majesty resolv'd to confine this Meeting in a  
'short Time, so he had confin'd him to a short Er-  
'rand, and that was That his Majesty had call'd  
'them together to consult and advise of provident and  
'good Laws, profitable for the Publick, and fit for  
'the present Times and Actions ; for upon such de-  
'pended the assurance of Religion and Justice : And  
'his Majesty succeeding so many Religious and Re-  
'nowned Princes, would begin his Reign with some  
'Additions to those good Laws which their happy  
'and glorious Times had afforded. His Majesty  
'therefore desired they would apply themselves there-  
'unto.

Sir *Heneage Finch* being chosen Speaker, the Com-  
mons quickly fell into Examination of the publick Grie-  
vances, the Miscarriage of the Fleet to *Cadiz*, vances ta-  
Evil Counsellors, Misemployment of the Revenue, an ken into  
Account of the Three Subsidies, and Three Fifteens, Conside-  
21 *Jac.* And the Whole was in the Committee of ration.  
Grievances reduc'd to Four Heads : 1. The State of  
the King's Revenue, what it was, what it is, and by  
what Means abated, *viz.* By Gifts of Lands *ex mero*  
*motu*, Pensions, Increase of the Household. fruitless  
Ambassages, treble Increase of the Privy-Purse, double  
Increase of the Treasury of the Chamber and great  
Wardrobe, and by not using the best Course of As-  
signments. 2. The Condition of the Subject, by  
Taxes, Impositions, Monopolies, waste of Treasure,  
Arrest of our Merchants Goods in *France* and *Germa-*  
*ny*, and the ill success of our Designs abroad ; whereas  
we were in former Times a Nation fear'd and victo-  
rious : When we made the *Netherlands* a State, re-  
cover'd

1626. cover'd *Henry* the 4th of *France* his Kingdom, conquer'd the invincible Navy in 1588. took Towns in *Portugal*, Fired or brought away the *Spanish* Navy before *Cadiz*, sack'd the Town, took the *Spanish* Ships daily, spoil'd the Port-Towns of the *West-Indies*, losing but one Ship during the *Spanish* War, and reduc'd that King to so low an ebb, that in one Year he paid 2500 Millions of Ducats for Interest. 3. The Causes of the good Success then, which were a Readiness to assist the Sovereign in Purse and Person, the Wisdom and Gravity of Counsel, nothing being determin'd but upon publick Debate, and with the Assistance of the ablest Military Persons by Land and Sea, and such only employ'd. 4. In what condition we now stand, by the loss of our Reputation, by the ill Successes in the Voyage for *Algiers*, in the *Palatinate*, in *Mansfield's* Expedition, and in that to *Cadiz*, which hath discourag'd us from venturing our Purse or Persons, when for want of such Courses and Counsels as formerly there is so little hope of Success. These and other Things were design'd to be offer'd to both Houses, that they might represent the same to the King, and the fittest Means might be found out for the Defence of the State and our Allies, Reformation of the Errors, and raising such Supplies as might enable his Majesty to proceed chearfully in his glorious Undertakings.

I shall but just mention that the Commons were about exhibiting Articles at this time against Mr. *Montague*, for endeavouring to reconcile *England* to *Rome*, and alienate the King's Affections from his Subjects; and tho' much press'd at this time for the Supplies, the Commons without considering that, fell upon the Publick Evils, and voted them to be, 1. Diminution of the King's Strength and Honour. 2. Papists countenanced. 3. The Seas unguarded. 4. Plurality of Offices. 5. Sales of Honour and Judicatures. 6. Delivery of Ships to *France*. 7. Misemployment of the last Subsidies: And of all this, they order'd *Buckingham* should have Notice: But the King disrelishing these Interruptions, writ a Letter to the Speaker, wherein he set forth, 'That he had often by himself, 'and by Messages, put that House in mind of his 'pressing Occasions. That he look'd for a speedy, 'full

The  
King's  
Letter  
to the  
Speaker.

‘ full, and perfect Answer what they would give for  
 ‘ his Supply ; wherein he expected no less than what  
 ‘ was answerable to the Occasion : Promised, that  
 ‘ when they had satisfied this his reasonable Demand,  
 ‘ he would continue them now as long as the Season  
 ‘ would permit, and shortly call them together again ;  
 ‘ and should now willingly remedy any just Grievances  
 ‘ which they should present to him in a dutiful and  
 ‘ mannerly way, without throwing an ill Odour up-  
 ‘ on his or his Father’s Government. That he should  
 ‘ think him the Wisest among them, who without re-  
 ‘ flecting backward, could counsel him how to pro-  
 ‘ vide for the Kingdom’s future Safety and Honour.

Having at the same time sent a Message by Sir Ri-  
 chard Weston. 1. ‘ That the Fleet must be paid off, or a  
 ‘ Mutiny would follow. 2. That Forty Ships were  
 ‘ ready to be set forth, which wanted only Victuals,  
 ‘ and some Men. 3. The Army appointed in every  
 ‘ Coast must have Victuals and Cloaths. 4. The  
 ‘ Companies in *Ireland* must be provided for. 5. This  
 ‘ was the Season of providing Victuals. His Majesty  
 ‘ therefore desired to know what Supply they would  
 ‘ give him for these Occasions.

Sir Richard  
 Weston’s  
 Message.

Hereupon the Commons return’d Answer, ‘ That  
 ‘ no King was ever dearer to his People than his Ma-  
 ‘ jesty, nor any People more zealous to maintain and  
 ‘ advance the Honour and Greatness of their King,  
 ‘ which they should manifest, as upon all Occasions,  
 ‘ so especially in the Support of that Cause, wherein  
 ‘ he and his Allies were engaged. And because they  
 ‘ could not doubt but that his Majesty would accept  
 ‘ the faithful and necessary Information and Advice  
 ‘ of his Parliament in discovering the Causes, and  
 ‘ proposing the Remedies of those great Evils which  
 ‘ had occasion’d his Majesty’s Wants, and his Peoples  
 ‘ Grief: They did in Confidence of Redress therein  
 ‘ propose, that they really intended to assist and sup-  
 ‘ ply his Majesty in such a Way, and in so ample a  
 ‘ Measure as might make him safe at Home, and  
 ‘ feared Abroad, and herein they would use all Di-  
 ‘ ligence.

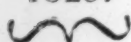
The  
 Commons  
 Answer.

His Majesty reply’d to this, ‘ That he took their  
 ‘ Answer to be full and satisfactory, and thanked them  
 ‘ for it, and hoped they would with all Expedition

The  
 King’s  
 Answer.

per-

1626.



perform it. That he took their Clause for presenting Grievances for a Parenthesis ; but he would not have any of his Servants questioned amongst them, especially those near him. That he saw they aimed at *Buckingham* ; wondered what had so altered their Affections towards him since his Father's last Parliament, when he was an Instrument to break the Treaties, and they so much honoured and respected him : Assured them he hath done nothing but by his (the King's) special Directions, and as his Servant. Then bid them hasten his Supply.

Dr. Turner's Queries against the Duke.

Notwithstanding this, the Commons fell upon the Duke, and Dr. *Turner* a Physician offered in the House Six Queries grounded upon Common Fame, concerning. 1. The Loss of the King's Royalty at Sea. 2. Impoverishing the Crown by exorbitant Gifts. 3. Multiplicity of Offices in one Person. 4. Increase of Recusants. 5. Sale of Honours and Offices. 6. Ill Success of the last Expedition.

Another Message from the King.

The House, after some Debate, having at length resolved, That Common Fame was a good Ground for Proceeding, the King sent them another Message, That he had taken Notice of a seditious Speech of Mr. *Clement Cook* in that House ; That it were better to die by an Enemy, than to suffer at Home. Since which Dr. *Turner*, without any Knowledge in himself, or Proof tendred to the House, hath made an Enquiry of Articles against the Duke of *Buckingham*, as pretended, but, indeed, against the Honour and Government of him and his Father ; an Example not to be suffer'd. He wonder'd at the Impudence of any Man, who thought he could be drawn to offer up such a Sacrifice : Desired the Justice of the House against the Delinquents, that so he might not be constrain'd to use his Regal Authority to right himself.

Three Subsidies and 3 Fifteens voted.

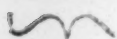
This produced but little Effect : However, they now consider'd the King's Necessities, and voted him Three Subsidies, and Three Fifteenths, but the Bill to be brought in as soon only, and as Grievances were presented to, and answered by the King ; and again resumed the Debate concerning the Duke, and ordered him to have Notice. Upon which the King sent for them to attend him at *White-Hall* the Morrow after,



after, and in the mean time their Proceedings to cease, and told the Lords and them, He had sent for them thither for distinct Reasons; the Upper House to give them Thanks for their Care of the State of the Kingdom, and for inciting the Commons thereunto; That he was come there to shew the House of Commons their Unparliamentary Proceedings; and for that he referr'd to the Lord-Keeper, who told them, 'That the Errand he was to deliver had Relation only to the House of Commons; That never King was more loving to his Subjects, or better affection'd to the right Use of Parliaments, than his Majesty had approved himself by his long Patience, and calm and mild Directions from time to time given them, when the irregular Humours of some particular Persons wrought Diversions and Distractions there: And his Majesty assured them, that when he had received Satisfaction of his reasonable Demands, he would hear and answer their just Grievances; That on the other hand, never King was more jealous of his Honour, nor more sensible of the Neglect and Contempt of his Royal Rights, which he would not suffer to be violated by any pretended Colour of Parliamentary Liberty; That he would now shew them some Proceedings whereat his Majesty found himself aggrieved: 1. That they never censured or corrected Mr. Cook for his seditious Speech, tho' his Majesty by Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer requir'd Justice of them. 2. Notwithstanding his Majesty's aforesaid Message concerning Dr. Turner, they had been so far from correcting the Insolence of Turner, that their Committees had walk'd in the same Steps, and proceeded in an Unparliamentary Inquisition, whereof they had made Fame the Ground-work; That his Majesty upon every Occasion found the Honour of his Father and himself stain'd and blemish'd, and a Forwardness in them to pluck out of his Bosom those whom he had Cause to affect. Concerning Buckingham his Majesty said, That he himself better than any Man living knew his Sincerity and Discretion, his Enemies, the Hazards of both Person and Estate he had undergone, and his Forwardness in the Service of that House, and therefore he believed the Aim

Lord-Keeper's Speech to the Commons.

1626.



' was not at the Duke, but to wound the Honour and  
 ' Judgment of himself and his Father; That his Ma-  
 ' jesty expressly commanded them to cease that Un-  
 ' parliamentary Inquisition, and commit into his  
 ' Majesty's Care, Wisdom and Justice, the future Re-  
 ' formation of Things: And before the End of that  
 ' Session he would give them ample Satisfaction:  
 ' That they had suffered the greatest Council of State  
 ' to be censured in their House; Foreign Business  
 ' had been entertain'd there; his Council, Govern-  
 ' ment and Servants parallell'd with the Times of  
 ' of most Exception. Their Committees had exa-  
 ' mined the Secretaries Letters, nay, his own, and  
 ' commanded his Officers to shew not only Records,  
 ' but their Books and private Notes; Things as un-  
 ' sufferable, as in former Times unusual. As to the  
 ' Three Subsidies and Three Fifteens they had a-  
 ' greed to give, they had been made acquainted with  
 ' the Enemies strong Preparations, and the Importance  
 ' of upholding his Majesty's Allies, securing *England*  
 ' and *Ireland*, and annoying the Enemy by a Fleet at  
 ' Sea, and the Charge of all: And they professed  
 ' their carefulness to support the Cause, and their In-  
 ' tentions so to Supply him as to make him safe at  
 ' home, and feared abroad; and that they would use  
 ' all Diligence therein: And yet in Two Days only  
 ' of Twelve this Business had been thought of, while  
 ' they proceeded with their Inquisition Day by Day.  
 ' That the Supply intended was so small, that it ex-  
 ' posed his Majesty to Danger and Disesteem, for his  
 ' Allies must disband and leave him to the Fury of the  
 ' Enemy: That the Manner of the Supply was  
 ' Dishonourable and distrustful, a Condition in effect  
 ' being annex'd to it, for the Bill was not to come into  
 ' the House till their Grievances were presented and  
 ' answer'd: That his Majesty commanded them by  
 ' *Saturday* next to return their final Answer, what fur-  
 ' ther Supply they would add, and that without con-  
 ' dition directly or indirectly; which if they did not  
 ' by that time, his Majesty could not promise them to  
 ' sit longer together: But herein his Majesty expected  
 ' their chearful Obedience: That his Majesty knew  
 ' there were many wise well temper'd and well affect-  
 ' ed Men among them, and the willingly Faulty not  
 ' many;

'many ; and for the rest he Hoped after this gracious  
'Admonition they wou'd follow the Better sort ; and  
'if so, he would forget what was past.

The King  
proceeds.

Then his Majesty spake again, That they perswad-  
ed his Father and him to break off the Treaties, and  
then no Man so much in favour with them as that  
Man whom they seem'd to touch, but 'twas indeed  
his and his Father's Government : That now he was  
so engaged, that they thought there was no retreat,  
they begin to set the Dice, and make their own  
Game ; but this was not the Way to deal with a  
King. He repeated what Mr. Cook said, but added,  
It was more Honour for a King to be destroy'd by a  
Foreign Enemy, than to be despis'd by his own Sub-  
jects. He bid them remember that Parliaments were  
altogether in his Power for their Calling, Sitting and  
Dissolution ; and as he found the Fruits of them good  
or evil, were to continue or not to be.

Having said this, but afterwards apprehending, lest  
some Things in his and the Lord-Keeper's Speeches  
might be misunderstood, he commanded the Duke at  
a Conference of both Houses, thus to explain them.  
'That it being objected, that to prefix a Day to give  
or to break was unusual, and seemed to express an  
Inclination in the King to break : His Majesty saith  
he was free from such thoughts ; and he would not  
tie them to a Day : That the King had Agents here  
from Foreign Princes, and the King of Denmark had  
sent an Ambassador to perfect the Contract at the  
*Hague*, and those Things made him press for a Time.  
His Majesty now gives longer time : But if the King  
should accept of a less Sum than would suffice,  
it would deceive their Expectations, and disappoint  
his Allies : That while we delayed, others abroad  
would take advantage of it, as the King of *Spain* had  
done by concluding a Peace in *Italy* : That by giving  
liberally they should carry the War to the Enemies  
Door, and keep Peace at Home. Touching Grie-  
vances he was commanded to tell them, his Majesty  
meant not to interrupt their Proceedings, but hoped  
they would go in the ancient Ways of their Predeces-  
sors, to redress Faults, not to seek them : That he in-  
tended to elect a Committee of both Houses, who  
should take the view of his Estate, the Defects where-

The Duke  
explains  
the King's  
and Lord-  
Keeper's  
Speeches.

1626. of were not fit for the Eyes of a Multitude : That the Supply propos'd was so little, that it would bring the King to a worse Estate than now he was in : His Majesty therefore wished them to enlarge it, but left the Augmentation to themselves.

He speaks  
on behalf  
of himself.

The Duke then made an Address to the following purpose in his own behalf : That it had been his study to keep a good Correspondence between the King and his People ; that it lay in their Hands to make him happy or not, and he wished his Heart and Actions were known to them all : When he had waited on his Master into *Spain*, it was well known what Testimony he gave of his Religion ; and if he had had any ill Inclination, he had Offers in *Spain* which might have tempted him : If he would have been converted, he might have had the *Infanta* to have put in his Master's Bed : And if his Discontent should have arisen there, he might have had an Army to have come along with him : That the last Year's Preparations for the War were out of Necessity ; for his Majesty had good Intelligence that the King of *Spain's* Eye was maliciously bent this Way : That the Lord *Conway* could tell them, That nothing was carried on for the Setting out the Fleets by single Councils ; nor did he in all those Actions go with single Councils, but was an obedient Servant and Minister to the Resolutions taken, tho' he confessed they were not always such as could have been wished : That he advised the King when at *Oxford* to have his Council with him in the Country : That he diligently waited on them, and the Council of *Woodstock* generally advised the going out of the Fleet ; and that the Season was fit appear'd, for that they all arriv'd in safety. It was objected the Provisions were not good, but Experience shewed the Contrary : That if the Success were not as could have been wished, he hoped he should not be blam'd, being not there in Person, altho' he made earnest suit for it ; but his Master thought his Service more useful in the *Low Countries* : However it had these good Effects, it put the Enemy to great Charge in fortifying his Coasts ; we took so many Ships as caus'd his Merchants to break, and they could carry no Treasure to pay their Army in *Flanders*. From *Oxford* the Council went to *Southampton*, there



a League Offensive and Defensive between Us and the States was resolv'd on, they being of our own Religion, and their Situation so useful to us, that it was Policy in us to relieve them when in Distress: And it was agreed, That they should contribute the Fourth Part of the Charge of the War at Sea. That his Majesty then sent him into the *Low-Countries* to get such a League with other Princes as he could. Now he had discover'd there, that a League Offensive and Defensive would be refused by *France* and *Denmark*, he was shy to enter into such a League against *Spain*, and therefore was forced to conclude the League in general Terms for restoring the Liberty of *Germany*, without naming the King of *Spain*, or the Emperor, that other Princes might come in: And to lessen our Charge in the *Low-Countries*, the Land Assistance given them was to cease Six Months hence. And it was agreed with *Denmark*, That if the King of *England* should make a Diversion with his Forces equal to his Contribution, that Charge should cease: And if *France* might be drawn in, of which there was great Hopes, our Charge would be eased that Way: But all was in the discreet Taking of the Time, lest the King of *Denmark* accepted of those fair Conditions offer'd him, and the Enemy fall upon the *Elbe* and *East-Friseland*, and ruin the *Low Countries*: That if in any of these Employments his Errors might be shew'd him, he should take him for his best Friend that did it: That he had never had any End of his own, as might appear by the Expence of his own Estate; his Journies into *Spain* and the *Low Countries* were all at his own Charge. That since the War begun with *Spain*, he had had Twelve Ships on the Coasts, and Allowance but for Four. He was first perswaded by Sir *Robert Mansel* to take the Office of Admiral: He brought the Yearly Charge of 54000 *l.* to 30000 *l. per Annum*, and built Two Ships every Year out of it; and when sufficient were built, he brought the Charge to 21000 *l. per Annum*: That there were now Twelve Ships victualled for Two Months, Thirty more at *Plimouth* victualled for Six Months, and Ten more ready so soon as victualled, and Twenty more to come from the *Low-Countries*: He desired them not to follow the Examples of *Gondamar*

1626. and *Innesa*, who would have had his Head, when the Parliament thought him worthy of a Salute: That his Errors were not Wilfulness, Corruption, Oppression or Injustice; and minds them again of the Supply, and intreated their charitable Opinion of him and his Actions.

The Duke in this Speech having appeal'd to the Lord *Conway*; that Lord, after having vindicated him, gave them likewise a List of the Subsidy-Money paid for the Four Regiments of the *Low-Countries*; for the Navy, for the Office of the Ordnance and Forts in *England*; for the Forts in *Ireland*, and for the Service under Count *Minsfeld*; for Provision of Arms, and Transporting of Soldiers: The several Sums amounting in all to 278497 *l.* 4 *s.* 11 *d.* besides 4973. for Ammunition for the Forts and Castles, and 10650 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* for Repairing them.

The Earl of *Bristol* had continued under Restraint, and had been debarr'd of Access to his Majesty ever since his Return out of *Spain*; but having at length obtain'd his Writ of Summons to Parliament, yet at the same time receiving a Letter from the Lord-Keeper; That his Majesty's Meaning was not to discharge any former Directions for Restraint of his coming hither, but that he should continue under the same Restriction as he did before, so as his personal Attendance was to be forborn: The Earl writing a Letter of Complaint hereupon to the House of Lords; the King to divert the Effects of it, sent a Message to them, That he had heard of an undutiful and disrespectful Petition of the Earl of *Bristol* to that House. Thanks them for their dutiful and respectful Proceedings therein: That his Pleasure was, That the Earl be sent for by them, as a Delinquent, to answer his Offences in his Negotiations before and after his Majesty's being in *Spain*, and his scandalizing the Duke of *Buckingham*, and his Majesty by Reflection without whose Directions the Duke did nothing; and that his Majesty would cause him to be charged before their Lordships.

The 1st of *May* the Earl being brought to the Bar of the House of Lords, and charged by the Attorney-General, Sir *Robert Heath*, with High-Treason, and other Offences. The Articles were thus digested:

1. Offences before his Majesty's going to *Spain*. (1.) That the said Earl of *Bristol* being in the Year 1621, 22, and 23. imploy'd by the late King *James* as his Ambassador to the then and now Emperor and King of *Spain*, for restoring the Dominions and Possessions of the Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, who married the only Daughter of the said late King, which were then possessed by the Armies of the said Emperor and King of *Spain*, and for preserving the Rest then under the Protection of the said late King; and also to treat with the said King of *Spain*, for a Marriage between his now Majesty, then Prince of *Wales*, and the *Infanta Doña Maria*, Sister of the said King of *Spain*: He the said Earl, to advance the King of *Spain*'s Designs, falsely and traitorously assured King *James*, that the Emperor and the King of *Spain* would restore the Count *Palatine* and his Children to the said Dominions and Possessions, and to the Electoral Dignity: And that the King of *Spain* did really intend the said Marriage, according to Articles then propounded, whereas neither Restitution or Marriage was ever really intended. By which false Assurances King *James* lost his Opportunity, and the Count *Palatine* his Dominions, Possessions, and Electoral Dignity: And he, and the Lady *Elizabeth* his Wife and their Children are bereaved thereof. (2.) That the said Earl, notwithstanding he had received from King *James* plain and particular Instructions and Directions to press the King of *Spain* to a speedy and punctual Answer touching the Treaties aforesaid, yet falsely and traitorously continued those Treaties upon Generalities, and so intended to have continued them, without reducing them to Certainties and direct Conclusions. (3.) That the said Earl, to discharge King *James* from entering into Hostility with the King of *Spain*, for the Hindering him and his Forces from attempting the invasions of the Dominions of his said late Majesty and his Allies (the King of *Spain* thirsting after an Universal Monarchy) did, by Words and Letters to King *James* and his Ministers, extol and magnifie the Greatness and Power of the King of *Spain*, and represented to him the supposed Dangers which would ensue by a War; and insinuated to him, that he must then expect during the Rest of his Life,

1626.  
Articles  
against  
*Bristol*.

1626.

neither to Hunt nor Hawk, nor eat his Meat in Quiet: Whereby the said Earl did cunningly and traitorously endeavour to retard the Resolutions of his said late Majesty, to declare himself an Enemy to the King of *Spain*, who under colour of Treaties had so much abused him. (4.) That the said Earl having, before his going into *Spain*, communication with some Persons in *London* about his said Ambassage; and being told there was little probability that those Treaties could have any good Success, the said Earl acknowledged as much, but said, he cared not what the Success would be, for he would take care to have his Instructions, and to pursue them punctually; and howsoever the Business went, he would make his Fortune thereby; by which it appears he intended his own Ends, and not the Service or Honour of his late Majesty. (5.) That the Earl throughout his whole Negotiation intended and resolv'd, that if the said Marriage should be effected, the Popish Religion and Professors thereof should be advanced within his Majesty's Dominions, and the true Religion and Professors thereof discouraged and discountenanc'd: And by Letters often counselled his late Majesty to set the Jesuits and Priests at liberty, and to grant the Papists a free Toleration. (6.) That by the false Informations and Assurances given by the said Earl concerning the said Treaties, their late and now Majesties being put in hopes, and yet by the long Delay used therein, justly suspecting there was no such sincerity used as they expected, his now Majesty was forced to undertake his dangerous Journey into *Spain* to conclude the Treaties, or discover that there were no real Intentions on the Emperor's and King of *Spain*'s part: By which Journey the Person of his now Majesty did undergo such apparent Danger, as at the remembrance thereof the Hearts of all good Subjects tremble.

2. Offences during his Majesty's stay in *Spain*. (7.) That the said Earl at the coming of his Majesty, then Prince, into *Spain*, cunningly and traitorously mov'd him to change his Religion, telling him, All the talk there was that he came for that purpose; cunningly adding, That he would not perswade him to it, nor would promise to follow his Example; but if he would  
trust



trust him with so great a Secret, he would endeavour to carry it the discreetest way he could; whereas it had been the Duty of a faithful Servant, if he had found the Prince staggering, to have endeavour'd to prevent so great an Error. (8.) That he falsely and traitorously perswaded the Prince to become obedient to the usurped Authority of the Pope of *Rome*, traitorously using those Words to the Prince, That the State of *England* never did any great Thing. but when they were under Obedience to the Pope of *Rome*; and that it was impossible they could do any great Thing of Note otherwise. (9.) That the Prince consulting with the said Earl about a Proposal, that the Palatine's eldest Son should be bred up in the Emperor's Court, whereat Sir *Walter Aston* said, He durst not for his Head consent to it: The said Earl reply'd, He saw no such Inconvenience in it, for he might be there bred in our Religion: But when the Impossibility of it was press'd upon him, he said again, That without some great Action, the Peace of *Christendom* would never be had.

3. Offences after his Majesty's Return from *Spain*. (10.) That his now Majesty, then Prince, upon his Departing from the Court of *Spain*, left the Powers of the Desponsories with the said Earl to be deliver'd upon the Return of the Dispensation from *Rome*; but wrote a Letter to him from *Segovia*, commanding him not to make use of the said Powers until he could give him Assurance, that after the Desponsories a Monastery should not rob him of his Wife; of which Command the Prince afterwards discharged him: But his late Majesty sent him an express Direction not to dispatch the Desponsories until a full Conclusion was had of the other Treaty of the *Palatinate*; and the Earl promised punctually to obey the King's Command therein; yet in another Letter immediately after he declar'd, That he had set a Day for the Desponsories, and so short a Day, that without extraordinary Diligence the Prince's Hands had been bound up, and yet he not sure of a Wife, nor any Assurance given of the Temporal Articles. (11.) That the said Earl had preferr'd a scandalous Petition to that honourable House, to the Dishonour of his late Majesty, and of his Majesty that now is, to whom he hath given the

Lye:

1626. Lye in offering to falsifie the Relation which his Majesty affirm'd, and added many Things of his own Remembrance to both Houses of Parliament.

To counter-balance this Charge, the Earl, after having said, That *April* 19. he had exhibited his Petition to that House, that his Accusation against the Duke might be heard, and thereupon he was now charged with Treason : That he importuned the late King, that he might be heard before himself, which his Majesty promised ; and he pray'd God, that that Promise did him no Hurt, for he died shortly after : He desired that that House being first possessed of his Accusation against the Duke, they would receive his Charge against him and the Lord *Conway*, and not invalidate his Testimony against them by the King's Charge against him. Hereupon his Articles against the Duke and Lord *Conway* being receiv'd, he withdrew, and they were voted to be read, and the Earl being shortly after called in again, spake to this Effect :

*Bristol's*  
Speech at  
his Delivery  
of  
the Articles  
against  
*Buckingham*.

He craved Pardon for his passionate Speeches, for that unexpected Accusation of Treason would warm any honest Heart ; and desired to know of Mr. *Attorney*, whether that was his whole Charge ; who answer'd, It was. Then the Earl desired to know of Mr. *Attorney* who was the Relator ; who answer'd, The King had given him Direction for his own Relation against him. The Earl reply'd, That his Religion and Honour being call'd in Question, he was an humble Suitor to his Majesty, that he would not be offended at his just Defence (notwithstanding which he was ready to make any Submission) and that the Duke and he might be upon equal Terms, and neither of their Causes advanced before the other : Desired them to consider of how dangerous Consequence it would be if the King should be Accuser, Judge, Witness, and should have the Confiscation. As touching his Charge, he had once answer'd it all, except that of the Petition, and now expected to have been charged with some Practice with *Spain* against the State, or the Receipt of 10 or 20000*l.* for procuring the Delivery up of some Town, as *Flushing* or the *Brill*, or for procuring the Lending of the King's Ships to a Foreign Nation against those of our own Religion, or for revealing his Majesty's Secrets, or for treating of the greatest Affairs

Affairs without Instructions, or for having been corrupted by a Foreign Prince, or for breaking his Instructions in some Ecclesiastical Point, or for committing some Overt-act of Disloyalty, rather than be charged after Seven Ambassages, with Discourses and Inferences. He desir'd a Copy of his Charge, Time for his Answer, Counsel assign'd him, and that the Duke and he might be put in equal Condition: Desir'd that he having given in Articles against the Lord *Conway*, that Lord might not meddle in this Business: And that he might make use of the Dispatches of his own Ambassages, and Sir *Walter Aston's*. And then he laid open his Case as follows. That he having not in 20 Years Service of his late Master receiv'd one Check till the Duke of *Buckingham's* return out of *Spain*, he would begin from thence, and said, That he inform'd his Majesty by his Letters, That he fear'd the Distaste between the King of *Spain* and his Ministers and the Duke would overthrow all his Affairs; *Hinc ille lacrymæ*. For the Duke having gotten a Sight of those Letters, and fearing the Earl at his return would discover his Misdemeanors in *Spain*, the Duke to keep him from Access to his Majesty, endeavour'd to have him committed to the Tower presently upon his Arrival, and dealt with Marquess *Hamilton*, and the Lord-Chamberlain therein, on Pretence, that if he were admitted to the King's Presence, he would disturb the Course of Affairs; but they were too honourable to meddle therewith. This failing, the Duke to terrifie him, gave out, that if he did not keep where he was, and lay hold of those great Officers made him in *Spain*, it would be the Worse with him: That at *Bordeaux* in *France* in his return homewards, he first heard how the Duke had aspersed him in his Narration to the Parliament, wherein there was not one thing concerning him which was not contrary to or different from Truth: That he took Post at *Bordeaux* lest the Parliament should break up before he came: But upon his landing at *Dover*, was by a Letter from the Lord *Conway*, in his Majesty's Name, commanded to retire to his House, and not to come to the King's Presence until he had answer'd some Questions. Hereupon he sent to his Majesty, whose Answer was, That his Restraint was

1626.

not for any ill Meaning, nor should last long, but he intended to keep the Parliament from falling upon him. That then he pressed the King to expose him to the Parliament: But his Answer was, He would shortly put an End to his Affairs; and about this time the Parliament was dissolved. That he still solicited to be admitted to the King's Presence, who sent him word, That as soon as he had answer'd the Questions, he would both see and hear him: Then he solicited for the Questions, which were promised him within a few Days. In the mean time the King sent secretly to him, That he should write a fair Letter to the Duke, and leave the rest to him: The Duke thereupon, by one Mr. *Clark*, sent him fair Proposals; but withal, that he must not be admitted to the King's Presence for some time, and the Duke would have the Disposing of his Vice-Chamberlain's Place; but he utterly refused to condescend thereunto, and said the Duke was conscious of his own Faults, and knew his Innocence, and shew'd *Clark* a Paper he made ready for the King. The Duke writ next Day to him, That he had disobligh'd him by what he said to *Clark*; whereunto he answer'd as became him in Point of Honour. This so incensed the Duke, that he swore he would have him question'd for his Life. But his late Majesty was often heard to say and swear, That he believ'd him an honest Man; and gave leave to Privy-Councillors and others, nay, the *Spanish* Ambassadors and the *Padre Maestre* to have Access to him: That the Interrogatories, being Twenty in Number, were (after 6 or 7 Weeks Delay) deliver'd to him a few Days before the King began his Progress, which he would have answer'd presently in Person; but the King said, He would not do him that Wrong, but he should send his Answer. The Duke then urged the King that a few more Questions might be added, which was granted, so they might be presently sent him: But this was delay'd till the King had begun his Progress; and then within a Day or two the Lord *Conway* offer'd to send them, which he (the Earl) pressed him to do, but could never get them to this Day, for the Turn was served to keep him from the King's Presence. That he sent his Answer to all the Commissioners appointed to examine him,



him, and most of them declaring, they were fully satisfied, they were never permitted to meet again. When the Progress was ended, he again solicited the King, and wrote to the Duke, who sent him 4 or 5 Propositions, which he desired he should acknowledge, and then he should be receiv'd into the King's and Prince's Favour. In the Preface of which Propositions the Duke wrote thus: It is an Assertion not granted, That the Earl of *Bristol* by his Answer had satisfied either the King, the Prince, or me of his Innocency. But instead of an Acknowledgment, he sent the Duke an Answer to them, which so satisfied his late Majesty, that in the Duke's Presence, he said he were a Tyrant, should he enjoin an innocent Man to confess Faults of which he was not guilty: And sent him (the Earl) word, That he should acknowledge nothing wherein he was not faulty; and that he would hear him concerning the Duke, as well as he had heard the Duke concerning him. After which, the King during his Sickness suffer'd much, by being pressed by the Duke concerning him the said Earl; which was the Suffering he spoke of the other Day. And the Earl specified several Particulars, whereby it appear'd, that the late King to his dying Day had no ill Opinion of him: That the King gave him leave to come to *London*, but he giving the Duke Intimation, that he intended to go to his Lodgings at *White-Hall*, the Duke was incensed thereat, and said he mistook the King's meaning: And thus it stood when the late King died. That upon his Majesty's coming to the Crown, he by Letter implored his Grace, and desired the Duke's Mediation; but the Duke answer'd, That the Resolution was to proceed against him without a plain Confession of the Point, which he had been required to acknowledge. And his Writ of Parliament being sent him, the Duke advised him from his Majesty to make some excuse for his absence; but the Earl desiring a Letter of Leave from his Majesty for his Warrant, instead thereof he received from the Lord *Conway* an absolute Prohibition, and to restrain and confine him as he was in the late King's time; altho' in truth he was absolutely set free: But the Lord *Conway* would have it, and his Liberty expired with the King's Death; when indeed Restraint may expire,

but

1626. but Liberty is natural. That against the Time of his Majesty's Coronation, he sued for his Majesty's Grace, and address'd to the Duke, from whom he received a Letter, with another inclosed from his Majesty, so different from his Majesty's former Expressions, viz. *That he had never offended him, and that his Faults were to be expiated by any easie Acknowledgment*; that he knew not what Judgment to make of it, nor hath presumed hitherto to answer it: That his Writ of Parliament being again detained, he petitioned this House, and his Writ was awarded. But the Duke took that Occasion to read his Majesty's aforesaid Letter in this House, and the Writ being accompanied with a Prohibition from the Lord Keeper, and he (the Earl) address'ing himself by Petition to this House for redress of his own Wrongs, and with Complaints against the Duke, a succeeding Complaint is preferr'd against him for High-Treason, as is pretended, and he is brought like a Prisoner and a Delinquent to this House, while the Duke against whom he first complain'd is permitted to sit there as one of his Judges: He promised to put in his Answer as soon as might be; but knew not how far he might have Occasion for his ancient Dispatches: But Mr. Attorney told him his Charge should look no further back than 1621.

*Bristol's*  
Articles  
against  
the Duke.  
The Earl having thus concluded and withdrawn, his Articles against the Duke and Lord Conway were read to this Effect: 1. That in the Summer, 1622. the Duke combin'd with the *Conde Gondamor*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, to carry the King (then Prince) into *Spain*, to be instructed in the Roman Religion, and thereby perverted. 2. That Mr. Porter was made acquainted therewith, and sent into *Spain*, and such Messages at his return framed, as might be a Ground for that Journey, whereby the King and Prince were highly abused, and their Consents gotten thereunto. 3. That the Duke when in *Spain* did (by absenting himself from all Exercises of the Protestant Religion, and conforming himself to the Popish Rites so far as to adore their Sacraments) give the *Spaniards* hope of the Prince's Conversion, which he endeavour'd to procure, and thereby caus'd the *Spanish* Ministers to propound far worse Conditions for Religion, than had

had been before agreed on under his Majesty's Hands.

4. That he procur'd a Letter from his late Majesty to the Pope, stiling him *Sanctissime Pater*, which he could never get from the King while the Earl of *Bristol* (who strongly opposed it) staid in *England*. 5.

That the Pope sent the Duke a particular Bull to encourage him in the Perversion of his Majesty, then Prince. 6. That the Duke having by his Behaviour in *Spain* so incensed that King and his Ministers,

that they would have no further dealing with him, he endeavour'd to break the Match, for that it would now be to his disadvantage. 7. That (after he design'd to cross the Marriage) he made use of the Prince's Letters for other Ends than they were intended, for

he conceal'd Matters of highest importance from his late Majesty, and put in practice divers other undue Courses. 8. That he abused both Houses of Parliament by his sinister Relation almost in every Particular. 9. As for Scandal given by his personal Behaviour, and his procuring from the King of *Spain* Favours and Offices for unworthy Persons for the hire of his Lust; the Earl leaves it to their Lordships how

far they will have those Things examined. 10. That the Duke had been in great Measure the Cause of the Ruin and Misfortune of the Prince *Palatine*. 11.

That he hath in his Relation to both Houses of Parliament wronged the Earl of *Bristol* in point of his Honour, and by many undue Practices in point of his Liberty. 12. That the Earl of *Bristol* revealed to his late Majesty how the Duke had abused his trust :

And the King sent the Earl word, he would hear him against the Duke, as he had heard the Duke against him. And shortly after his Majesty sickned and died,

having been much vexed and pressed by the Duke.

The Articles against the Lord *Conway* were these:

1. That the Lord *Conway* hath sent the Earl of *Bristol* word, That if Matters be not accommodated between him and the Duke, he must declare for the Duke, and

therefore is unfit to be a Judge in the Case. 2. That tho' he be Secretary of State, and a Privy-Counsellor,

he begins his Letters to the Duke [most Gracious Patron.] 3. That he hath been made the Instrument of keeping the Earl from the King's Presence, and hath

imprisoned him by his own Warrant. 4. That he hath,

hath,

1626. hath, by misinforming his Majesty, procured a Letter of Restraint of the said Earl, affirming, That that Liberty given him by his late Majesty, expir'd at the King's Death. 5. That the Earl desiring the Lord *Conway* to move the King for leave to see his Mother, when on her Death-Bed, the Lord *Conway*, after he had spoken with the Duke, made a negative Answer in the King's Name: Wherewith the King being acquainted, swore he had never moved him; and that to deny that the Earl was a barbarous Part, and presently gave him leave. 6. That he would never deliver any Message from the Earl to the King, without first receiving the Duke's Directions. 7. That the Earl having received 20 Interrogatories to be examined unto before Commissioners, some of them involving Felony and Treason: And his late Majesty having assured the Earl, that upon his giving Satisfactory Answers he would put an End to the Business; and the Earl having given such an Answer as would admit of no Reply; and many of the Commissioners declaring themselves satisfied: The Lord *Conway*, to whom it belonged as Secretary to call the Lords together, never moved for any further meeting, whereby the Earl's Troubles have been still kept on Foot. 8. That it being pretended there were some few more Questions to be added, the late King swore solemnly, that when the Earl had answer'd them he should be forthwith admitted to his Presence, and commanded the Lord *Conway* to send them to the Earl, but he would never send them. 9. That the Earl being set free by his late Majesty, and having his Writ of Parliament sent to him, desir'd notwithstanding to know whether his going or stay would be most pleasing to his Majesty? Who by the Duke answered, He wished him to make some Excuse for the Present. But the Earl moving he might have a Letter under the King's Hands to warrant his Absence, the Lord *Conway* instead thereof sent a Letter from his Majesty, forbidding his coming to Parliament, and that he should remain restrain'd as he was in his late Majesty's Time; and tho' he was not then under Restraint, the Lord *Conway* would not understand his Case, but said, his Liberty expired by the King's Death. 10. That the Lord *Conway* knowing that the Match of the King of



er  
at  
ne  
d  
r,  
ne  
er  
c-  
at  
e-  
er  
st  
rl  
n-  
e-  
af-  
n-  
ne  
of  
g  
it  
e-  
ne  
8.  
re  
y,  
oe  
ed  
ne  
et  
r-  
w  
to  
ed  
ne  
's  
n-  
d-  
d  
y;  
d  
is  
ne  
of  
104

Bo  
an  
an  
of  
his  
ch  
fer  
pe  
ri  
the  
tra  
  
Ea  
ga  
ga  
pe  
fro  
bit  
lay  
tou  
as  
clo  
ven  
for  
the  
con  
ing  
  
ow  
to  
itil  
me  
Lo  
rec  
  
ter  
Ho  
low  
var  
fure  
Ac  
pin  
tick  
Co

**E**

an

an

oh

le

ch

fe

pe

u

th

tr

**Ea**

ga

ga

pe

fr

bi

fa

to

as

cl

ve

for

the

co

ing

ow

to

stil

me

Lo

rec

ter

Ho

low

van

sure

Ac

pin

tick

Co

Bohemia's eldest Son with the Emperor's Daughter, and being bred in the Emperor's Court, was allowed and propounded by his late Majesty, and never spoke of but with this Condition, that he should be bred in his own Religion: Yet had he suffer'd all to be charged against the Earl of *Bristol*, viz. That he consented to the Breeding of the young Prince in the Emperor's Court, to the End he might be perverted. 11. That the Lord *Conway* had been the Cause of all the Earl of *Bristol*'s Troubles, by his dubious and intrapping Dispatches.

The Lords having order'd the Charge against the Earl should be first heard, and then the Charge against the Duke; yet so as the Earl's Testimony against the Duke be not prevented, prejudiced or impeached. The Lord Keeper deliver'd a Message from the King; That as to many of the Articles exhibited against the Duke by the Earl, he was able to say more than any Man for the Duke: That that touching the Narrative made in Parliament trench'd as far upon himself as the Duke: That they had been closed in the Earl's Breast these Two Years, and now vented by way of Recrimination. He thank'd them for not putting the Duke under the same Restraint as the Earl, who appear'd as a *Delinquent*, and he was confident they would not equal them by a Proceeding *pari passu*.

*Buckingham*, for all this, seeming dissident of his own Cause, Endeavours were used (tho' in vain) to have the Earl indicted in the King's-Bench, and still a little to mortifie him, the Duke in this Parliament having the Proxies of Fourteen Peers, the Lords order'd, That after that Session no Lord should receive above Two.

But to *Bristol* again, the Earl, about a Fortnight after his Charge was given in, being brought to the House, deliver'd in his Answer, introduced as follows: That he was not insensible upon what Disadvantages he came there, his Majesty's heavy Displeasure, a potent Adversary highly in Favour, and an Accusation of Treason; tho' taking with him the Opinion of his Counsel, he could not find in the Articles any thing like Treason, or that had the Shew or Countenance of a Fault; only by straining them

1626.

King's  
Message  
to the  
Lords a-  
bout the  
Articles  
against  
the Duke,

The  
Number  
of the  
Proxies  
restrain'd.

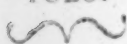
*Bristol*'s  
Intro-  
duction  
to  
his Answer

1626. contrary to their true Sense, 'tis inferr'd, that the Intent was evil; and that depended upon Two Props, ill Affection to Religion, and too much Affection to *Spain*. For his Religion, he was bred in the Protestant Religion: When at fit Years he travell'd to *France*, *Italy* and *Rome* it self, he constantly used the Religion he profess'd, never was present at any Exercise of the *Roman* Religion, or did the least Act of Conformity thereunto. After his Return, he served his late Majesty several Years as a Gentleman of his Privy-Chamber, and Carver; during which time he frequently received the Sacrament, heard Sermons, &c. In his Youth he translated Monsieur *Moulin's* Excellent Book, and was approved by King *James*, and Printed under the Name of Mr. *Sampford* his Chaplain. About the 27th or 28th Year of his Age, he went Ambassador to *Spain* about the Treaty of Marriage, and carryed Chaplains with him: There he caused it to be published, that he would have a Communion; at which the Duke of *Lerma*, and other Ministers, took great Offence, the like Being never done at that Court before, there being a Hundred Persons present. The like he did at the Emperor's Court in his Ambassage thither. He had in *Spain* and *Germany* Five Hundred Persons attending him, and not one perverted. His Children were bred and instructed in the same Religion. He had constantly every Sabbath a Sermon, Sacraments, and other religious Exercises. In *Spain* one railed at our King and Religion; 'tis known how he revenged it. He caus'd one of the *English* at *Madrid*, who died a Protestant, to be brought to his House, and there buried according to our Rites. And being threatned that the Inquisitors would cause him to be fetched out and buried again, he stood upon it that it was the King of *England's* House, and he would shoot him that should make such an attempt. There being a Monastery in *Madrid* for *English* Jesuits, and the *English* Arms set up, he caused it to be absolutely dissolved, tho' his late Majesty thought it impossible to be done. In all Negotiations in *Spain*, he ever straitned his Instructions in the Point of Religion. That he ever advised a Protestant Match, but if with a Catholick, then rather with *Spain* and *France*; as appears by a Letter he



he wrote to the Prince, for which he was like to have been ruined for being a Puritan, as now for being a Papist, and both by the same Hand. He appealed to Dr. *Mason*, and Dr. *Wren* the King's Chaplains in *Spain*, and Mr. *Sampford*, Mr. *Boswell*, and Mr. *Frewen* his own Chaplains there, and to his other Acquaintance, whether he did not always avow himself a Protestant? And to Mr. *Frewen* and Mr. *Wake* his Chaplains, how he behaved himself in the Times of several dangerous Sickneses, when no Man can be supposed to dissemble. For his Love to *Spain*, he wonders whence that Opinion should grow, he being the Man they desired to have least to do with, and whom they hated since they discovered, that he stood stricter in the Point of Religion, than by his Instructions he might have done. That he shewed it not by the Service he did them; for several Years not a Letter was sent by that King to any other State, but the King his Master had a Copy of it; not a great Action on Foot, but he had their private Instructions and Intentions, and advertised his Master thereof. He got all the Papers of that King's private Cabinet into his Hands; took Copies and Notes of what was useful, and set his private Mark upon them before returned. Not a Port in *Spain* but he caused the Depth of it to be sounded, nor a Fort whereof he knew not the Strength. That the Powers for the Desponsories were put into his Hands with the King of *Spain's* Consent, and not as an Attorney for that Prince; for that King had taken the Substitution of them in legal Form, and so was interested in them as well as the Prince, it becoming *Instrumentum stipulatum*. That when the Duke came into *England*, he plotted his Ruin thus: He procured a Letter to him from the late King, desiring the Desponsories should not be till one of the Days of *Christmas*, but concealed that the Powers were to expire at *Christmas*. So if he proceeded in the Match, he had broken his Instructions: But if he delay'd it till the Powers were expired, he had broken his Trust between the Prince and the King of *Spain*, and overthrown the Marriage. And when he had written into *England* to have a direct Warrant in the Point, the Duke plotted to have him committed to the *Tower* upon his Arrival here, before

1626.



he should speak with the King: Of which the *Spanish* Ambassador here getting Notice, advertised the King; who foreseeing his Danger, resolv'd, that seeing his Sufferings arose from his endeavouring to perform his Trust, he was bound in Honour and Conscience to preserve him from Ruin. And when he was going for *England*, the *Conde. Olivares* told him what was plotted against him there. and perswaded him to stay. Here he repeated the Offers made him, as aforesaid, notwithstanding which, he came over to encounter with these Dangers, knowing his Conscience clear, his Cause good, and trusting in God Almighty.

His An-  
swer.

Having spoken thus, he deliver'd his Answer to the said Articles, which was to this Effect, *viz.* 1. The first Article he denied, and said, As to his Ambassage to the Emperor about the *Palatinate*, he propounded all Things according to his Instructions, and sent to his late Majesty the Emperor's Answers under his Hand and Imperial Seal; but was so far from giving his Majesty any ill grounded Hopes, that he wrote from *Vienna* to the Council in *England*, *July 26. 1624.* to the following Purpose :

That there might be a Dispatch presently into *Spain* to his Majesty's Ambassador and Mr. *Cottington*, to ripen the Business against his Coming; and to use plain Language, letting the Ministers there know, that that King's Letter to the Emperor was colder and more reserv'd than was expected by his Master: That tho' he despair'd not of good Success, yet hop'd the Preparations for a War should not be laid aside, and that Sir *Robert Mansel's* Fleet should be continued some time upon the Coasts of *Spain*, which would prove the best Argument for the Restitution of the *Palatinate*.

That he brought down Count *Mansfield*, whereby *Frankendal* was reliev'd; and merely out of his Zeal, without Warrant or Order, supplied his Majesty's Army then in great Distress, with Money and Plate to the Value of 10000 *l.* and thereupon the Queen of *Bohemia* sent him a Letter, in which she thanked him for his Affection to the King and her, and for the Money he lent their Soldiers: That she would never be forgetful of the Testimonies of his Love, which

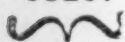
the prayeth him to continue to them, and to sollicite his Majesty for their Help.

What Satisfaction his late Majesty receiv'd in that Behalf, appears by his Speech in Parliament; and he appeals to both Houses, with what Zeal he proceeded when he gave them an Account of that Employment, and how he pressed that Preparation should be made for War: He pray'd the D. of *Buckingham's* Letter to him of the 11th of *Octob.* 1621. might be produced, in which his Grace said, He was exceeding glad his Lordship had carried himself so well in his Employment; and his Majesty was infinitely pleased with it, and gave him Thanks. He hoped his Negotiation with the *Infanta* will not be of such Difficulty as he seems to fear, seeing his Brother *Edward* hath brought a Letter from his Majesty's Son-in-Law, whereby he puts himself wholly upon his Majesty's Advice for his Submission; and he believes the *Spanish* Ambassador will employ his Interest therein, now the Impediments of *Mansfield* are taken away, and his Majesty's Son-in-Law will conform: That for the Money his Lordship had so seasonably laid out, his Majesty would see he should sustain no Loss.

Before his Ambassage to the Emperor he did the Prince Palatine all the Service he could, of which his late Majesty gave him his Testimony, as appears by a Letter from Sir *Francis Netherfole* (who was sent to the Palatine) to Sir *George Calvert*, dated at *Prague*, Aug. 11. 1620.

That, according to his Majesty's Command, he had acquainted the King of *Bohemia*, That the King his Master having found the Lord *Digby* mistaken at Home, by his being employ'd in the Affairs of *Spain*, and being jealous he might also be misrepresented Abroad, and commanded him to tell his Majesty, That he had not a more truly affectionate Servant in *England*: And that whereas the Lord *Doncaster* had obtain'd but Three great Boons, the Loan of Money from the King of *Denmark*, the Contribution in *England*, and the sending Ambassadors to the contrary Parties; the Lord *Digby* was the first Propounder of them all to the King his Master, altho' his Lordship was content others should have the Thanks, lest the Credit might be weakened which he had in *Spain*.

1626.



When he return'd from the Emperor's Court into England, he solicited the sending away of Money to the *Palatinate*, whereupon 30000*l.* was borrow'd of Three private Persons, and presently sent thither, besides the 10000*l.* he lent, for which he paid Interest out of his Purse for Six Months, and 500*l.* given long before by way of Benevolence : And before his going to *Spain* in May, 1622, he gave the Account aforesaid to both Houses of Parliament ; and the Parliament being dissolved, he continued his Solicitation for the Supply of the *Palatinate*, and his Majesty was perswaded to maintain 8000 Foot and 1600 Horse there ; and upon his Motion the Lord *Chichester* was sent for out of *Ireland*.

His Behaviour in *Spain*.

At his Arrival in *Spain* he proceeded according to his Instructions, and pressed the Business of the *Palatinate* as effectually as he could ; and if that Summer the Marquess of *Baden*, Count *Mansfield*, and Duke of *Brunswick* receiv'd each of them an Overthrow, he hopes he shall not be liable to the Blame, it having no relation to him or his Employment, of whose Services his Majesty by several Letters declared his Acceptance, as in that of Nov. 24. 1622. viz. That his Dispatches were so full, and he (the King) receiv'd such Satisfaction, that he need not enlarge, and that he was pleased with his diligent and discreet Endeavours. And in another of Jan. 8. 1622. viz. That in that knotty Affair of the *Palatinate*, he knew not what he could have done more than he had done. And it was impossible the *Palatinate* should be lost by the Hopes he gave out of *Spain* ; for all was lost before his first Letters thence could come to his Majesty's Hands, except *Manheim* and *Frankendal* ; and he had saved *Manheim* had it not been so suddenly deliver'd to *Tilly*, as is acknowledged by the King's said Letter of Nov. 24. 1622. As for *Frankendal* it was once saved by him, and again saved by his procuring the King of *Spain's* Letter of Feb. 2. 1623. upon which follow'd the Sequestration, which still continues. And when his Majesty and the Duke arriv'd in *Spain*, that Business of the *Palatinate* was in so fair a Way, that the *Spanish* Ministers told them, That King should give his late Majesty a Blank, wherein we might frame our own Conditions ; And the last Answer he





tain'd from that King was fuller than he was order'd by his late Majesty's Letters to insist upon : That he had all the Assurance that could be between Christian Princes, for he had that King's Word, Hand and Seal ; and he and Sir *Walter Aston* were so confident thereof, that in their joint Dispatch of Nov. 24. 1623. after his now Majesty's Return into *England*, they told his late Majesty, *They hoped they might give his Daughter that Christmas the News of the near-expiring of her Sufferings, and to his Son the Congratulation of his being married to a most Excellent Princess.*

As to the Match, he said, he never gave any Hopes of the *Spaniards* real Proceedings therein, but such as were first given to him ; and his Advertisements were grounded upon all the Assurances that could be given between Christians, as will appear by his Dispatch of Nov. 9. 1623. wherein are mention'd all the Engagements and Promises of the King of *Spain* : And the Cause why the *Conde Olivares* pretended to the Duke of *Buckingham*, that the Match was not formerly meant, was to free himself from treating any longer with him (the Earl) that so he might get larger Conditions of the Duke in Point of Religion, *Olivares* taking Advantage of his having the Prince's Person in his Hands. But that the Match was really intended on both Sides, he believed for these Reasons : 1. The Duke of *Buckingham* certified his late Majesty, that the Business of the Marriage was brought to a Conclusion ; and the King thereupon, July 23. 1623. order'd the Duke and Earl to proceed. 1. It appear'd by Letters of Sept. 4. 1623. from the Lord *Conway* to the Duke of *Buckingham*, that the Duke had good Assurance of the Conclusion of the Match. 3. The very Day that his now Majesty and the Duke departed from the *Escorial* towards *England*, the Duke swore to the Treaty of Marriage, and the Furtherance thereof. 4. The Treaty of Marriage had been formerly sign'd, seal'd and solemnly sworn to by the King of *Spain* ; and that King at his Parting with his now Majesty, solemnly protested to perform all that had been capitulated therein ; and in his Letter the next Day vow'd to make good all he had promised the Day before ; so that if there were no true Meaning on the part of *Spain*, he (the Earl) was not slightly deceived. And

His Carriage concerning the Match

Reasons why the Match was intended of both Sides

1626.

his late Majesty, and now Majesty, who had been upon the Place, so much believed it, that new Proxies were sent to him the said Earl.

2. To the Second Article, he denied all the supposed Offences thereby charged, and said, That by Agreement on both Sides, the Temporal Articles were to be treated of before the Articles of Religion were settled, and those were not signed by the King and Prince until *January 5. 1622.* and then sent to *Spain*: But the Earl (to lose no Time) before he would consent they should be sent back to *Rome*, got a Promise from the King of *Spain*, That within the Time limited for the Desponsories, which was *March* or *April* following, all the Temporal Articles should be settled, that so the *Infanta* might be deliver'd at the Spring: And accordingly the Particulars of the Portion, the Time of the Desponsories after the Dispensation came, and several others were by Sir *Walter Ashton*, the Earl, and the *Spanish* Commissioners, drawn up into Heads in Writing: And *Gondamor* and the Secretary *Andreas de Prada*, 2 *Martii, 1623.* O. S. acquainted Sir *Walter Ashton* and the Earl, that the King of *Spain* had declared his Resolution in all the Particulars, and order'd them to come to a speedy Conclusion; and the Earl saw that King's Answer to that Conclusion. But the Prince and Duke arriving at *Madrid* the 7th of the same Month, the *Spaniards* took new Measures. He conceived, it could not be meant he continued the Treaties upon Generalities, as to the Articles for Religion; for they were such as came from *Rome* to *England*, and from thence they came to the Earl: And for the Temporal Articles, they were not to be treated till those of Religion were concluded, which were not brought to the Earl till the 25th of *January*; so that there were but Six Weeks until his Majesty's Arrival, and in that *Interim* those Particulars of the Temporal Articles were settled: Nor could any Delay be imputed to him, for he was in *Germany* and *Flanders*, while Sir *Walter Ashton* and Sir *Francis Cottington* were for 3 or 4 Years in *Spain*; and he reassumed the Business but Six Months before his Majesty's Arrival in *Spain*, and from thence pressed the King and Prince to break the Match rather than suffer any more Delays: And in  
September

September following, by Sir Francis Cottington, he wrote to the King, That he conceived it the right Way to bring Things to a speedy Issue, for his Majesty to declare what he would do in the Point of Religion, and to limit a Time wherein the King of Spain should procure a Dispensation, or conclude the Match without it; and if any Delay, that he might declare his Majesty to be free and disengaged.

1626.

He wrote likewise at the same time to the Prince, telling him, That having received his late Majesty's Resolution in the Point of Religion, and a limited Time, according to his Desire, he was so punctual, that he would not give one Month longer time for procuring the Dispensation without Direction under his late Majesty's Hand, which he had by his Letters of Octob. 25. 1622. to this Effect:

That in case they should conclude all Things else to his Contentment, with a Resolution to send the *Infanta* hither the next Spring, that then he should not break with them for a Month longer Delay for procuring the Dispensation; and that he should not trouble himself with the rash Censure of other Men, in case his Business should not succeed, assuring him, he would never judge a faithful Servant by the Event.

He said, That when he had agreed to the Articles for Religion, he consented to the Propositions *de bene esse*, sent by Mr. Porter, Decemb. 10. 1622. to the End the Articles might be immediately sent to Rome, without losing so much time as to hear first from England; and moved his Majesty, that if he liked the Articles, he would for gaining Time send them directly to Rome, which he did: And at the same time he wrote a Letter to his Majesty, and another to the Prince, purporting, That he was out of Hopes of bringing Things to any better Terms, and therefore he beseeched them, that if they should not approve of the Articles, which were then conditionally agreed (which yet he hoped they would) not a Day more might be lost in that Treaty, it being of so much Consequence to them and the whole Kingdom that his Highness were bestowed.

He submitted to their Lordships Judgment, whether the Delays that had happen'd could be attributed to him, who never mov'd his Majesty or the Prince to admit of

De.

1626.

Delays, but always pressed Things to a speedy Conclusion: That his late Majesty, upon the Assurances given by the *Spaniards*, believed they dealt really with him; and the Prince and Duke wrote as much to his Majesty at their first coming into *Spain*, and all he (the Earl) had written was avow'd to them by *Olivares* and *Gondamor*.

Never  
disswaded  
the King  
from ta-  
king Arms

3. To the Third Article he said, He did not extol or magnifie the Greatness and Power of the King of *Spain*, or represent the Dangers that might ensue by a War, as in the said Article is mention'd: But if he did at any time speak or write to that Purpose, he did it as a Counsellor to his said Majesty, and an Ambassador, by way of his Advice and Opinion, and not with such an Intent as the Articles said: That he had upon all just Occasions advised, that Preparations for a War should be made, as appear'd by his Speech in Parliament, and the Care he took before his Ambassage to *Spain*, that his Majesty should have an Army of Horse and Foot, and by his Advice, that Sir *Robert Mansel* should continue with his Fleet upon the Coast of *Spain*: Remembred not, that he discouraged his late Majesty from entring into a War with *Spain*; but might, by way of Discourse, have spoken to his late or now Majesty of the Solidness of the *Spanish* Councils and Proceedings, wishing *England* would imitate them, the Way to impeach their Greatness, being to grow as wise as they: Remembred not what Discourse he had, that his late Majesty's Quiet would be disturbed, or he not be permitted to hawk or hunt, but might say, how fit it would be upon being imbroil'd in a War seriously to intend it, and to make it our whole Work; nor could it be conceived, that Hawking and Hunting should be Considerations to with-hold so prudent a King from a War for the Good of *Christianity*.

4. To the Fourth Article he said, He did not remember ever to have held such Discourse as in the said Article is mention'd: Tho' it was true, that many Years since he thought the Match very unlike to be effected, as well for the unequal Answers given in Prince *Henry's* Days, as for the Difference of Religion. That the Reviving of the Treaty of Marriage for his

now

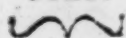


now Majesty was not by his Means, for he ever advised a Protestant Match; but understanding both their Majesties desired the Match with *Spain*, he did faithfully endeavour to serve them therein: And 'twas likely he might say, He would get his Instructions perfect, and pursue them punctually; but for the latter part of this Conference, That he would make his Fortune by it, he was *Anno 1621.* and ever since, of that Rank and Quality in regard of his Employments, Fortunes, and his Majesty's Favours, that he durst answer for his Discretion, that it was impossible for him to hold so mean and unworthy Discourse.

5. To the Fifth Article he said, That the Allegations therein were so far from being true, that he always advised his Majesty should marry with a Lady of his own Religion: And in the whole Treaty with *Spain*, stood stricter in the Point of Religion than by his Instructions he needed. He denied he counsell'd the setting at Liberty of Priests or Jesuits; said, The Ambassage in *Spain* was different from other Places, there being none there but Catholics, nor any Intelligence to be gotten but by them, especially by Priests and Jesuits; some of whom the Ministers employ'd there have gratified, by procuring the Liberty of some Friend or Kinsman of theirs, being a Roman Catholic imprison'd in *England*. But he did not remember himself to have written to his late Majesty in that kind; said, His late Majesty was, by the Treaty of *Madrid*, 1617. engaged in some Matters concerning Religion, and promised to *Gondamor*, and by Letters of 16 April, 1620. to the King of *Spain* some Favours to Roman Catholics: And tho' he (the Earl) had a Warrant under the King's Hand to assure the King of *Spain* those Promises should be perform'd; yet, when press'd by the *Spanish* Ministers, he would not bind up his Majesty in that Point, or consent to so much as a Clause *de bene esse*; tho' afterwards both his late and now Majesty sign'd the Articles, and by their private Letters of 8 January, 1622. confirm'd the same: Denied he counsell'd his late Majesty to grant the Papists a Toleration, but protested against it, altho' he had seen a Paper, dated 7 August 1623. sign'd by

Counsel.  
led not  
setting of  
Priests at  
Liberty.

1626.



A Decla-  
ration  
sign'd by  
the Lord  
Conway  
in behalf  
of Roman  
Catholicks

by the Lord Conway and others, which was little less than a Toleration, and to this Effect:

*That for the Satisfaction of the Marquess of Ynoiosa, and Don Carlos de Colona, the Spanish Ambassadors; and that it may appear, his Majesty will presently put in Execution the Grace promised to the Roman Catholicks, and more than he is tied to by the Articles of Marriage; they declare his Majesty's Will and Pleasure to be, That a Pardon shall be passed under the Great Seal of all Penalties, Forfeitures, Seizures, Indictments, Convictments, and Incumbrances, whereunto the Roman Catholicks are liable, as well Priests as others, for Matters of Conscience only: And where such Forfeitures have been given away under the Great Seal, the Roman Catholicks may plead to such Grants, in case they are voidable by Law. That they take out this Pardon at any time within Five Years; and for the Poorer sort it shall not be costly, and as many put into one Pardon as Possible. That in pursuance of the Articles of Marriage there shall be granted under the Great Seal a present Suspension of all Penal Laws against Roman Catholicks, and a Dispensation and Toleration to them, as well Priests as others, of and from all Penalties and Forfeitures they are subject to; and the King will confer with the Bishops and Advocates concerning the same: And his Attorney and Council shall draw up the said Pardon, Suspension and Declaration as full as possible. And the said Ambassadors may assign a discreet Person to retain Lawyers to take Care of the Strength and Validity of such Grants; and the King's Attorney shall use such legal, necessary, and pertinent Words and Phrases therein as the said Lawyers shall propound. And that the like shall be done in Ireland, and likewise in Scotland, as soon as possible may be, with regard to the Publick Good and Peace of that Kingdom.*

He said, this was the Effect of the Duke of Buckingham's Negotiation, treated and concluded here by the Lord Conway with the Spanish Ambassadors while the Prince was in Spain. That he (the Earl) knew nothing of it, for if he had he would have protested against it. By which, and the Difference between that, and the Conditions of Religion agreed by the said Earl and Sir Walter Aston, it will appear whose Endeavour it was to advance the *Romish* Religion.

6. To the Sixth Article he said, That the Assurances he gave his late and his now Majesty, were such as were given him by the Emperor and King of *Spain*, and their Ministers: And there was never less Colour to complain of the Delays of *Spain*, than when his Majesty came thither; for there was a Time prefix'd for the Coming of the Dispensation, viz. in *April*, 1623. (the next Month after his Majesty's Arrival at *Madrid*) and for the Desponsories within Forty Days following, and the *Infanta* to begin her Journey Twenty Days after; so that Three Months Patience would have shew'd the Issue, without putting the Person of the Prince in such Hazard for the trying an Experiment; and if the *Spaniards* were suspected to deal falsely, they were the less to be trusted with his Person: But it was neither the Assurances of the Earl, nor the Jealousies of *Spain*, were the Occasion of that Journey, as shall appear in due time. And the Earl having a Hint of it by something let fall by *Gondamor*, dispatch'd away Mr. *Grisley* to prevent it, who upon the Confines of *France* met the Prince and Duke, and told them as much.

7. To the Seventh Article he said, He did not move his Majesty to change his Religion, nor could the Charge bear any such Inference; but that there being a general Opinion among the *Spanish* Ministers, that his Majesty came thither with an Intent to become a Roman Catholick, and *Gondamor* having press'd the Earl not to hinder it, and seeming assured of the Duke of *Buckingham's* Assistance; the Earl told his Majesty what the general Opinion of that Court was, and beseeched him to deal freely with him as a faithful Servant, but without expecting his Majesty's Answer, declared himself a Protestant, and so should always continue; yet would serve his Majesty as faithfully as any Catholick whatsoever: Whereupon his Majesty made a full Declaration of his Religion, and of his constant Resolution therein, and seem'd much displeas'd that they should have so unworthy an Opinion of him, as to think he would for a Wife, or any other Earthly Respect, so much as waver in his Religion. He then besought his Majesty, that he would not let that Opinion remain longer among the *Spaniards*; for while they had any Hopes of his Conversion,

The Earl persuaded not the Prince to change his Religion.

1626. version, they would never content themselves with the Articles agreed upon with him (the Earl) and Sir *Walter Aston*: That the next Day he told *Olivares* and *Gondamor*, how discourteous it was for them to press his Majesty to further Conditions than were formerly agreed upon in Point of Religion, for putting himself into their Hands, whereat they were much offended. All which appear'd by his Dispatches to his late Majesty of 9 Sept. 1623. That for clearer Satisfaction of their Lordships in the Point of Religion, he offer'd to them a Copy of a Letter, which at his Departure towards *Spain* about the Treaty of Marriage, in the Year 1617. he wrote to his present Majesty in Substance as followeth:

Advised  
a Pro-  
testant  
Match,  
but if with  
a Catho-  
lick, then  
rather  
with *Spain*  
than  
*France*.

*That the Opinion he ever offer'd to his Majesty concerning his Highness's Marriage had been, That his Highness might take to Wife some Protestant Princess, altho' neither a King's Daughter, nor having Portion enough to relieve his Majesty's Wants, which might be remedied by Frugality, or by winning the People's Affections for supplying his Majesty in Parliament; whereas by a Match with a Catholick Princess, the Number and Power of the Papists would be encreased through the Exercise of her Religion, for herself and Family within his Highness's Courts, whereby by Degrees those Two different Religions would grow to an Equality of Power, to the Hazard and Disquiet of the State. But if it were held fittest for his Highness to match with France or Spain, or any other Catholick, then he advised to a Match with Spain: That if his Majesty should, upon Motion of the Parliament, or otherwise, proceed with a Protestant Match, he hoped so to manage the present Business, that it should further, not hinder it, otherwise he conceived his Highness did approve that he effectually endeavoured a Match for him in Spain.*

He con-  
stantly  
profess'd  
the Prote-  
stant Re-  
ligion.

That he hath all his Days lived a Protestant, and in his former Employments for Fourteen Years of above Five Hundred Persons who attended him, not one was perverted in his Religion saving Two *Irish* Footmen. He desires the Testimony of *Dr. Mason* and *Dr. Wrew* his Majesty's Chaplains in *Spain*, and of *Mr. Sampford*, *Mr. Boswel*, and *Mr. Frewen* his own Chaplains, as well for the Frequent use of the Sacrament, as constant Exercises of Religion, and of such



Catholicks as have been his Acquaintance, whether he hath not upon all Occasions declared for the Religion he professeth ; and desires Mr. *Frewen* and Mr. *Wake* might be examined as to his Behaviour in the Times of several Sickneses.

8. To the Eighth Article he said, That he did not endeavour to perswade the Prince to become a *Roman* Catholick, or to be obedient to the Authority of *Rome* ; nor did he use to the Prince the Words in the Articles ; but believeth that he might occasionally by way of discourse have said, That in regard of the Differences in Religion, it was more difficult to undertake great Actions now than in former Ages ; witness this Treary, wherein the Pope's Consent was to be obtained : And his late Majesty was often heard to say, he was the true Martyr that suffered for his Religion, for he could not match his Children with their own Rank without the Pope's leave. Denies he alledged any such thing to other purpose than to shew, That Conscience and Love to Truth, not Temporal Respects, made Men constant to the Profession of the Protestant Religion : And why should it be thought that being more fit to undertake great Actions in the World ; (being a meer Temporal Respect) should be an Argument to perswade so religious a Prince, and so well instructed as his Majesty is ? And it had been more pertinent to have Alledged the Earl used to his Majesty some Arguments out of Scripture, or procured a Conference with some Learned Men.

9. To the Ninth Article he said, That there being a Discourse in *Spain* of accommodating the Prince *Palatine's* Affairs by the Marriage of his eldest Son with the Emperor's Daughter, and he to be bred up in the Emperor's Court ; he (the Earl) by way of Discourse, and not otherwise, said, He thought his late Majesty would not be averse thereunto, so as the *Palatinate's* whole Patrimonial Estate, and the Electoral Dignity might be restored, and his Son bred in his own Religion, and to have *Preceptors*, and a Family appointed him by his late Majesty and his Father, and they to have free Exercise of Religion : But his Majesty was returned out of *Spain* before any Proposal was made for the said Marriage, it being  
first

1626.

*first motioned between Mr. Secretary Calvert and the Spanish Ambassador October 2. 1623. And his late Majesty approving the Proposal, wrote to that purpose to his Son-in-Law, 9 Novemb. 1623. a Copy whereof he caus'd to be sent to the said Earl to this effect.*

K. James  
proposes  
a Match  
between  
the Pala-  
tine's Son  
and the  
Emperor's  
Daughter

*That for extinguishing that Displeasure and Enmity the Emperor had conceived against him (the Palatine) no better Means could be used than an Alliance between his (the Palatine's) eldest Son, and the Emperor's Daughter, upon the Assurance he (his late Majesty) hath, that he shall not be refused; he intending to interest the King of Spain in the Business. That if the Emperor should demand his Son to be bred up in his Court, he sees no reason why the Palatine should stick at it, upon these Conditions That the Young Prince should have such Governour as the Palatine should appoint, altho' no Roman Catholick, and he and his should not be forced in Matter of their Conscience. And the Palatine to have an intire Restitution before his Son be put into the Emperor's Hands. This he takes to be the best, shortest, and most honourable way of making his (the Palatine's) Peace with the Emperor.*

He said, That by this Letter it appears there was not such Proposal when his Majesty was in Spain; Hoped his late Majesty's Opinion of the Conveniency thereof would acquit him, if in Discourse he declared his late Majesty's Inclination. Remembers not what Sir *Walter Aston* answered, nor what he (the Earl) reply'd: But whatever he reply'd, it was that which he conceived to be the best Way of Accommodation, and to be his late Majesty's Pleasure (which Sir *Walter Aston* was ignorant of) and not out of any Dissatisfaction to Religion, or sinister Regard to the House of *Austria*; for he did not conceive the Breeding of the Palatine's Son with the Emperor, under the Cautions proposed by his late Majesty, to be a Matter of dangerous Consequence, well knowing, That in the Emperor's Court, Princes there, tho' his Prisoners, and others his Counsellors and Servants, and Commanders in his Armies, being avow'd Protestants, had the free Exercise of their Religion.

10. To

10. To the Tenth Article he said, He could not but compare that Article of his too much Forwardness with the Second Article, of continuing the Treaty upon Generalities. Denied he did presumptuously break his Instructions, or set any Day for the Desponsories, but only admitted the Day nominated according to the Capitulation. Denied he disobey'd any Direction of the Prince's, which he could understand not to be countermanded; said, The then Prince deliver'd unto him the Proxies, with publick Declaration how he should use them (which was taken in Writing by the King of Spain's Secretary) viz. That he should deliver them to the King of Spain within Ten Days after the Coming of the Dispensation: That afterwards having Orders from the Prince not to deliver them to the King of Spain till he had Security, the Infanta should not, after her Betrothing, enter into any Religious Order. He presented to him such Assurances as were offer'd for securing that Point. Whereupon both his late and now Majesty, by their several Letters of 8 Octob. 1623. approved his Conduct, discharged him of that Command, and left him to take what Security he thought fit. And being freed of that Command, he remain'd under the Order and Declaration which his Highness had left with him, when he deliver'd him the Proxies: And he intended to have proceeded accordingly, till by his Highness's Letters of November 13. 1623. he was commanded the contrary, which he punctually obey'd.

And for such his Intentions, till countermanded, he had sufficient Warrant: For,

1. He had Instruction under his late Majesty's Hand to consummate the Match.

2. It was the main Scope of his Ambassage.

3. He had a Commission for it under the Great-Seal.

4. He had afterwards Orders under his Majesty's Hand.

5. It was agreed to be within so many Days after the Coming of the Dispensation.

6. His late and his now Majesty, by their said Letters of 8 October, 1623. signified to him, that they intended to proceed in the Marriage.

The Earl's  
Reasons  
why he  
would  
have consummated  
the Match

1626. 7. The Proxies were to that End left in his Hands and afterwards renew'd.

8. He had otherwise overthrown the Marriage, without any Order; for the King of *Spain* protested, that if he (the Earl) deferr'd the Desponsories, he would free himself from the Treaty; nor could they have been deferr'd, for the Proxies expired at *Christmas*.

*Lastly*, The Proxies being delivered him, with a publick Declaration, and an Instrument by a Secretary of State directing the Use of them, the King of *Spain* became interested in them, at well as the Prince, they being then *Instrumentum stipulatum*: So that if he had proceeded to the Execution of the Desponsories, before his said Countermmand of *Novemb. 13. 1623.* he had not broken his Instructions for want of Assurance of the Restitution of the *Palatinate*, and the Temporal Articles. For as to the *Palatinate*, he had no express Directions not to dispatch the Desponsories until the Treaty of the *Palatinate* was concluded; only his late Majesty, by his said Letter of *October 8.* requir'd him to endeavour that he might have the Joy of both at *Christmas*: Whereas his Instructions of *May 13. 1621.* and *Decemb. 30. 1623.* were express, not to make the Business of the *Palatinate* a Condition of the Marriage; and before the Proxies were to be executed, he had an absolute Promise, that the *Palatinate* should be restored: And *Olivares*, in his Ma-

The Resti-  
tution of  
the *Palatinate* pro-  
mised by  
the K. of  
*Spain* and  
*Olivares*.

ster's Name and his own, desired his late Majesty might be assured thereof: And that was to have been put in Writing before the Delivery of the Proxies; and so confident was he and Sir *Walter Ashton* thereof, that by their Letters of *Novemb. 23.* they wrote to his late Majesty, That he might that *Christmas* give to his Daughter the News of the near expiring of her Sufferings, and to his Son the Congratulation of being marry'd to a most excellent Princess. And he (the Earl) was ever of Opinion, That the best Assurances his Majesty could have of their real Proceedings touching the *Palatinate*, was the effecting of the Match; and his late Majesty was of the same Opinion. As for the Temporal Articles, when the Desponsories were appointed to be on *Friday, August 29.* before the Departure of his Majesty out of *Spain*, which



which was only hindred by the not coming of the Dispensation, he (the Earl) Sir *Walter Asheton*, and the *Spanish* Commissioners, drew up the Heads of the Temporal Articles; and had the Dispensation come then, there had been no other Provision made for them before the Marriage. And after the Prince's Departure, they were drawn into Form, and sent to his late Majesty *Sept. 23. 1623.* But the Earl never received Notice of his Majesty's Dislike of them till his Letters of *Novemb. 13. 1623.* which put off the Desponsories. He said, He set no Day for the Desponsories, nor could defer them after the Dispensation came from *Rome*, without a direct Breach of the Match; for the King of *Spain* was then resolved to demand the Proxies, according to the Capitulation. And the Earl hearing from *Rome*, that the Dispensation was granted, sent a Dispatch of *Novemb. 1. to his late Majesty*, letting him know, it was not possible for him to protract the Marriage, unless he would hazard the breaking it; nor was the King so straitned in Time as by the Article pretended, for, *Sept. 28. 1623.* he wrote to the King, That if the Dispensation came, he knew not how to detain the Proxies above 20 or 24 Days. So that there was Two Months Warning given, from *Sept. 24. to Novemb. 29:* the Day appointed for the Desponsories: And he submitted it to their Lordships, whether upon Inferences and Conjectures he should have overthrown so great a Business; or represent unto his Majesty, as he did, the true State of his Affairs, with his humble Opinion therein, and desire a clear and expresse Order in so great a Cause. And as to the evil Consequences which it's pretended would have follow'd, if the Earl had proceeded to the Consummation of the Match; his Majesty would have seen the Marriage he so long sought for, and the Prince had a worthy Lady, whom he loved; the Portion (being Two Millions) greater than ever was given in Money in *Christendom*, the King of *Spain* engaged for the Restitution of the *Palatinate*, the Prince no longer kept unmarried; the Difficulty of recovering the *Palatinate* by Force from the Emperor and the Duke of *Bavaria* avoided, Peace and Plenty given to his Majesty's Subjects and Crowns: The greatest Difference in *Christendom* com-

The Advantages of the *Spanish* Match.

pounded;

1626.

pounded, and the Shedding of much Christian Blood prevented.

11. To the Eleventh Article he said, That according to the Customs and Privileges of the House of Peers, the Petition complain'd of to be scandalous, should have been first adjudged so for Matter appearing in it self, or upon hearing the said Earl. He said, The Petition would not warrant such Inference as was by the Article inforced: Hop'd to justify the Contents thereof in such sort, as should not displease his Majesty, but what he said therein should tend to his Honour and Service.

Pray'd Allowance of the Parliament Pardon 21 Jac. and that their Lordships would be Suitors to his Majesty, that he might be restor'd to his Favour.

This Answer of the Earl contains so many Secrets of State, and such fit Matter for History, that tho' so very long, it could not well be omitted. The same Plea may be offered concerning the Commons Articles of Impeachment against *Buckingham*, deliver'd on the 8th of May at a Conference with the Lords, and managed by Sir *Dudley Diggs*, *Herbert*, *Selden*, *Glanville*, *Pym*, *Sherland*, *Wandesford* and Sir *J. Eliot*; *Diggs* began thus; That the Commons finding a great Interruption of Trade, the Pirates of *Spain* infesting our Coasts, taking our Ships and Goods, and leading the Subjects of this Kingdom into Captivity, while our Enemies besieged our Ports, and block'd up our Rivers Mouths; our Friends upon slight Pretences made Embargo's of our Merchant Goods, and every Nation ready to contemn and slight us; and calling to mind how formerly the Valour of this Kingdom had been better esteem'd, and even within Remembrance, when we had no Alliance with *France* and *Denmark*, no Friend in *Italy*, *Scotland* not united, *Ireland* unsettled, *Spain* as ambitious as now, the House of *Austria* as potent, and the *Low Countries* had no Being; yet by constant Councils, and Old English Conduct, the *Spanish* Pride was cool'd, the House of *Austria* resisted, and to the *United-Provinces* such a Beginning, Growth and Strength given, as gave Honour all over the Christian World. The Commons therefore debating the Causes of the Evils they now suffer, found them all to center in one Great

*Diggs's*  
Speech.

Man, the Duke of *Buckingham*. Thus said, he read 1626.  
 the Preamble to the Charge, viz. 'For the speedy  
 'Redress of great Evils and Mischiefs, and of the  
 'chief Cause of these Evils and Mischiefs which this  
 'Kingdom of *England* now grievously suffereth, and  
 'of late Years hath suffer'd, and to the Honour and  
 'and Safety of our Sovereign Lord the King, and of  
 'his Crown and Dignity, and to the Good and Wel-  
 'fare of his People, the Commons in the present Par-  
 'liament, by the Authority of our said Sovereign  
 'Lord the King assembled, do by this their Bill shew  
 'and declare against *George*, Duke, Marquess and Earl  
 'of *Buckingham*, Earl of *Coventry*, Viscount *Villiers*,  
 'Baron of *Woodston*, Great Admiral of the Kingdoms  
 'of *England* and *Ireland*, and of the Principality of  
 '*Wales*, and of the Dominions and Islands of the  
 'same, of the Towns of *Calais*, and of the Marches  
 'of the same, and of *Normandy*, *Gascoigne* and *Galliene*,  
 'General-Governour of the Seas and Ships of the said  
 'Kingdoms, Lieutenant-General, Admiral, Captain-  
 'General, and Governour of his Majesty's Royal  
 'Fleet and Army lately set forth, Master of the  
 'Horse of our Sovereign Lord the King, Lord War-  
 'den, Chancellor and Admiral of the *Cinque-Ports*,  
 'and of the Members thereof, Constable of *Dover*  
 'Castle, Justice in Eyre of all the Forests and Chases  
 'on this side of the River *Trent*, Constable of the  
 'Castle of *Windsor*, Gentleman of his Majesty's Bed-  
 'Chamber, one of his Majesty's most Honourable  
 'Council in his Realms of *England*, *Scotland* and *Ire-*  
 'land, and Knight of the most Honourable Order of  
 'the Garter; the Misdemeanors, Misprisions, Offences,  
 'Crimes, and other Matters comprised in the Articles  
 'following, and him the said Duke do accuse and  
 'impeach of the said Misdemeanors, Misprisions,  
 'Offences and Crimes.

Which done, he thus proceeded, That the lofty  
 Title of this mighty Man had raised his Spirits to  
 speak with a *Paulo majora canamus*: He compared this  
 Monarchy to the World, the Commons to the Earth  
 and Sea, the King to the Sun, their Lordships to the  
 fix'd Stars, the Great Officers to the Planets, the  
 Clergy to the Element of Fire, and the Judges and  
 Magistrates to the Air wherein we breathe; all which.

1626.

encompass round the Commons, who, tho' the lowest, are the settled Center of the State. Now if that Sun should draw from the Bowels of the Earth an Exhalation, that should burn and shine out like a Star, no Wonder if the poor Commons gaze at the Comet, and impute the Effects to the corruptible Matter of it: But if it should appear as that in *Cassiopeia* among the fix'd Stars, the Commons, when they saw such an exorbitant blazing Star, must recommend the nearer Examination of it to their Lordships, who beheld it at a nearer Distance; such a prodigious Comet is the Duke of *Buckingham*, against whom there were Articles, which he was commanded to lay open. 1. The Offices of this Kingdom had been engross'd, bought and sold, and many of the greatest holden in the Duke's Hands, whereby the Seas had been unguarded. Trade disturbed, Merchants oppress'd, and their Ships, nay, one of the King's, employ'd against those of our own Religion. 2. For Honours, formerly the Reward of eminent Services, when the Way to the Temple of Honour was thro' the Temple of Vertue, what Back-ways had been by that Duke found out? Nay, one Lord compell'd to purchase Honour. 3. As the Duke's poor Kindred had been raised to Honours, which had been burthensome to the Crown; so the King's Revenues had by the Duke and his Friends been exhausted and misemploy'd, and the ancient Way of accounting in the Exchequer overthrown. 4. The last of the Charges was an Injury offer'd to the Person of the late King, of which they should hear more anon. He said, He was commanded upon that Occasion to take Care of the Honour of the King that lived, and of the King that was dead, on whom the Duke did cast some ill Odor of his own foul Ways, and his own Faults upon his Master. And as for his present Majesty, whose Name had been used, and, perhaps, now might be for the Duke's Justification: His Piety to his Father had made him continue those Affections for the Duke which his Father had: And if he had had any Commands from the King, the Laws of *England* said, That Kings cannot command ill or unlawful Things, but the Executioners of them must answer for them.

Then



The Commons Articles against the Duke.  
Artic. 1.

Artic. 2.

Artic. 3.

Then were read the First, Second and Third Articles, *viz.* That whereas the great Offices expressed in the Duke's Stile and Title, had been heretofore the Preferments of several Persons of eminent Wisdom and Trust, and others were encouraged by the Hopes of Advancement; and divers of them severally required the Care and Attendance of one able Person: The Duke being young and unexperienced, had ingrossed the said Offices into his own Hands, to the Danger of the State, and Discouragement of others.

Whereas by the Law of this Kingdom it was provided, That if any Person gave or pay'd any Money or Reward for an Office touching or concerning the Administration or Execution of Justice, or the Keeping of any of his Majesty's Towns, Castles or Fortresses, being used and appointed for Places of Strength and Defence, he should be disabled to hold the said Office: The said Duke did in or about *January, 16 Jac.* give and pay to *Charles*, then Earl of *Nottingham*, for the Office of Great Admiral of *England, Ireland and Wales*, and for the Office of General-Governour of the Seas, and Ships of the said Kingdoms, and for the Surrender of the same 13000*l.* and granted an Annuity of 1000*l. per Annum* to the said Earl for his Life; and the said Offices were granted to the Duke for his Life, being Offices that touch and concern the Administration and Execution of Justice.

That the said Duke did in *Decemb. 22 Jac.* give and pay to *Edward*, late Lord *Zouch*, for the Offices of Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and Constable of *Dover Castle*, and for the Surrender of the same, 1000*l.* and granted him an Annuity of 500*l. per Annum* for his Life; and the said Offices were granted to the Duke for his Life: That of Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports* being an Office that touched and concerned the Administration and Execution of Justice; and that of Constable of *Dover Castle* being an Office that toucheth and concerneth the Keeping and Defence of the Town, Port and Castle of *Dover*, and had been appointed for a Place of Strength and Defence.

1626.

Enlarged  
by Mr.  
*Herbert.*

These Three Articles were enlarged by Mr. *Herbert*, who said, That in that vast Power of the Duke there was an unfortunate Complication of Danger and Mischief to the State, as having, if false, too much Opportunity to ruine the Kingdom, and if faithful, yet 'twas impossible he could execute so many Great Places: That there was a Price set upon the Walls and Gates of the Kingdom, which was forbidden by the Statute of 5 *Eliz.* 6. for that Reason, *That the Buying of such Offices necessarily introduces corrupt and insufficient Officers.* And in the Parliament 12 *E.* 4. it was declared, *That the Buyers bound themselves to be Extortioners.* And tho' there was no Penalty inflicted by any particular Law upon the Buyers, yet, as far as it subverted the Welfare and Safety of the People, it assumed the Nature of the highest Offences.

Artic. 4.

Then the Fourth and Fifth Articles were read, viz. That the said Duke, as Admiral and Governour of the Seas and Ships aforesaid, ought to have guarded the Seas, and when there wanted Men, Ships, Munition, or other Strength, to have acquainted the Privy-Council therewith, and procure Supply thereof from the King, or otherwise: But the Duke had ever since the Dissolution of the Two Treaties with *Spain* neglected the same, and had not safely kept the said Seas, whereby our Trade and Strength were decay'd, and the said Seas infested by Pirates, to the Loss of Ships, Goods and People, and the Dominion of the Sea like to be lost.

Artic. 5.

That about *Michaelmas* last, the Ship *St. Peter* of *Newhaven*, laden with Monies and Goods to the Value of 40000*l.* belonging to the Subjects of the *French* King, was taken by some of his Majesty's Ships, under the Command of the said Duke, and with her Goods and Lading brought into *Plimouth*, on Pretence they belong'd to the Subjects of the King of *Spain*; and *Cochineal*, Gold, Silver, Pearl, Jewels, Monies and Commodities to the Value of 20000*l.* were there taken out of the said Ship, and deliver'd into the Custody of *Gabriel Marsh*, Servant to the said Duke; and the said Ship, with the Residue of her Goods and Lading sent from thence into the River of *Thames*, and there detain'd, whereupon there was an

Ar-

Arrest of Two *English* Merchant Ships trading thither, and his Majesty in Council order'd the Re-delivery of the said Ship and Goods, and the Discharging thereof in the Court of Admiralty; and the said Court decreed, That the said Ship and Goods (except some particular Goods in the Decree mention'd) should be released: The Duke notwithstanding detain'd the said Monies and Goods taken out of the said Ship, as aforesaid, and without any new Proof or legal Proceeding by Colour of his Office as Admiral, caused the said Ship and Goods to be again arrested and detain'd.

These Two Articles were enlarged by Mr. Selden, who said, That the Seas of *England* and *Ireland* were committed to the Admiral as part of the Demesne and Possessions of the Crown of *England*. And tho' *Grotius* wrote of purpose to destroy all Dominion in the East-Sea, yet he speaks nothing against the Dominion of our *English* Seas, but expressly elsewhere said, That the utmost Limits of the Crown of *England* are the Shores of the Neighbouring Countries; the Guarding of these Seas being committed now to the Admiral by the Name of *Præfectus Marium & Admirallus*, but before *E. 1.* (under whom the word Admiral came in) by the Name of *Custos Maris*: And this *Præfectura* or *Custodia* binds him to the Observance of whatsoever conduceth to the Safeguard of the Seas.

1. In certifying Yearly to the King and Council the Forces of the King's and Merchants Ships, Owners Names, Number of Mariners. &c.
2. In showing the wants of Ships, with the Estimate of the Supply.
- And, 3. In personal attendance upon the Service of guarding the Seas.

In 7 *H. 4.* *Richard Cliderow* one of the Knights for *Kent*, being made one of the Admirals, it was agreed in Parliament, that *Robert Clifford* the other Knight should have the Voices of both, because the other must of necessity be absent. The Nature of the Offence of not guarding the Seas appears by the Consequences: 1. The Losses already shew'd. 2. The preventing of Trade. 3. The weakning of the Naval Strength. In 1 *Rich. 2.* the Commons ascribed the Weakning of the Kingdom to the Neglect of Chivalry, an eniment Vertue not regarded nor rewarded; and the Decay of Trade, since the Navy

1626. was grown weak. *Michael De la Pool* Lord-Chancellor was 2 R. 2. question'd in Parliament for mispending Subsidies given *pro salva custodia maris*: *William Duke of Suffolk* being Admiral, was for the same Fault banish'd: He instanced in several who had been put to death and confiscated for not safeguarding Towns, Castles and Forts, which is of the same Nature with not safeguarding the Seas. He said, the staying of the Ship the *St. Peter*, and detaining part of the Goods, was, 1. Against the Marine Laws; for Sentence against the King cannot be revoked without new Proof. 2. Against the Common Laws, whereby all Judges are bound to do right, notwithstanding any Command to the Contrary. 3. Against the Law of Nations, whereby the Subjects of other Nations in Amity with us ought to be well used, and permitted without Molestation. 4. Against the Laws of Merchants, which is to have *celerem justitiam*. He said the Consequences of this Offence were, 1. Damage to our Merchants in foreign Parts. 2. Discouragement to those that are subject to the Marine Jurisdiction. 3. An Example than might hereafter be brought to justify an absolute Authority in the Admiral. Lastly, He instanced in the Duke of *Suffolk*, who was (among other Offences) charged with applying to his own use Goods piratically taken, expressly against an Order of Council, whereunto his Hand was for their Restitution, and was in Parliament adjudged for Treason.

Artic. 6. Then the Sixth, Seventh and Eighth Articles were read, *viz.* That the said Duke in *February 21 Jac.* hearing of some good success the *East-India* Merchants had at *Ormuz*, endeavoured to draw from them some great Sum of Money, which they denying him, and they being then setting forth in the Course of their Trade Four Ships and Two Pinnaces laden with Merchandizes of very great Value; He moved the Lords in Parliament, Whether he should make stay of the said Ships, which were of great Burden? Which they approving of, he staid them accordingly. And the Company suing to him for a Release of their Ships and Pinnaces; he bid them set down the Reasons of their suit, and he would acquaint the House therewith; but in the mean time caused



caused a joint Action to be entred against them in the Court of Admiralty, in the Name of the late King and himself, for 15000*l.* taken piratically by some of the Captains of those Ships and pretended to be in the Companies Hands. Whereupon an Attachment issued out against them, the Duke protesting the Ships should not go unless they compounded with him; and when they urged him to their Release, his Answer was, That the then Parliament must first be moved. So the Merchants being in this perplexity, and in Danger of losing their Voyage, were forced to give him 10000*l.* which the Duke extorted from them by Colour of his Office, and upon a false pretence of Right.

That the said Duke, about the End of *July* last *Artic. 7.*  
*1 Car.* under colour of his Office of Admiral, procured the *Vanguard*, a principal Ship of his Majesty's Navy, then under the Command of Captain *John Pennington*, and Six other Merchant Ships of great Burden and Value belonging to the King's natural Subjects, to be conveyed over with all other Ordnance, Munition and Furniture, into the Ports of the Kingdom of *France*, that they might be put into the Hands of the *French* King: And by his Ministers and Agents, compelled the Masters and Owners, and without their Consent, to deliver the said Six Merchants Ships into the Possession and Power of the *French* King; and by the Duke's Compulsion, and under pretext of his said Power, as well the said Ship Royal, as the said Merchants Ships, were delivered to the *French* King, without sufficient Security or Caution for their re-delivery.

That the said Duke, contrary to the Purpose of *Artic. 8.*  
 his Majesty, and his Zeal for the True Religion, knowing that the said Ships were intended to be employed by the *French* King against those of the same Religion at *Rochel*, and elsewhere in *France*, did procure the said Ship Royal, and compel the said Six other Ships to be delivered unto the *French* King to be employed by him as aforesaid; and the said Ships were so employed accordingly: And yet the said Duke, in abuse of the Parliament held at *Oxford* in *August* last, did there declare before the Committee of both Houses, That the said Ships were not, nor should

1626. should be so employed against those of the said Religion.

Enlarged  
by Mr.  
*Glanville*

These Three Articles were aggravated by Mr. *Glanvil*, who said, The Sixth Article being a Charge different from the other Two, he would handle it by it self; but the other Two together, they being rather several Parts of one Charge than several Charges. As to the Sixth Article, he said, That in a Treaty 18 August 1684. between King *James* and King *Philip* the III. of *Spain*, it was agreed that there should be perfect Amity and Peace between the Two Kings, their Heirs and Successors, and their Subjects; and that either Party should abstain from all Depredations and Spoils, and if any should happen, Restitution should be made: That all Commissions of Reprizal and Mart should be revoked and void, and free Commerce should be between their Subjects. This Treaty continuing, his late Majesty King *James* by his Letters Patents of Septemb. 14. Anno 13 of his Reign, did grant to the *East-India* Company, That if they were justly provoked in the defence of their Persons, Goods or Ships, or for the Recovery of them, they might take the Persons, Ships, or Goods of any Prince or State, by whose Subjects they should sustain any Wrong or Loss; and some Years after, there being some Violence offered by the King of *Spain's* Subjects in the *East-India* to the *East-India* Company, the Company, considering the great Delay they should meet with if they should seek Redress in *Spain*, did, on pretence of the said Letters Patents, take some Goods of the *Portuguese* in the *East-Indies*, Subjects to the King of *Spain*; and afterwards some other Goods of the *Portuguese* were taken at *Ormuz* by Capt. *Blish*, Capt, *Wedel*, and others, being Servants, and in pay under the *East-India* Company.

In July 1623. Two Ships called the *Lion* and the *Fonas*, belonging to the *East-India* Company, arrived in the Downs from *Ormuz*, with Goods to the Value of 100000*l*. and the Duke pretending that most part of their Lading were piratically taken at Sea in the Parts about *Ormuz*, and that a Tenth, or some other great Share thereof, did belong to him as Admiral, there were divers Treaties between him and his Agents, and the Company, about the same. But the Company being advised by their Court.

Counſel, that no ſuch Share belonged to him, and therefore not complying with him, the ſaid Duke knowing the Company had then Four Ships and Two Pinnaces laden with *Spaniſh* Money and Merchandize, being with their Lading of above the Value of 100000 l. and ready to ſet ſail for a Voyage into the *East-Indies*, the firſt of *March* 21 *Jac.* and well knowing that if they did not ſet ſail about that time, or within Twenty Days after, their Voyage would be utterly loſt for that Year. the Reaſon whereof depends on the Winds called the *Manſounds*, which are conſtantly Six Months *eaſterly*, and Six Months *weſterly* every Year in thoſe Parts of *Africa*, about the Cape of *Bon Eſperance*; of which Winds all Ships going from hence to the *East-Indies* are to make their uſe by coming to the Cape in the proper Seaſon, and in ſo long and dangerous a Voyage it's no Diſcretion to ſtay the utmoſt time in going from hence; nor can the Lord Admiral of *England* be admitted to pretend himſelf ignorant of this Matter. The Duke knowing how great a Hindrance and loſs it would be to the Company, if their Ships and Pinnaces ſhould be ſtaid, did, on the firſt of *March* 1623. put their Lordſhips, ſitting in Parliament, in mind that ſpeedy Reſolution was neceſſary upon the Diſſolving of the Two Treaties with *Spain*, that we might not loſe the Benefit of the Spring; and thereupon moved that Houſe, whether he ſhould make ſtay of any of the Ships in the Ports, and particularly of the ſaid *East-India* Ships. Which Motion being approved of by the Houſe, who knew nothing of the Duke's Deſign (the ſame Motion being made the ſame Day in the Commons Houſe by Sir *Edward Seymour*, the Duke's Vice-Admiral for *Devon*) the Duke cauſed the Maſhal of the Admiralty to make ſtay of the ſaid Ships and Pinnaces; but tho' pretended to be for the Defence of the Realm, not any other Ship was then ſtaid. And upon the Companies Application to the Duke, he denied he had been the Cauſe of their ſtay, and bid them offer ſome Reaſons for their Releaſment, and he would acquaint the Houſe therewith. But failing in his main Deſign (Money) he procured the King's Advocate on the 10th of *March*, to make allegation in the Admiralty on his Behalf. That by ſeveral Examinations

1626.

minations it appear'd, that 150000 *l.* and more Piratically taken by Capt. *Blith* and Capt. *Wedel* about *Ormuz*, and elsewhere, were in the Possession of the Treasurers of the *East-India* Company, and a Warrant issued out of the Court of Admiralty for attatching the same in their Hands, which was done, and they admonished to bring the said 150000 *l.* into Court : So that the Company being violently prosecuted about it, and the Duke protesting the Ships should not go, unless they compounded with him ; and pretended the Parliament must be moved before they could be discharged ; and the Voyage being like to be lost ; the Company being thus intangled by the Duke, and overcome at last, was drawn to offer him 6000 *l.* which being rejected as a base Offer, they were drawn at length to offer him 10000 *l.* which at first he would not accept of, but at last did, and then got the said Order countermanded by the Lords, and crossed out of their Books ; and afterwards the 10000 *l.* was paid the Duke, and he suffer'd a colour'd Sentence in the Admiralty to be given against him for their Discharge, and seal'd a Release to the Company. But, for taking off all Aspersions from his Majesty, who, the Duke said at a Conference of both Houses, had 10000 *l.* in that Business ; 'tis true, that the Company being liable to be question'd about the said Monies and Goods which were taken from the *Portuguese* while the Peace continued, they gave his Majesty 10000 *l.* for his Pardon, which it well stood with his Honour to grant for that Sum ; and yet they found that 10000 *l.* also came to the Hands of Mr. *Olivier*, the Duke's Servant ; but it appear'd not that it ever came to the King's Use : And that Oppression fell upon the Company soon after what befel them in *Amboyna*, which might have moved a noble Mind rather to pity than punish them.

The Duke's Offence was his unjust Extorting of 10000 *l.* from the *East-India* Company against their Wills, by Colour of his Office. His Colour was, the Release of his pretended Right to the Tenth, or some other Share of Goods supposed to be Piratically taken at Sea ; but if such Pretence were unfound, it was a naked Bribe, and unjust Extortion. Now, 1. A Pretence of Right by the Duke would not ex-



cuse him. 10 R. 2. The Commons preferred divers Articles to the Lords in Parliament, against *Michael de la Pool* Earl of *Suffolk*. Lord Chancellor of *England*: One was, That he refused to give Livery to the Master of *St. Anthonies* of the Profits belonging to that Order, till he had entered into a Recognizance of 3000 *l.* for the Paiment of 100 *l.* per Annum to the Earl, and *John* his Son for their Lives. The Earl set forth a pretended Title in his Son to the Mastership of that Order; and alledged that he took the 100 *l.* per Annum as a Composition for his Right. In conclusion, the pretended Right of his Son not appearing just, the Offence remained single by it self, and was a Sale of Law and Justice: And the Earl for this, among the Rest, was sentenced and greatly punished. And of late the Earl of *Middlesex*, sometime Lord-Treasurer of *England*, being charged by the Commons before their Lordships in Parliament, for taking 500 *l.* of the Farmers of the Customs as a Bribe, for allowing such Security for payment of their Rent to his Majesty, which without such Reward he had refused to allow of; the Earl pretended that he had 1000 *l.* of them in all for a Release of his Claim to Four and Thirtieth Parts of that Farm. But it appearing upon Proof, that he had not any part of that Farm, it was 13 May 22 Jac. adjudged by their Lordships in Parliament, That the Earl for this, among other Things, should undergo many grievous Censures.

2. The Duke had no Title to any part of the Goods, if his own Allegation be true, that they were piratically taken, for no Share of such Goods belongs to the Admiral: For that, 1. by the Law of Nations, the Parties from whom they were taken ought to have Restitution. 2. And so they ought by the Laws of the Land, especially by 27 E. 3. 13. which provides, That if any Merchants, Privy or Stranger, be robbed upon the Sea, and the Goods come afterwards into this Realm, the Party should be restored to them: And in the Act of Parliament of E. 6. touching Sir *Thomas Seymour*, Lord-Admiral of *England*, he was charged, That he had converted to his own Use Goods Piratically taken, whereby he moved all all Christian Princes, by open War, to seek Remedy; and for that, among other Things, he was attainted of

1626. of High-Treason. But suppose the Duke had a Right in that Case, yet the Manner of seeking to recover it was an high Offence: 1. In making the most honourable House of Parliament an Instrument for his private Profit. 2. In arresting the Ships of Men not likely to flie, but able to answer his Suit, tho' the Ships had gone their Voyage. 3. In urging them so extremely to bring in such a Sum on a sudden. 4. In reducing the Company to that Strait, that it was as good for them to compound, tho' the Duke had no Title, as to defend their just Right.

As to the Seventh and Eighth Articles, which he handled but as Two severall Parts of one and the same Charge, he thus proceeded: There being in or about 22 *Jac.* a Treaty with the *French* King for a Marriage between the then King and Queen, and for entring into a War with the King of *Spain* and his Allies in *Italy* and the *Valtoline*; King *James* pass'd some Promise to the Marquess *D'Effiat*, the *French* Ambassador here, for lending some Ships to be employ'd by the *French* in that Service against *Genoua*, but not with the least Intent of employing them against the *Rochellers*, or any others of our Religion in *France*: And some of our Religion there having intimated, that the *French* King's true Design was to employ them against the *Rochellers*, our King grew so cautious, that he order'd the greater part of the Men should be *English*. And the Duke being Lord-Admiral, caused to be made ready for the Service of the *French* King, the *Vanguard*, a Ship of the Royal Navy, and Seven other Merchant Ships which he impress'd, being the *Great Neptune*, another of 450 Tuns, another of 350 Tuns, Three others, each of 300 Tuns, and another of 45 Tuns. About the same time a Contract was made by Sir *John Cook*, and other the Commissioners of the Navy, as on Behalf of his Majesty, for the said Ship the *Vanguard*, and on Behalf of the Captains, Masters and Owners of the said Seven Merchant Ships, but without their Privy or Direction, for the Service of the *French* King: And Sir *John Cook* drew the Instructions for the same, which were allow'd by the late King, wherein (as Sir *John Cook* alledged to the House of Commons) there was Care taken that the *Vanguard* should not serve

serve against *Rochel*, or those of our Religion, nor take in more *French* than she could master. But whether the Instructions were so for the Merchant Ships, appear'd not. Nevertheless, a Form of Articles, dated *March 25. 23 Jac.* were impressed, and made ready to be seal'd, without the Knowledge of the Captains, Masters and Owners of the Merchant Ships, between the said Marquess *D'Effiat* and the said several Owners, to this Effect, *viz.*

1. That their Ships, with a certain Number of Men for every of them limited, with their Ordnance, Munition, &c. should be ready for the *French King's* Service the 19th of *April* then next.
2. To be under a *French General* as Captain of each Ship.
3. To serve the *French King* against any but the King of *Great Britain*.
4. To take in as many Soldiers as they could carry.
5. To continue Six Months, or longer, in the Service, so it exceed not Eighteen Months.
6. The *French* to have the absolute Command in Fights and Voyages.
7. Every Owner shall have a Month's Freight in Hand, and Two Months more within Fifteen Days.
8. The Ships to be ready in a Form prescribed at the End of the Service.

The Owners, Captains, and Masters were suddenly pressed to seal these Articles, and were discharged of their Imprest for his Majesty, as being to serve the *French King*, and Three Months Pay was given them before-hand. But they question'd, 1. Against whom they should be employ'd? 2. What Foreign Power they were to take into their Ships? 3. What Security they should have for their Freight, and Re-delivery of their Ships? There were Instructions given Capt. *Pennington*, Captain of the *Vanguard*, for him and the whole Fleet (pretended to be private, but with a Design they should be divulged) not to serve against those of the Reform'd Religion, nor take in more *French Men* than they could master. Which was an Artifice of the Duke to draw the Ships into *France*, and to conceal the Matter in *England*; and (the Marquess *D'Effiat* having sealed one part) the Owners of the Ships were, by this cunning Contrivance, drawn to seal the other Parts of the said Articles; they presuming they should not be tied to the strict Performance thereof, for that the private Instructions were to

H h

the

1626. the contrary : And the Duke call'd the Companies  
 aboard, to go to such a Port as the *French* Ambassador  
 should appoint.

Thereupon Capt. *Pennington* being Admiral, in  
 May, 1625. went with the *Vanguard*, and Seven Mer-  
 chant Ships to *Diep*, where the Duke of *Montmorency*,  
 Admiral of *France*, would have put aboard each Ship  
 more *French* Soldiers than her proper Company could  
 master ; and told the Captains and Owners plainly,  
 they were to serve against *Rochel* : Whereunto they  
 shewing themselves averse, Chains of Gold and other  
 Rewards were offer'd to some of them ; which they  
 refused, all protesting they would take in no more  
*French* than they could command. And the Compa-  
 ny of the *Vanguard* by their Petition acquainting Capt.  
*Pennington* with this Overture to serve against *Rochel*,  
 he and the rest by a general Assent return'd back to  
 the *Downes* ; and from thence Capt. *Pennington* sent a  
 Letter to the Duke by one *Ingram*, with a Petition,  
 praying to be discharged of that Service ; and *Ingram*  
 saw the Duke read both Letter and Petition, whereby  
 he had full Notice of the Design of the *French*. And  
*James Moyer*, Captain of one of the Seven Ships, came  
 and inform'd the Lord *Conway* and Sir *John Cook* with  
 what had pass'd at *Diep*, who acquainted the Duke  
 therewith. Notwithstanding which the Lord *Con-*  
*way*, by the Duke's Means, sent a Letter to Capt. *Pen-*  
*nington*, dated *July* 10. 1625, signifying that his Ma-  
 jesty had left the Command of the Ships to the *French*  
 King, and that he should take in as many Men as  
 that King should please ; the King and Council in the  
 mean time knowing nothing of the Passages at *Diep*,  
 or of the Design for *Rochel* ; but thinking it had been  
 for *Genoua*, until some came from the Duke of *Roan*,  
 and other Protestants in *France* to solícite the Stay of  
 the Ships : To whom the Duke of *Buckingham* affirm-  
 ed, That his Master was obliged, and the Ships  
 should go. Afterwards, about *July* 15. 1625, there  
 was a Treaty at *Rocheſter* between the *French* Amba-  
 ssadors, and the said *James Moyer* and *Anthony Touchin*,  
 Captain of another of the Seven Ships, for them-  
 selves and the rest of the Captains and Masters, where  
 the Ambassadors offer'd *Moyer* and *Touchin* an Instru-  
 ment, purporting,

1. That



1. That the Captains and Companies should serve the *French King* against all but the King of *Great Britain*. 2. That the Ships should be warranted by the *French King* against all Hazards of Sea-Fight; and that should be confirm'd by good Caution in *London*, within Fifteen Days after the Delivery of the Ships. 3. That the *French King* might take any Men out of the Ships, but without any Diminution of Freight.

But *Moyer* and *Touchin* answer'd: 1. They would not serve against *Rochel*. 2. Nor send their Ships without good Warrant. 3. Nor without sufficient Security for their Freight and Re-delivery, they utterly refusing the Instrument. But the Duke being then at *Rocheſter*, commanded *Moyer* and the rest, before the Ambassadors, to obey the Lord *Conway's* Letter, and to return to *Diep* to serve the *French*, for ſo was the King's Pleasure; yet privately told them, The Security formerly offer'd or given by the Ambassador, was insufficient; and though they went to *Diep*, they might keep their Ships, till they had made their own Conditions. And the Ambassadors made *D'Effiat*, their Deputy, to contract with the Captains and Masters at *Diep*; and *D'Effiat* went over thither, whom the Duke instructed how to circumvent them there, and sent over with him his Secretary Mr. *Edward Nicholas* to procure them to deliver their Ships upon the Security offer'd at *Rocheſter*, who was very urgent with them therein; and to force them thereunto, *D'Effiat* entred a Protest and Suit there against the Captains and Masters upon their original Articles.

About *July 20.* the Captains and Masters came over again to *Diep*, where they found the Protest entred against them; and Mr. *Nicholas*, in the King's Name, vehemently preſs'd the Delivery of the Ships, which they refusing to do, Advertisement thereof was sent to the Duke of *Buckingham*: And, *July 27. 1625.* Sir *Ferdinando Gorge*, *Touchin*, *Moyer*, and the other Captains and Owners of the Seven Merchant Ships, expressed in Writing their Resolutions, not to quit their Ships till they had made their Conditions; and particularly pray'd, 1. To be free of the Protest. 2. To have Security by Money deposited in *London*, with-

1626.



out Revocation. 3: That before they deliver'd their Ships to a Foreign Prince, which concerned their very Lives, they might have a Warrant under the Great Seal. 4. That they were freed of their Bonds for not selling their Ordnance, for that the first Articles were wholly broken, and new Articles were to be made. This Writing being sent by Mr. *Basset Cole* to the Marquess *D'Effiat* at *Diep*, the Marquess shew'd him a Letter from the Duke of *Buckingham*, promising him he should have the Ships: And the next Day, *July 28. 1625.* Mr. *Nicholas* came on board the *Neptune*, and declared he was sent over by the Duke to procure the Delivery of the Ships, and craved the Captains and Masters Answer in Writing, whether they would conform to the Lord *Conway's* Letter, and to the Instrument prepared at *Rochester*: And Sir *Ferdinando Gorge*, the Captain, and the rest, declared in Writing, That they were willing to obey their King, but held not the Security offer'd at *Rochester* to be sufficient, and therefore refused to deliver their Ships without Caution by Merchants of *Paris* to be transferr'd to *London*, irrevocable, and such as might not be protected by Prerogative, and to have that under the Hands and Seals of both Kings. All this while our King and Council knew of nothing, but of the Pretence against *Genoua*, and believed all that had pass'd between the *French* and us had been done with full and good Caution: And the Captains and Masters finding themselves thus pressed by Mr. *Nicholas*, declared to the Marquess in Writing, That until they had Security they would not quit their Ships, and sent him a Valuation of them, and demanded a Performance of all they had proposed by Mr. *Nicholas*, save only for the Security by Money deposited. But *D'Effiat* relying on the Duke of *Buckingham's* Promises, would not consent to those Demands, but protracted the Time till he heard from the Duke: And a Letter coming to Court *July 28.* from one Mr. *Lar-king*, a Person employ'd under some Minister of ours in *France*, intimating, that the Peace was concluded with those of our Religion in *France*, and that within Fourteen Days the War would break out in *Italy*, with a Design upon *Genoua*, which (as was alledged) was confirm'd by the Ambassadors of *Savoy* and *Ve-*

*nice,*

nice; the Duke taking Advantage of this, drew the King the same Day to write a Letter to Captain Pennington, then in the *Downs*, commanding him to consign the *Vanguard* into the Hands of the Marquess D'Effiat, and by all forcible Means, even to Sinking, to compel the Seven Merchant Ships to put themselves into the Service of the *French King*. Whereupon, in the Beginning of *August*, Capt. Pennington went over again to *Diep*, carrying with him his Majesty's Letter, and certain Instructions from the Duke to Mr. Nicholas, who affirm'd he did nothing but what was warranted by the Duke's Instructions, which, if true, then the Duke was guilty of what was acted by Mr. Nicholas: And if there were any subsequent Assent of the Council, or any Counsellors of State, it was obtain'd only for a Colour, and by Misinformation, or by concealing the Truth. And Mr. Nicholas threatned the Captains and Masters of the Merchant Ships in such manner, telling them, It was as much as their Lives were worth if they deliver'd not their Ships to the *French*; that Two of them were resolv'd to have brought their Ships into the *Downs*, and to have fled themselves into *Holland*. When Capt. Pennington came to *Diep*, he deliver'd up the *Vanguard* to the *French King's* Use, and required the rest of the Fleet to do the same, shewing them his Majesty's Letter, which they all refused to do without Security for Re-delivery of their Ships; and weighing Anchor to be gone, Capt. Pennington shot at them, and forced them to yield; and he and the *French*, who now commanded the *Vanguard*, coming aboard them, and proposing the Town of *Diep* for Security, they all went ashore, except Sir Ferdinando Gorge, who, with the Ship the *Great Neptune*, adventured to come away; the rest accepted of the Security offer'd, viz. *August* 15. 1625. The Marquess D'Effiat promised, that the *French King*, within Fifteen Days after he had Possession of the said Ships, should give sufficient Caution in *London* for 213000 Livres, viz. 50000 *l.* at which the Ships were estimated; and the Commonalty of the Town of *Diep* bound the Goods of the said Commonalty, that such Security should be given in *London* accordingly: And the next Day the Marquess D'Effiat, as Ambassador,

1626. and by Virtue of a Deputation from the Duke of *Chevereux*, and Monsieur *Villocleer*, the Extraordinary Ambassador at *London*, by a publick Act promised the Captains and Owners to give sufficient Security in *London* within the Time limited for the said 213000 Livres. But the *English* Mariners being now to be discharged, the Freight formerly agreed on was to be paid but for Six Months; and if the Ships were to be used longer, the Freight was to be paid according to a new Agreement, and *D'Effiat* bound the Goods of himself, and the other Two Ambassadors for Performance; whereupon all the Seven Ships (except the *Great Neptune*, who was gone in Detestation of the Action) were deliver'd into the absolute Possession of the *French*, and not one of the *English* (except a Gunner) would stay to serve against the *Rochellers*. After which the Ambassador dealt earnestly with them for the Sale of their Ships, and Mr. *Nicholas*, at his Coming from *Diep*, received from him a Diamond Ring worth 50 *l.* and a Hat band, set with Sparks of Diamonds, worth 100 Marks; a small Reward, yet more than he deserved.

Capt. *Pennington* return'd for *England*, and came to *Oxford*, where the Parliament was sitting; and the Duke knowing all the Premises to be true, did not only conceal the same, but at a Conference of both Houses, August 6. 1625. boldly told them, That it was not always fit for Kings to give Account of their Counsels, and that above Five of the Six Months were already past, and yet the said Ships were not employ'd against *Rochel*, advising them to judge Things by the Event; whereby he highly abused the Lords and Commons, who did thereupon forbear petitioning the King for Redress; the Ships, tho' deliver'd to the *French* King, being not then actually employ'd against *Rochel*, Capt. *Pennington*, who could have discover'd the whole Truth, being in the mean time kept conceal'd by the Duke's Means in *Oxford*; and, August 12. the Parliament was dissolved. And about Sept. 25. the Ships were actually employ'd against the *Rochellers* and their Friends; it being reported by some of the *French*, that the *Vanguard* mow'd them down like Grass, to the Dishonour of our Nation, and Scandal of our Religion. If the Ships were



were come home since the Sitting of that Parliament, it had been procured by the Duke to colour the Matter; and the only *English* Man that stay'd and serv'd against the *Rockellers* was at his Return slain in charging a Piece of Ordnance.

In February, 1625. Monsieur de la Touche, a French Protestant, discoursing with Mr. Sherwell, a Member of the House of Commons, and repeating what the Duke had said to him the last Summer touching these Ships, thereupon used these Words, *Ce Duque est un meschant homme.*

In this Narrative of the Fact may be observ'd several Offences of the Duke; 1. Betraying a Ship of the Royal Navy into a Foreign Prince's Hands. 2. Dispossessing the Subjects of their Ships and Goods, first, by Subtilties, then by open Violence. 3. Breaking the Duty of Admiral and Guardian of the Ships and Seas. 4. Varying from his original good Instructions. 5. Violating the Duty of a sworn Privy-Counsellor. 6. Abusing both Houses of Parliament by a Misinformation. 7. Prejudicing the Affairs of those of our own Religion: Offences of an high Nature. By the Statute of 2 & 3 E. 6: it is recited, That the Duke of *Somerset* suffer'd not the Peers of *Newhaven* and *Blackerst* to be furnish'd with Victuals and Money, whereby the *French* were encouraged to invade and win the same; and for that Offence among others it was enacted, That a great part of the said Duke's Land should be taken from him. And if Non-feasance, tending to the Loss of a fix'd Castle, were an high Offence, the actual putting a Ship Royal (which was a moving and more useful Castle) into the Hands of a Foreign Prince, was a greater Offence. And as to his Abuse of the Parliament (the highest Court of Judicature) it was enacted by the Statute of *Westm.* 1. Cap. 30. That such as seem'd to beguile Courts of Justice should be fore-judged of the same Courts, and punish'd.

Then the Ninth and Tenth Articles were read, Artic. 9<sup>th</sup>. That the said Duke had enforced some that were rich (tho' unwilling) to purchase Honour, as the Lord R. Baron of T. who about Octob. 22 Jac. was by the Duke and his Agents drawn up to London, and so threatened and dealt with, that he paid 10000 l. to the

1626. Duke, and to his Use, for which the Duke, in Jan. after, procured him the Title of Baron R. of T.

Artic. 10. That the said Duke, about Decemb. 18 Jac. did procure of the said King the Office of High-Treasurer of England to the Lord Viscount M. for which the Duke received of him 20000 *l.* And, about Jan. 16 Jac. did procure of the said King the Office of Master of the Wards and Liveries to and for Sir L. C. afterwards Earl of M. for which the Duke had to his own Use, or to the Use of some other Person by him appointed, 6000 *l.*

The 9th, 10th and 11th Articles enlarged by Mr. Pym. These Articles, as also the Eleventh Article, were thus aggravated by Mr. Pym: He said, The matter of Fact was notorious, and he would only insist upon the Consequences: That, 1. The Duke had hereby committed a great Offence. 2. That this Offence hath produced a great Grievance to the Commonwealth. It was an Offence, because against his Duty, he being a sworn Servant and Counsellor to the King, whose Honour and Service he should have preferred before his own Interest and Pride: And great Men have been questioned in the like Cases; for some Laws there are which are coessential with Government, and such is that Rule of Suppressing Vice, and encouraging Virtue, by apt Punishments and Rewards; and this is a Law fittest to be insisted on in a Court of Parliament, where Matters are to be adjudged as they stand in opposition or conformity with *suprema Lex salus Populi*: That whoever moves the King to confer Honour, binds himself to make good a proportion of Merit in the Party: And as 'tis perpetual, and descending upon their Posterity, so there ought to be in the first Root of this Honour some such active Merit as might transmit a vigorous Example of Virtue to their Posterity. Honour is a Divine Thing, insomuch as a Temple was dedicated to her by the Romans. The Scripture calls Kings Gods, and then those that are about Kings must needs be resembled to those Powers and Principalities that attend next the Throne: And if Honour be Divine, it must not be bought with so base a Price as Money; but as it is a Publick thing, so it ought to be the Reward of publick Deserts. He said, This Sale of Honour, 1. Makes a Flower of the Crown cheap to all Beholders. 2. It takes

takes from the Crown the most frugal Way of rewarding Desert ; for when Honour comes to be sold, no great Man will look after it. 3. It's the Way to make Men more studious of Gain than of Vertue. 4. It confounds the Meaner with the more refined Metal. 5. It's a prodigious Scandal to this Nation (as the House of Commons think : ) For Precedents he was confident there were none ; but it's time to make this great Duke a Precedent, who thinks he cannot shine enough unless he dim their Lordships Honours by making them contemptible : That he must observe another step of Unworthiness in this Gentleman, that he hath compelled Men unwillingly to take Titles of Honour ; not but the House of Commons conceives that noble Person whom this concerns, was worthy of this Honour, if he had not come to it this way : And it seems strange to them, that this great Man, who is the principal Patron of a *Scmipelagian* and a Popish Faction, whose Tenets are Liberty of Free-will, should not admit of Liberty in Moral Things, but compel one to take Honour whether he will or no. If it be objected, That 5 H. 5. *Martin Babington*, and others called to be Serjeants, declined it, yet upon the Charge of the Warden of *England* they appeared to their Writs ; and that there is a Writ in the Register, that some by reason of their Tenures might be compelled to be made Knights : 'Tis true, that by the Common Law Men fit for Employment might be drawn forth for the Good of the Commonwealth ; but that any Man for his own Gain should force another to take Degrees of Honour, is without Example ; and why might he not as well compel him to take his Lands at what Price he will, or to marry his Children as it pleaseth him ?

As to the Tenth Article, he from the House of Commons said for his Majesty's Honour, That since his coming to the Crown, there have been Men of as great Parts and Learning advanced in Church and Commonwealth as heretofore. And for the first of the Lords named in this Article, they intend no Reflection on him, but think him worthy to have been advanced without any Price, and to have kept it longer: Now for the Matter of this Article, the sale of Places of Judicature ; *Magna Charta*, cap. 29. saith,  
Nulli

1626. *Nulli vendemus, nulli negabimus justitiam.* But if any use the King's Favour to procure Places of Judicature for Money, they make Justice it self saleable, for he that buys must sell: And the ill Consequences are these; 1. Unfit Men will be sure of being first preferred. 2. Suits will be increased, that their Profit might be increased. 3. Men will study for Money, not Learning. 4. The best Purfes, tho' the worst Causes, will always overcome. 5. They will make the best of their Places, *vis & modis*; and the great Man that sold them, must uphold them in their Bribery. 6. Good Men would be turned out of their Places, to make a Vacancy for a Purchaser. *Aristotle* in his *Ethicks*, Lib. 5. cap. 8. tells us, Among the *Thebans*, no Merchant was suffered to have any Place of Government, because they were used to buying and selling, lest they should sell Justice. Pope *Pius Quintus* made it confiscation of Goods to buy any Office; and he and Pope *Gregory* the 13th, condemned the Buyers to be great Sinners. The Statute of 5 H. 6. condemns the Seller as well as the Buyer. And by the Statute of 2 & 3 E. 6. one thing for which the Duke of *Somerset* was to forfeit his Estate was, for selling of Places for Money. And just it is, that they who pretend to be Patriots, and yet shew by their Actions that they aim at their own Lucre, should return into the Publick Treasury what they have unjustly gotten.

Artic. 11. Then the Eleventh and Twelfth Articles were read, *viz.* That the said Duke hath within Ten Years last past, procured the Title of Countess of *Buckingham* to his Mother, the Title of Earl of *A.* to his younger Brother *Christopher Villers*; the Title of Baron of *N. P.* Viscount *F.* and Earl of *D.* to his Sister's Husband Sir *W. F.* the Titles of Baron of *S.* and Viscount *P.* to Sir *John Villiers* elder Brother to the said Duke, and divers more of the like kind to his Kindred and Allies; whereby the said Persons being of small Estates, are like to be burthensome to the King, notwithstanding the Grants the Duke hath procured to support their Dignities.

Artic. 12. That the said Duke 14 Jac. did obtain a Grant of divers Mannors, Parcel of the Revenue of the Crown, to the Yearly Value of 1697*l.* 2*s.* 9*d.* ob. *q.* old Rent,

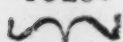
part



part whereof amounting to 747*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* was rated at 32000*l.* tho' of a far greater Value: And in 16*Fac.* procured divers other Mannors annexed to the Crown of the Yearly Value of 1200*l.* old Rent (*prout per Schedule* annexed.) In the Warrant for pailing which Lands he got unusual Clauses, *viz.* No Perquisites of Courts to be valued, and all Bailiffs Fees to be reprized; which Precedent to the Damage of the Crown others have since followed. And afterwards the Duke surrendred to his Majesty parcel of the said Mannors and Lands, to the Value of 723*l.* 18*s.* 2*d.* *ob. per Annum.* In consideration whereof he procured other Lands of the late King to be granted to several Persons, and hath caused Tallies to be struck for the Consideration Money in the Receipt of the *Exchequer*, as if it had come to his Majesty's Coffers, whereas the Duke hath received the same to his own use; besides other exceeding great Sums the Money of the late King (*prout per Schedule* annexed.) And hath obtained several Privy Seals from his late and his now Majesty, for the Payment of great Sums to Persons by him named, as if for secret Services, tho' for his own Use; and other Privy Seals for the Discharge of them, without accompt; and under Colour of free Gifts from his Majesty, hath gotten into his Hands great Sums intended for the furnishing and victualling the Royal Navy. By which means the ordinary Course of the *Exchequer* hath been broken, and such a Confusion and Mixture made between the King's Estate and the Duke's, as cannot be cleared by any Entries or Records. And 16 & 20 *Fac.* he procured several Releases from the said King of divers great Sums of Money by him received.

These Articles were enlarged by Mr. *Sherland*. He said, the Charge concerning Honours was double. 1. Perverting the ancient Course of attaining Honour. 2. Compelling Men unwilling to purchase Honour. He protested the House of Commons repined not at their Advancement, upon whom these Honours were conferred, but think them worthy, yet wish their Virtues had solely raised them; said, That if the Duke (as he alledges for himself) was not the first Introducer of this Trade and Commerce of Honour, yet he was the first who defiled this Virgin-Honour so  
The 11th and 12th Articles enlarged by Mr. *Sherland*.  
pub.

1626.



publickly ; and both the Nature of Honour, which is a Beam of Virtue, and the Subject of Honour, which is Merit, shew it is an Offence. He said, the selling of Titles of Honour is prejudicial.

1. To the Noble Barons of this Kingdom. The Baronage of *England* hath longer upheld that Dignity, and doth yet retain a greater Height than in any other Nation : They are a Court of the last Resort ; Counsellors of State, and Law-makers by Birth and Inheritance. And when a Man not qualified is admitted a Member, it's a Prejudice to the whole Body : As Water put into Wine, imparts to the Wine some of its infirmity and coldness.

2. To the King : For Honour when made ordinary, becomes an incompetent Reward for extraordinary Vertue.

3. To the Kingdom : The Barons were wont to be assistant in Foreign and Domestick Actions, in their Persons, and by their Retinue and Tenants, and are called by *Bracton*, *Robur Belli*. But how can they be so who have no Tenants, and are hardly able to maintain themselves ? And instead of assisting the State, are become a great Burden to it by Gifts and Pensions, and yet stand in need of more. This makes the Duke's Offence the greater, who not contented alone to consume the Publick Treasure, hath brought in others to help him ; for by enlarging their Honours, he hath enlarged their Necessities, and their Appetites. He cited Two Precedents ; the one 28 H. 6. where the Commons complained, That *William* Duke of *Suffolk* had procured one who had married his Niece to be made Earl of *Kendal*, and obtained from him 1000*l.* per Annum in the Dutchy of *Guyenne* ; and yet this was the Son of a Noble and deserving Father : What Punishment then is he worthy of that hath advanced so many ? The other 17 E. 4. *John Nevil* Marques *Montague* and Duke of *Bedford*, was degraded by Act of Parliament, because he had not a sufficient Revenue ; to which is added, that when Men of mean Birth and small Livelihood, are advanced to high Estate, it occasions Poverty, Briberies, Extortions, Imbraceries and Maintenance.

The

The Twelfth Article he divided into Two general Branches, one concerning Lands obtained from the Crown, the other concerning Money in Pensions, Gifts, Farms, and other Profits.

As to the Lands he observed, 1. 3035*l.* *per Annum* old Rent was granted to the Duke, besides the Forest of *Layfield*, of which they had no Value; nor can they find any Schedule of what was granted to him by the late King within Ten Years last past. He said it was a great Grievance, that in a Time of Necessity so much Land should be conveyed to one Man; and he wished, that when the King bestow'd any Lands for the Support of Honour, they might be annexed to the Dignity, as they were formerly, lest being wasted, the Party repair to the King for a new Support: For if the King's Revenues would not defray the Publick Necessities, the Commons must be the more Burdened.

2. He observed the unusual Clauses in the Warrants for passing those Lands; the casual Profits not to be rated, and the Bailiffs Fees to be reprised. He said, (1.) It was Ingratitude and Insatiableness in the Duke thus to strain the King's Bounty beyond his Intentions. (2.) It was Unfaithfulness in him, being a Privy-Counsellor, to put the King into a Course so prejudicial to him, by the Duke's concealing the Value of what he bought; and that Course had been ever since pursued in all Grants from the Crown, to the King's continual Loss. (3.) The King was thereby not left Master of his own Bounty; for the Quantity, perhaps, might be treble what he intended.

3. The Third Point was, the Surrender back to the King of part of these Lands, and taking others in Exchange, turning the worst upon the King's Hands, after he had sold the best and most vendible: So he might cut down Woods in Franchise, Copy-holds, and make long Leases; and yet when he came to surrender them, the old Rent might remain still: And the Mannor of G. in *Lincolnshire* was dismembred, and 17*l.* *per Annum* of the old Rents sold out of it, and then by a Surrender turn'd back upon the King.

4. The

1626.

4. The Tallies which he caused to be struck in the *Exchequer*, as if the Monies had really come to his Majesty's Use (tho' received by himself) amounted to 20563 *l.* 16 *s.* 8 *d.* Whence he observed, (1.) His Falshood to the King in this Particular. (2.) That was a Device to prevent the Parliament, they carrying the Face of Purchases for a valuable Consideration. (3.) If the Title of the Lands should be question'd, it appear'd by Record the King had the Money, his Majesty was bound in Honour to make Restitution. And if it were objected, That was the Purchasers Desire for their Security, there was the more Cause for an Act of Resumption.

In the Second general Branch of this Article concerning Money, he observed,

1. That the total Sum received by the Duke in Ten Years Space by free Gifts, Pensions to himself and others, to his Use, Profits of Farms, and by Offices, as the Admiralty and Mastership of the Horse (*prout per Schedule annex'd*) amounted to 162995 *l.* besides the Grant of what was made above 3000 *l.* *per Annum* of the Third upon Strangers Goods; and the Moiety of 7000 *l.* out of the Customs of *Ireland*, which he was to pay to the King, but whether paid was doubtful: Hereby the Commonwealth had been bereav'd of the Publick Treasure in a Time of great Want, when the Expences of the King's Court could hardly be supplied; his Houses and Castles were unfurnish'd, the Seas unguarded, and the Coasts subject to the Incursions of Enemies, thro' Want of Provisions for the Navy, which was within his own Charge.

2. The Duke had procured great Sums to be issued by Privy-Seals to others, on Pretence of secret Services, but to his own Use: As 8000 *l.* paid to Sir Robert Pye, 12 August, 1620. who paid it for the Duke's Purchase of *Burleigh*; and 60000 *l.* paid *Burlinmach* in *Septemb.* 1625. when the Parliament at *Oxford* was broke up a little before for not supplying the King. He left it to their Lordships Considerations, whether that Offence had not Affinity with *Crimen Peculatus* in the Civil Law, where a Man converts the publick Money to his own Use, which was Death and Confiscation of Estate, as it was for Money dedicated to God

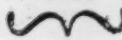


God and Religion; or with that the Civilians call *Crimen falsi*, where a Man should *Imitatione veri suum commodum alieno dispendio per dolum facere*, which in a bond Man was Death, in another Banishment and Confiscation; or whether their Lordships would estimate, according to the Sentences given in the *Star-Chamber* in Cases of Fraud, or as *Covin* at the Common Law; or measure it by that Judgment the Duke had pass'd against himself in the Guilt of his own Conscience, by Subtilty, concealing his own Injustice and Fraud, and his Majesty's Bounty, as if he durst not avow the Receipt of what he had not merited.

3. He had received several Sums intended for Maintenance of the Navy, whereof there were Two Instances, one of 20000 *l.* the other of 30000 *l.* both in *January*, 1624. By the Privy-Seal they appear'd to be free Gifts, and then were to be added to the former Total of his Gain; but, as was alledged for the Duke, he was only the Head to convey them to the Treasurer of the Navy. If so, the King had no Means by matter of Record to charge the Treasurer of the Navy, and might lose the Benefit of the Statute of 13 *Eliz.* which made the Lands of the King's Accomptants liable to the Debt.

4. He had caused such a Mixture and Confusion between the King's Estate and his own, that they could not be distinguish'd by the Records and Entries in the *Exchequer*. And whereas there were Three Guards set upon the King's Treasure and Accompts; (1.) A legal Impignoration, whereby the Accomptants Estates were liable; (2.) An apt Controlment over every Office; (3.) A durable Evidence and Certainty; for the King could never receive or pay but by Record: The Duke had broken thro' every one of them.

5. He procured Two Privy-Seals, the one 16 *fac.* the other 20 *fac.* whereby divers Sums secretly received by him to his Majesty's Use, were releas'd; wherein his Subtilty might be observed to get that by Degrees, which, perhaps, might not be obtain'd at once; first to wind himself into the King's Money, and then to procure a Release of it. And there were several other Instances which were in the Schedule, tho' not in the Charge; as 20000 *l.* received in Com-  
position

1626.  position for the Earl of M. his Fine, which could not be discover'd whether the Duke had part or all, tho' it appear'd by a Privy-Seal it was all intended for the King's Household and Wardrobe. Another was, his Endeavour to get the Money for Prize-Goods into his Hands, which he would have had received by his Man *Gabriel Marsh*, who was so ill an Accomptant, that he confess'd in the House of Commons, that by Authority from the Duke he received divers Bags of Gold and Silver out of the *St. Peter of Newhaven*, which he never told: But this failing, Sir *William Ruffel* was the Person entrusted by the Duke.

6. The last Point upon the Charge, was the Reduction of the Value of the Land, together with the Money, into one Total. Now, rating the Land at Forty Years Purchase (which was an easie Medium, for tho' some part of it was sold for Thirty, yet the other part was worth more than a Hundred Years Purchase) 3035 *l. per Annum* amounted at that Rate to 121400 *l.* which being added to the Money receiv'd, viz. 160995 *l.* both together made the Sum of 284395 *l.* besides the Forest of *Leyfield*, and Profit made out of the Thirds of Strangers Goods, and the Moiety of the Profit made out of the Customs of *Ireland*: A great Sum, but much greater by its Circumstance, so much of the Publick Money having never before come into any private Man's Hands, the King never having so much Want, nor the Subjects ever given greater Supplies, and yet not sufficient: And yet but a small Sum, if compared with the Gain he had made by the Sale of Honours and Offices, and Projects in *England* and *Ireland*, hurtful to the State, or with his own Profusion: for he confess'd before both Houses, that he was indebted 100000 *l.*

He cited Three Precedents;

1. That of *Mich. de la Pool*, Earl of *Suffolk*, 10 R. 2. who was complain'd of, for that (1.) being Chancellor, and sworn to the King's Profit, he had purchased Lands from the King at an under Rate, and more than he had deserved. (2.) He had bought of one *Tydmann* an Annuity of 500 *l. per Annum*, which Grant being void, he procured the King to make it good by a new Grant: (3.) He took the Possessions of the Master of *St. Anthony* (who had forfeited them

to the King) in Farm at 20 Marks *per Annum*, converting the Overplus (1000 Marks *per Annum*) to his own Use. 1626.

2. That of *Robert de Vere* of *Oxford*, 11 R. 2. accused for taking Mannors and Lands annexed to the Crown, and for intercepting Subsidies granted for defence of the Kingdom.

3. That of *William de la Pool* Duke of *Suffolk* 23 H. 6. who was accused, for that he being of Counsel to the King, had procured him to grant great Possessions to divers Persons, whereby the King was impoverished, the Debts unpaid, his Revenues diminished, and the Commons extreamely charged; and for that the King's Treasure was distributed to himself and his Friends: For which Offences (among others) the said Three Persons had Judgments.

Lastly, The Thirteenth Article was read, *viz.* Artic. 13.  
Whereas nothing of Physick or Diet ought to be administered to the Kings of this Realm in their Sickness, without the Consent and Direction of some of their sworn Physicians, Apothecaries or Surgeons: And whereas the sworn Physicians of his late Majesty King *James*, and in the Time of his Sickness, being an Ague, did give Directions, that nothing should be applied or given to him, by way of Physick or Diet, but by their Advice and Consent; and warned the Gentlemen, Servants and Officers of his said Majesty's Bed-Chamber, That no Meat or Drink should be given him within Two or Three Hours next before the usual Time of the coming of his Fit, nor till his cold Fit were passed: Yet the Duke, being a sworn Servant of his said Majesty in his Bed-Chamber, without the Privy of the said Physicians, when his said Majesty was in the Declination of his Disease, caused certain Plaisters to be applied to his said Majesty's Breast and Wrists and a certain Drink or Potion to be given him within Two Hours before the coming of his Fit, and before his cold Fit was passed, of which he drank divers quantities by the said Duke's procurement, tho' neither Plaisters or Drink were prepared by any of his said Majesty's Apothecaries or Surgeons, and the like Plaisters having been formerly applyed to his said Majesty had produced ill Effects: After which Plaisters and Drink applyed and given

1626. to his said Majesty by the Duke's procurement, great Distempers and ill Symptoms appeared upon his said Majesty; who finding himself much worse after his then Fit, did attribute the Cause thereof to the said Plaister and Drink; which adventurous Act accompanied with so unhappy an Event, was an Offence of transcendent Presumption, and of dangerous consequence.

Enlarged  
by Mr.  
*Wandesford.*

This Article was enlarged by Mr. *Wandesford*: He commended the Providence of that Law which makes it penal for Empyricks and others to practise Physick without due Approbation; he said, the ill Effects the first Medicine wrought should have dissuaded a Second adventure, especially being contrary to the Directions of sworn Physicians present: This would make a Man guilty in the Case of a common Person, much more of a King, whose Person is so sacred, that in an attempt upon him, Madness, which towards his fellow Subject would acquaint him of Felony, shall not excuse him of Treason. 32 H. 6. The King's Physicians and Chirurgeons scrupled to administer any thing to him without the Assent of the Privy-Council, and a Licence under the Great-Seal. This Plaister found his Majesty in the Declination of his Disease, but Drougths, Raving, Fainting, and an intermitting Pulse soon followed: Strange Effects of a Treacle Plaister; but it had a Strange smell, and struck the Malignity of the Disease inwards: The Drink was twice given him by the Duke's Hands, and the Third Time refused; and when the Physicians, to please him, pretended his Relapse proceeded from some ordinary Cause, No, no, said the King, *'tis that I had from Buckingham*. It was an Article against the Duke of *Somerset*, that he carried *Edward the Sixth* in the Night-Time from *Hampton-Court* to *Wind-sor*. He said this was an unlawful Act in the Duke, being a young Lord and no Physician: And if a Man in the Execution of an unlawful Act kills another, that makes it Manlaughter, which might otherwise have been but Chance-meddly. And *Bracton* said, if a Man who is no Physician or Chirurgeon undertake a Cure, and the Party die under his Hands, 'tis Felony. He concluded, That seeing the Duke had made himself a Precedent, the House of Commons hoped



hoped their Lordships would make him an Example.

1626.

Sir *John Elliot* made the Epilogue to the Impeachment: He said, their Lordships had heard the Commons Apprehension of the Evils and Dangers, and of the Causes of them, and their Application of them to Duke of *Buckingham*; his Ambition in getting the greatest Offices of Strength and Power into his Hands. There needed no other Proof than the Miseries they suffer'd, and the Regality of their Seas lost or impeached. From hence his Observation must descend to his other Vertues: First, He propos'd the inward Character of the Duke's Mind, full of Collusion and Deceit; nor could he express him better than by the Beast call'd *Stellionatus*, a Beast so blur'd, so spotted, so full of foul Lines, that they knew not what to make of it. Such was that Man, who first drew our Merchants to *Diep* to be inthrall'd, then dealt deceitfully with the King, in his Design against *Rochel* and the Reform'd Religion; and then with the Parliament, to disguise his Actions. Next he presented to 'em his high Oppression, not of Men alone, but Laws, Statutes, Acts of Council, Pleas and Decrees of Court; nay, the Pleasure of his Majesty, all must stoop to him: That appear'd by the Ship *St. Peter*, and those at *Diep*; nay, he used the King's great Name to shadow his Design: It had been his Duty not to put them into the Hands of Strangers; and if the King had yielded, to have oppos'd it, and made known to his Majesty the Inconveniences likely to ensue, and to have reported it to their Lordships in Council, and pray'd their Aid, and if that fail'd, to have protested against it: He said, He heard the Ships were return'd, tho' he knew it not; but if he did, that neither excused nor qualified the Duke's Offence; the *French* only being in that Case to be commended. The next Thing was his extorting 10000 *l.* of the *East-India* Company, when if the Ships gain'd not the Wind by such a Time at the Cape, the Voyage was lost. Here a Lord saying, It was the King that employ'd him, he protested in the Name of the Commons, it was far from them to lay any *Odium* or Asperision on his Majesty's Name, they holding his Honour spotless in that Business. He said, The next Thing was his

Sir *John Elliot's* Epilogue to the Impeachment.

1626.



Bribery and Corruption in the Sale of Honours and Offices ; that which was wont to be the Crown of Vertue and Merit being now become Merchandize : He said, It was a Wonder how that Man, so notorious in Evil, so dangerous to the State, was able to subsist ; but he had used the Help of Art to prop him up ; he had raised a Party in the Court, the Country, and the chief Places of Government, and had drawn to himself the whole Power of the Kingdom : He had exhausted and consumed the Revenues of the Crown to satisfy the Luxury of himself and others ; infinite Sums of Money and a Mass of Land had been heap'd upon him, and how employ'd ? Upon costly Furniture, sumptuous Feasting, and magnificent Buildings. His Attempts went higher to the Prejudice of his Sovereign : The Effects (he said) he fear'd to speak or think, but would conclude this Passage in the Words of Cicero, *Ne gravioribus utar verbis quam rei natura fert, aut levioribus quam causa necessitas postulat.* He said, Their Lordships had an Idea of the Man : In Reference to the King, he was the Canker in his Treasure ; in Reference to the State, the Moth of all Goodness : None so like him as *Sejanus*, who is thus described by *Tacitus*, *Audax sui obtegens, in alios Criminator, juxta adulator & superbus.* To say nothing of his Veneries and Calumnations : For his Pride and Flattery, it is noted of *Sejanus*, that he did *Clientes suos Provinciis adornare* : Did not that Man the like ? *Sejanus* neglected all Counsel, mix'd his Actions with those of the Prince, and was often stiled, *Imperatoris laborum socius.* How often had that Man done so ? He said, Their Lordships saw the Man, and the Commons conceived, that by him came all those Evils, in him they found the Cause, and on him they expected the Remedies. He concluded with the Censure of the Bishop of *Ely*, 11 R. 1. His Faults were, 1. Luxury. 2. He married his Kindred to the greatest Personages. 3. No Business was done without him. 4. He would not suffer the King's Council to advise him. 5. So proud, no Man could speak to him. 6. His Forts and Castles he did *obscuris & ignotis Hominibus tradere* : His Doom was, *Per totam Insulam publice proclamatur, pereat qui perdere cuncta festinat, opprimatur ne omnes opprimat.*

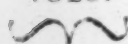
Sir

Sir Dudley Diggs who made the Prologue, and 1626.  
Sir John Elliot the Epilogue, being both by the King's Command committed to the Tower.

This done, he vindicates it in a Speech to the Lords, while the Commons insist upon having the Duke confined, and growing discontented upon the Imprisonment of their Members, and the Offence taken by the King at what they said in impeaching the Duke, resolved to proceed in no other Business till they were righted. The Two Members being not long after set at Liberty, this made the Commons a little easie: But the Lords at this Time having much the same Cause of Complaint, that the King had committed the Earl of Arundel to the Tower in the Time of this Parliament, without expressing any Cause, they resolv'd, That no Lord of Parliament, the Parliament sitting, or within the usual Times of Privilege, was to be imprison'd or restrain'd, without Sentence or Decree of the House, unless for Treason, Felony, or refusing to give Surety for the Peace. Several Petitions they presented to the King hereupon, without receiving any satisfactory Answer; but at length the Earl's Restraint being taken off, the Matter there rested. Now the Duke of Buckingham having been chosen Chancellor of Cambridge during his Impeachment, the Commons took it ill, and writing a Letter to the University, expressing their Dislike thereof, this embroil'd them a little more with the King. But we come now to the Duke's Answer to the Impeachment, who before he gave it in spake to the Lords thus: He acknowledged their Lordships Favour in leaving him to his Choice, whether he would answer to the Particulars of the Aggravation, or not; but it might be their or their Posterities Advantage hereafter: That he had in a manner tied himself to the Charge, hoping that if he gave Satisfaction in that, the Aggravations would fall of themselves; nor could he well have followed the Aggravations, being composed of Words his Actions had not deserved, yet he had left nothing of them unanswered that was material. He was grieved that his Business should be a Cause of the Loss of this Year from Foreign Attempts; said, the House of Commons did not vote against him unanimously; but there had been such Contest there concerning his

The  
Duke's  
Speech  
before he  
gave in  
his An-  
swer.

1626.



Justification, that he could not but acknowledge much Favour from many of them : That for the present he should only apply himself to the clearing of his Reputation : For who accus'd him ? Common Fame. Who gave him up to their Lordships ? The House of Commons. The one was too subtle, the other too great for him to contest with : And he was confident, when his Cause was tried, neither of them would be found his Enemy. But Common Fame, as 'twas subtle, so 'twas often false, and it would be found at length, that it had abused both the House of Commons and him. He presumed, that House proceeded against him out of Zeal to their King and Country, and to punish and amend his Faults (if Fame could have proved them) not to destroy his Fortune. He confessed, he had been raised beyond his Merits ; but what he wanted in Sufficiency and Experience, he had endeavoured to supply by Care and Industry, and his Heart had not been alienated from the Service of the State for any thing that had pass'd.

His Answer and Plea to the Impeachment was to this Effect :

His Answer and Plea.

That he found in himself an unexpressible Sorrow, that so great and worthy a Body as the House of Commons should suspect him guilty of those Things which were objected against him ; but the Integrity of his own Heart and Conscience not accusing him of the least Thought of Disloyalty to his Sovereign or his Country, raised his Spirits again to make his just Defence before their Lordships.

1. To the First Article he answer'd, That there were but Three Places enumerated in the Preamble of that Charge, which were worthy the Names of Offices, *viz.* The Admiralty, the Wardenship of the *Cinque-Ports*, and Mastership of the Horse, the rest being Titular only. He acknowledged the Bounty of his late Master, who was more forward to give them, than he to ask them, he bestowing them (all but that of the *Cinque Ports*) of his own Royal Motion, and to that also he gave his Approbation. He denied, he obtain'd those Offices to satisfy his Ambition or Desire of Gain. How he came by the Admiralty and Wardenship would appear by his Answer ; and the Mastership of the Horse was a meer Domestick Attendance

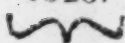


dance upon the King's Person, whereby he received some Profit, but had considerably retrenched the King's annual Charge; hoped, that if the Commonwealth suffer'd not by the Number of Places he held, he might enjoy what his Master conferr'd upon him, and he was not the first that had held as many and as great Offices: But if he dealt falsely or corruptly, or the Publick suffer'd, he would lay them down at his Master's Feet.

2. To the Second Article he answer'd, That the Earl of *Nottingham*, Lord Admiral, being stricken in Years, and often petitioning the late King he might surrender that Office; in some of which Petitions he named him (the Duke) for his Successor: And a Gentleman of long Experience first moving him (the Duke) and then the late King, that the Duke might succeed him, as a Person who by his Nearness about the King might be serviceable to the Affairs of the Navy; the King perswaded the Duke to take the Charge upon him, and the Earl of *Nottingham* surrendering the said Office freely, it was in *Jan. 16 Jac.* granted to the Duke without any Contract or Bargain with the Lord Admiral, or any other, and so out of the Statute of *E. 6.* That his Majesty (according to the usual Way of Princes to their ancient and well-deserving Servants) did, as a Recompence of the Earl's faithful Services, grant him a Pension of 1000*l.* *per Annum* for his Life: And the Duke, as an Argument of his Respect to so honourable a Predecessor, and with the King's Approbation, sent him 3000*l.* in Money, which no Person of Worth and Honour would esteem to be worthy of Blame: That at his Request the King granted a Commission to several able Persons to assist him in the Affairs of his Navy, without whose Advice he had done nothing of Moment: That the Charge of the Navy was 54000*l.* *per Annum*, which he reduced to 30000*l.* *per Annum*, and yet built Two new Ships yearly, and since no new Ships were built, to 21600*l.* *per Annum*, and the Navy in better Condition than ever.

3. To the Third Article he answer'd, That the Lord *Zouch*, Lord Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and Constable of *Dover* Castle (being one entire Office) making several Offers thereof to the Duke of *Rich-*

1626.



*mond*, and *Richard*, Earl of *Dorset*, and at length to him (the Duke) he consider'd the many Inconveniences that happen'd by Intermixture of the Jurisdctions of the Admiralty and Wardenship of the *Cinque-Ports*, thro' the Emulation and Contention of their Officers, in the following and other Particulars : As, 1. The Admiral's Jurisdiction extended to all the narrow Seas, and the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports* had Admiral-Jurisdiction on all the Sea-Coasts from *Show-Beacon* in *Essex*, to the *Rednoor* in *Suffex* ; and there had been continual Differences between them, how far into the Sea the Lord Warden's Jurisdiction extended. 2. Differences arose between the Officers of each in executing Warrants. 3. Owners of Goods were often enforced to sue in both Courts, and to compound with both Officers. 4. The *Downs*, being within the Jurisdiction of the Warden, the Admiral had no Power to press Men from the Shore, if the King's Ships were in Distress. 5. When any Ships were in Danger on the *Goodwin*, the Portsmen refused to help with their Boats, lest the King's Ships should command them on Board. 6. If a Warrant came from the Warden to press a Ship at Road for the King's Service, they would pretend the Ship to be out of his Jurisdiction ; if from the Admiral, they pretended she was within the *Cinque-Ports*. 7. The Officers refused to assist the Captains of the King's Ships to reduce their Men aboard (when on Shore) without the Warden's Warrant. 8. The Portsmen would not pilot the King's Ships without the Warden's or his Lieutenant's Warrant. 9. When the Admiral and Warden must join their Authority, the Officers, for want of understanding their several Limits, mistake their Warrants.

For these and such like Reasons (and not out of Ambition, for he had a greater Place before ; nor for Gain, it never having yielded him any thing as yet, nor never was like to yield above 300 *l. per Annum*) he confess'd, that he not knowing of the said Act of Parliament, agreed to give 1000 *l.* in Money, and 500 *l. per Annum* to the Lord *Zouch* for his Surrender, which was the same Consideration the Duke of *Richmond* was to have given, if he had lived. And his late Majesty bid the Duke go through with it, and he would

would repay the Money; and in *Decemb. 22 Jac.* 1626. the said Offices of Lord Warden and Constable were granted to him: But how far that might be within the Danger of the Law, the King encouraging and directing it, he submitted to their Judgment; nor was it without Precedent that these Offices had been in one Hand.

4. To the Fourth Article he answer'd, That the Loss which had happen'd by Pirates and Enemies had not been occasion'd by his Neglect: For whereas heretofore the ordinary Guard for the narrow Seas was but Four of the King's Ships, there had been since *Jan. 24. 1624.* no less than Five, and ordinarily Six, besides Pinnances, Merchant Ships and Drumblers, and since open Hostility, Eight of the King's Ships, besides other sorts: That he had from time to time acquainted his Majesty and the Council therewith: That *Dunkirk* was block'd up by our Ships and the *Hollanders*; but they being dispersed by a Storm, the *Dunkirkers* got abroad; yet would not endure the Sight of our Ships, who could not come at them, they being built for Flight, as well as Fight; but we had some Ships building of that Model, to meet with them in their own Way: And as for the Pirates of *Sally*, there was Care taken either by Force or Treaty to repress them.

5. To the Fifth Article he answer'd, That about *September* last the *St. Peter*, and other Ships, were taken by the King's Ships, and brought into *Plymouth*, as laden by the Subjects of *Spain*, and afterwards to the *Tower of London*, and there unladen, except the *St. Peter*, the Bulk of whose Goods were not stirred, because challenged by the Subjects of *France*: And in *December* upon the Complaint of some *French* Men at the Council-Board, his Majesty there ordered the said Ship *St. Peter*, and the Goods in her, which belonged to the Subjects of his Majesty the *French* King, or *United-Provinces*, or of any other Prince or State in Amity with us, should be delivered (not absolutely, as the Charge supposeth, but) so as they were not fraudulently coloured: And in *January* there was a Sentence in the Admiralty that she should be discharged, to which the King's Advocate for want of further Proof consented, which was but an interlocutory not a Definitive

1626.

But when the Ship was preparing to be gone, there came fresh Intelligence to the Duke, that that Ship and the others were laden by the Subjects of the King of *Spain* in *Spain*; and that the *Amirantasco* convoyed them beyond the *North Cape*. The Duke acquainted the King herewith, and having by his Command made stay of the *St. Peter*, lest she should be gone, sent for the Judge of the Admiralty, to know how far the Sentence already past did bind, who took time to consider of it, and review the Acts of Court; and a Day or Two after resolutely answered, The Ship and Goods might be justly staid, if the Proofs came up to the Information: And the King's Advocate, and Five other learned Advocates concurr'd in Opinion with him; and many Witnesses were examin'd in pursuance of this new Information; but the *French* Merchants complaining again to the Council-Board, the Ship and Goods were ordered to be deliver'd, not Barely, but upon Security; but none was ever given, and the Proofs falling short, she was with the Duke's consent finally discharg'd by the Court. He said, there was nothing remov'd out of the Ship but some Money, and some small Boxes of Stones of very mean value, and other little portable Things lying above the Deck, easie to be imbezeld: And whatsoever was taken out of the Ship was first shewed to his Majesty, and then committed by Inventory to the Custody of *Gabriel Marsh*, Marshal of the Admiralty, whereof the Money was imploy'd for the King's immediate Service, and by his Direction, and the Rest had been restor'd to the owners; nor was this Accident the Cause of the *Imbargo* in *France*, for that began before this happened; nor could an *Imbargo* upon such an occasion have been warrantable, but was contrary to the Articles between the Two King's whereby there is to be a legal Complaint and a Denial, and then by way of Reprisal, not by *Imbargo*.

6. To the Sixth Article, he said he would give a plain Narrative of the Fact, *viz.* About the End of *Michaelmas* Term 1623. he being informed that the *East-India* Company had made great advantages by rich Prizes gotten from the *Portuguese* and others in the Seas of *East-India*, and others Parts of *Asia* and *Africa*; and that a large Part thereof belonged to his Majesty,

and



and him (the Duke) as Admiral: Directions were given for a legal Prosecution in the Court of Admiralty, and divers Witnesses being examined there, an Action was commenced in that Court in the joint Names of his Majesty and the Admiral for 15000*l.* it being doubtful to Counsel, whether it belonged to the one or the other, or both: And *April* 28. 1624. a judicial Agreement and Sentence passed, wherein the Company's Consent, and their Offer appear; so that it were hard to conclude the Duke had no right, contrary to the Company's own Consent, and the Sentence of the Court, unless it appear'd the Company were enforced thereunto. He prayed them to observe the Suit in the Admiralty began divers Months before it was first mentioned in Parliament. The Composition made with the Company was mov'd by the King not by the Duke, and the King and not he treated with them: The Company were willing to give so much rather than hazard the Success of the Suit; and upon that Composition they obtain'd a Pardon. He said the Motion in Parliament for the stay of the Ships, was out of a real Apprehension there would be need of them for the publick Defence: That the Motion made in the Commons House was without his (the Duke's) Privy: That when there was a Rumour that the Duke had drawn on the Composition by staying the Ships, he was so offended thereat, that he would have had the Treaty broken off, and proceeded in a legal Course, had not the Company intreated him to the contrary, and (tho' the Ships were gone) solicited the Dispatch of the Composition, and when the Money was paid to the Duke, all but 200*l.* was borrow'd by the King for the Service of the Navy.

7. To the Seventh Article he said, That it was so mix'd with Actions of great Princes, that he durst not publish every Passage thereof; but in general saith, the Ships were lent without his Privy; and when he knew it, he did that which became an Admiral of *England*, and a true *English* Man; denied he did by any undue Practice by himself or others, deliver those Ships into the Hands of the *French* King; nor was there any thing intended thereby dishonourable or dangerous to the State, or prejudicial to those interested in the Ships, nor would it have been

1626. been offensive to any, had others observ'd their Promises.

[*Note*, That since the Duke's Answer deliver'd into the House, he declar'd to the Lords, that for the better Clearing of his Honour and Fidelity as to that part of his Charge compriz'd in the Seventh Article, he had mov'd the King to give Leave in his Proofs to unfold the whole Truth and Secret of that great Action, and had obtain'd his Majesty's Leave therein.]

8. To the Eighth Article he saith, That when it was discover'd that the Ships would be employ'd against those of our Religion (the Protestation of the *French* King being otherwise) he did endeavour to divert it: Said, his Endeavours under his Majesty had been a great Part of the Means to preserve the Town of *Rechel*; and when his Majesty found they were so misemploy'd, he interceded with the *French* King for the Peace of that Town, and of our Religion, lest his Honour might otherwise suffer, and was successful therein: Denied that he us'd those Words before the Committee of both Houses at *Oxford*, That the said Ships were not, nor should be us'd or employ'd against them of our Religion; but confessed, That he knowing what the Promises of the *French* King were, and hoping they would have been perform'd, did say, That the Event would shew it.

9. To the Ninth Article he said, He utterly denied that he compelled the Lord *R.* to buy his Title of Honour; said, the Lord *R.* was before willing to have given a far greater Sum, but could not obtain it, and now obtain'd it by his own Agents.

10. To the Tenth Article he said, The Lord *M.* was made Lord-Treasurer without any Contract for it; and afterwards his late Majesty mov'd him to lend him 20000 *l.* which the Lord *M.* did, but desired the Duke's Word for Re-payment, which the Duke gave him, and the Money was paid to Mr. *Porter* then attending upon the Duke by the late King's Appointment, and by the King's Direction paid out to others; but not a Penny thereof came to the Duke's Use: That the Lord *M.* leaving his Place, and the Money not being repaid, the Duke assured Lands to him

for

for his Security: But the Lord M. having afterwards a Grant from his late Majesty of some Lands in Fee-Farm in Satisfaction of his Debt, the said Securities were deliver'd up.

1626.

That he heard the Earl of M. about the Time he was made Master of the Wards disburs'd 6000*l.* and that his late Majesty bestowed it upon Sir *Henry Mildmay*; but not a Penny thereof came to the Duke, or to his use.

11. To the Eleventh Article he said, It was true that his late Majesty having Honoured him with many Titles and Dignities, was pleas'd to Honour those who were equal in Degree with him, and to ennoble their Morner, the Stock that bore them: That his Mother's Title of Countess of *Buckingham* was not without Precedent; and she had nothing from the Crown, and her Title died with her: The Titles of the Viscount *P.* the Duke's elder Brother, were conferr'd on him by the means of his Majesty, then Prince, to whom he was of the Bed Chamber: The Earl of *A.* was of his late Majesty's Bed-Chamber, and the Honours and Lands were conferr'd on him when the Duke was in *Spain*: The Earl of *D.* hath not one Foot of Land from the Crown; and if he hath procur'd Honours for any of them, the Law of Nature would excuse him.

12. To the Twelfth Article he said, There were very great Mistakes in the Calculations in the Schedules, unto which he would apply particular Answers in another Schedule: and the Gifts he had receiv'd exceeded not Precedents of former Times: Denied he obtain'd the same or any Release by any undue Practice; but confessed, that he having receiv'd and disposed of several Sums of Money of his late and of his now Majesty by their private Directions, he had Releases thereof for his Discharge.

13. To the Thirteenth Article he said, He did neither apply, nor procure the Plaister or Posset-drink, in the Charge term'd a Potion, unto his late Majesty; nor was present when first taken or applied: But his Majesty being sick of an Ague, and taking notice of his (the Duke's) recovery of an Ague not long before, ask'd him what he found did him most good: To which the Duke answered, that the Earl of *Warwick's* Phy-

1626. Physician had Ministred to him a Plaister and a Possfet-drink, and that the chief Thing had done him good was a Vomit ; the King was very desirous to have the Plaister and Possfet-drink, but the Duke delaying it, the King commanded *John Baker* the Duke's Servant to go for it ; whereupon the Duke befought his Majesty not to make use of it, but by the Advice of his own Physicians, and until it should be tried upon some others, which the King said he would do : But the Duke going to *London*, the Plaister and Possfet-drink were apply'd by his Majesty's Command. At the Duke's return the King was in taking the Possfet-drink, and commanded the Duke to give it him, it being first tasted by some of the King's Physicians then present, and others. The King's Disease growing worse, and there being a Rumor that that had done him hurt, and the Duke acquainting the King therewith, the King answered, *They are worse than Devils that say it.*

The Duke having thus answered the Charge, said he had affirmed nothing but what he should make good by Proof ; and referr'd it to their Lordships Judgment how dangerous it was to give too easie a belief to Reports or Testimony without Oath : He acknowledged how easie it was for him, being young and unexperienced, to fall into Thousands of Errors during the Ten Years he serv'd so great and open hearted a Sovereign and Master, but hoped he hath not run into hainous and high Misdemeanors and Crimes : But whatever they should appear to be, he pray'd the Benefit of the Parliament-Pardon 21 *Jac.* and of the Pardon granted to him under the Great-Seal (upon his Majesty's Coronation) dated 10 *February* last, and yet he hoped their Lordships would acquit him of those Offences therewith he is charged.

The  
King's  
Letter to  
the Speak-  
er for a  
speedy  
Supply.

The next Day his Majesty wrote a Letter to the Speaker for a Supply, saying : That if they did not supply him by the End of that Month (which was their own prefix'd time) it would be too late, the Enemy being ready to assail him : That he now gave them his last and final Admonition, and should take all further Excuses for express Denials ; and expected they should bring in their Bill of Subsidy without delay or Condition, so as it might fully pass the House  
by



by the End of next Week ; if not, he would be forced to take other Resolutions : But if they did this, they should sit as long as the Season would permit, and meet again next Winter.

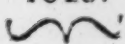
1626.

To say nothing of the Commons Petition at this time against employing so many Recusants in Places of Trust, a Committee was appointed to prepare an Answer to his Majesty's Letter, the Substance whereof was deliver'd by Mr. Speaker, That the House of Commons considering the Nature and Importance of their Business, thought the Attendance of the whole House, with their Speaker, upon his Majesty not too solemn ; nor have barely committed their Words to any Man's Speech, but are bold to present them in Writing : This Parchment (said he) contains Two Things ; the one by way of Declaration, to satisfy his Majesty of their sincere Endeavours and Intentions, the other an humble Petition for the Removal of the Duke of *Buckingham* from his Presence. For the first, They valued no Earthly Thing more than to be retain'd in his Majesty's Grace and good Opinion ; and are grieved that any Misinformation, or Misinterpretation, should render their Words and Proceedings offensive to his Majesty. It's improper for any one to rely upon the Echo of a Voice, that hears not the Voice it self : Words misrepresented by an Echo, may sound Disloyalty, tho' the Voice had nothing disloyal in it : And such Misinformations have begot those Interruptions and Delays which have enforced this Declaration. For the Petition, he intended not to urge those Reasons which his Majesty may hear express'd in the Language of the People. He acknowledged his Majesty to be a good and gracious Master : But the Relation wherein his Majesty stands to his People, doth far transcend the Relation of a Master towards a Servant : And to satisfy the just and necessary Desires of his People is more honourable than any Expression of Grace to a Servant. His Majesty was truly stiled *Pater Patrie*, and the Desires of Children are prefer'd before those of Servants. And he put the King in mind of what his Royal Father term'd the Government of a King, a politick Marriage between him and his People.

The  
Speaker's  
Speech to  
the King.

The

1626.



The Commons had drawn up a Remonstrance against the Duke, and concerning Tonnage and Poudage taken by the King, without Consent in Parliament; which was no sooner finished, but they had Intimation the King would that Day dissolve the Parliament; whereupon they ordered every Member to have a Copy of the Remonstrance.

King's  
Declarati-  
on why he  
dissolved  
his Two  
Parlia-  
ments.

The Lords petition'd the King for continuing the Parliament, but he told them, He was resolved to dissolve them; and that being done accordingly *June 15.* on the 30th he publish'd a Declaration of the Causes of his dissolving this and the former Parliament, to this Effect: That tho' the Calling, Adjourning, Proroguing and Dissolving of Parliaments did peculiarly belong to himself, by his undoubted Prerogative; of which, as of his other Regal Actions, he was not to give an Account to any but God only; yet he purposing so to order all his Actions, especially the great and publick Actions of State, as they might justifie themselves to his own Conscience, his People, and the whole World, had thought fit to declare the Causes which moved him to assemble, and enforced him to dissolve his Two Parliaments. When his Majesty first came to the Crown, he found himself engaged in a War with a potent Enemy, for the Defence of himself and his Dominions, the Support of his Allies, the Redeeming the Nation's Honour, Recovery of the Patrimony of his Sister, her Consort and Children, and Maintenance of the true Religion; being encouraged therein by the Advice of both Houses of Parliament, and by their Promises and Protestations to his late Majesty to give him their full Assistance. But when he enter'd into a View of his Treasure, he found how ill he was provided: That for the making good Laws, for the understanding his People's true Grievances, and for a Supply of Monies for those publick Services, he summon'd a Parliament, which he did with much Assurance of his People's Love; and that those who perswaded his Father to break off his Treaties with *Spain*, and had used his now Majesty's Mediation therein, and had promised his late Majesty to enable him to undergo the War, would have performed it to his now Majesty, and not suffer'd him to have run a Hazard in

-  
-  
-  
d  
e  
r  
e  
o  
e  
e  
-  
l-  
s  
d  
s,  
;  
l-  
y  
is  
e-  
d  
n  
lf  
e-  
of  
e-  
rt  
;  
h  
d  
ir  
of  
l:  
d-  
ly  
a  
of  
ed  
nd  
nd  
er-  
w  
rd  
in

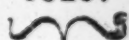




in his first Enterprize. This Parliament being assembled, did, with great Alacrity, and as the first Fruits of their dutiful Affection, present his Majesty with Two entire Subsidies. But when his Majesty had entered into the Consideration of those great Affairs wherein he was imbarck'd, he found that Sum of Money far short of what must of necessity be presently expended in those great Undertakings. This he imparted to the House of Commons, but before it could receive that debate which was fit, the Plague in *London* and *Westminster* so encreased, that the Parliament could continue there no longer in Safety. His Majesty therefore adjourn'd them to *Oxford*, little expecting such Misconstructions of his Actions would have been as he there found. And when his Affairs were open'd to them, they were so slow and full of Delays, that before any thing could be determined, the Contagion dispers'd it self, and came to their very Doors. His Majesty therefore preferring the Safety of his People to what was more remote, dissolved that Parliament; but yet, by the Advice of his Privy-Council and Council of War, continued his Preparations, wherein he expended the Two Subsidies, and much more. At length his Navy was set to Sea, the Design being probable and well advised; but it pleased God not to give that Success which was desired: And yet those Attempts were not so fruitless as the Envy of the Times had apprehended, the Enemy receiving no small Loss, and our Party no little Advantage thereby. And it would much avail his Majesty's great Affairs, and the Peace of *Christendom*, if those Beginnings were well seconded. The Pestilence ceasing, his Majesty summon'd a new Parliament, which began the 6th of *February*, but at their first Meeting did forbear to press them to any thing which had the Appearance of his own Interest, only recommended to them the making of good Laws. His Majesty believing their Care of the common Safety, and of the true Religion, would have led them to a due Consideration thereof; which the Lords considered of, and invited the Commons to a Conference concerning the same. At which Conference his Majesty's great Occasions were open'd to them, which making no Impression on them, his Majesty did first by Message,

1626. and afterwards by Letters, put the House of Commons in mind thereof.

Whereupon the 27th of *March* last, they agreed to give his Majesty Three entire Subsidies, and Three Fifteenths; and *April* 26. they added a Fourth Subsidy. And his Majesty finding the time of the Year passing away, and having Intelligence from all Parts of Christendom of the great Preparations of the King of *Spain*, and that his Design was upon this Kingdom or *Ireland*, he acquainted the House of Commons therewith, and with the true State of Things, and several times reiterated the same to them. But they being abused by the violent Passions of a few of their Members, wilfully refused to hearken to the gentle Admonitions of his Majesty, nor would intend any thing but the Prosecution of one of the Peers of this Realm; and seeking for Errors in another, fell into a greater Error themselves, by neglecting to give his Majesty Satisfaction in several Cases concerning his Regality, and by forgetting their Engagements for Defence of the Realm. And, notwithstanding his Majesty's Letter to the Speaker, dated the 9th of *June*, which clearly manifested his Majesty's Resolutions, they never so much as once read the Subsidy-Bill, but prepared a Remonstrance or Declaration, containing several Aspersions upon his Majesty, and his deceased Father, and Excuses for not proceeding with the Subsidies; which his Majesty taking to be a Denial of the promised Supply; and the Time being so far spent, that they had put upon themselves an Impossibility to perform their Promises, his Majesty seeing all further Patience fruitless, dissolved that unhappy Parliament. These Passages his Majesty had publish'd, lest that which had been unfortunate in it self, should be made more unfortunate in the Consequences: And he purposed resolutely to proceed in maintaining the true Religion professed in the Church of *England*, and in freeing it from the open Contagion of Popery, and secret Infection of Schism. And he could not but believe, that the Hand of *Joab* had been in that Disaster, that the common Incendiaries of *Christendom* had subtilly insinuated those Things, which unhappily (and, as he hoped, beyond the Intentions of the Actors) had caused these Divisions



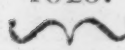
sions and Distractions: And yet, notwithstanding his Majesty had put on this Resolution, That he would take his Scepter and Sword into his Hand, and not expose the Persons of the People committed to his Charge to the insatiable Desires of the King of *Spain*, who had long thirsted after an Universal Monarchy, nor their Consciences to the Yoke of the Pope of *Rome*: And that at Home he would redress the Grievances of his Subjects.

But enough of this Proclamation; and but just to mention those about the intended Remonstrance, and new Opinions in Religion. an Information was now, by the King's Command, prefer'd in the Star-Chamber against the Duke of *Buckingham*, wherein he was charged (among other Things) with the Plaister applied to King *James*. To which he put in his Answer, and divers Witnesses were examined. Then the King considering the Straits into which the Revenue of the Crown was fallen, did, by the Advice of his Council, declare, That all Men should forbear for Two Years to sollicite any Suit for any thing prohibited in the Book of Bounty, publish'd in King *James's* Time or any other thing tending to the Diminution of his Revenue. And the Privy-Council declaring, That the Customs, Subsidies and Imposts upon Goods and Merchandizes, had been constantly continued for many Ages, and was a principal Branch of the Revenue of the Crown, but could not be settled by the Two last Parliaments, by reason of their Dissolution; they ordered, That the same should be levied and paid: And, by their Advice, an Instrument passed under the Great Seal, declaring his Majesty's Pleasure therein, until it should be settled by Parliament.

An Information in the Star-Chamber against the Duke.

Customs order'd to be paid.

And the Forfeitures arising by the Laws against Popish Recusants being dedicated to the vast Charge of the Designs in Hand, and there being Complaint made of the inferior Officers oppressing Recusants, without Advantage to the King: A Commission was issued to the Archbishop of *York*, and several Knights and Gentlemen, to this effect: That the King's Subjects living in Maritime Towns, especially in the Northern Parts, did suffer by Depredations and Assaults at Sea, whereby the City of *London* was endamaged

1626.  maged for want of Coals, and other Commodities transported from *Newcastle*. And his Majesty had appropriated all Penalties and Forfeitures of Recusants in Ten Counties Northward (therein named) which had grown due since the Tenth of King *James*, or should grow due for the Setting out of Six Ships of War for guarding those Coasts: And the Owners of Coal-Pits, and others concerned in the Coal-Trade of *Newcastle*, were willing to contribute for every Chaldron for the Uses aforesaid. The Commissioners therefore were impower'd to compound with the said Recusants for Leases of their Lands within those Counties to them, or any for their Use, for any Term not exceeding 41 Years, and for all Forfeitures, according to his Majesty's Instructions, *He rather desired their Conversion than Destruction*. And Receivers were appointed for the Money, and for that of 6 *d.* per Chaldron on Coals: Whereupon the Recusants compounded upon very easie Terms. And the King by Proclamation declared, he would grant his Lands, as well Copyhold as others, in Fee-farm.

The King  
sends to  
the Nobility  
to lend  
him liberally.

The King also let the Nobility know, That according to the Precedents of former Times, upon extraordinary Occasions, by Contributions, he expected from them a large and chearful Testimony of their Loyalty. He demanded of the City of *London* the Loan of 100000 *l.* But they excusing themselves, the Council sent a strict Command to the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, setting forth the Enemies strong Preparations, and the King's great Necessities, requiring them to enter into the Business again, and to return a direct and speedy Answer, that the King might frame his Counsels accordingly.

The Port  
Towns  
and Maritime  
Counties  
to furnish  
Ships.

A Charge likewise was laid upon the Ports and Maritime Counties, to set out so many Ships as were appointed to them severally; particularly the City of *London* to set out Twenty of the best Ships in the River, with Tackle, Stores, and Ammunition, Mann'd and Victualled for Three Months. The Deputy-Lieutenants, and Justices of Peace of *Dorset*, being commanded to set forth Ships from *Pool*, *Weymouth*, and *Lime*, with the Contribution of the Counties adjoining, pleaded, The Case was without Precedent; but were check'd by the Council, and told, That  
State,





State-Occasions were not to be guided by ordinary Precedents. The City of *London* petition'd for an Abatement from Twenty Ships to Ten Ships and Two Pinnaces, alledging Disability: But the Council answer'd, That the Charge impos'd was moderate, not exceeding the Value of many of their private Estates, and that the State would require an account of all in general, and of every one in particular: And whereas they mention'd Precedents, the Precedents of former Times were Obedience, and Precedents were not wanting for the Punishment of those that disobey'd his Majesty's Commands. Hereupon the Citizens submitted, only had the Favour to nominate all the Officers, the Captains excepted. There issued forth likewise Privy-Seals to several Persons, to others the way of Benevolence was propos'd; and the Sums requir'd were according to the rate of Four Subsidies, and Three Fifteens: But it was declar'd to the Country, That the Supplies now demanded, were not the Subsidies and Fifteens intended to be given by the Parliament; and the Justices of Peace were order'd to send for Persons able to give, and to deal with them singly.

Privy-Seals.

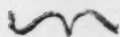
Money being demanded and rais'd in this manner, it was necessary somewhat should be done for it; wherefore some of his Majesty's Ships were employ'd in the *Elbe*, to prevent the furnishing of the *Spaniards* with Shipping, which discontented those of *Hamburg*, for that *Lubeck* and other Towns of the East Sea were free from this Restraint; and yet (as the Lord Admiral informed the Council) it was too little purpose, unless the Sound could likewise be shut up, since the *Hamburgers* sent their Commodies by Land to *Lubeck* to be transported into *Spain*. The King likewise prepar'd a Royal Fleet at *Portsmouth* under the Command of the Lord *Willoughby*.

A Fleet prepar'd.

In the mean time, his Majesty having engaged the King of *Denmark* in a War against the Emperor, and now being inform'd of the Disaster that had befallen his Uncle, whose Engagement was chiefly for the Elector Palatine, and of which more by and by, he advis'd wth his Council how he might speedily raise Monies upon this Occasion also: And they resolv'd, that the best Way was by a general Loan, as every

An Inducement to the Loan.

1626.



Private  
Instructions to the  
Commissioners for  
the Loan.

Man was assessed to the last Subsidy ; whereupon the King chose Commissioners for the Loan, and published a Declaration wherein for the Reasons of this Course, he alledged what was in his late Declaration touching the Dissolution of the Parliament ; and as sur'd the People this should be no Precedent for future Times, as if he intended to abolish Parliaments ; promising to repay the Money as soon as he was able, and that not one Penny of it should be expended but for the publick Service. The Instructions given the Commissioners were to this effect : 1. They should for a good Example lend the Sums requir'd of them. 2. To take for their Guide the Rates in the Book of the last Subsidy. 3. To shew every Man the Necessity of this Course, and how much the Honour of the Nation, the true Religion, and the common Safety are concerned. 4. To perswade them to pay it all at one entire Payment if able ; if not, then one half at Fourteen Days, and the other half before the 20th of *December* next. 5. That they treat apart with those who are to lend, and not in the hearing of each other ; and if any refuse to lend, or make delays and excuses, that they examine him upon Oath, who hath perswaded him so to do, and what Words the Party used to him ; and to charge him upon his Allegiance not to disclose what his Answer was. 6. That they begin with such as are likely to shew the Examples ; and then shew their Names to others, to bring them on. 7. That they endeavour to discover the Disswaders of others, and as much as may hinder all Discourse about it, and certifie such refractory Persons to the Privy-Council. 8. That this Loan shall be instead of what had been desir'd upon Privy-Seals or Benevolence : And if Money had been paid upon those Accounts, it should be accepted in part of that Loan. 9. That they admit of no Reasons for abating any Sum. 10. The Commissioners not to disclose these Instructions to others.

As for *France*, tho' Things seem'd to tend to a Breach between *England* and that Crown ; yet King *Charles* sent the Earl of *Holland* and *Charleton* Ambassadors thither, to induce *Lewis* to enter into a League for the Restoration of the Elector Palatine : They had also Orders to endeavour to procure a Peace for the

Re-

*Rochellers*, and to insist upon re-demanding his Men of War lent them last Year: They were still answered, That *France* had Reasons against making any such League; but, perhaps, they would cause the Elector to be restored without it. As for the second Proposal, if the *Rochellers* would return to their Duty, the King would not refuse them Peace, but would not engage to treat about it with any whatsoever, and that they ought to expect it from his sole Bounty. As to the Vessels, they declared they were ready to restore one Man of War, but the other Six being Merchant Ships arm'd for them, they could not be obliged to return them while they had Occasion for them, since the *French* would not have asked them, but for that Use, and that they had made a Contract for them.

Now in speaking concerning the *Rochellers*, the *English* Ambassadors said, That they had not any League with them, and if they demanded Peace for them, it was as Friends of *France*, and because they desired all their Forces might be employ'd against the *Spaniards*. But, for all that, the *English* Council resolved upon Three Things, very opposite to King *Lewis*, or rather *Richlieu's* Designs, which was to assist *Rochel*, recal the Ambassadors, and send *Buckingham* upon the Expedition, which was to be authorized by Act of Parliament. *Buckingham* at the same time said to *Blainville*, 'That he was troubled to see the Two Crowns embroil'd in such a Manner, as that he must lose the Fruit of all the Services he had done to *France*, and found himself in Danger of giving an Account of his Actions to the Parliament: That his Master had help'd to ruin *Soubize*, only out of the Affection he had for the *French* King, and the Thoughts of contenting himself with the Punishment of one mutinous Subject, but now he saw that they laboured wholly to extirpate those of his Religion; so that he could no longer stand Neuter, without incurring the Blame of all the World: And that all his People and all his Council would oblige him with common Consent to undertake their Defence. To which the Duke added, 'That *France* exposed her Allies to great Danger by this Conduct; and that the *Spaniards* would certainly take Advantage of their Divisions;

1626. and farther, that if the War brake out between the Two Crowns, the Queen and her Domesticks would suffer much, without any Possibility of hindring it.

Peace concluded with the Rochellers.

Before Advice came of the Inclinations of the Council of *England* in the present Conjuncture, the *French* Court had very ill treated the Deputies of *Rochel*, and Marechal *Schomberg* told them, That if the King used them as he ought, he would cause them to be hanged: But now they quite alter'd their Note; for finding there had been yet no Overture to accommodate the Differences, and *England* busying her self in favour of the *Hugonots*, they concluded a Peace with them on the 5th of *February* on these Terms: 1. That the Council and Government of *Rochel* should be put and established in the Hands of those who were of the Body of that City, in the Form they were *Anno* 1610. 2. That they should receive a Commissiary to cause those Things to be executed which should be Ordered by the Peace, and to stay there during the King's Pleasure. 3. That they should have no Men of War in their City, and observe in their Traffick the usual Forms established in the Kingdom, without derogating from what concerned their Commerce and Privileges. 4. That they should restore to the Ecclesiasticks all their Goods which they should have in their possession, conformable to the Edict of 1558. And to its Execution. 5. That they should suffer the Catholics fully and peaceably to enjoy the Exercise of their Religion, and the Goods belonging to them in the said City, and restore whatever should be found in kind, and raze the Fort of *Tadon* by them lately built. 6. That because the King could not agree to the raising of *Fort Louis*, which the *Rochellers* requir'd, he promised to cause such Orders to be established in the Garrisons which he should leave in the said Fort, as also in the Isles of *Rhee* and *Oleron*; that the *Rochellers* should not receive any Trouble or Impediment in the Security and Liberty of their Commerce, which they should make according to the Laws, Orders and Customs of the Kingdom; nor in the Enjoyment of the Goods, and gathering the Fruits they should have in those Isles. *Richlieu* had a great Hand in these Articles, tho' he would not appear in it; and the King, the

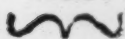


the more firmly to conclude the appeasing of the 1626.  
*Hugonots*; got an Edict verified in the Parliament of *Paris* on the 6th of *April*, importing. 1. That the King's Edict of *Nantes*, Declarations and secret Articles, published and registred in Parliament in Favour of those of the pretended Reformed Religion, should be observed. 2. That the Catholick Religion should be observed in all those Places wherein it had been intermitted, with prohibition of Disturbance to the Ecclesiasticks, to whom their Goods were to be restored. 3. That the Exercise of the pretended Reformed Religion should be re-established in all Places where it was in 1620. 4. That the King would grant Pardon for all Enterprizes that were past, as levying of Arms, Money or the like. 5. That the Articles 74, 75, 78, 79. of the Edict of *Nantes* should be entertained. 6. That the Translation of Justices, the Offices and Receipts of the Finances should be disannulled. 7. That those of the Reformed should be discharged of all Judgments and Sentences given against them. 8. That the Prisoners of War who had not yet paid any Ransom should be Released. 9. That the 27th Article of the Edict of *Nantes* should be observed. 10. That the 28th Article of the same Edict should be executed. 11. That those of the pretended Reformed Religion should not hold any Assemblies without the King's Leave, only in Things simple concerning the Regulation of the Discipline of their Religion: That they should make no Fortifications without permission from the King. 12. That the Articles agreed on for *Rocheb*, the *Isles*, and Country of *Aunis*, should be kept.

But to say no more at present of the Affairs of the *Rebellers*, nor of those of the *Valtoline*, which were now terminated by the Treaty of *Menzen*, scarce to the Satisfaction of any of the Parties concerned in it; we are to take notice, that *Ornano* the D. of *Anjou's* Brother having by the Intrigues of *Richlieu* been seized and confin'd, this caused new Broils at Court, where the Cardinal governed all; insomuch that there was a Libel now published against him, entituled, *The King of the King*. And besides the Duke of *Anjou*, divers Persons of the first Rank, as the Count of *Soissons*, Dukes of *Longueville* and *Vendosme* the Grand Prior of *France*, the

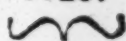
Court  
Broils.

Dukes

1626.  Dukes of *Chewreufe* and *Espernon*, and the Marq. of *la Valette*, were accused of being concerned in a Design of assassinating the Cardinal, who having Artifice enough to draw *Vendosme* and the Grand Prior to Court then at *Blois*, they were there both arrested; while the Cardinal, instead of setting the Mareschal de *Ornano* at Liberty, was soothing *Anjou* with hopes of his having his Liberty to marry whom and when he pleased, with other Demands he insisted upon; but when the Court was arrived at *Nantes*, the King established a Chamber of Justice, which made out the Process of *Chalais*, who was one that should have assassinated the Cardinal, and condemned him to lose his Head. There was much murmuring about erecting this extraordinary Tribunal, whereas any of the Ordinary might have tried the Accused; but the haughty Prelate by establishing this new Method would strike an Awe into them that durst attack him, that all might imagine there was no way to avoid his Revenge by Formalities of Law established in favour of Innocents.

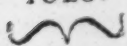
D. of *Anjou* still was upon the chagreen; but being at length reconciled to the Court, he was married on the 5th of *August* to *Mademoiselle de Montpesier*; in consideration of which the King conferred upon him the Dutchies of *Orleans* and *Chartres*, with the County of *Blois*, from whence forward he must be stiled Duke of *Orleans*. He afterwards gave him the Signiory of *Montargis* to hold till it should amount to 100000 Livres, besides which he had a Patent of 560000 Livres annual Pensions. In the mean time the Cardinal being intent upon the Prosecution of the rest of his Enemies, *Soissons* retired into *Italy*, and *Ornano* dying in Prison of a Fever, the Cardinal's Enemies report he had poison'd him.

Before the King left *Bretagne*, he held an Assembly of the States of that Province, the Government whereof he took away from the Duke of *Vendosme*, and gave it to the Mareschal de *Themines*: And this Year concludes in *France* with the Death of the Constable *Lesdeguieres* at the Age of 80, who left a great Estate to his Son-in-Law, the Mareschal de *Crequi*, and some Years before he died left God by leaving the Reformed Religion to embrace Popery.



As for the Affairs of *Italy*, the private Treaty made by the Two Crowns, without the Participation of *Venice*, *Savoy* and *Switzerland*, whereby the *Valtoline* seem'd to be left in a worse and more uncertain State than before, occasion'd many Murmurings and Complaints, tho' at present without any visible Remedy. And for *Germany*, the War was very hot all this time there, the King of *Denmark* had 60000 Men, whereof the Duke of *Brunswick* commanded one Part, to act towards the *Wefer*, in the Bishopricks of *Hildesheim* and *Osnaburg*: *Christian* himself had another against *Tilly*, and *Mansfield* had the Third, with which he was to oppose *Wallestein*, and to endeavour to make his Way thro' *Silesia*. The Count, to perform his part, immediately directed his March towards that Country, but coming to *Dissau* upon the *Elbe*, was there vigorously opposed by Major-General *Altin-ger*, who kept a Bridge, and opposed his Passage so long, till *Wallestein* came up. He had before sent *Schlick* to encourage the Defendants, and in the *Interim* making a very expeditious March, obtain'd a compleat *Wallestein* Victory. *Mansfield* fled with part of his Horse to-wards the Marquissate of *Brandenburg*, but left all his *routs* Foot and the Town of *Zerbest* to the Mercy of the Conquerors: However, this Misfortune no way abated the Courage of the brave Count; for retreating towards *Silesia*, and recruiting his Army to 25000 Men, he march'd with them directly to join *Bethlem Gabor* in *Hungary*; but that Prince seeing no Succours come to his Assistance, as he had been promised, had some time before obtain'd a Peace of the Emperor, whereby great part of the Army of the Count were left to Perish among the Mountains with Hunger and Cold. *Mansfield* perceiving this, went to *Buda*, whence, not long after going towards *Venice* he died by the Way at a Village between *Zara* and *Spa-* *Mans-* *lato* in *Dalmatia*, wearied with Cares and Wants, and *field's* with this remarkable Character, that having sought Death and for a glorious Death amongst so many famous Occa-Character sions, he was ignobly surprized by it there, where he least expected, to the End that it might be said, that Fortune had both defrauded him in his Birth and Death (for he was the natural Son of *Peter Ernest*, Count of *Mansfield*) otherwise, that without Envy he may

1626.



may be called famous, and without Vanity celebrated for a great Man in an Age, wherein some were chosen in the Course of Providence to be Ministers of Divine Justice and publick Calamities. He had the Courage alone, and even by his private Authority and Conduct, to oppose the formidable Power of the House of *Austria*. He was only overcome in Battle, but by his Address and Felicity in getting up again, was no less renown'd than the Conquerors. In Negotiations he exceeded the greatest Wits, was bold in encountering Dangers, and highly subtle in winding himself out of them; a Lover he was of Disorders and Novelties, and could endure Hunger, Watchings and Excess: He was eloquent, wise and vigilant, prodigal of his own, but covetous of another's; and living amidst great Hopes and Designs, died at last without Lordships, and without Treasure.

*Wallenstein's* Army which had closely pursu'd the Count, had much the like fate with his, for they mostly died also in the Mountains. Duke *Ernest* of *Saxe Weimar*, having the Command of the remainder of the Count's scatter'd Troops, whilst he was endeavouring to re-establish them, fell sick and died likewise. Also not long before, *Christian*, Duke of *Brunswick*, during his Exploits in *Lower-Saxony*, Deceased in the Month of *May*, having scarce reach'd the Age of 30 Years.

General *Tilly* having always the King of *Denmark* and his Allies in his Thoughts, determin'd the first Opportunity to fall upon the Weakest of them. The first he attack'd was the Landgrave of *Hesse*, from whom he took the Town of *Munden* by Assault, and put the Garrison and the Inhabitants to the Sword. Next he frighten'd *Gottingen* to yield without resistance. Afterwards going towards *Northeim* where the King of *Denmark* had a Garrison, that Prince march'd so swiftly to prevent his attempting any thing upon that Place, that he was upon him before he thought him near by Thirty Leagues. This caused *Tilly* to retire by Night, leaving his Drums and Trumpets to amuse the Enemy, but they had likewise orders to follow him by Day-break. After he had been a little reinforc'd he turned back upon the King, who retiring also behind the Castle of *Lutter*, there drew up his



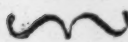
his Men in expectation of his Enemies. Tilly notwithstanding this advantageous Post, attacked him vigorously, whose charge the *Danes* as bravely withstood forcing him back Twice. At length the Imperialists resuming courage came on with that vigour that they entirely routed their Enemies Cavalry, and thereby easily got the Victory. They kill'd above 3000 Men, and took 3000 Prisoners. This Battle was fought on the 28th of *August*. The King of *Denmark* fled towards *Holstein* with part of his Horse. Tilly by this Victory brought over the Princes of *Lunenbourg* and the Landgrave of *Hesse* to the Emperor's Interest, who nevertheless had conceal'd Resentments, and waited but for an Opportunity to shew them.

1626.

Tilly routs  
the King  
of Den-  
mark.

During this the Peasants of *Upper Austria* rise in Rebellion again their Prince *Maximilian*, Elector of *Bavaria*, by reason of heavy Taxes he had laid upon them; as likewise on account of an Edict of the Emperor's, commanding all *Protestant* Ministers and School-Masters to retire out of that Country by a set Time. These Peasants, being most of them of the Confession of *Ausbourg*, had resolv'd to prevent the Banishing of their Ministers; and to revenge themselves on those that had levied the Taxes upon them, they pillag'd the Churches where ever they came. The Emperor finding no fair means would do to disperse this Rabble, determin'd to employ force and consequently sent certain Troops against them under the command of Duke *Adolph* of *Holstein*. These they defeated, and also routed 6000 more sent by the Duke of *Bavaria*. Encourag'd by this success, they had the boldness to lay Siege to *Lintz*, Capital of *Upper Austria*. Their Army consisted of 60000 Men commanded by one *Stephen Fadinger*, a Hatter, who being killed upon an Attack, was succeeded by one *Willinger*, a Shoemaker, who tho' he rais'd the Siege of *Lintz*, was afterwards entirely defeated and killed by Count *Pappenheim*. After his Death a young Scholar was chosen in his Room, who held up his Head for some time; however was at length totally routed by the aforesaid General *Pappenheim*, who killed above 7000 of the Rebels on the Spot, besides what he took Prisoners. The Emperor very prudently punish'd

*Pappen-  
heim* reduces an In-  
surrection  
in *Austria*.

1626.  punish'd only some of the Ring-leaders of this Rebellion, and sent home the Rest, well knowing that they had under hand Encouragements from divers Protestant Princes and some Foreign Powers.

The Swede for his part having made himself Master of *Livonia* the preceding Year, appear'd now unexpectedly in the *Pillau*, with 80 Ships, and 26000 Men, where he was friendly received by the Governour, by the El. of *Brandenburg's* Orders, and disimbarking, took *Bunberg* and *Frauenburg*, and in a little time was let into *Stetin*, where he raised several Regiments of German Foot, and master'd *Mewe*, *Dirschaw*, *Stam*, *Christbourg*, and Great and Little *Werder*, before the *Poles* had scarce heard of his Arrival; and his Eye was next upon *Dantzick*, which at first, till the *Pole* approached, seem'd to waver in his Favour. The *Poles* now thought to have surprized *Mariembourg* but in vain; they were also beaten from before *Mewe*. *Gustavus* marched to *Ducal Prussia*, and at the same time *Könicespola* arriv'd before *Dirschaw* with an Army from *Podolia*, and all Winter besieged it in vain; however, he hindred the *Swedes* to succour *Pantzke*, which had been taken by them, and entirely routed the German Troops in the *Swedes* Service.

War in  
Poland.

But to keep as near as may be within the Bounds of the Year, we find it remarkable for the Death of the famous Sir *Francis Bacon*, Baron of *Verulam*, and Viscount *St. Albans*, on the 9th of *April*, in the 66th Year of his Age, he being born at *York House* in the *Strand*, and the younger Son of Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, by *Ann Cook*. Queen *Elizabeth* took Notice of his quick Repartees whilst yet a Striplin. He was at Sixteen Years of Age sent to *Trinity College* in *Cambridge*, where he soon became the Wonder of the University, and made an early Discovery of the Emptiness of *Aristotle's* Physicks. His Genius inclin'd him chiefly to Politicks. He was sent with Sir *Amias Paulet* into *France*, from whence he return'd upon his Father's Death. He was chosen the Queen's Advocate at the Age of Thirty, and at length by King *James I.* made Lord Chancellor of *England*, in which Post he had continued Nineteen Years; but having the Failing of being too kind to his Servants, their Rise proved his Fall; and 'twas said, he grew so poor and burthensome

Some to Sir *Julius Caesar*, that he would keep him no longer; as also to the Lord *Brook*, that he denied him small Beer. He ended his Life at *Highgate*, in the Earl of *Arundel's* House, and was bury'd at *St. Albans*, where he has an Epitaph, written by Sir *H. Wooton*. His Works are, *Historia Regni Henrici VII. De Sapiientia Veterum. De Bello Sacro. De Naturali & Unversali Philosophia. Historia Ventorum. Historia Vitæ & Mortis. De Dignitate & Augmentis Scientiarum. Novum Organum Scientiarum.*

1626.

*Philip Ferrarius* also made his Exit this Year. He <sup>Ferrarius</sup> was born at *Ovilio* in the *Milanese*, became General <sup>his Death.</sup> of the Order of *Servites*, and in great Favour for his Learning with *Clement VIII. &c.* He wrote a Geographical Dictionary, first printed Anno 1627. which, as we have it with the Corrections and Amendments of *Baudrand*, is one of the best extant.

On the 25th of September departed this Life, at the Bishop Age of 71, *Lancelot Andrews*, Bishop of *Winchester* <sup>Andrews's</sup> under Queen *Elizabeth*, King *James* and King *Charles I.* <sup>Death.</sup> He was born in *London*, bred in *Merchant-Taylor's* School, and afterwards in *Pembroke-Hall, Cambridge*. He was as compleat a Scholar as Nature and Industry could make him. He converted many Papists, was acute, pious and charitable, having in his last Six Years given in private Alms 1300*l.* and left 4000*l.* for poor Men and Widows.

We find Things this Year but in a bad State in our Native Country: Billeting of Soldiers and martial Law was now executed, as in time of War. The Loan went on but ill favouredly; the Bishop of *Lincoln* for refusing to proceed *ex Officio* against the Puritans, and not countenancing the Loan, had an Information preferr'd against him in the Star-Chamber.

1627.

The Loan did not pass currently neither with the People, several within the Liberties of *Westminster* refused to subscribe, alledging Poverty; and tho' it was offered them, that if they would but subscribe, they should pay nothing if found unable, yet they refused: Whereupon they were impress'd to serve in the Ships ready to go out; and divers others of the Common sort were dealt with in the like Manner. But those of the better Rank in the several Countries were  
some

1627. some of them bound by Recognizance to appear at the Council-Table, and others of them committed to Prison: And the Benchers of *Lincoln's-Inn* receiv'd a Letter of Reproof from the Council for neglecting to advance the Service.

However to carry on the Court Interest, *Sibthorp* and *Manwaring* appeared to be Chief of the publick Advocates; the first preach'd, That if Princes commanded any thing against the Laws of God, or of Nature, or impossible, the Subjects were bound to undergo the Punishment, and so yield Passive Obedience; but in all other Cases but those Three they were bound to yield Active Obedience.

*Manwaring* before the King at *White-Hall*, affirmed, That the King was not bound to observe the Laws concerning the Subjects Rights and Liberties; and his imposing of Loans and Taxes, tho' without common Consent in Parliament, did oblige the Subjects Conscience upon pain of eternal Damnation: That they who refused to pay this Loan were guilty of Impiety, Disloyalty and Rebellion: That the Authority of Parliament was not necessary for the raising of Aids and Subsidies, the slow Proceedings of such great Assemblies being not fit for the Supply of the State's urgent Necessities. Nay the Papists were so liberal on this Occasion, that it was said, that the Papists were exceeding Orthodox, and the Puritans the only Recusants.

We have before mentioned the Jars between *England* and *France*, about the Nonperformance of the Articles of the Queen's marriage, and Matters proceeded now so far that King *Charles* sent her *French* Retinue home, and gave the *French* King an account thereof by the Lord *Carlton*: But this was so ill resented in *France*, that Audience was denied him; and those who returned into *France*, having lost their Expectations of raising their Fortunes, heightned the Discontent: This breaks out into a War, and King *Charles* was at once engag'd against Two great and mighty Princes. It was an Abbot, who in revenge to Cardinal *Richlieu* (by whom he had been disobliged) laboured, and at last effected the Dismissing of the *French*; and to heighten the Difference between the Two Crowns, represented to  *Buckingham* how hardly the Protestants were treated,

not-



notwithstanding the Edict of Peace. This procur'd the King's sending *Devic* to the Duke of *Rhoan*, who engag'd to raise 4000 Foot, and 200 Horfe; and the Duke of *Sobize* and Monsieur *St. Blanchard* (who had been for sometime in *England*) endeavour'd to hasten out our Fleet and Army for the Relief of the Protestants in *France*.

The King declar'd, as a Ground of this War, That *France* (whose Counsels were influenced by the House of *Austria*) had obstructed the Landing of Count *Mansfield's* Army there contrary to Promise, instead of joining their Forces with them for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*, whereby that Army was ruin'd, and the whole Protestant Party in *Germany* lost: That, contrary to the Articles of Peace between the *French* King and his Protestant Subjects, by the Mediation of the King of *England*, the *French* King had block'd up their Towns, Garrisons and Forts, and had committed great Spoils upon them, and had in full Peace seized upon 120 *English* Ships, with their Merchandize and Artillery.

*Buckingham* being made Admiral, and Commander in chief of the Land Forces, *June* 27. set sail from *Portsmouth* with a Hundred Sail of Ships, and about 6 or 7 Thousand Land-Soldiers, and appear'd with his Fleet before *Rochel*, who now shut their Gates at their appearance. Whereupon the Duke of *Sobize* and Sir *William Beecher* (who had Letters of Credence from his Majesty) went ashore, and were admitted into the Town; where Sir *William Beecher* declared, That the Duke was come with a Fleet and Army to require from the *French* King, on Behalf of the Protestants, the Performance of the Articles of Peace made by the King of *England's* Mediation, protesting that if they now refused to give their Assistance, his Master was acquit of his Emgagment for their Relief. The Magistrates, and wealthier sort of People (there being a Court Party also prevalent in the Town) gave his Majesty and the Duke their humble Thanks; but said, they were bound by their Oath of Union to do nothing without the consent of the rest of the Protestant Party; but *Sobize* had strong assurance from the well affected there, that the *English* should be assisted with Supplies from thence.

1627.

He lands  
at the Isle  
of Rhee.

When *Sobize* went to *Rochel*, the Duke communicated his Design to him of landing his Army in the Isle of *Oleron* near *Rochel*, and not at *Rhee*, which was further distant; which *Sobize* approved of, the Forces there being few, and the Forts weakly mann'd, whereas the Isle of *Rhee* had a considerable Force, and a Cittadel well fortified. But before *Sobize* return'd from *Rochel*, the Duke alter'd his Mind, and directed his Course to the Isle of *Rhee*, where several brave Commanders, and about 1200 Men landed; but were presently encounter'd by *Thoiras* the Governour, with the *French* Horse and Foot. Many Commanders (and among them Monsieur *St. Blanchard*, and Sir *William Heyden*) fell; few of the *English* were unwounded, and some Hundreds of them slain. At length the *English* forced their way, and the whole Army landed; *Thoiras* retreated to the Cittadel at *St. Martins*, and got in Men and Provisions thither, while the *English* were so far from pursuing their Victory, that in Five Days they never moved: Nay, the Fort *La Prie* (meanly victualled and mann'd) was at that time neglected, the Gaining whereof would have secured a Retreat for the *English*, and impeded the Landing of the *French*. This caused a great Astonishment of in the Court *France*, and that King offered advantageous Terms to the Protestants, if they would not join with the *English*; and particularly to the Duke of *Rohan*.

The  
Duke's  
Manifesto.

The Duke of *Buckingham* publish'd a *Manifesto*, justifying his Master's taking up Arms, giving this for one Reason, That the *French* King employ'd the *English* Ships against *Rochel*, contrary to Promise, and lodged his Army at the Borough of *St. Martins*, which the Enemy quitted, and retreated into the City, leaving a Well, which not being presently made unserviceable to the Enemy, they drew a Work about it, by which Well the subsisted during the Siege. The Duke block'd up the Cittadel, resolving to take it by Famine, instead of employing Art and Force. In the mean time, *Thoiras* sent word to Court of the Straits he was reduced to, and how at the same time Relief might easily enter the Island by the Fort *de la Pree*, and attack the *English*; upon which the Cardinal, contrary to the Opinion of most of the Counsellors,

He blocks  
up *St. Mar-*  
*tins*.

car-

carried it, that a Body of Men should be forthwith transported thither. In the Interim the King's Terrian Ague being remitted, he went to his Army in order to the Blocking of *Roche*; and at last between the 5th and 6th of Nov. at Night, a Body of 6000 Men under the Command of *Schomberg* and *Marillac*, landed in the Isle of *Rhee*, without any great Resistance, and next Day drew themselves up in Battalia in order to attack the *English* in their Trenches. *Buckingham* met them, and after a Fight wherein the *French* said he lost near 2000 Men, he retreated in good Order, till having passed the Borough *de la Couard*, and finding himself at the Entrance of the Passage, which brought the *English* to their Barks, they fell into Disorder by embarking; and they had lost a great Number of Men on this Occasion, if the Night that came on had not hindred the *French* from pursuing them. On the other hand, when *Tboiras* saw the Trenches almost deserted, he made a Sally with 800 Men, and routed those the Duke left therein. All that could recover the Fleet embark'd with the rest, and sail'd away, to the no small Disgrace of him that headed them.

*English*  
beat out  
of the Isle  
of *Rhee*.

After this Victory the Blockade of *Roche* daily continued on the Land-side, and the Court thought to reduce that City the Campaign ensuing; and that they might meet with no further Interruption from the *English*, they send their Prisoners Home very kindly without any Ransom; while the Deputies of *Roche* having got Wind of a Negotiation like to follow between the Two Crowns, presented a Memorial to King *Charles*, wherein, after they had given him Thanks for the Succours he had sent them the Summer past, they shewed him that the Peace which was spoken of might perhaps be only a Snare laid for him to withdraw him from the Interest of the *Roche*-lers, that they might more easily be destroyed: That if a Treaty were entred into, it would cause a Delay to the Preparations that were making for their Relief, and the least Stop put to that would be pernicious to them: That the very Report of a Peace would cause those of the Reformed in *France*, who had a Design to take up Arms for the Preservation of *Roche*, to stay at Home, and would entirely disperse the Duke of *Roan*'s Army: That in the mean while,

1627.

those who block'd up *Rochel*, would have Time to build up the Forts they had begun about that City : That they had likewise undertaken to dam the Port of *Rochel* by a Fence, which would so embarass its Entrance, that it would render it almost unpassable ; and thereby no Provision being to be got to the Town, it would be reduced to Extremity, because it had consumed the best part of what it had to provide for his Majesty's Fleet : That the Opportunity of relieving it being past, all the Strength of *Europe* would not be able to deliver it : That if it should happen the Treaty should afterwards be broken, he would be exposed to the Railleries of his Enemies, and the City be forced to submit to the Yoak of a provoked and victorious Master. When this unfortunate Action of the Isle of *Rhee*, about the End of the Year, came to be known, great was the Outcry of the People ; it being in every Man's Mouth, that a Parliament must be summon'd, the King's Necessities being so pressing ; Two potent Kings provok'd, our Coasts unguarded, our able Commanders worn away ; the Mariners exclaiming for their Pay, the Enemies coming into our Harbours, a vast Number of our Ships lost, and no more like to be built ; our Mariners absconding, our Enemies growing upon us, and the Nation in Arrearages for Freight of Ships, Seamen's Wages, and Materials for Shipping, in the Years 1625, 1626, and 1627. very near the Sum of 200000*l*. The Court not being unsensible of all this, a Parliament was resolved on to meet in *March*.

The People clamour.

The ill Circumstances of the Nation.

Assembly of Notables in France.

But being to survey the other Parts of *Europe* before we come to their Proceedings, we shall first take *France* in our Way : There the King called an Assembly of Notables to meet in the Beginning of *December*, 1626. and the same ended the 24th of *February* this Year. Besides the King, Queen-Mother and *Orleans*, who was President, and was assisted by the Cardinal *de la Valette* and the Mareschal *de la Force* and *Bassompierre*, it was composed of the first and second Presidents of the Parliament of *Paris*, of the first Presidents of Eight other Parliaments, of the Procurators, of the first and second Presidents of the Chambers of Accounts of *Paris*, *Roan* and *Dijon*, with their Procurators General, of those of the Three Courts



of Aids, the Lieutenant Civil of *Paris*, of Six Knights of the Order of the Holy Ghost, of Six of the Council, and of Twelve Prelates. The King told the Assembly, That he had called them together to remedy the Disorders of the State : He was followed by *Morilla* the Keeper of the Seals, by *Schomberg*, *Richlieu*, the President of *Paris*, and others ; and all tended to get Money, and blindly to follow the Dictates of the Ministers, who would have nothing proposed, but what they approved of ; so that in reality nothing more need be said of them.

It's some time since we have heard any thing of the *Turks*, from whom the *Tartars* now took *Cassa*, and no better Expedient could be found to bring them to their Duty, than a Readiness to pass by all Offences, upon Condition they restored the Place again, with which the other readily complied, provided no other Prince were imposed on them, than him whom they had chosen by a general Consent themselves. Struggling under these and other Domestic Difficulties, they began to have some Relaxation by the Peace *Bethlem Gabor* made with the Emperor of *Germany*, wherein, among other Things, that Prince was obliged to procure, that all Places upon the Borders, taken by the *Turk* in the last War, should be restored, and all Prisoners set at Liberty ; for the Articles were not only approved of by the Sultan, but the following ones were also agreed on at *Comorra* by the Emperor and the Grand Seignior.

I.

That the former Peace was to remain firm.

Articles  
of Peace  
between  
the Empe-  
ror and  
G. Seig-  
nior.

II.

The Differences about *Vatz* to remain in the same State, till agreed on by the Commissioners.

III.

The new Forts on the Confines of *Croatia* to be demolished.

IV.

Mutual Ambassies to pass between them.

V.

No Taxes, Contributions, &c. to be exacted from the Subjects of either Party ; all Forts built on the common Bounds to be razed ; all Disorders to be rectified, and Justice done to both Parties.

L1 ;

VI. The

1627.



## VI.

The Slaves taken during the War to be set at Liberty, and those before ransom'd or exchanged.

## VIII.

Mutual Commerce restored.

## IX.

Those Persons to be employ'd; who were Lovers of Peace and the common Good.

## X.

No Damage to be done any where to the Subjects of each other.

## XI.

An Amnesty past for all Injuries.

The Emperor being secur'd on this Side, *Wallestein* in the mean time leaving *Hungary*, march'd to *Silesia*, from whence having expell'd the Remainder of *Mansfield's* Troops, he entirely subdu'd that Province.

K. of Denmark driven home.

This done, he went and join'd *Tilly* in Lower *Saxony*, who both together so harra's'd the King of *Denmark*, that they oblig'd him to retire from *Holstein* into *Jutland*, having lost almost all the Troops that were there commanded by the Marquess of *Deurlach*. Those Places the King of *Denmark* had still remaining in *Germany* were soon retaken, and this Success caus'd the Elector of *Brandenburg* and Duke of *Pomerania* to come into the Emperor's Interest.

The Emperor calls a Dyet.

All this being thought not sufficient to remedy the Disorders in the Empire, a Dyet was call'd, and met at *Malbrausen* for that purpose, where the Complaints of the Count Palatine for being exiled, and of the *Austrian* Protestants being heard, an Address was agreed upon to be made to the Emperor to receive the former into favour, on condition he would quit his Title to *Bohemia*, and to cease the persecuting of the latter. In the mean time, the Emperor having regard to the Advancement of his Family, caus'd his Second Son *Leopold* to be promoted to the Bishoprick of *Halberstadt*, vacant by the Death of Duke *Christian* of *Brunswick*, and to the Abby of *Hirschfeldt*, vacant also, by the Death of one of the Princes of *Hesse*. And this caus'd the Protestants to murmur a-new, by reason those Benefices were both in their Hands. Much about the same Time the Emperor conven'd the States

of *Bohemia* at *Prague*, where after having regulated some Matters relating to the Government, and Privileges of that Kingdom, he caus'd his Son *Ferdinand* III. who was already King of *Hungary*, to be proclaimed King of *Bohemia*; upon condition however, that he should not meddle with the Administration of Affairs in that Kingdom during his Father's Life time. After this the Empress *Eleonora* was Crowned Queen of *Bohemia*, as was likewise King *Ferdinand*, with this Difference only, that he had but one to put that Crown upon his Head, when she had Three.

If we cast our Eyes a little aside upon *Italy*, we shall find the eldest Branch of the House of *Mantua*, end with this Year, by the Death of *Vincent*, Duke of *Montferrat*, who leaving no Male Issue, furnished Occasion for a new War. The Duke of *Nevers* on one Side, and the Duke of *Savoy* on the other, pretended to the Succession, as next Heirs, when the Emperor, while they were disputing the Matter, did all that in him lay to sequester that Dutchy into his own Hands; more of which shall be related hereafter. This did not, however, cause the Emperor to neglect his Affairs in *Germany*, where he became every Day more and more formidable. General *Tilly* had conquer'd the Archbishoprick of *Bremen*, with all the Towns in *Holstein*, insomuch, that he had reduced the King of *Denmark* to think of Peace. On the other Hand, General *Wallstein* was labouring to secure the Dutchy of *Mecklenbourg*, which was declared confiscate to the Emperor, by reason of its Duke's having sided with the King of *Denmark* against him.

*Ferdinand* in this manner carrying all before him by a prosperous Gale of Fortune, we'll now see how it stands between the *Swede* and *Pole*. *Gustavus* in *May*, with a strong Force, arrived from *Sweden* in *Prussia*, with a Design to master the Town of *Dantzick*: And, indeed, it is very probable he had carry'd it, if he had not received a Wound in his Belly before *Kesemark* Fort, which the *Dantzickers* had built upon the Mouth of their Harbour. After his Recovery of the Wound, he took that Fort, and defeated the *Poles* that offer'd to relieve it. On the other Hand, the *Poles* forced the Town of *Meure* to surrender.

1627.

Holland  
mediates  
a Peace in  
the North.

Much about that Time, there came Ambassadors from *Holland* to *Prussia*, to mediate a Peace, or at least a Truce between the Two Crowns. By the Consent of both Parties, a Negotiation was commenced in the Army near *Dirschau*. In the mean time, King *Gustavus* drew out his Army in Order of Battle; and the *Poles* appear'd likewise in the Field on the other Side of a Morass, through which they were obliged to pass. When most of the *Polish* Troops had pass'd the Morass, the *Swedes* fell upon their Rear, and cut off a great Number of them, insomuch, that General *Konierspolski* had enough to do to escape with his Life, and left his Horse behind him. Some Days after, *Gustavus* endeavouring to force the Enemies Camp, was wounded in the Shoulder with a Musket-Shot, and was forced to be carried back to his Camp: Upon which his Troops likewise retired. Towards the *Autumn*, the Negotiation of Peace was renew'd, which was then brought almost to a Conclusion; for *Gustavus* consented to give up all that he had taken from the *Poles* in *Prussia*, bating the Town of *Riga*, which he had a mind to keep for Thirty Years, that is, as long as the Truce was to last. And at the same time, the Difference about the Succession of the Crown of *Sweden* was almost adjusted. The *Polish* Senators incessantly importuned *Sigismund* to comply with the Proposal that was offer'd; nay, the Matter was carried so far, that the Treaty was to be concluded as next Day, when on a sudden the whole Negotiation was knock'd on the Head by the Artifices of the House of *Austria*, who infused into *Sigismund* the Hopes of recovering *Sweden* by the Force of Arms: For in Effect, the House of *Austria* found their Account in *Gustavus's* being imbroil'd in a War with *Poland*, that so he might not have Leisure to embark in the Commotions of *Germany*. *Gabriel Roi*, and the Baron of *Anchi*, Ambassadors from *Spain*, assured King *Sigismund*, in the Name of his Catholick Majesty, that in Two Months a Fleet of 24 Ships should appear in the *Baltick*, at the Catholick King's Charges; upon which *Wallenstein* was to imbark with 12000 Men, in order to make a Descent upon *Sweden*, and make it the Seat of the War. They added, That the King of *Spain* would be at all the Charges du-

The  
House of  
*Austria*  
breaks the  
Negotia-  
tion.



during the whole Course of the War; for which End they were already provided with Bills of Exchange for 2000000 Crowns. In fine, these fair Promises had had so much Influence upon *Sigismund*, that he broke up the Negotiation, especially considering, that the Emperor had sent him some Troops, under the Command of *Adolphus*, Duke of *Alsace*.

1627.

While *Gustavus* made as if he would send his Troops *Wormdit* into their Winter Quarters; he at the same Time, taken. march'd to *Wormdit*, in the Province of *Ermland*, and carry'd that place before the *Poles* could pass the *Weixel* in order to relieve it. Count *Thurne* likewise played the *Poles* an ugly Trick: For having built a Fort in a Hurry, and min'd it; as soon as the *Poles* attack'd it, he retir'd, and they crowding in, were all blown into the Air. The Rupture of the Treaty of Peace, which was just upon the Point of being concluded, was so much the less Displeasing to *Gustavus*, that the very Contributions in *Prussia*, without any other Subsidy, were sufficient to carry on a War. On the other Hand, *Sigismund*, was frustrated in his expectations of the *Spanish Fleet*. 'Tis true, he got Nine Ships together at *Dantzick*, and *Gabriel Roi*, the Ambassador, came to *Lubeck* and *Rostock*, to buy such a Fleet as was promis'd: But the *Hans-Towns* smelling that the *Spaniards* waited to have a Settlement in the *Baltick Sea*, would not hire them one Boat, upon which *Sigismund* desir'd the Ambassador to deliver him, at least, the Bills of Exchange for 2000000 Crewns, upon which he would send to hire Ships in *Denmark*, in order to transport his Army to *Sweden*; but the Ambassadors told him, he had no Orders for that: However the *Spaniards* still Comforted *Sigismund* with the Hopes, that the Fleet they had promis'd, would be ready speedily; and that *Lubeck*, *Rostock*, *Stralsund*, and the other *Hans-Towns*, would quickly fall into the Hands of the Emperor. And the same Time, they advis'd him to send what Vessels he had to *Wismar*, in the Emperor's Name, to perswade the others to joyn them. When their Ships put to Sea, they fell upon the King of *Sweden*'s Ships, in the Road of *Dantzick*, took Two, sunk One, and gave Chase to the Rest into the *Pillau*. But after all, they were all taken, and ruined partly by the *Swedes*, and partly by the

1627. the *Danes*, who would not suffer the *Poles* to appear with a Fleet in the *Baltick*.

1628. But to say no more of this Matter, we shall again resume the Thread of our own Affairs at Home, *Abbot* disgraced. Archbishop *Abbot's* Disgrace happen'd before the End of the preceding Year, for refusing to silence *Sibthorp's* Sermon, called, *Apostolical Obedience*; he was not long after sequestred from executing his Office, and a Commission under the Great-Seal was directed to the Bishops of *London*, *Durham*, *Rochester*, *Oxford* and *Bath and Wells*, empowering them to exercise Archiepiscopal Jurisdiction during the King's Pleasure. The Archbishop afterwards, in a Narrative under his own Hand, vindicated himself, shewing that *Murray*, by the King's Order, having brought the Sermon to him to be licens'd, and he making Exceptions to the Sermon it self, *Laud* was employ'd to answer them; which the King sending also by *Murray* to *Abbot*, then ill of the Stone in his Bed; the Archbishop would have read it; but was not allow'd such a trifling Favour. In the mean time, the Bishop of *London* taking upon him to License *Sibthorp's* Sermon; the Archbishop proceeds to shew his Disgrace arose principally from the Duke's Malice to him, tho' he had been the Instrument of his Advancement, and said, he did not know what to make of the Loan, nor upon what Foundation that Building was laid. But enough of this Matter. In the mean time, divers Gentlemen having been imprison'd for refusing to lend upon the Commission for Loans, and brought their *Habeas Corpus* thereupon, they were over-ruled by the Court, and remanded to Prison in *Michaelmas* Term last; but there being a Necessity after all of calling a Parliament, which was appointed to meet on the 17th of *March*; Warrants were sent from the King and Council into all Parts to release the Gentlemen imprisoned or confin'd about the Loan; and as Writs came down, those were chiefly in the People's Eye to be elected. The Number of the Persons released from Confinement in several Counties was 36, viz. 19 Baronets and Knights, 13 Esquires, and Four others; and of those released from the Fleet, *Marthalsea*, *Gatehouse*, *New Prison*, and the Custody of *Me-*

Messengers, were Forty, viz. Six Baronets and Knights, 1628. Two Esquires, one and Twenty *Londoners*, and Eleven others. The Council ordered the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London* to use Moderation about the Loan-Money. Archbishop *Abbot*, the Earl of *Bristol*, and Bishop of *Lincoln*, had their Parliament-Writs sent them; yet after the Writs of Summons issued, the King ordered a Commission under the Great-Seal for the raising Monies by way of Excise throughout the Nation, and 30000*l.* to be paid to *Burlemac* a Dutch Merchant, to be return'd into the Low-Countries to Sir *William Balfour* and *John Dalbier* for raising 1000 German Horse, supposed to be intended to inforce the Excise then on Foot. Ship-Money also was under Consideration, but a Parliament being call'd it was laid aside.

Commis-  
sion for an  
Excise.

The Parliament being assembled accordingly, the King spoke to this Effect: That the Times were for Action, wherefore, for Example sake he meant not to spend much time in Words, but expected their Resolutions should be speedy. The End of that Parliament was Supply; but he would use few Persuasions, for if their own Advices, Religion, Laws, Liberties, and the Defence of their Allies were not sufficient, no Eloquence of Men or Angels would prevail. He said, he judged a Parliament the Antient, speediest, and best way in time of common Danger to give Supply; and if they would not do their Duties, he must use those other means which God hath put into his Hands. He bid them not take this as a Threatning, for he scorned to threaten any but his Equals, but as an Admonition from him who had most care of their Preservations, and hoped their Demeanour would be such as would oblige him in thankfulness to meet often with them. One thing more he would add, which was, *To remember a Thing, to the End we might forget it.* That he should gladly forget and forgive what was past, so they would leave the former Ways of Distractions, and follow the Counsel lately given them, *To maintain the Unity of the Spirit in the Bond of Peace.* The Lord-Keeper thus seconded him, viz. That the Business they were to consult about was weighty. The Pope and House of *Austria* had long affected, the one a Spiritual, the other

King's  
Speech in  
Parlia-  
ment.

Lord  
Keeper's  
Speech.

1628. other a Temporal Monarchy. And the House of *Austria*, to effect their Ends, besides the vast Territories of both the *Indies*, and in *Africa*, were become Masters of *Spain*, *Italy* and *Germany*. That *France* was swayed by the Popish Faction; and tho' by his Majesty's Mediation there were Articles of Agreement between that King and his Subjects, that Treaty had been broken, and those of the Reform'd Religion would be ruin'd without present Help; and that King had been mislead to desert the common Cause, and engage himself against our King, thereby promoting the Interest of the House of *Austria*: And all those who formerly interrupted the growing Greatness of that House, were now diverted. The *Turk* had made Peace with the Emperor; the *Swede* engaged against *Poland*; the King of *Denmark* chased out of his Kingdom, and the House of *Austria* like to command all the Sea-Coasts between *Dantzick* and *Emden*. In the *Baltick* they were arming Ships, drawing the Hanse-Towns into their Service, and depriving us of the *Eastland* Trade. By the *Dunkirkers* they infested all our Coasts to the Ruin of our Fishing: And a great Fleet was preparing at *St. Andrews*, and another at *Lisbon*; which Preparations were to assault us, either in *England* or *Ireland*. Our Friends of the *Netherlands* fearing the whole Force of the Emperor might fall down upon them, were disabled by their Voyages into the *East*, and weakened at Home. Thus were we ready on all Sides to be swallowed up: And to provide against those great and imminent Dangers, his Majesty had called them together; and to that End a timely and sufficient Supply of Treasure was necessary, which was as the Sinews of War; and if a Sinew be too short, or too weak, the Part becomes useless.

This he pressed, 1. For his Majesty's Sake, who required it: Great was the Duty we owed him by the Laws of God and Nature, by our Allegiance, for his own Merit, and his Father's Memory; and here the War was advised, and Assistance promised: nor had he spared his Lands, Plate, and Jewels to supply this War. 2. For the Cause sake, our Interest being so much woven and involved with that of our Friends abroad, that the Cause was more ours then theirs;  
and



and our Religion, Honour, Commerce and Safety too lay all at stake. 3. In respect of the Manner of his Majesty's Demand, which was in Parliament: Where Aids were commonly accompanied with wholesome Laws and gracious Pardons, and Kings might the better forbear the use of their Prerogatives. This way his Majesty had chosen, not as the only Way, or as destitute of others, but as the fittest: But if deferred, Necessity and the Sword of the Enemy, would make way to the others. He bid them remember his Majesty's Admonition, and that God had hitherto restrained from us that Torrent of War which had overwhelmed other Places, but now threatened us. He exhorted them to avoid Discontents and Divisions, and to attend the *unum necessarium*, the Common Cause; which might infuse into Parliaments a multiplying Faculty, whereby they might be more frequent, and his Majesty would be ready to forget those Distastes that arose in former Parliaments. That their Consultations must be speedy, for the Enemy flew on the Wings of Success: And their Supplies must be timely and sufficient, for they were lost if either too little or too late; and his Majesty was resolved that his Affairs could not permit him to expect it over long.

Before the Commons entred into any Debates, a Letter was communicated to the Members of the House; It was called *A Speech without Doors*, and was thus directed, *To my noble Friends of the Lower House of Parliament*, being to this effect: That altho' his Country had not held him worthy to serve in this Parliament as he had in many others, yet he would shew his Thankfulness to her, and communicate what he had observed in that grave and wise Assembly: That there was great cause to look into the late Elections, Corporations being grown so base and timorous, that they would not Hazard the Indignation of a Lord-Lieutenant, who under-hand threaten'd them with a Musket or a Horse at the Muster, if it had not the Election of their Burgesses; who are commonly such as desire it for Protection, or are so Ignorant of the Place they serve for, as it being occasionally named, they have asked their Neighbours sitting by, whether it were a Sea or a Land Town? Freedom of  
Speech

1628. Speech hath been ancient by the Testimony of *Philip Communes*, who in that respect prefers our Parliaments before other Assemblies ; and if it should be prohibited there, when the Peoples Grievances are to be opened, a Parliament would have no more Privilege than a Quarter Sessions. And what Remedy could the Subject have without it against the abuses of those in Authority, and such Servants, where the Affections of Princes so far transport them, as to make them the only Persons to whom they give Trust and Credit ? For in that case, what Subject dares complain, or question the Actions of such a Servant, unless warranted by his Freedom in Parliament ? The surest Way is, to examine the Grievances of the Kingdom, without touching upon the Person of any Man further than there is just occasion ; for otherwise they should contest with him who hath the Prince's Ears open, and will impute their Enmity to him, to their Contempt of the King, and their seeking to lessen his Authority. And no Prince could be so affectionate to a Servant, or such an Enemy to himself, as not to admit of this indifferent Proceeding. One of Quality in the Expedition to the Isle of *Rhee*, endeavoured to conceal the Number of Men lost there, and confidently affirm'd, they were but 3 or 400 Men. But a Doctor of Physick, out of Conscience and Duty, acquainted his Majesty with the Truth, that there were 2000 lost ; which was so contrary to the Informer and his Designs, that the Physician was banish'd the King's Presence, and so continued. Which of these Reports were true, may be easily determin'd by the Clerks of the Bands of each Company, and was worth the Discovery ; for by that small Instance his Majesty might see how he was abused : And they that stuck not thus to wrong a King, might as well cast Aspersions upon a Parliament. And for these Misreports, there was no Remedy, but Freedom of Speech in Parliament ; for while Subjects Tongues were tied, for fear they should touch him whose Conscience cries Guilty, the King and People were kept from a right Understanding, and all for one, who was like the Dragon, that bites the Ear of the Elephant, because he knoweth the Elephant cannot reach him with his Trunk. For Grievances, they were some general  
some,

some particular; the general Grievances were so many, as would serve for every Member to present, Two apiece, to the View of the House: And tho' he were no Member, yet in Regard he had been one, he would present his Two. 1. Titles of Honour, both in Respect of the Parties themselves, their Estates and Parentage, and of the Manner of attaining thereunto, which was mercenary, base and corrupt. *Plutarch* taught, that Men should labour to deserve Honour, but avoid the getting of it basely; for it was much more Honour to deserve and not to have it, than to have it and not to deserve it. Honour gotten by Favour was but blind Fortune, an Ounce of which at Court was better than a Pound of Wisdom: And was'that which compassed by Power, is plain Force. Examine the Condition of Men raised to Honour, within these 25 Years, and whether it were Desert, Favour or Power that had preferr'd them; how many hungry Courtiers had been raised to the highest Pitch of Honour. Enquire into their Princelike Expences in these 25 Years, their Estates at present, and what would maintain them and their Posterity in their Honours: And it would be found how the Annual Revenue of the Crown had been consumed upon these unworthy Persons. Such Advancements brought with them a Contempt of Greatness, and an Emulation in Gentlemen, whose Families, Estates, and Deserts, might better challenge it. When *Philip* the Second of *Spain* entred with his Sword in Hand upon his Kingdom of *Portugal*, the *Portuguese* besought him to grant them some few Privileges, one whereof was, That he would make no unworthy Persons Noble, or without their Approbation: Which was granted them, and he keeps that Kingdom in its antient State, viz. Two Dukes, one Marquess, and Eighteens Earls. 2. The other Grievance he recommended to their view was, that of our Wars, the excessive Charges vainly spent, the Unworthiness of the People employ'd. the neglect of experienced Persons, the Designs not warranted by Reason or Discretion, and the Execution worse performed: For there were Abusers of Princes, who perswade them to War when they might live in Peace. He said, The Parliament (of which he was a Member)

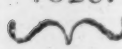
1628. ber) had an Asperſion caſt upon it, *That they drew his Maſteſty into a War, and then failed to contribute to it.* Then in the Parliament at *Oxford* Money being requir'd of them towards furniſhing out the Fleet, it was for ſeveral Reaſons unanimouſly reſuſed. Whereupon there was an Offer made by him, that, next to the King, ſeem'd to have beſt Authority; That if they would contribute but 40000*l.* they ſhould chuſe their Enemy: Whereby it appears that before that Proposition there was no Enemy, and therefore no War. And the Parliament inſtantly breaking up, without any Enemy named, or Money conſented to; How can the Parliament be taxed for Peace-breakers?

In *October* following the Fleet failed to *Cadiz*. Another Voyage followed ther next Summer under the Earl of *Lindſey*. The laſt and moſt lamentable was that of the *Iſle of Rhee*: He wiſhed theſe Voyages, with that to *Algiers*, might be referred to the Examination of experienced Officers by Land and Sea; and that after it had paſſed the Parliament's Approbation, it might be imparted to his Maſteſty, who would then ſee the Difference between Actions well manag'd, and raſh and heady Enterprizes; for the Probability of a Buſineſs was to be conſider'd, as well as the Neceſſity, Profit and Honour of it. He ſaid, It was obſervable that in Voyage of *Cadiz*, a Land-Soldier commanded at Sea, who knew not what belonged thereunto: And in that of *Rhee*, one commanded who was neither Soldier by Land nor Sea; and the Succeſs proved accordingly in both, and yet neither queſtioned, but both highly advanced.

The Evils that follow'd upon theſe Two Voyages, had been the Billeting of Soldiers in the Country, and bringing our Ships into Harbour, while the Pay of the one, and Wages of the other run on, and yet our Coaſts ſo infeſted, that we durſt not peep out of Harbour. But as for an Invaſion, there could be no great Fear of it, when our Ships were divided into ſo many Harbours, and our Soldiers in ſuch a Readineſs: Beſides, the Seafon of the Year was too late. Here's a Maſs of Wealth conſumed, and none the better for it but Soldiers, while the Poor were robb'd and ſpoil'd by theſe Fellows, and the Rich forced



forced to stand upon their Guard, lest their Houses should be surprized and rifled. The first Diminution of the Greatness of the *Roman* Empire, was by the Insolency of Soldiers: And the first Raising of the House of *Ottoman*, was by his Connivance at his Army. Who ever saw, or thought to have seen *Scots* and *Irish* garrison'd in *England*, and no Enemy appear? Or our own People Tyranniz'd over in our own Kingdom, and not dare to complain? Would our Forefathers have thought it Policy to draw 2000 *Scots* and *Irish* into the *Isle of Wight* for their Defence against *France*? Or that 2000 Mouths, besides the Inhabitants, should live on the Food of that Island to bring them into Want of Victuals, in case they should be attempted in Earnest, and in the mean time to suffer all Injuries from the Hands of Strangers? They would have thought it fitter to have sent the *English* Soldiers to the Place where they were press'd, till there were further Occasion for them: To have supplied the *Isle of Wight* with 2000 Men from the main Land, when they thought it in any Danger, rather than to have sent for them out of *Scotland*, and keep them in continual Pay; and to have return'd the barbarous *Irish* into their own Country, rather than to make them a Vexation to the Places where they were, and to have continued that needless and expensive Course, wherein 2 or 300000*l.* have been wastefully spent; for *England* wanted no Men, but could suddenly raise what Men his Majesty pleas'd, and could discharge them again without Trouble or Charge; and yet all the Song now was, To raise Money, and exact it of the Subject. But he that complain'd of the evil Management, was either imprison'd, banish'd the Court, or censured for a Discontent. He said, One of the first Proposals to the House would be for Money, to support his Majesty's vast Expence at that Time, when the Enemy threatned the Kingdom; and their often Alarms might now make them too secure; for in the last Parliament, Books were publish'd of invincible Preparations, and nothing came of it; and yet they might be deceived by that old Saying, *That a Liar is not to be trusted when he speaks Truth.* That they must give for their own sakes, their Sovereign's sake, and their Coun-

1628.  try's sake; but then they ought to declare the Condition of the Kingdom, and that they were not of Ability to give as they would. As when *Themistocles* demanded Tribute of the *Athenians*, and told them, He brought Two Gods with him, Perswasion and Violence: they answer'd him, They had Two other Gods in their Country, Poverty and Impossibility. And at that Time his Advice was, *That they present to his Majesty their willing Hearts and Minds to repair and put to Sea his Navy; but they to have the Power of making them able and serviceable, by the Advice of experienced Men that they might call unto them.* This was a Matter of great Importance, for the Safety of the Kingdom depended upon that Bulwark; hereby that Matter might be managed without any Trouble to his Majesty, who might dispose of the rest of his Revenue at his Pleasure: And it would then appear, that they were not against giving, but against the Misemployment of it when given. And if any should inform his Majesty, 'Twas a Derogation from his Honour to yield to his Subjects upon Conditions. How could it lessen the Reputation of a Prince to follow the Advice of his highest Counsellors? What Dishonour rather were it to be ruled by one Counsellor alone, to whom the whole Commonwealth had taken just Exception?

Debates  
touching  
Grievances.

Propositions touching a Supply.

On the 22d of *March* the Grievances were open'd, as Billeting of Soldiers, Loans, Benevolences and Privy-Seals; Imprisonment of Gentlemen refusing to lend, and remanding them upon their *Habeas Corpus*. To which *Sir Francis Seymour*, *Sir Thomas Wentworth*, afterwards *Earl of Strafford*, *Sir Benjamin Rudyard*, *Sir Edward Coke* and *Sir Robert Philips* spoke very freely and smartly. Mr. Secretary *Cook*, being also for Redress of Grievances, so as Supplies had the Precedency, on the 24th renew'd the Motion for a Supply, and next Day tended Propositions from the King concerning it, and said, His Majesty esteem'd their Grievances as his own, and stood not upon Precedence in Point of Honour, and moved the same Committee might take both into their Consideration. Hereupon the House turn'd into a Committee, to consider of the Liberty of the Subject in his Person and Goods, and also of the Supply; and the Grievances

vances as to our Persons were reduced to Six Heads. 1628.

1. Attendance at the Council. 2. Imprisonment. 3. Confinement. 4. Foreign Employment. 5. Martial Law. 6. Undue Proceedings in Judicature. And as to the Liberty of the Person, the particular Instance, was the Case of Sir John Heveningham, and others imprison'd about Loan-Money, who upon their *Habeas Corpus* had their Case argued, were remanded, and a Judgment (as was then said) was enter'd.

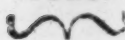
This occasion'd some warm Speeches, and the Judges of the King's Bench being called for, and justifying their Proceedings upon the *Habeas Corpus*, they were so far from being satisfied therewith, that they resolved, *Nemine Contradicente*, 1. That no Freeman ought to be detain'd, or kept in Prison, or otherwise restrain'd by the Command of the King, or the Privy-Council, or any other, unless some Cause of the Commitment, Detainer or Restraint be express'd, for which by Law he ought to be committed, detain'd or restrain'd. 2. That the Writ of *Habeas Corpus* might not be denied but ought to be granted to every Man that was committed, or detain'd in Prison, or otherwise restrain'd, tho' it were by the Command of the King, the Privy-Council, or any other, no Cause for such Commitment, Detainer or Restraint expressed, for which he ought by Law to be committed, detain'd or restrain'd; and the same be return'd upon a *Habeas Corpus* granted for the said Party, then he ought to be deliver'd or bail'd. And then taking into their Consideration the Subjects Property in his Goods, it was resolved, *Nemine Contradicente*, 4. That it was the ancient and undoubted Right of every Freeman, That he had a full and absolute Property in his Goods and Estate; That no Tax, Tallage, Benevolence, or other like Charge, ought to be commanded or levied by the King, or any of his Ministers, without common Consent by Act of Parliament,

The Commons had a Conference with the Lords about the Petition against Recusants, and Secretary Cook managed it. He acknowledged all due Honour to their Lordships for their Forwardness in the Encouragement and Maintenance of the true Religion, when that viperous Generation, as their Lordships justly

Resolves touching the Subjects Liberty in his Person.

A Conference, managed by Secretary Cook. against Recusants.

1628.



Lord-  
Keeper's  
Speech.

King's  
Speech.

term'd them, vaunt at Home and Abroad, that they doubt not to prevail. He said, they had established a Hierarchy among themselves, and had a Bishop consecrated by the Pope; and he had his Subalter-nate Officers, who exercised Jurisdiction, determined Ecclesiastical Causes, and held Intelligence with *Rome, Brussels and France*. The Regulars too had planted their Societies and Colleges, and intended to have held a concurrent Assembly with that Parliament; but that Nest of Wasps was digged out of the Earth, and their Convocation scattered. He acquainted them, That the Commons approved of every Word of the Petition, wherein their Lordships desired their Concurrence; only they presented them with a few Additions, which might make it more agreeable to the Statutes, and to a former Petition granted by his Majesty. But these Things they only recommended to their Lordships, being ready to join with them in the Petition, which on the 31<sup>st</sup> was presented to his Majesty, which, the Lord Keeper told him, was to quicken the Law against the Disturbers of the Peace of all States: That they had not forgotten his gracious Answer to a like Petition; but Weeds were not destroy'd at one Weeding, and these were Weeds of so spreading a Nature, that God's Vineyard was not yet cleansed: And God himself required, that we pray'd often to him for what he meant and promised to bestow upon us. Then the Lord-Keeper read the Petition, and the King spoke to this Effect, That he very well approved the Method of their Proceedings, *A Fove Principium*: That he liked the Lord-Keeper's Preamble, otherwise he should have suspected they had thought him not so careful of Religion as he had been, and ever should be. For the Petition, he liked it well, and to the Particulars they should receive a more full Answer hereafter. But as we pray'd to God to help us, so we must help our selves; for if they did not make speedy Provision, not a Ship would be put to Sea that Year.

Afterwards the King gave a particular Answer to the Petition against Recusants, which was read in both Houses; and both Petition and Answer were to this Effect: They thank'd his Majesty for his As-  
sent



sent to a publick Fast: And because our Sins were the Causes of those Evils that were fallen upon us, amongst which Idolatry and Superstition were the most heinous; they pray'd,

That the Laws against Jesuits, Seminary Priests, and all in Popish Orders, might be more duly executed; especially, that such of them as had return'd after their Banishment might be left to the utmost Severity of the Law, without admitting any Mediation or Intercession for them. And that such who receiv'd, harbour'd or conceal'd any of that viperous Generation, might suffer the Penalties imposed on them by Law. *His Majesty will give strict Order for the Apprehending Jesuits, Seminary Priests, and all in Popish Orders, and leave them to their Trial. And if there were Cause to respite the Execution, they should be committed (according to the Example of the best Times) to the Castle of Wisbich; and the Receivers and Abettors should be left to the Law.*

1628.  
An Answer to the Petition against Recusants  
Artic. 1.

That a strict Watch be kept over the Ports and Havens; and the Searching of Ships for the Apprehension of Jesuits and Seminary Priests brought in, and of Children and young Students sent beyond the Seas, might be committed to Men of Fidelity and Religion, and the Laws might be executed against the Connivers or Combiners. *His Majesty will order the Lord-Treasurer, Admiral and Warden of the Cinque-Ports, to see this Article fully executed. And he requir'd them, and other his Officers, to have a vigilant Eye on such as dwelt in Places of Advantage for receiving or transporting any such Persons: And will take it for good Service, if Notice were given of any as have, or should so connive or combine.*

Artic. 2.

Answer.

That the Laws prohibiting Popish Recusants to come to the Court, or within Ten Miles of London, and confining them to Five Miles Distance from their Dwelling-Houses, might be put in Execution; and Licences not warranted by Law for their Repair to London might be vacated. *Granted.*

Artic. 3.

Answer.

That whereas infinite Sums have within 2 or 3 Years last past been extracted out of Recusants, by Colour of Composition, and but a small Proportion brought to his Majesty's Coffers, which had amounted to little less than a conceal'd Toleration: His

Artic. 4.

1628. Majesty would dissolve that Mystery of Iniquity, patch'd up of colour'd Leases, Contracts and Pre-conveyances, being but Masks to defraud his Majesty, and for private Men to attain their corrupt

Answer. Ends. *His Majesty was willing to punish such Deceits and Abuses, and would account it good Service in any that would inform thereof: And commanded such to whom such Information should be brought, to bring the Offenders to Punishment. And that no concealed Toleration might be effected, he left the Laws to their Course.*

Artic. 5. That either the Concourse of Recusants to the Houses of Foreign Ambassadors to hear Mass, and participate in the Rites of that Superstition, might be prevented, or a vigilant Watch set upon them, that they might be apprehended at their Return, and severely prosecuted. *Granted.*

Artic. 6. That no Place of Authority or Command, or any of his Majesty's Ships, be committed to Popish Recusants, or Non-communicants, or any justly suspected.

Answer. *His Majesty will give Charge to the Lord-Keeper to call the Judges to him, and take Information, if any such were in the Commission of Peace, that due Reformation might be made: And would order the Lord Admiral, and others to whom it appertain'd, to enquire and certifie if any such were in Command in his Ships.*

Artic. 7. That all Judges and Justices might by Proclamation be commanded to put the Laws against Jesuits, Seminary Priests and Popish Recusants in speedy Execution; and the Judges at their Return from their Circuits to give an Account of their Proceedings to the Lord-Keeper, to be presented to his Majesty.

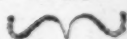
Answer. *Granted.*

Artic. 8. That until a Law might be made for educating the Children of Popish Recusants in the Grounds and Principles of Religion, which would be of more Power and Force than all Pecuniary Mulcts and Penalties, his Majesty would be pleased to take it into

Answer. his own Care and Consideration. *His Majesty approved thereof, and recommended to both Houses the Preparing of such a Law. But declared, that his Mildness towards those of the Popish Religion had been in Hopes that Foreign Princes would have used the like Moderation: But*

not finding it, he was resolved to add some further Severity what was desired.

1628.



In the mean time, the King having, on the 26th of *March*, sent Fourteen Propositions to the House touching Supplies, viz. To send out Thirty Ships for guarding the Seas; Ten for *Rochel*, and Ten for the *Elbe*; To arm and pay 17000 Horse and Foot for Foreign Service; To supply and repair the Forts; To supply the Stores of the Navy; To build Twenty Ships Yearly; To pay the Arrears of the Office of Ordnance, Victualling-Office and Treasure of the Navy, and the Freight of Merchant-Ships in Service, and to provide a Magazine of Victuals. There were great Debates upon them, on the 2d of *April*, but then the House waving the same, proceeded to Grievances by Confinement, and Foreign Employment; and resolved on the 4th, That no Free-Man ought to be confined by any Command of the King, or Privy-Council, or any other, unless it be by Act of Parliament, or by other due Course or Warrant of Law.

Resolve touching Confinements.

Mr. Secretary *Cook* delivered a Message from the King to this Effect: His Majesty taketh Notice of what is in Agitation among us, touching the Freedom of our Persons, and Propriety of our Goods, which he no way disliketh. He willeth us to proceed chearfully, and to express our Readiness to supply his great Occasions, upon Assurance we shall enjoy our Rights and Liberties, with as much Freedom and Security, as under the best of our Kings: And the more Confidence we shall shew in him, the more we shall prevail.

King's Message to the Commons

The House hereupon, after some Debate, unanimously resolved, That Five Subsidies be given his Majesty; which the King accepted very kindly: However, the Supply still met with Interruptions; which at length centring in a manner wholly in the Petition of Right; and this, after many Debates, Alterations and Conferences, being ready by the 2d of *June*, the King went to the Parliament; and after having told them, He was come thither to perform his Duty; and no Man could think it long, he not having taken so many Days in answering the Petition, as they were Weeks in framing it.

Five Subsidies resolved on.

1628.

Then the Lord-Keeper spake to this Effect ; That his Majesty took it in good part, that both Houses had professed they had no Intention to diminish his Prerogative. That his Majesty was come to subscribe a firm League with his People ; that so their Liberties might strengthen his Prerogative, and his Prerogative might be a Defence of their Liberties. All that remains was, That they heard read their own Petition, and his Majesty's gracious Answer.

The Petition of Right.

The Petition was from the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons in Parliament, and directed to the King's most Excellent Majesty, and was to this Effect : That whereas by the Statute of *E. 1. de Tallagio non concedendo*, it was enacted, That no Tallage, or Aid, should be levied by the King or his Heirs, without the Assent of the Archbishops, Bishops, Earls, Barons, Knights, Burgeßes and Freemen of the Commonalty : And by the Statute of *25 E. 3.* That none should be compelled to make any Loans to the King : And by other Statutes, That none should be charged by any Tax or Imposition, call'd a *Benevolence*, nor by such like Charge : By which Statutes the Subjects inherited this Freedom, That they should not be compelled to contribute to any Tax, Tallage, Aid, or other like Charge, not set by common Consent in Parliament. Yet of late divers Commissions had been directed to Commissioners in several Counties. and the People required to lend certain Sums of Money, and upon refusal had an Oath administred to them contrary to Law, and have been constrained to become bound to appear and attended before the Privy-Council ; and others have been therefore imprisoned, confined, and otherwise molested and disquieted. And other Charges have been laid and levied in several Counties, by Lords Lieutenants, Deputy Lieutenants, Commissioners for Musters, Justices of Peace, and others, by Command or Direction of his Majesty or Privy-Council, contrary to Law.

And whereas by the Statute, called, *That Great Charter of the Liberties of England*, it is declared and enacted, That no Freeman might be taken or imprisoned, or disseized of his Freehold, Liberties, or Free Customs ; or Outlaw'd, Exil'd or Destroy'd, but by the



the lawful Judgment of his Peers, or by the Law of the Land. And by the Statute of 28 E. 3. That no Man should be put out of the Land and Tenements, nor taken, imprisoned, or disherited, or put to Death, without being brought to answer by due Process of Law: Yet divers Subjects have been imprisoned without Cause shewed. And when they brought their Writs of *Habeas Corpus*, tho' no Cause was certified, but that they were detain'd by his Majesty's Command signified by the Lords of the Privy-Council, they were return'd back to several Prisons, without being charged with any thing.

1628.

And whereas of late great Companies of Soldiers and Mariners have been dispersed into divers Counties, and the Inhabitants against their Wills have been compelled to receive them into their Houses and there to suffer them to sojourn, contrary to Law.

And whereas by the Statute of 25 E. 3. no Man shall be forejudged of Life or Limb against the Form of the Great Charter, and the Law of the Land. And by the said Great Charter and other Statutes, no Man ought to be judged to Death, but by the Law establish'd in the Realm, by Custom of an Act of Parliament, and no Offender whatsoever is exempted from the Punishments to be inflicted by the Laws of this Realm. Nevertheless of late divers Commissioners under the Great Seal have issued and proceeded according to Martial Law, against Soldiers, Mariners and other dissolute Persons joining with them, for Murder, Robbery, Felony, Mutiny, or other Outrage or Misdemeanor, by such summary Course and Order as is agreeable to Martial Law, used in Armies in time of War; and to try, condemn, and execute them; on pretext whereof some had been put to Death, and other great Offenders had escaped, for that the Ministers of Justice refused to proceed against them, on pretence they were punishable by Martial Law; which Commissions are contrary to the Laws of this Realm.

They humbly prayed his Majesty, That no Man hereafter be compelled to take or yield any Gift, Loan, Benevolence, Tax, or such like Charge, without common Consent by Act of Parliament. And that none be called to make Answer, or take such Oath,

The Prayer.

or

1628.

or give Attendance, or be confined, or otherwise molested, or disquieted concerning the same, or for refusal thereof. And that no Freeman in any such manner as aforesaid, be imprisoned or detained. That his Majesty would remove the said Soldiers and Mariners, and that none might be so burdened in time to come. That the Commissions for Martial Law be null, and there be no such Issue for the Future. And his Majesty would declare, That the Doings and Proceedings aforesaid should not be drawn into Example, but that his Officers and Ministers should serve him according to the Laws of this Realm.

King's  
Answer.

Which Petition being read the said 2d of June, the King's Answer was this: *The King willerb. That Right be done according to the Laws and Customs of the Realm, And that the Statutes be put in due execution, that the Subjects might have no Cause to complain of any Wrong or Oppressions, contrary to their just Rights and Liberties; to the Preservation whereof he holds himself in Conscience as well obliged, as of his Prerogative.*

A Mes-  
sage from  
the King  
for end-  
ing that  
Session.

The King's Answer being read on the 3d of June in the House of Commons, and seeming too scant in respect of so much Time and Labour spent in contriving; some of the Members began to lay open Grievances, but others being against Recapitulating the same, the King sent them a Message by the Speaker, That now his Majesty had given them to their Petition an Answer full of Justice and Grace, by which he resolved to abide without further Change or Alteration; He let them know, that he resolved to end this Sessions on *Wednesday* the 11th Instant, and therefore wished them seriously to attend their Business, that this Sessions might be brought to a happy Conclusion.

Dr. Man-  
waring's  
Submis-  
sion.

After the Reading this Message, the House proceeded with their Declaration against Dr. Manwaring, which was presented to the Lords at a Conference by by Mr. Pym, the Doctor thought to have satisfied them with this Submission: *May it please this Honourable House, I do here, in all Sorrow of Heart and true Repentance, acknowledge the many Errors and Indiscretions which I have committed in Preaching and Publishing these Two Sermons of mine, which I called Religion and Allegiance; and my great Fault in falling upon this*  
Theme

Theme again, and handling the same rashly and unadvisedly in my own Parish-Church of St. Giles in the Fields, the 4th of May last past. I do humbly acknowledge those Three Sermons to have been full of many dangerous Passages, Inferences, and scandalous Aspersions in most Parts of the same. And I do humbly acknowledge the Justice of this Honourable House in that Judgment and Sentence passed upon me for my great Offence: And I do from the Bottom of my Heart, crave Pardon of God, the King, and this Honourable House; and the Church, and this Commonwealth in general, and those worthy Persons adjudged to be reflected upon by me in particular, for these great Errors and Offences.

Roger Manwaring.

The Commons by their Speaker demanding Judgment of the Lords against him, and they not accounting his Submission with Tears a sufficient Satisfaction, gave this Sentence. 1. That he should be imprisoned during the Pleasure of the House. 2. Fined 1000 *l.* to the King. 3. To make such Submission to both Houses, as should be set down by a Committee in Writing. 4. Suspended Three Years from the Exercise of the Ministry, and a preaching Minister provided by the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, to serve the Cure. 5. Disabled hereafter to have any Ecclesiastical Dignity, or Secular Office. 6. For ever disabled to preach at Court. 7. That his Book is worthy to be burnt, and his Majesty to be moved to issue out his Proclamation for that Purpose.

The Lords give Judgment against Dr. Manwaring.

This done, and but just to mention one and another Message from the King to the Commons, about terminating the Sessions, and that he had no Intentions to restrain them from complaining of any of his Ministers, but only to avoid all Scandals on his Council and Actions past, with the many Debates that intervened: The Commons now fell upon the Design on foot of bringing Foreign Forces, under the Command of *Daltrier* into the Kingdom: And *Burlemack* being called in, confessed he had receiv'd 30000 *l.* by Privy-Seal, for the Buying of Horses; that a Thousand of them were raised, and were with their Riders to come over, the Arms being provided in *Holland*; but he heard a Countermand was gone to stay them.

*Burlemack* call'd into the House.

Both

1628.

Both Houses having by this time formed a Petition for a further Answer to the Petition of Right, and the King coming to the Lords House, and the Commons sent for: The Lord-Keeper presented him the Petition, adding, The Lords and Commons considering that the good Intelligence between his Majesty and his People, much depended upon his Majesty's Answer to their Petition of Right, they humbly prayed him to give a clear and Satisfactory Answer thereunto in full Parliament. The King reply'd, He could not have imagin'd but his former Answer would have satisfy'd them: But to shew them there was no Doubtfulness in his Meaning, they should read their Petition, and they should have an Answer would please them. The Petition being read, this Answer was return'd *Soit Droit fait, come il est desire*, C. R. This I am sure (said his Majesty) is full; yet no more than I granted you in my first Answer. The Commons hereupon returned to their House with unspeakable Joy, and frequent Mention was made of proceeding with the Bills of Subsidies, and Tunnage and Poudage; and Sir *John Strangeways* moved to perfect their Remonstrance. The House ordered the Grand Committees to sit no longer, but that the House proceed only upon Grievances of most Moment, and on 13th, having Resolved upon the Question, That the Excessive Power of the Duke of *Buckingham*, was the Cause of the Evils and Dangers to the King and Kingdom. This was to be added to the Remonstrance, his Friend *Dr. Lamb*, on the 18. was assaulted in *London* by the Boys and Rabble, they calling him *Witch*, *Devil*, *the Duke's Conjuror*, &c. He took Sanctuary in the Windmill Tavern in the *Old Jury*; but the Vintner, out of fear, thrust him out: And when the Tumult saw a Guard coming from the Lord-Mayor to rescue him, they beat and bruised him, and left him for dead. The Officers, with much ado, got him alive into the Counter, where he died that Night. The City of *London* could not find any of the Persons in the Riot; and the Rage of the People was so high, that they would ordinarily utter these Words,

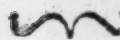
*Let Charles and George do what they can,  
The Duke shall die like Doctor Lamb.*

The



The City was afterwards fined for this Miscarriage. 1628.  
 In the mean time, the Privy-Council writ to the City, signifying how sensible his Majesty was of the Scandal this barbarous Murther might cast upon his Government, and by his Command they required them to enquire out the principal Actors and Abettors, and to punish them in the severest Manner that in such Cases was provided by the Law.

At length the Remonstrance of the Commons being perfected, about the Danger of Religion, and the Duke's Abuse of Power, was to this Effect, That they thought it their Duty to inform his Majesty of the apparent Danger, Ruin and Destruction this Church and Commonwealth was in, and of the miserable Condition of this Kingdom, which of the most happy and flourishing, was like to be the most contemptible Nation in the World. They acknowledged his Majesty's Goodness, express'd by his clear and satisfactory Answer to their Petition of Right. That one of the principal Ends of calling Parliaments was, That his Majesty might be truly inform'd of the State of the several Parts of his Kingdom, and how his Officers and Ministers behaved themselves, which is scarce able to be made known to him but in Parliament; as was declared by his blessed Father, who told the Commons, It would be the greatest Breach of Duty to his Majesty, and of the Trust committed to them, if they did not deal clearly with him, without sparing any, how near and dear soever to him, if they were hurtful or dangerous to the Commonwealth. They first of all beseech his Majesty to take notice, that there was a general Fear conceived in his People, of a secret Working to introduce into this Kingdom Innovation and Change of our Religion. For notwithstanding the many good Laws to prevent the Encrease of Popery, and his Majesty's satisfactory Answer to the Petition of both Houses, presented to him at *Oxford*; they find no good Effect thereof, but that those of that Religion do find extraordinary Favours and Respect at Court: In particular from the Countess of *Buckingham*, who openly professes that Religion; which they hoped upon his Majesty's Answer to the aforesaid Petition at *Oxford*, should not have been permitted, nor any of his Subjects justly

1628.  justly suspected, should be entertained in his or the Queen's Service: Some of that Religion have had Honours, Offices, and Places of Authority lately conferred upon them. Letters of Stay of Legal Proceedings against them have been procured from his Majesty, and Commissions granted and executed for compounded with Popish Recusants, with Inhibitions to the Ecclesiastical and Temporal Courts not to intermeddle with them, amounting to no less than a Toleration: Their Numbers, Powers, and Insolence daily encreasing, especially about *London*, where they frequent Mass at *Denmark-House*, and other Places. That there was likewise a Daily growth and spreading of the Faction of Arminians, who are Protestants in shew, but Jesuits in Opinion, which caused his Royal Father to endeavour the Suppressing of them. And his Majesty likewise had by Proclamation declared his dislike of those Persons, and their Opinions, who notwithstanding are much favoured and advanced, not wanting Friends of the Clergy near his Majesty, namely, Dr. *Neal*, Bishop of *Winchester*, and Dr. *Laud*, Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*, who were justly suspected to be unsound in their Opinions that way. And it being now generally held the Way of Preferment, many Scholars bend the Course of their Studies to maintain those Errors; and their Books were suffer'd to be publish'd, while the Orthodox were prohibited. Preaching was discountenanced, and painful Preachers, how conformable soever, discouraged. And in *Ireland* the Popish Rebellion openly professed, Popish Jurisdiction exercised, and Monasteries, Nunneries, &c. newly erected, re-edified and replenished. And all these Courses tending to the Destruction of true Religion have been taken here, when the same was with open Force and Violence prosecuted in other Countries, and all the Reform'd Churches of *Christendom* either depress'd, or miserably distress'd. They appeal'd to his Majesty, whether there were not just Ground of Fear, that there was some secret and strong Co-operating here with the Enemies of our Religion Abroad, for the utter Extirpation thereof. They further declared to his Majesty, That his People were likewise full of Fear of Innovation and Change of Government, tho' much comforted by his Majesty's

An-

Answer to their Petition of Right, and raised again out of the Discontent they had conceived for the undue Courses taken the last Year for raising Monies by Loans, than which never were no Monies paid with general Regret : That, notwithstanding his Majesty's gracious Answer to their Petition of Right against Billeting of Soldiers, they were still continued and reinforced ; and tho' many of them were not Natives of this Kingdom, and of an opposite Religion to ours, they were placed upon the Sea-Coast, where they might at the same time unite with the Popish Party at Home, and join with an invading Enemy. That the Report of the dangerous Design of bringing in *German* Horse and Riders, had turn'd their Doubts into Despair, had not his Majesty assured them, they were not intended for any Service in *England* : Yet the Sight of the Privy-Seal, the great Sum of Money paid thereupon, and the Commission granted to the Lords, and others of the Privy-Council, to consider of raising Monies by Impositions, gave them just Cause to suspect, that there were those who might, by this or other Means, contrive to change the Frame both of Religion and Government. These Men could not be ignorant, that the bringing in of Strangers for Aid had been pernicious to most States, but to *England* fatal ; and they held it beneath any *English* Man to think, that this victorious Nation should stand in Need of *German* Soldiers to defend it : That when they consider'd the Courses aforesaid, the often Breaches of Parliament, the taking of Tonnage and Poundage without Act of Parliament ; the standing Commission granted to the Duke of *Buckingham*, to be General of an Army here in the Time of Peace ; the Discharging of faithful and sufficient Persons from Judicial Places and other Offices ; they could not but apply themselves to his Majesty for speedy Help and Reformation. They pray'd his Majesty to consider, Whether the ill Success that had accompanied all his late Designs and Actions, particularly those of *Cales*, the Isle of *Rhee*, and the Expedition to *Roche*, had not extreamly wasted the Stock of Honour that was left unto this Kingdom ? That, with the Loss of our Honour, we lost several valiant and expert Commanders, and many Thousand common Sol-

diers

1628. diers and Mariners, though of 6 or 7000 lost at the Isle of *Rhee*, his Majesty received Information but of a few Hundreds. And this Dishonour and Loss had been purchased with the Consumption of above a Million of Treasure. That many of the Forts were weak and decayed: And his Majesty's Store of Powder, which by Order of the Privy-Council, *Decemb. 10. 1626.* should be constantly 300 Lasts, besides Twenty Lasts a Month for ordinary Expences, is now in the *Tower* but Nine Lasts, and 48 *l.* in all: And yet great Quantities have been sold out of his Majesty's Store for private Gain; whereof Six Lasts sold since the 14th of *January* last. And tho' by Contract with Mr. *Evelyn* his Store ought to be supplied Monthly with Twenty Lasts, at the Rate of 3 *l.* 10 *s.* 10 *d.* a Barrel; His Majesty hath been forced to pay above 7 *l.* a Barrel for Powder brought from beyond Seas; for which purpose 12400 *l.* was empressed to Mr. *Burlemack* last Year, and yet not so good as was to have been had by Contract by one Third part. But what the Poverty, Weakness and Misery of the Kingdom was grown unto by decay of Trade, and loss of Ships and Mariners within these Three Years, they were almost afraid to declare. But for his Majesty's more exact Information therein, they beseech him to peruse the Kalender of Particulars presented to him with this Remonstrance. One Reason whereof was, the not guarding the Narrow Seas, the Regality whereof was in a Manner lost, the *Dunkirkers* continually robbing and spoiling his Majesty's Subjects. The principal Cause of which Evils they conceive to be the excessive Power of the Duke of *Buckingham*, and the abuse of that Power. And they submit it to his Majesty, Whether it be safe for so great a Power by Sea and Land to be in the Hands of any one Subject? Nor was it possible for any one Man to manage so many and Weighty Affairs of the Kingdom as he hath undertaken; some of which would require the Time and Industry of the ablest Men of the Kingdom. And they desire his Majesty to consider, Whether the Duke having so abused that Power, it be safe to continue him, either in his Great Offices, or in his Place of Nearness and Counsel about his Person? And they beseech his Majesty graciously to accept of this  
true



true Representation of their present Danger, and pressing Calamities, and to restore the Safety and Happiness of these Kingdoms.

The Speaker was appointed to deliver this Remonstrance to his Majesty. But the Subsidy Bill being now also sent to the Lords, the Commons soon saw the Session was but short-lived. It's true, the Lord Keeper reported to the Lords from the King, That his Majesty now having a Supply from his People, he esteemed the Commission of Excise useless: That both that and the Warrant for putting the Seal thereunto, were cancelled in the King's presence; and the Lord Keeper openly shewed them cancell'd, and they were sent to the Commons to be shewed there.

However the Commons resumed the Debate upon the Bill of Tunnage and Poundage: Whereupon a Remonstrance was prepared against the taking of them without Act of Parliament, being to this Effect: That by the Incertainty of their continuance together, their unexpected Interruptions, and the Shortness of the Time for ending that Session, they could not bring to Maturity divers Businessses of Weight they had taken into their Consideration, and particularly the Bill of Tunnage and Poundage, which would require much Time and Preparation by Conference with his Majesty's Officers and Merchants. That they assured themselves, that his Majesty was resolved to observe his Answer given to the Petition of Right: Yet doubting his Majesty might be misinform'd, as if he might continue those Impositions without breaking that Answer, they did declare, There ought not any Impositions to be laid upon the Goods of Merchants without Act of Parliament: That the Subjects have been ever careful to use such Cautions and Limitations in their Grants of such Subsidies and Impositions, as might prevent any Claim to be made; that such Subsidies did proceed from Duty, and not from the free Gift of the Subjects. That they had heretofore used to limit a Time in such Grants, as for a Year or two; and if it were continued longer, they would direct a certain Space of Intermission, sometimes granted on Occasion of War for a Number of Years, with Proviso, that if the War were ended, the Grant should cease: And it had been sequestred into the

The Commons  
Remonstrance  
about Tunnage  
and Poundage

1628. Hands of some Subjects for the Guarding of the Seas: That by the ordinary Answer of his Majesty's Predecessors in their Assent to the Bills of Tunnage and Poundage, it appear'd to be of the Nature of other Subsidies, and very few of them had it for Life, till *H. 7.* who made no Commissions for receiving it, until granted in Parliament. All the Kings and Queens of this Realm have, since his Time, had the like Grants for Life; and if the People had been aggrieved by laying any Impositions on their Goods contrary to Law, upon Complaint in Parliament, they have been relieved, saving in the Time of his Royal Father, who through ill Counsel raised the Rates upon Merchandizes to what they now are. That they design'd so to frame a Grant of Tunnage and Poundage, as thereby his Majesty may the better defend the Realm, and the Subjects be encouraged to proceed in their Trade. But being prevented herein, they had no way left but to make this Declaration, That the Receiving of Tunnage and Poundage not granted by Parliament, is a Breach of their Fundamental Liberties, and contrary to his Majesty's Answer to the Petition of Right. And they beseech his Majesty to forbear the Receiving of it.

The King  
ends that  
Session in  
Person,  
and de-  
clares the  
Reason.

The King not liking this Remonstrance, *June 26.* went unexpectedly to the House of Lords, and sending for the Commons, said, That he came to end that Session, and he would tell them the Cause; tho' he must avow, *He was accountable for his Actions to God alone.* The Commons lately gave him a Remonstrance, which he was sure no wise Man could justify. And now a Second Remonstrance was preparing, to take away the Profit of his Tunnage and Poundage. He alledged, He had not given away his Right thereto by his Answer to their Petition; the true Intent whereof, was not to grant any new Thing, but that those Things which had been done, which seem'd to trench upon the Liberties of the Subject, should not hereafter be drawn into Example; and so much he promised in the Word of a King. But as for Tonnage and Poundage, he could not want it, nor was it intended by them to ask him, nor by him to grant. And he commanded them to take Notice thereof, especially the

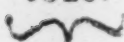
the Judges, to whom, under him, and not to the House of Parliament, belonged the Interpretation of Laws.

Then the Bill of Subsidy was deliver'd to the Speaker, who in a short Speech shew'd, that it was the greatest Gift that ever was given in so short a Time, and desired the Royal Assent, tho' the Commons had given no Order for the Speaker to deliver the Bill; nor was it brought down to the Commons House as usual. There passed 28 Acts, Six of them publick: But for the Bill of Explanation of the Statute of 3 Jac. about Leases of Recusants Lands, he said, He had not Time sufficient to consider thereof; but he found many Errors in it, which if mended next Session, it should pass.

In the Interval between the Two Sessions, *Manwaring's* Sermons, intituled, *Religion and Allegiance*, were suppress'd by Proclamation, the King declaring, That tho' the Grounds thereof were rightly laid to perswade Obedience from Subjects to their Sovereign, yet there were divers Inferences and Applications trenching upon the Laws and Proceedings of Parliament, whereof he was ignorant, and had so far erred, that he had drawn upon himself and his Book the just Censure of the Parliament. Another Proclamation was issued, containing Directions to his Commissioners for compounding with Popish Recusants for Two Thirds of their Estates; nevertheless, for the most part they got off upon easie Terms. A Third there was, commanding Search to be made for all Priests and Jesuits (particularly the Bishop of *Calcedon*) and to commit them to Goal, without Bail or Mainprize, till tried; and if convicted, and there were Cause to respite Execution, they should be sent to the Castle of *Wisbich*, or some other safe Prison, and restrain'd from exercising their Function. And the Privy-Council wrote to the Bishop of *Ely* to prepare the said Castle of *Wisbich* to receive them, and there to treat and govern them according to such Instructions as should be prescribed by that Board. The Jesuits taken in *Clerkenwel*, and committed to several Prisons, were all of them committed to *Newgate* by Order of Council, and were to be proceeded against till condemned, and then sent to *Wisbich*,

Several Proclamations.

1628.



and the Attorney-General to take course to entitle the King to the Goods found in the House ; but tho' all were proceeded against, one only was convicted. And the Privy-Council sent to the Lord Mayor to certifie what Recusants remained in the City or Liberties thereof, as House-Keepers, Inmates, or Lodgers, with their Names and Qualities, and who were Tradesmen there, and who not. *Mountague* his *Appello Cesareum* was called in, the King declaring he did it to prevent unnecessary Disputes, which had been first stirred up by that Book, commanding all who had those Books to deliver them to the Bishop of the Diocese ; or if in the Universities, to the Chancellor or Vice-chancellor, who were to suppress them. And if any by preaching, reading, writing, should revive those Differences, the King would take such order with them, as they should wish they had never thought upon those needless Controversies. But for all these Things, *Mountague* and *Manwaring* had a Pardon of all Errors in Speaking, Writing or Printing. And *Manwaring*, though censured by the Lords, and disabled from future Ecclesiastical Preferments, was immediately presented to the Rectory of *Stamford Rivers* in *Essex*, which by Dispensation he held with *St. Giles in the Fields*, and *Mountague* was made Bishop of *Chichester*.

The German Horse  
disposed  
of.

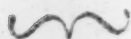
Mer-  
chants  
commit-  
ted about  
Customs.

As for the Horse levied in *Germany*, and (as was said) intended for *England*, upon certain Overtures by the King of *Sweden* and Duke of *Savoy*, the Privy-Council writ to *Dalbier*, that he might dispose of them to those Princes. The Parliament was prorogued from the 10th of *October* to the 20th of *January*. And now comes on that ugly Business of the Merchants some of them, who traded in Wines, being committed to the Fleet for Non-payment of an Imposition of Twenty Shillings the Tun, were delivered upon their entering into Bond to pay the same. The King in Council declared his Pleasure to have 2 s. 2 d. the Hundred upon all Currants, besides that of 3 s. 4 d. it being a Duty laid by Queen *Elizabeth*, and had been paid to his Father and himself, and he was possessed of the whole 5 s. 6 d. the Hundred by a solemn Judgment in the *Exchequer*. And divers Merchants of *London* having forcibly landed, and endeavoured



carry away their Merchandizes, were summoned to the Council-Table: And Mr. *Chambers* being committed by them to the *Marshalsea* for some Words spoken at that time, and bringing his *Habeas Corpus*, the Marshal returned, That he was committed by the Command of the Lords of the Council. The Warrant was, That he was committed for insolent Behaviour, and Words spoken at the Council-Table; the Words were, tho' not expressed in the Return, [That such great Customs and Impositions were required from the Merchants of *England*, as were in no other Place, and that they were more screwed up than under the *Turk*.] But it not appearing by the Return what the Words were, whereto he might give answer, (tho' the King's Attorney mov'd for a longer Day) the Court bailed him, and by Recognizance he was bound in 400*l.* and Four Merchants in 100*l.* apiece for his apperance there in *Crastino animarum*, and in the interim to be of good behaviour. At which Baylment the Council being much dissatisfy'd; the Judges were sent for to the Lord-keeper; who told them, the Enlargement of *Chambers* was without due regard had to the Privy-Council, in not acquainting them therewith. They answer'd, What they had done was according to Law. But it was reply'd, It was necessary the Power and Dignity of the Council-Table should be preserved, by a Correspondence from the Courts of Justice. Farther in *Michaëlas* Term the Officers of the Custom-House seized great quantities of Currants of Mr. *Vassal*, for refusing to pay 5*s.* 6*d.* for every 100 Weight. And the Attorney-General exhibited an Information against him, setting forth, that King *James* did, by his Letters Patents, command taking the said Imposition: And his now Majesty by his Letters Patents 26 *June*, 2 *Car.* by Advice of his Privy-Council, did declare, that Subsidies, Customs, and Imposts, should be levied as they were in King *James* his Time, until settled by Parliament; and the said *Vassal* had imported 4638 Hundred Weight of Currants without paying Custom. *Vassal* pleaded *Magna Charta*, and the Statute *de Tallagio non concedendo*, and that the said Imposition was imposed without Assent of Parliament. To which the Attorney-General

1628



demurred. The Barons of the *Exchequer* said, this was already adjudged in one *Bates* his Case, and deny'd to hear *Vassal's* Council argue. They said the King was in possession, and they would keep him so, and they gave their Opinion for the King, and both imprisoned *Vassal* for Nonpayment, and detained his Goods. And the Custom-House Offices having seiz'd several Merchandizes of *Chambers*, for Nonpayment of the Subsidy of Tunnage and Poundage, because not granted by Parliament, and he bringing a *Replevin*, the Court of *Exchequer* ordered an Injunction to the Sheriffs of *London*. not to execute such Writ, or any other of the like Nature, declaring such Goods were not repleviable, and the Sheriffs did forbear accordingly. And the Court ordered the Custom-House Officers to detain double the Value of what was demanded, and to restore the Residue.

Siege of  
*Rochel.*

But enough of this ungrateful Subject. We come now to our War with *France*, we find King *Lewis* and the Cardinal caused now new Forts to be erected, in order to the closer Blocking up of *Rochel*; but this would not do, unless you could likewise shut them up by Sea, which *Targam*, an *Italian* Engineer, try'd to do several times to no Purpose; for the Storms or Tides only carried away all that he placed at the Mouth of the Haven: At last the Cardinal propos'd to make a Stone Ditch, in the Middle of which a Passage should be left for the Tide, the Work was begun on the Side of the Gulph, which made the Harbour of *Rochel* of 740 Fathom Breadth, where the Cannon of the Town could not reach. To frame this Fence, they drove great Piles into the Sea, traversed with others, and put great Stones into them. They also sunk several Vessels laden with Stones to support them. It was at the Bottom Twelve Fathom wide, and went sloping towards the Top, where it was Four; so that the Soldiers that guarded it were always dry: There were also many Ships to defend it within and without, and Artillery on both the Ranks. Whilst they were working at this Fence, the *Spanish* Fleet under *Toledo* arriv'd there to the Assistance of the *French*, tho' in a very bad Condition, and with it *Leganes* and *Spinola*, to which last especially the King ordered all the Works

Works to be shewed, who disliked some of them, and said, there were but Two Ways to take it, which was to close up the Haven, or open the Purse. But when he went into *Spain*, instead of advising the King, at *Olivarez* had done, to help on the Ruin of the *Rochellers* he counselled him to assist them.

Now the *Spanish* Fleet joining that of the *French*, and making in all a Hundred Vessels small and great, the *English* would not adventure to send a Convoy of Victuals, Wood and Coals, which was ready, to *Rochel*: But on the other Hand, the Marine Work not advancing very much, and the King being weary of staying Seven Months in Camp, went for *Paris*, where some Affairs of State requir'd his Presence: but before his Departure he made *Richlieu* Lieutenant General of his Armies in *Poitou*, *Saintonge*, *Angoumois* and *Aunis*, made General with full Power over all his Troops, Horse and Foot, *French* and Foreigners, and expressly enjoind *Angoulesme*, *Bassompierre*, *Schomberg*, and the rest of the Officers, to obey him, as they ought to do the King, when personally present.

The King being gone, the Works were so far from ceasing, that, notwithstanding the Season, and the Sallies of the Besieged, they at last so well finished the Lines of Circumvallation, that the Forts were all in a State of Defence, and had mutual Communication; but the Dam advanced more slowly, as meeting with more Opposition. The Cardinal at the same time foreseeing the Length of the Siege, took great Care to pay and provide well for the Army; and a little after the King's Departure summon'd the *Rochellers* in vain to surrender: Neither was he more successful in his Design of Petarding the false Port of *Salines*, the new Gate of *St. Nicholas*, and to scale the Bastions of the *Gabut* and of the *Gospel*, to endeavour to break the Chain, and surprize the Fort of *Tadon*, whilst some false Alarms were given in other Places. This was on the 11th of *March* at Night; they also fail'd in another Enterprize on the Fort of *Tadon* Two Days after.

1628.

While these Things were transacted, they began to want many Things in *Rochel*, and were forced to open the Magazines of Corn and salt Meat to private Persons, and distribute those Provisions which were in no good Condition with extraordinary Ceremony; but, notwithstanding the great Prudence of the Mayor and others, many Soldiers deserted to the Enemy, and the Cardinal would not let the Duke of *Roan*'s Mother and her Daughter in Law come out of *Rochel*, for fear they should cabal for that Duke, who then made War in *Languedoc*, and created a great deal of Trouble to the Prince of *Conde*, *Montmorency*, and others, who commanded for the King in that Province. In the mean time, the *Rochellers* had waited with Impatience for the Spring-Tide of the Equinox of *March*, which is commonly the greatest, but it had no great Effect on the Dyke; however, some Barks came in, that brought them a little Corn, and the News of the Succours from *England*, which were suddenly to depart. The Cardinal being inform'd hereof, and the *Spanish* Fleet being gone, it was thought fit the King should return to the Camp, where arriving the 24th of *April* accordingly, a few Days after the *English* Fleet appear'd, consisting of Fifty Men of War, and Forty Victuallers, which made that of *France* range it self in the Channel between the Two Points, and the Stoccado of sunk Vessels was furnish'd with a Regiment on each Side. They caus'd 36 Galleots to enter between the Dyke and the City, and on each of them were put Twenty Men more than ordinary to oppose the Sallies of the *Rochellers*. The Storm, which was violent for some Days, hindred the *English* from attempting any thing; but at length, Eight Days after their Arrival, the Men of War advanced within Cannon-Shot of the *French* Fleet, on whom they discharged all their Artillery, but did no more, only one of their Shallops got into *Rochel*. The Retreat of the *English* without attempting any thing, extreamly enraged the *Rochellers* against the Earl of *Denbigh*, who commanded, altho' they promised to send them suddenly a more powerful Assistance. The Cardinal thereupon wrote

*English*  
fail to re-  
lieve *Rochel*.



a Letter to exhort them to submit, which they refused, in Hopes the *English* would at last relieve them; and then having an Opportunity to write to them another, it happen'd to be on the 23<sup>d</sup> of *August*, the same Day the Duke of *Buckingham* was stabb'd at *Portsmouth* by *John Felton*, as he was going on Board the Fleet for the Relief of *Roche*. *Buckingham slain.*

Some said, this *Felton* was a *Scotch* Man, but the Lord C-----n says, he was a Man obscure in his Person, though of a good Family in *Suffolk*, which having been by the Duke refused a Company, whose Captain was killed upon the Retreat at the Isle of *Rhee*, and in which he had served as Lieutenant, threw up his Commission, and withdrew from the Army at that Time, when the House of Commons, transported against the Duke, had accused him to the House of Peers, styling him, *The Fountain of all the Evils the Kingdom suffer'd, and an Enemy to the Publick*; which wrought so far upon the melancholick Gentleman, that he thought in killing the Duke he should do God good Service, and therefore resolved to do it. The Duke was then at *Portsmouth*, whither *Felton* repair'd the Eve of *St. Bartholomew*. The next Morning Monsieur *Soubize*, Brother to the Duke of *Roan*, and other *French* Gentlemen, were urgent with him for the Departure of the Fleet design'd to relieve *Roche*, which was straitly besieged by Cardinal *Richlieu*, and which the Duke was then advertised had relieved it self. These Gentlemen insisted much upon the Impossibility that the Intelligence could be true; that it was contrived by their Enemies to abate that Zeal used for their Relief, the Arrival of which they had so much Reason to apprehend.

This Discourse was held with so much Passion, that the Standers by, who understood not *French*, thought they were angry, and that they used the Duke rudely, who being inform'd that his Breakfast was ready, for which he had waited, drew near the Door, where the Hangings were held up, and as he was turning to speak with Sir *Thomas Fryar*, he was in an Instant struck over the Shoulder upon the Breast with a Knife; upon which, without any

more

1628. more Words than, *The Villain hath killed me*, he pull'd out the Knife, and the same Moment fell down dead. It was a great Miracle that the *French* were not all kill'd that Instant; for no Man had seen the Blow, or the Person who gave it; so every one concluded from their late angry Discourse, as they thought, that it must be done by them; the sobrest Part that preserved them having the same Opinion of their Guilt, reserving them only for a more deliberate Inquisition.

In the Crowd near the Door there was found upon the Ground a Hat, in the Inside of which were sew'd Three or Four Lines of the Declaration in which the House of Commons styled the Duke an Enemy to the Kingdom, and one or two short Ejaculations towards a Prayer. All readily concluded the Hat belong'd to the Person who had committed the Murther, but who that Person should be was a Difficulty still remaining. In this Hurry, whilst every one was in Motion, a Man was seen walking very composedly without his Hat; whereupon one crying out, *This is the Fellow that killed the Duke*, and others demanding, *Which is he?* He answered, without any Concern, *I am he*; and when some of the most furious were running violently upon him to kill him, whilst others of equal Concern for the Loss, but more Discretion, defended him, he with open Arms invited their Swords, desiring rather to fall by their Fury, than be reserved for that deliberate Justice, which he knew would be executed upon him. Being carried into a private Room, surrounded with Persons of the best Condition, some whereof were in Authority, and demanded at whose Instigation he was induced to that execrable and horrid Act, he answer'd resolutely, 'That their Enquiry was needless; That no Man living had Power enough with him to dispose him to such an Action; That it proceeded meerly from the Impulse of his own Conscience; That he had fix'd his Motives thereunto in his Hat, because he thought he might probably perish in the Attempt; That he had come to Town the Night before, and waited that Morning at the Duke's Lodgings for his coming out; That  
'when

‘when he found him coming by the Motions with-  
 ‘in, he drew near to the Door, as if to hold up the  
 ‘Hangings, and whilst the Duke enclin’d a little  
 ‘to Sir *Thomas Fygar*, who was speaking to him, he  
 ‘took the Opportunity of giving the Blow over  
 ‘his Shoulder. But after he had been some time  
 in Prison, both before and at his Trial, he be-  
 behaved himself with great Modesty and Repentance,  
 and earnestly begg’d of the Judges, that his Hand,  
 with which he had perpetrated the impious Act,  
 might be struck off before he should be put to  
 Death.

1628.

His Majesty, who was then at *Southwick*, Four  
 Miles from *Portsmouth*, was at Divine Service, when  
 Sir *Tho. Hippeley* came into the Room, who with a  
 troubled Countenance, went directly to the King,  
 and whispered in his Ear what had fallen out. He  
 continued unmoved till Prayers were ended, but  
 then he withdrew immediately into his Chamber,  
 threw himself upon his Bed, and continued in a me-  
 lancholick Discomposure of Mind a long time after.  
 Yet the Manner with which he receiv’d the News  
 in publick, made many, who knew not with what  
 Passion he expressed himself upon his Retreat, to  
 think the Accident was not very ungrateful to him,  
 as being rid of a Favourite very ungracious to the  
 People, and the Prejudice to whose Person was a great  
 Obstruction to all Overtures made in Parliament for  
 his Service.

In what  
 Manner  
 the King  
 received  
 the News  
 of the  
 Duke’s  
 Death.

The Duke, according to my Lord *Cl-----*, was  
 a Man of a noble, generous Nature, well versed in  
 all the Arts of a Court; of a Courage not to be  
 daunted, as all his Actions and his Contests with par-  
 ticular Persons of the highest Reputation sufficiently  
 manifest, especially his whole Demeanour at the Isle  
 of *Rhee*. As he was vehement in his Kindness and  
 Affection to his Friends, so was he in his Rigour and  
 Animosity towards his Enemies. And when he was  
 in the highest Passion, he was so far from attaining  
 his Revenge by Disimulation, (the low Method of  
 Courts) that he never attempted to do any Man an  
 ill Office, before he had first assured him what he was  
 to expect from him. His single Misfortune was, he

The  
 Duke’s  
 Character

never

1628. never made choice of a noble, generous Friend so much his Equal, that he could frankly advise him to his Honour and true Interest against the Torrent of his impetuous Passions. Then his Ascent was so quick, that it appear'd rather a Flight than a Growth; so that he stood in need of Dependants before he thought he could want Coadjutors: Nor was he very lucky in the Choice of those Dependants, who were only intent upon growing rich themselves, not upon advising their Master to grow good as well as great; so that through the whole Course of his Fortune he was a much wiser Man than any Friend or Servant he had.

There were Two Particulars that lay heaviest upon his Memory. The first his forcing his old Master against his Will upon a War with *Spain*, at a Time when the Crown was poor, and when the Nation was more enclined to a severe Inquiry, how it came to be so than to make any Provision for its Supply. And this only upon some personal Animosities (flowing from no other Fountain, than that frolick Humour to which the Prince's Court was addicted, and which suited ill with the Nature and Education of *Spain*) between him and the *Spanish* Favourite, the Duke of *Olivarez*; and not from those pretended Amours, which were afterwards fathered upon him; for tho' the Duke was naturally devoted to those Passions, when he met with any beautiful Object to entertain 'em, yet the Dutches of *Olivarez*, of whom was the Discourse, was then a Woman so old, of so mean a Presence, in a Word, so crooked and deform'd, that she was neither fit to raise his Appetite, nor magnifie his Revenge. The other Particular, which drew upon him so many fatal Embarassments, which he never was able to shake off, was his running violently into the War with *France*, and that upon a private unwarrantable Passion. During his Embassy in *France* he had the Ambition to fix his Thoughts upon a Lady of a very Sublime Quality, and pursued his Addresses so far, that after the *French* King, who had attended his Sister on her Way for *England*, had left her in the Hands of the Duke to be by him conducted home, he presumed once more to Visit that great Lady, which



which he thought he might do with the Privacy he desired ; but his Attempt was so easily discover'd, that had he pursued his Design he had perish'd in it, of which he had only Notice enough to secure himself from the Danger ; swearing in the Instant, that he was resolv'd both to see and speak with that Lady in spite of all the Power of *France*. And from the Time the Queen arriv'd in *England* his whole Business was to undervalue and exasperate that Nation, which extended even to an Endeavour of lessening the King's Affections towards his young Queen, who during his Life never had that Credit with his Majesty, in reference to publick Affairs, that might have diverted him from a War with *France*. My Lord continues, and says it cannot be denyed, but from these Two Wars, so imprudently undertaken, the Duke's Ruin took it's Date ; the Malice whereof took Rise from that sole Evil Spirit of the Time, the Venom of which contracted to that degree 'till the Nation grew fatiated, and weary of the Government it self, tho' it had enjoyed a greater Measure of Felicity under it, than any People were ever possess'd of before, and which could never be secured to 'em without it.

Several Prophecies and Predictions of the Duke's untimely Death were then in the Mouths of the People, amongst which one was built upon a better Foundation of Credit. My Lord *Clarendon* relates it much in the same Manner as *Lilly* has done before him. An Officer in the King's Wardrobe in *Wind-sor* Castle, honest and discreet, about the Age of Fifty, whom, whilst a School-Boy, Sir *George Villiers*, Father to the Duke, who lived in the same Parish, had much cherish'd and obliged ; whilst in Bed at Midnight in very good Health, perceived a Person of a venerable Aspect draw near his Curtains, and, with his Eyes fix'd upon him, ask'd him, if he knew who he was ? The poor Man, after a Repetition of the same Question, recalling to his Memory the Presence of Sir *George Villiers*, answer'd, half dead with Fear, He thought him to be that Person. He reply'd, He was in the Right, and that he must go and acquaint his Son from him. That unless he did something to ingratiate himself with the

Predictions concerning the Duke's Death.

1628. the People, he would be suffer'd to live but a short time. After this he disappear'd, and the poor Man the next Morning consider'd all no otherwise than as a Dream. This was repeated with a more terrible Aspect the Second Night, the Person telling him, Unless he perform'd his Command, he should expect no Peace of Mind; upon which he promised to obey him. The lively Representation of all to his Memory strangely perplex'd him; but considering he was a Person at such a Distance from the Duke, he was willing still to persuade himself, that he had been only dreaming. The same Person repeating his Visit the Third time, and reproaching him for the Breach of Promise, he had by this gather'd Courage enough to tell him, That it was a difficult Thing to gain Admission to the Duke, and more difficult to be credited by him, that he should be look'd on either as a Malecontent or a Mad-man, and so be sure to be undone. The Person reply'd, after a Repetition of his former Threats, That the Duke was known to be of very easie Access; that 2 or 3 Particulars he would, and did tell him, and which he charged him never to mention to any Person, would make him be credited, and so repeating his Threats he left him. This Apparition so far confirm'd the old Man, that he repair'd to *London*, where the Court then was; and being known to *Sir Ralph Freeman*, who had married a Lady nearly ally'd to the Duke, he acquainted him with enough to let him know there was something extraordinary in it, without imparting to him all the Particulars. *Sir Ralph* having inform'd the Duke of what the Man desired, and of all he knew in the Matter, his Grace, according to his usual Condescension, told him, That the next Day early he was to hunt with the King, that he would land at *Lambeth Bridge* by Five in the Morning, where if the Man attended he should talk with him as long as should be necessary: Accordingly the Man being conducted by *Sir Ralph*, met the Duke, and walk'd aside in Conference with him near an Hour, *Sir Ralph* and his Servants being at such a Distance, that they could not learn a Word, tho' the Duke was observed sometimes to speak, and that

that in Commotion. The Man told Sir *Ralph* in his Return over the Water, that when he mention'd his Credentials, the Substance of which, he said, he was to impart to no Man, the Duke swore he could come to that Knowledge by none but the Devil, for that those Particulars were a Secret to all but himself, and another, who, he was sure, would never speak of it. He return'd from Hunting before the Morning was spent, and was shut up for the Space of 2 or 3 Hours with his Mother in *White Hall*, and when he left her, his Countenance appear'd full of Trouble, with a Mixture of Anger; and she herself, when the News of the Duke's Murther was brought to her, seem'd to receive it without the least Surprize, and as a Thing she had long foreseen.

Having digress'd so much about *Buckingham's* Death from the Siege of *Roche*, we'll now resume it. *Richlieu* no sooner had the News of it, but he caus'd some Propositions to be made to the *Roche*-*lers*, which they would not yet hearken to, though they were reduced to the utmost Extremity, and that a great many of them lived upon nothing but Cockles and Roots, which was difficult to find. Many of the Magistrates were for capitulating, but the Mayor, supported by most of the People, oppos'd this Design; while the contrary Party to gain the People by Pity, took a Resolution to put all the unprofitable Mouths out of the Town, thinking, that the People, affected with so sad a Separation, would resolve to surrender; but the Besiegers drove them back with Musket-Shot, and they were forced to lie in some Meadows below the Lines and the City, where they lived on Herbs; and the King and Cardinal were so far from pitying them, that by firing upon them, they caus'd the Besieged to take them in again.

Misery of  
the *Ro*-  
*chellers*.

The King by this time threatned to give them no quarter if they did not surrender, and the *Roche*-*lers* themselves offer'd to beg Pardon with Ropes about their Necks, provided they might have their Privileges in relation to their Religion and Magistracy, without

1628.

out saying any more about demolishing of Fort Loui, or those on the Isles of *Rhee* and *Oleron*; they also demanded Pardon for *Roan* and *Soubize*, as well as the Citizens of *Languedoc*; and that Peace also should be made with *England*. To this the Cardinal answered, the King would absolutely punish *Roan* and *Soubize*; That for the Cities of *Languedoc*, they should be treated with such Mildness as they deserved; That as to *England*, it was not for them to prescribe to the King what he had do, and that it was enough for themselves that they were not punished according to their Deserts, for having drawn *France* into a War on that side.

*English*  
Fleet  
comes to  
relieve  
*Rochel* a-  
gain.

This Answer being no way pleasing to the poor *Rochellers*, the Siege went on. At last the *English* Succours commanded by the Earl of *Lindsey* appeared in sight of the Isle of *Rhee*, on the 28th of *Sept.* consisting of 70 Vessels, and were followed next Day by 30 more. The whole *French* Army which was 20000 Foot and 3000 Horse, were many Days in Arms to repulse the *English*, in case they should attempt to Master the Dyke, which was then wholly finished, and only 50 Geometrical Paces left open for the Course of the Tide. The *English* for the first Five Days did nothing but coast along the Shoars, to look on the *French* Army, and Fire a few Cannon; but on the 3d of *October* the Fleet stood right into the Channel, and the Vanguard, wherein was *Soubize* and a great Number of *Rochellers*, after they had made several Broad-sides to gain the Wind, advanced within Cannon-shot of the *French* Fleet; the main Battle and the Rear-guard did the same, and all the Fleet returned Three Times to the Charge in the same Order, while the Tide lasted: They endeavoured also several Times to make use of their Fireships to no purpose, as well as the Rest of the Attempts they made were; and indeed the *French* with a great deal of Reason say, there was but little Sincerity in the *English* at this time, especially since the Lord *Mountague* would have a private Conference with the Cardinal about an Accommodation contrary to the Inclinations of the Deputies of *Rochel*, and King *Charles* only assisted *Rochel*, to avoid the



the Discontents of his People, who earnestly desired their Relief. 1628.

In the mean time; the Cardinal cunningly caused the *French* on Board the *English* Fleet, and now distrustful of them, to be told it would be a Shame and Disadvantage to them, to suffer an Agreement to be made for them by a Foreign Prince, who considered not their Interest so much as his own; and that they would make their Conditions better, if they implored the King's Clemency: Upon which some of them having obtained a safe Conduct, waited upon the Cardinal, by whose Means he so wrought upon the *Rochellers*, that they sent out their Deputies to treat about giving up the Place, which was now reduced to very great Misery; and having after many Difficulties signed the Articles on the 28th of *October* was given up accordingly, and with it, I may truly say, the Liberties of *France*; and this the *Marschal de Bassompierre* was so sensible of, thattho' he were then actually against it, he said, *I think we shall be such Fools at last, as to take Rochel.* It's very remarkable, that the fair Weather ended the very Day of the Reducement of *Rochel*, and that the Dyke in the Sea began presently after to destroy it self; the King walking upon it on the side of *Coreille*, a Joice fell down under him, and had he not readily cast himself on the other side, he had fallen into the Sea and the Storm was so great Eight Days after, that it threw down Forty Fathom of the Fences, and a Ship that was by a Gust of Wind drove against it, broke Four or Five Machines, without hurting it self; which might let us know what the *English* might have done against the Dyke, if they had attempted to have broken it. It's a lamentable Story to relate, that the *Rochellers* before they would surrender, were reduced to so great Extremity, that above 15000 Persons died of Famine or Diseases, proceeding from too little Sustenance or ill Diet; and those who remained alive were so pale and thin, that they resembled rather Skeletons than Living Persons; nay they tell us, some having prepared their own Coffins, laid themselves down in them in the Churchyards, to wait their Passage by dire Famine into another

*Rochel* surrendered.

1628.

ther World. However the Cardinal to do him Justice, took great care of the Living. by distributing Provisions amongst them, and clearing the City of the Dead Corps that in great Numbers remained unburied in private Houses and elsewhere; whole Families being dead for want, and others seeing themselves at a Wake of the same Nature, no Person took care to bury the Dead, and the Houses being shut, served for Sepulchers to those that inhabited them.

King's Declaration  
against  
*Rochel.*

Before the King's Departure from *Rochel*, he published a Declaration concerning that City, which contained Twenty Six Articles; the Principal of which were, That there should be a free and publick Exercise of the Catholick Religion in *Rochel*, and the Country of *Aunis*; That the Churches demolished should be rebuilt, and restored to those to whom they belonged before, with their Church-yards, Houses and Dependencies; That a sufficient Revenue should be assigned to the Curates, who had no Means to live on to maintain themselves according to their Quality, out of the Demesnes which belonged to the Town-House of the City; That they should set up a Cross in the Place of the Castle, with an Inscription on the Pedestal, touching the Reduction of the City; and that every Year on the 1st of *November* a general Procession should be made for Thanksgiving; That the Church-yard that had been consecrated in the Territory of *Coreille*, and wherein the greatest Part of those of the King's Army who died during the Siege were buried, should be kept in good Condition, without Prophanation; and that a Convent of Minims should be erected there, who should pray for the Souls of the Deceased; That the Building which was in the Place of the Castle, where they formerly preached, should be converted into a Cathedral Church, which should be erected to a Bishoprick, at least the nearest Episcopal See should be transferred thither by the Pope's Leave; That the Mayoralty, Sherifalty, the Body and Community of the City, the Order

of

of Peers and that of Burgeſſes ſhould be ſuppreſſ'd for ever; and that the Steeple, which ſhould be for calling together the Aſſemblies of the City, ſhould be founded; That the Walls, Ramparts, Baſtions, and all the other Fortifications, except the Towns of *St. Nicholas*, of the *Chain*, and of the *Lanthorn*, and the Walls on the Sea-side, which were neceſſary to ſecure the Inhabitants againſt the Incurſions of Pirates, ſhould be raz'd, their Foundations demolish'd, and their Ditches fill'd; ſo that the City ſhould be open on all Sides, without ever being re-fortified for the future, nor any Wall to be hereafter made, no nor for the Incloſure of a Garden; That the City ſhould be for the future liable to Taxes, and yet for the Encouragement of Trade, the Impoſition ſhould be moderated to 4000 Livres, which ſhould be inſtead of the like impoſed formerly for the Subvention; That no Stranger or Foreigner ſhould again inhabit there tho' he had obtain'd Letters of Naturalization; That the ſame Prohibition ſhould be of Force in regard of thoſe who had made Profeſſion of the pretended Reform'd Religion, or any other than the Roman Catholick Religion; none of which were to become new Inhabitants there, at leaſt if they did not dwell there as Houſe-keepers before, or were not gone or departed, upon account of the Deſcent of the *Engliſh*; That, *Laſtly*, for the Maintenance of this new Polity, which equally concern'd Religion and the Civil Government, there ſhould be an Intendant of Juſtice in the City, and in the Provinces of *Aunis*, *Poitou* and *Saintonge*, whoſe Jurisdiction ſhould extend from the *Loire* to the *Garonne* and *Gironde*.

But to leave unhappy *Roche*, during whoſe Siege *Conde* and *Montmorency* carried on the War againſt the Duke of *Roan* in *Languedoc*, we are to obſerve, that *Nevers* now become Duke of *Mantua* (as before hinted) having obtain'd a Promise of Succours from the *French*, before his Departure for *Italy*, againſt the Duke of *Savoy's* Pretenſions upon *Montferrat*, where the Duke of *Savoy* had already be-

ſieged

1628. *sieged Casal, and Uxelles, with several Thousands of French, failing to make his Way to relieve it: Richlieu hereupon used all his Arguments to bring Lewis to give powerful Assistance to Mantua, and even to go and head the Army in Person. The Resolution being taken, and the King having acquainted the Parliament of Paris with it, one of the concluding Acts of this Year in France, to say nothing of the great Preparations for the Expedition, was the Publishing an Amnesty through all the Hugonot Cities, and to all of that Party, who should within Fifteen Days accept of the Pardon offer'd, and even Roan and Soubize were not excepted.*

*Rosstock,  
&c. taken  
by Walle-  
stein.*

Things prosper'd still in Germany much in Favour of Ferdinand, where Wallestein having taken Rosstock and Wismar, marched against Stralsund, in Pomerania, where the Citizens had the Artifice to amuse him so long with Proposals of Accommodation, that they gain'd Time enough to send and receive Succours from the King of Sweden, which, perhaps, might suggest fresh Thoughts in that Monarch, the Effects of which appear'd afterwards with a Witness in the Empire. In the mean time, all the Emperor Ferdinand's Proceedings tended to make him Absolute: He endeavour'd all he could to destroy the Protestant Union, and therefore demanded of them all the Church-Lands that had at any time been got from the Roman Catholics, and those were chiefly the Archbishopricks of Bremen and Magdebourg, and the Bishopricks of Minden, Halberstadt, Verden, Lubeck, Ratzebourg, Thistna, Marsbourg, Naumbourg, Brandenburg, Havelberg, Lebus and Cemin, all which then belonged to several Princes, besides the Two Teutonic Orders of Prussia and Livonia, the Archbishoprick of Riga, and several other Bishopricks, Collegiate Churches, Abbies and Hospitals. Now, whilst the Edict was preparing for the Restitution of Church-Lands, the Emperor obtain'd a Bull from the Pope, that gave the Archbishoprick of Magdebourg to his Son Arch-Duke Leopold, which the Chapter would by



no means obey, but required *Augustus*, Elector of Saxony, for their Archbishop, who accepting of that Dignity, this did not a little imbroil them with the Emperor; of which hereafter. However, Proposals of Accommodation being made now to *Ferdinand* on the Part of the *Dane*, and he considering, that *France*, *England*, *Sweden*, *Holland*, and other Protestant States of the Empire, grew jealous of the Progress of his Arms; as also that the *Turks* and *Tartars* might take an Advantage of his Distance from them, thought it most advisable to hearken to a Peace with that Prince, of which we shall have a farther Account next Year.

1628.

Emper-  
for  
and El. of  
Saxony  
vary.

In the mean time, the War relented a little now in *Prussia*, because the States of *Poland* would give the King no Supplies towards it. In the mean while, *Gustavus* arriving with a Fleet from *Sweden*, he sent part of his Forces to attack the Fort there, but they were repulsed with Loss; in Revenge whereof he threw himself into the Warder of *Dantzick*, cut 200 of the *Poles* in Pieces, and took Fourteen Pieces of Cannon; after which ensued a bloody Battle between him and the Enemy, wherein the *Poles* were at last forced to quit the Field, with the Loss of Three Thousand *Swedes* Men, Four Field-Pieces, and Fourteen Standards. After this Battle, which proved also very bloody to the *Swedes*, *Gustavus* drew a little nearer to *Dantzick*, and with his Ships endeavour'd to master the Harbour without Success. In the mean time, the Swelling of the *Weixel* having carried off the *Poles* Bridge at *Grandentz*, *Gustavus*, not willing to lose the Opportunity, sent a Thousand Foot in Boats over the River, who surprized *Neuenbourg*, where lay most of the Ammunition and Baggage of the Enemy, besides a great Sum of Money; but the *Poles* soon made Reprizals, for falling in with a Body of *Swedes*, that were gone out Plundering, they cut some in Pieces, and obliging the rest to surrender, after Quarter given, put them

1628. all to the Sword. *Gustavus*, about the same time, made himself Master of *Strasbourg*, and towards the latter End of *Septemb.* surprized *Bradnitz*, before the *Poles* could come to relieve it. And thus ends the First Volume.

---

F I N I S.

---

# T H E I N D E X.

**A** *Bbot* (Archbishop) in Disgrace, 324 — His Letter to the King about the *Spanish Match*, 342 — Disgraced, and his Office executed by Commissioners, 522  
*Abbot* (Bishop) his Death, 247  
*Achmet* (Emperor of the *Turks*) ascends the Throne, 65 — His Death and Character, 245  
 Alliance. See Treaty, 221  
*Ann*, Queen of *England*, Crown'd, 42 — Her Death, 265  
*Alba Regalis* besieged and taken by the Christians, 19 — Besieged and taken by the *Turks*, 20 — Suburbs surprized by the Christians, 50  
*Albert* (Arch-Duke) his Death, 320  
*Andrews* (Arch-Bishop) his Death, 511  
 Apparitions in the Air in *France*, 91  
 Articles proposed by the *English Ambassadors*, to the Gr. Seignior, 318 — Sworn to by K. *James* and Pr. *Charles*, about the *Spanish Match*, 340 — Of Peace with *France*, 401 — Against the D. of *Bucks*, 455 — Enlarged by Mr. *Herbert*, 456 — Mr. *Selden*, 457 — Mr. *Glanvill*, 460 — Mr. *Pym*, 472 — Mr. *Sherland*, 475 — Mr. *Wandesford*, 482 — *Elliott* (Sir *John*) his Epilogue thereto, 483

## B

*Babington* (Bishop) his Death, 132  
*Bacon* (L. Chancellor) censured, 299 — His Character, 300 — His Death and Character, 510  
*Bancroft's* Death and Character, 133  
*Burclay's* Death, 119—321  
*Barnavelt* his Death and Character, 264  
 Baronets first instituted, 154  
*Baronius* (Cardinal) his Death and Character, 109  
*Bavaria* made an Elector, 359  
*Baudius* his Death, &c. 162 162  
*Bearne* united to *France*, 242 — Stands upon its Privileges, 254 — Loses its Privileges, 293 — Insurrection there, 313  
*Bethlem Gabor* takes *Lippa*, *Genna*, and *Arach*, 177 — Defeats the Imperialists, 382  
*Bellarmino* (Cardinal) his Death, 320

# The INDEX.

- Bezi's* Death and Character, 88  
*Bilfon* (Bishop) his Death, 263  
*Bilfon*, the Boy thereof, 225 — Discovered to be an Impostor, 227  
*Biron* (Marshal) Commands the Army against *Savoy*, 15 — Sent Ambassador into *England*, 16 — His Conspiracy discovered, 29 — Is executed, 30 — His Character, *ib.*  
*Blunt* (Sir *Christophe*) executed for *Essex's* Rebellion, 8  
*Bokemia*, Affairs thereof, 257  
*Bovillon* (Marshal) his Agreement with *K. Henry*, 90  
*Breda* besieged 41 — Taken by *Spinola*, 412  
*Bristol*, his Embassie to *Spain*, 327 — Demurs upon his new Instructions, 348 — But is commanded to follow them, 349 — His Apology to *K. James*, 352 — Brought to his Tryal, 422 — Articles against him, 423 — His Speech on delivering the Articles against *Buckingham*, 426 — His Articles against *Buck*, 430 — His Answer to the Articles against himself, 433 — 436 — His Behaviour in *Spain*, 438 — Opinion about the Match, 439 — Advised the Prince not to change his Religion, 445 — Was for a Protestant Match; but if a Popish one, rather *Spain* than *France*, 446 — Reasons why he would have consummated the Match, 449  
*Buckingham*. See *Villers*  
*Buda* besieged by the Christians in vain, 33

## C

- Cadix* Expedition, 398  
*Cambden* (William) his Death, 360  
*Canisla* besieged in vain by Arch-Duke *Ferdinand*, 20  
*Capi Aga* beheaded, 48  
*Causabon* (Isaac) his Death and Character, 163  
*Charles* (Prince, Soa to *K. James I.*) Overtures about a Match with *Spain*, 248 — The Pursuance thereof, 268 — Signs the Pope's Demands about the Match with *Spain*, 330 — His Voyage to *Spain*, 338 — Arrival at *Madrid*, and Entertainment there, 339 — Pope's Letter to him, 340 — His Answer thereto, 341 — Stands stedfast in his Religion, 342 — Articles sworn to by him about the *Spanish* Match, 344 — His Engagement, 345 — The *Spaniards* protract the Marriage, 346 — His Departure from *Spain*, 347 — The Match quite broke off, 351 — Concludes a Match with a Princess of *France*, 379 — Her Portion and Dowry, *ib.* — Accession to the Crown, 386 — His first Speech in Parliament, 388 — His second Speech, 391 — Proposes a War with *Spain*, *ib.* — Dissolves the Parliament, 397 — Pursues his Design of War, 398 — Calls another Parliament, 413 — His Letter to the Speaker, 414 — Message to the Parliament, and their Answer, 415 — His Reply, 416 — Another Message sent to the Commons, *ib.* Message to the Lords about the D. of *Bucks*, 433 — His Letter to the Speaker for a speedy Supply, 494 — The Speaker's Speech to him thereon, 495 — Dissolves the Parliament, 496 — His Declaration why he dissolv'd the Two Parliaments, *ib.* — Raises Money without Par-



## The INDEX.

- Parliaments several Ways as by Customs, 499 — Loans 500, Privy-Seals 501, &c. — Excise, 523 — His Speech to the Parliament, *Ibid.* — His Speech, 532 — His Answer to the Pétition, about Recusants, 533 — Message to the Commons, 535 — Answer to the Petition of Right, 538 — His Second Answer, 540 — Ends the Session in Person, and declares the Reason, 546 — Issues our several Proclamations, 547 — How he receives the News of the D. of Bucks Death, 555
- Christianople* burnt by the *Swedes*.
- Cluverius* his Death, 359
- Cobham* (Lord) his Conspiracy, 40 — Clears *Rawleigh*, 41
- Cold, extream in *France*, 110
- Collonitz* defeats the *Turks*, 51
- Comer* appears, 264
- Conde* (Pr. of) escapes out of *France*, 117 — Returns, 128 — His Proceedings, 166 — His Letter to *Lewis XII.* 189 — His Manifesto, *Ib.* — His March and Declaration, 192 — Passes the *Loire*, 193 — Protestants declare for him, 194 — Treaty between him and them, *Ib.* — Treaty at *Loudon* signed, 208 — On which he goes to Court, 209 — Is arrested, 211
- Constantine's* Death, 89
- Conway* (Lord) and *Cook* (Secretary) declare to the Parliament the State of Affairs, 391
- Cook* (Sir *Edw.*) his Exceptions to the Sheriffs Oath, 399
- Crew* (Sir *Tho.*) Speaker of the H. of Commons, 389
- Cuff* executed for *Essex's* Rebellion, 8
- Customs raised without Parliament, and Merchants committed for refusing to pay, 548

## D

- Danes* take *Calmar*, 142 — Are defeated by the *Swedes*, *Ib.* — Repuls'd before *Elsburg*, and lose *Fempteland*, 144
- D'Ancre* assassinated, 234 — His Character, 235 — His Corps ill used, 237
- Danvers* (Sir *Charles*) executed for *Essex's* Rebellion, 8
- D'Aquilla* (*Don John*) arrives in *Ireland* with Succours from the K. of *Spain*, 13 — Is beaten, 14 — Capitulates and leaves *Ireland*, 23 — His Character of the *Irish*, 24
- Davis* (Sir *John*) executed for *Essex's* Rebellion, 9
- D'Auvergne* (Count) condemn'd, 75
- Denmark*, the Affairs thereof, 33 — The King comes to *England*, 89 — Difference with *Sweden*, 127 — K. thereof comes into *England*, 165 — Driven Home by *Tilly*, 518
- Dervise* attempts to kill the Sultan, 146
- Digby* (Lord) his Speech, 305
- Diggs* (Sir *Dudley*) his Speech, 452
- Dossat* (Cardinal) his Death and Character, 72
- Doufa* his Death and Character, 71
- Dunk* beat the *Spaniards* by Sea, 87

# The INDEX.

## E

- Edict** in favour of the Reformed in *France*, 187  
**Elizabeth** (Q. of *England*) very wavering about the Death of the E. of *Essex*, 6 — Her last Speech to her Parliament, 11, 12 — Her Sickness, 35 — Names her Successor and dies, 36 — Her Character, *ib.*  
**Elliot** (Sir *John*) his Epilogue to the D. of *Bucks's* Impeachment, 485  
*England*, Affairs thereof, 133  
**Excise** collected under a Commission, 523  
**Espernon** (D. of) engages in the Queen Mother's Interest, 255 — Leaves *Metz*, 270  
**Essex** (E. of) made L. Deputy of *Ireland*, 1 — His Rebellion, *ib.* and 2. — Imprisons the Privy-Counsellors, and excites the Citizens to Rebellion, *ib.* — His House besieged, 3 — He and his Associates surrender, *ib.* — Are brought to their Tryals, 4 — Are condemn'd, 5 — His Confession, 6 — Execution, 7 — His Extraction, Education and Character, 8  
**Essex** (E. of) Son of the Former, unhappily married, 150 — His Wife's Carriage towards him, 151 — She sues for a Divorce, 156 — Which is obtain'd, and the Sentence how given, *ib.*

## F

- Felton** kills the Duke of *Buckingham*, 553 — His Character, &c. according to L. Cl——don, *ib.* — The Manner of his apprehending, 554 — Discourses some great Men had with him in Prison, with his Confession, &c. 554, 555  
**Ferrarius** his Death, 511  
**France** declares War against *Savoy*, 15 — Broils between it and *Spain*, 15 — Renews their Alliance with the *Swiss*, 28 — King thereof goes to *Metz*, 42 — Makes a League with *England*, 43 — Affairs thereof, 116 — 121, &c. — Factions there, 128 — An Assembly of the Reformed there, 136 — *Nevers* proclaimed a Rebel there, 232 — Assembly of the Reformed there, 233 — Civil War ceases there, 238 — Affairs of Religion there, 252 — Q. Mother makes her Escape, 270 — Civil War there, 293 — Assembly held at *Loudon*, 275 — Queen Mother's League, 287

## G

- Geneva** is likely to be surprized by the D. of *Savoy*, 31  
**Germany**, Affairs there, 113 — Dyet held there, 118—131 — Conferences for Accommodation without Effect, 132 — Dyet at *Nuremberg*, 195 — War there, 319 — Strange Adventures there, 336  
**Condarnor** (Ambassador from *Spain*) negotiates a Match for Pr. *Charles*, 248 — Articles of Religion, 249 — He flatters K. *James*, 282  
**Gran**, the Siege thereof, 68 — Taken by the *Turks*, 85  
**Grashoppers**, Clouds of them, 133

*Grave*

## The INDEX.

*Grave* taken by Pr. Maurice, 34  
*Gregory* (Pope) his Death and Character, 354  
*Gun-Powder-Treason* discovered, 72 — Conspirators executed, 89  
*Gustavus* (K. of Sweden) takes *Oeland* and *Barcholm*, 143 — Invades *Schoonen*, 145 — Actions with the *Danes*, 160 — Sends D. Charles into *Muscovy*, 199 — Besieges *Pleskow* in vain, 246 — Takes *Dunamunder*, *Pernaw*, and *Salis*, 263 — Crown'd King at *Upsall*, *Ib.* — Routs the *Lithuanian Army*, 410 — Takes *Wornidit*, 521 — Beats the *Poles*, 565 — Takes *Strasburg*, 566

### H

*Harrior's Death*, 321  
*Harwan* taken by the Christians, 53  
*Hayes* (Lord) sent Ambassador to *France*, 202  
*Henry* made Pr. of *Wales*, 121 — His Letter to his Father about a Match propos'd to him of the *French King's Sister*, 149 — His Death and how, 153  
*Henry* the IVth, King of *France*, call'd the Great, sets up divers Manufactures, 44 — His Troubles, 45 — His Domestick Broils, 61 — Buildings, 62 — His Court, Diversions, &c. 76 — His Domestick Inquietudes, 115 — Makes great Preparation for War, 121 — Presages of his Death, 122 — Assassinated, 123 — His Issue and Character, 124 — His Funeral Obsequies, 127  
*Hereticks* condemn'd in *England*, 133  
*History* of Pr. *Coreski*, 251  
*Holland* mediates a Peace in the North, 520  
*Hungary*, the Wars there, 45, 46

### I

*Iacaiia*, the Story thereof, 295  
*James* the 1st, K. of *England*, comes to the Crown, 37 — All Parties make their Court to him, and Ambassadors come from most Parts, 38, 39 — Crown'd 42 — Creates Nobles, *Ib.* — Makes Peace with *Spain*, 56 — His Speech about the Union with *Scotland*, 100 — His Favourites, 120 — Ways of Raising Money, *Ib.* — His Pleasures, 164 — His Imprecations about *Overbury's* Death, 182 — A Benevolence rais'd for Defence of the *Palatinate*, 280 — Speech to the Parliament, 295 — Speech to the Lords, 297 — His Proclamation to reform Grievances, 303 — Letter to the Speaker, 307 — Commons Reply, 308 — His Answer, 309 — Their Protestation, 312 — Which his Majesty tears out of the Journal Book, 313 — Offers Terms about the *Palatinate*, 322 — Rejected, *Ib.* — Is despised, 323 — Shews Favours to Recusants, 324 — His Directions concerning Recusants, 325 — His Answer to the Pope's Demands about the *Spanish Match*, 326 — Letters to the E. of *Bristol* and *Gondamor*, 327 — Deluded, 330 — He and the Prince sign the Pope's Demands, *Ib.* — Private Articles sworn to by him about the *Spanish Match*, 344 — Proposes Terms to the

## The INDEX.

the *Palatinate*, 349 — His Speech to the Parliament, 361—367 — His Declaration to both Houses, 370 Grows jealous of the D. of *Buckingham*, 373 — Is reconciled to him, 377 — His Death and Character, 383 — Issue, &c. 384  
 Jars between *England* and *France*, 408  
 Jesuits and Priests quarrel, 25 — They are both banish'd *England*, 26  
 Imposture discover'd and punish'd, 9  
*Innisfa's* Paper to K. *James*, 373 — The Cheat detected by the Lord-Keeper, 375  
 Interview between the Kings of *Sweden* and *Denmark*, 278  
*Italy*, the Affairs thereof, 158—173 — Embroil'd between *Spain* and *Savoy*, 184 — War breaks out there, 217 — *Vercelli* taken by the *Spaniards*, 245 — Embroil'd about the Affair of *Mantua*, 519  
*Fuliers* taken by the *Spaniards*, 319

### K

*Kemish* kills himself, 230

### L

*Lamb* (Dr.) killed, 540  
 Lawyers, an Edict against them, 28  
 League between *England* and *France*, 43  
 Letter from the Emperor to *Don Balihazar de Zuniga*, 304  
*Lewis XIII.* K. of *France*, born, 16 — Accession to the Throne, 126 — Civil Troubles begins in his Reign, 165 — Comes to Years of Majority 168 — His Letter to the Pr. *Conde*, with the Prince's Answer, 189 — His Letter to the Pr. of *Conde*, 204 — Conference between his Commissioners and the discontented Lords, 213 — Falls sick, 215 — Treats his Mother ill, 236 — Interview between him and Q. Mother, 274 — Goes to *Roan*, 289 — His Declaration, 290 — Articles between him and Q. Mother, 292 — Besieges *Montauban* in vain, 314 — His Progress against the *Hugonots*, 331 — His Edict in favour of the *Hugonots*, 505 — Declaration against *Rochel*, 562  
*Lipfius* his Death, 95  
 Loan, how managed, 501  
*London*, the Conference there, 205  
*Luins*, the *French* King's Favourite, his Rise, 185 — His Marriage, 240 — His Death and Character, 315

### M

*Mahomet* the 3d, Emperor of the *Turks*, his Death and Character, 65  
*Mansfeld* (Count) arrives in *England*, 377 — His Commission from K. *James*, 1b. — His Death and Character, 507  
*Manwaring*. See *Sibthorp*.  
*Mariana* his Book burnt, 126 — His Submission, 539 — Judgment given against him, 1b.

Mar-



## The INDEX.

- Marriage concluded between the Prince of *Spain* and the *French King's* Sister, 147 — And between *Lewis* the XIII. K. of *France*, and the Princess of *Spain*, *Ib.*
- Matthias* (Arch-Duke) made King of *Hungary*, 106 — K. of *Bohemia*, 132 — Disoblige the Protestants, 160
- Maurice* (Prince) takes *Sluice*, 63 — His Death and Character, 412
- Mercurialis* his Death and Character, 71
- Merula's* Death, 109
- Merrick* (Sir *Gilly*) executed for *Effex's* Rebellion, 8
- Middlesex* (Earl) L. Treasurer censured, 172
- Moldavia*, Affairs there, 197 — *Alexander*, Pr. thereof, his various Fortune, 219
- Moneys in K. *Charles's* Time raised several Ways without Parliaments, as by Customs, 499 — By Loans 500, — Privy-Seals, 501, &c. Excise, 523
- Moriscones* or *Moors* banish'd out of *Spain*, 131
- Mornay* (*Du Flessis*) his Death, 359
- Morton* (Bishop) inspects into the Affair of the Boy of *Bilfon*, 225 — Discovers the Impoffure, 227
- Muscovy*, Affairs there, 112 — Progress of the *Swedes* therein, 179 — A new Duke elected there 179—200 — *Swedes* Progress there, 223
- Mustapha* made Emperor of the *Turks*, 259 — Deposed, 260—357.

### N

- Nappier* his Death, 338
- North* (Affairs thereof, 59) — A Negotiation for preferring the *Swedish* Prince to the Throne of *Muscovy*, 177 — States of *Finland* and *North Holland* assembled, 262
- Northampton* (Earl of) his Death and Character, 164

### O

- O'Donnell* his Rebellion in *Ireland*, 14 — Is beaten and forced to flee into *Spain*, *Ibid.*
- Orleans* (D. of) his Marriage, 506
- Osman*, made Emperor of the *Turks*, 260 — Deposed and strangled, 334 — His Dream before his Death, *Ib.*
- Ostend*, the Siege thereof, 17 — Continued, 34
- Overbury's* Tragedy, 155 — His Death contrived, 157 — Poison'd, *Ib.* — How discover'd, 181 — His Murderers punish'd, 182
- Owen* (the Epigramatist) his Death, 360

### P

- Palatine* (Prince) married to Lady *Elizabeth*, 154 — Chosen King of *Bohemia*, 266 — Is routed by *Ferdinand*, 281 — Inclines to a Peace, 337 — Terms propos'd to him, 349 — His Answer, 350 — Soldiers levied for him, 387 — A Match propos'd between the *Palatine's* Son and Emperor's Daughter, 443
- Pareus* his Death, 338

# The INDEX.

*Pappenheim*, reduces an Insurrection in *Austria*, 509  
*Parliament* (the last in *Q. Elizabeth's* Reign) meets, 9 — In *K. James's* Time dissolved, 114 — A new One called, 164 — Sits, 395 — Complain of Grievances, 296 — Adjourn'd, 302 — Their Declaration about the *Palatinate*, *Ib.* — Reassembled, 505 — Their Petition and Remonstrance, 306 — The King's Letter to the Speaker, 307 — The Parliament Reply, 308 — The King's Answer, 310 — The *L. Keeper's* Judgment on it, 312 — The Commons Protestation, *Ib.* — The King tears the Protestation out of the Journal-Book with his own Hand, 313 — Dissolved, 321 — Meets again, 367 — Answer to the King's Speech, 368 — The First in *K. Charles's* Time, 388 — Adjourn'd to *Oxford*, 391 — High Debates in the *H. of Commons*, 393 — Dissolved, 397 — Another called, 412 — Grievances complain'd of, 413 — Several Messages from the King, and their Answers to them, 416 — Their Impeachment against the *D. of Bucks*, 453 — Are dissolved, 496 — A new One meets, 523 — Debates about Grievances, 530 — Propositions about a Supply, *Ib.* — Resolves about the Subjects Liberty in Person, 531 — Conference against Reculants, 532 — Resolve touching Confinements, 535 — Five Subsidies resolved on, *Ib.* — Their Remonstrance, 541 — Another about Tunnage, &c. 545  
*Paul* the 5th his Quarrel with the *Venetians*, 79  
*Paul* (Father) his Death, 359  
*Peace* between *England* and *Spain*, 56 — Between the Emperor and *Hungarians*, 62 — Between the *Christians* and *Turks*, 64 — Between *Sweden* and *Denmark*, 169 — Between *Sweden* and *Muscovy*, 247 — Of *Stelbora*, — 262 — Made in *France*, 332 — Concluded with the *Rockellers*, 504  
*Peron* (Cardinal) his Death, 264  
*Pest* taken by the *Christians*, 32  
*Petition* concerning Religion, with *K. Charles's* Answer, 394 — Concerning Reculants, with the King's Answer, 533 — Of Right, 536 — With the King's Answer, 538  
*Phillip* the 3d of *Spain* goes into *Portugal*, 275 — Holds a Parliament there, 276 — His Death and Character, 315  
*Plague* very great in *London*, 39 — Another on which the Parliament adjourned to *Oxford*, 390  
*Plot* against the State of *Venice*, 257  
*Poland*, Affairs there, 112—381 — An advantageous Proposal made to *K. Sigismund*, 409  
*Privy-Council* issues Orders for raising Money, 323  
*Proxies*, the Number of them restrain'd, 433  
*Puritans*, their Demands, 58

## Q

Quarrels between the *English* and the *Scotch*, 60 — Between *Pope Paul* and the *Venetians*, 79

## R

*Rawleigh* (Sir *Walter*) his hard Measure, 39 — After 12 Years Imprisonment in the *Tower* commands a Fleet for *America*, 229 — The Voyage spoilt and how, 230 — Is apprehended and beheaded, 231 Re-

## The INDEX.

Regulations made in *France*, 17 — Of the Coin there, 31  
 Remonstrants and Anti-Remonstrants the Contest between them, 251  
*Richer's* Book condemn'd, 147  
*Richlieu* disgraced, 224 — Made General, 551  
*Rivallac* the Assassinator of *Hen. IV.* executed, 126  
*Roan* (Duke of) makes his Peace with the Queen, 208  
*Rochel*, the Siege thereof, 550 — *English* fail to relieve it, 552 — Surrendred, 561  
*Rochellers* defeated, 403 — Conditions propos'd to them, 407 — Their Misery, 559  
*Rocheſter* trick'd by *Salisbury*, 152  
*Rodolph*, King of *Bohemia*, his Death and Character, 146  
*Rosiock* taken by *Walleſtein*, 558

### S

*Saquir* (Lord) his Misfortune, 151  
*Savill* (Sir *Henry*) his Death, 321  
*Savoy* (Cb *Emanuel*, Duke of) is engaged in a War with *France*, 15 — The Peace between *Savoy* and *France*, 1b.  
*Scaligar* (Jul. *Cesar*) his Death, 119  
*Sibthorp* and *Manwaring* preach in favour of the Court, 512  
 Sluice taken, 63  
*Socinus Faustus* his Death and Character, 72  
*Somerſet* (E. of) his Rise, 156 — His Decline, 181 — His Fall, 183  
*Spalato* (Arch-bishop of) his Death and Character, 202  
*Spinola* takes *Groll*, 95 — fails to take *Bergen-op-Zoom*, 338 — Takes *Breda*, 412  
 States of *France*, their last Meeting, 168 — They break up, 183  
 States of *Holland*, how they became high and mighty, 203  
*Stow's* Death and Character, 88  
 Speech of the L. Keeper to the Com. 417 — Another, 523 — Another, 532  
 Speech without Doors, 525  
*Streine* or *Strenius* his Death and Character, 23  
*Swediſh* Fleet ſet on fire before *Riga*, 112  
*Sweden*, the Affairs thereof, 33 — 55 — *Charles* declared King thereof, 70 — He attacks *Riga* in vain, 82 — He and his Queen crown'd, 87 — Invades *Livonia*, 95 — Difference with *Denmark*, 137 — Unfortunate in *Muscovy*, 139 — Sends a Challenge to *Chriſtian*, K. of *Denmark*, 143  
*Swiſs Cantons* make an Alliance with *France*, 28  
 Synod of the Reformed held at *Gap* in *Dauphine*, 45

### T

*Thuanus* his Death, 247  
*Tilly* routs the K. of *Denmark*, 509 — And drives him Home, 513  
*Tir Owen* his Rebellion in *Ireland*, 14 — He ſubmits, 26  
*Transylvania*, the Troubles there, 130  
 Treaty of Peace between *France* and *Savoy*, 15 — Between *France* and *Savoy*, 15 — Between the Emperor and the *Turks*, 93 — Between *Spain* and the *United Provinces*, 110 — Of *Aſti*, 185 — Between *Sweden* *Holland*, 224 — About the *Vatoline*, 316 — Between the *Turks* and *Poles*

# The INDEX.

*Poles*, 317 — Between *Spain* and the *Grifons*, 332 — Between the *Poles* and *Muscovites*, 354 — Between *Poland* and *Sweden*, 382 — Between the Emperor and Grand Seignior, 517  
*Turkish* Affairs, Account thereof, 47, 48, 49 — 51, 52 — 65, &c. 80, &c. 174, &c. *Sultan Osman* deposed and strangled, 334 — Disorders in their Affairs, 357 — 381  
*Turks* defeated by the *Christians*, 20 — Break the Peace with the *Christians*, 96 — War against *Poland*, 294  
*Tycho Brahe's* Death and Character, 22

## V

*Vacia* betrayed to the *Turks*, 80  
*Valtoline*, the Affairs thereof, 293 — 406  
*Vere* (Sir Francis) Commands in *Offend* when it was besieged, 17  
*Vicegrad* taken by the *Turks*, 80  
*Vietus* his Death and Character, 56  
*Villers* (George) becomes a Favourite, 190 — His Parentage, &c. *Ibid.* — Crowded with Titles, 224 — Made D. of *Buckingham*, &c. 274 — His Mother rules all, 279 — He marries, *ib.* — His Voyage to *Spain* with the Prince, 340 — Pope's Letter to him, 341 — His Narrative of his Journey to *Spain*, 361 — Is justified by both Houses, 366 — Is accused by the Parliament, 371, 372 — Sent for the Queen to *France*, 387 — Explains the King and L. Keeper's Speech to both Houses, 419 — Speaks in behalf of himself, 420 — Impeached by the Commons, 453 — His Speech before his Answer to his Impeachment, 485 — His Answer and Plea, 486 — Information in the Star-Chamber against him, 499 — Made Admiral and General, 413 — Lands in the *Ile of Rhee*, 514 — His *Manifesto*, *ib.* — Is beat from the *Ile of Rhee*, 515 — Slain by *Felton*, 553 — His Character, according to L. Cl——n, &c. *Ibid.* — Predictions concerning his Death, 557  
Union between *England* and *Scotland* debated in Parliament, 96  
*Vorstius* his Books burnt, 251  
*Upsall*, the University loses his Privileges, 87

## W

*Wade*, his Contrivance against *Cobham* and *Rawleigh*, 41  
*Wallestein* routs *Mansfield*, 507 — Takes *Rostock*, &c. 564  
War between *France* and *Savoy*, 15 — Between *Denmark* and *Sweden*, 141 — In *Poland*, 510  
*Whigift* (Arch-bishop) his Death and Character, 382  
Woman (innocent) condemned for a Witch, 225 — Reprieved by Bishop *Morton*, *Ibid.*  
*Wormdit* taken, 521  
*Wotton* (Sir Henry) sent Ambassador to *Venice* — Is like to influence the *Venetians* to throw off the Pope's Supremacy, 108

## Y

*Yelverton* (Sir Tho.) accused by the Commons, 300 — His Speech, 301 — Sentenced, 302





e  
e  
e  
e  
i

l.  
n  
e  
Is  
e,  
9  
s,  
is  
ft  
of  
s  
c.

11

Bi-

he

01